

Descent of the Phoenix

(凤临天下-王妃十三岁)

Chapter

001-461

Yi Shi Feng Liu

(一世风流)

Story Description:

The strongest female assassin from a special assassination force met her death one day on a mission. To her surprise, she woke up in the body of a 13 year old girl, Mu Rong Liu Yue. Through Liu Yue's past memories, she found out that she was bullied due to the huge birthmark on her face, even though she came from a renowned family. Liu Yue was beaten to death by her own cousin, and that's how she managed to enter Liu Yue's battered body. The assassin then decided to live her life as Liu Yue and swore to avenge her death.

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

Chapter 1: Into Another Dimension

The cherry blossoms glittered splendidly as the sun set on the horizon.

Under the bright sunlight, the bright red cherry blossoms flourished with an enchanting allure, making the country-looking courtyard shone with the cleanliness and beauty of the nature.

“Hong.” An explosion sound suddenly boomed.

The cherry blossoms scattered in the wind as dusts filled the air. Such a big courtyard was suddenly exploded into nothingness.

There was a deathly silence.

“Beautiful.” A blond man looked at the remains of the courtyard and looked towards the black-haired man beside him. Giving him a thumbs up, his other hand fiddled with an AK47.

“Of course.” The black haired man replied as he lifted a dangerous looking missile gun in his arms.

“Japan’s Lin Tang Group’s Residence consisting of 311 people have all been assassinated.” A red haired man walked towards them with a cold look on his face. His body was drenched in blood.

“Boss, mission accomplished.” An oriental looking man with the latest model of an assault rifle made in America on his shoulders walked out from the clouds of smoke, his body full of the smell of death. Standing beside the black haired man, he folded his arms as he reported to a woman in front of him.

Her long and lustrous black hair swayed in the midst of the cherry blossoms, an air of killing intent engulfing her body.

Under the setting sun, her eyes shone with the luster of moonlight. Her pupils had such an abyss like darkness that others won’t be able to bear maintaining an eye-contact with her.

Cherry lips, oval face and white cheeks, only “beautiful” can describe everything about her.

The only woman amongst the six of them, Lin, was the boss of the Dragon Riders Mercenary, the number one assassination organisation in the world.

Now she was listening quietly with her eyebrows raised loftily. She carried with her an air of arrogance and confidence that she was better than the rest. Then, she waved her hand and said, "Let's go." as she turned around and walked away.

From afar, police sirens could be faintly heard.

The four people promptly followed behind, calmly and leisurely. Such an attitude really reflected on how they looked down upon everyone in the world.

A black SUV quickly came and stopped in front of them. As the door opened, a blond-haired man chuckled, "Boss, you really live up to your name. The more missions you do, the more beautifully executed it became. You calculated the time so perfectly."

"Stop talking nonsense, haven't you seen what a great person our boss is?" the black-haired man carrying the missile gun commented, his eyes shone with respect.

Listening to their speech, Lin only smiled arrogantly. As the head of the number one assassination group Dragon Riders, executing her mission perfectly without any trace and annihilating the Lin Tang Japanese group, was simply a child's play for her.

Striding forward, Lin stepped into the car.

As she climbed in, her leg suddenly slipped and her head slammed onto the car's door.

Lin frowned as her body suddenly refused to follow her orders. Slamming straight onto the car's door, her head felt dizzy and her breath tightened.

Everything happened in an instant. As her consciousness fades, Lin faintly felt like crying and laughing at the same time. As the head of the number one mercenary group, she actually died in front of her own car.

This was such a big joke, a joke that would last throughout the mercenary industry history.

The world began to turn as the cherry blossoms flew in the wind.

Chapter 2: Liu Yue

The sun shone brightly in the blue sky, amongst the white clouds.

This is an unknown world.

At the most secluded courtyard in the corner of a grand mansion, the body of Mu Rong Liu Yue who had died but unknown to anyone, suddenly opened her eyes. Her eyes were sharp and strong, emitting an astonishing amount of killing intent, replacing her previously weak and tearful eyes.

Lin, no, Mu Rong Liu Yue quietly observed the interior of the old and crude room, and then looked down at herself and her body.

Mu Rong Liu Yue, the Great General Mu Rong's third son's daughter of the Tian Zhen Empire.

Due to her weak body, she was unable to practice martial arts and could not bring glory and honour to her family, who had produced several generals through the generations. Her looks were just as bad as her weak disposition, thus she couldn't even bring the family an advantage through political marriage. She was abandoned at the most secluded corner of this General's Mansion since the age of 5. Nobody cares about whether she died or lived that even the house slaves dared to bully her.

As a matter of fact, according to the body's memories, a few days ago, her Fifth Uncle's daughter, Mu Rong Qiu actually came by. She was in a bad mood due to a problem with her parents, and had ordered a few slaves to follow her here. She bullied Liu Yue, and even pushed her into a lake before she left.

Liu Yue's 13 year old body didn't grow well as her food was reduced every single year. Just a simple injury had driven Liu Yue to her death, and when she woke up again, she had already become Lin, the former number one assassin in her world.

Closing her eyes, Mu Rong Liu Yue calmly accepted the original Liu Yue's memories, her gaze sweeping across the empty room.

Her previous self's training had trained her expressions to not twitch

even when mountains crumble right in front of her. Her previous self had already died, and the current her was alive. It was simply a matter of living in a different world, even though it sounded complicated, it was actually very simple. Since she could be reborn, what she needed wasn't shrinking back and cowering over the unknown, but living life to the fullest.

Since God gave her a chance to start over, then she would display her splendour all over again, which is also Mu Rong Liu Yue's splendour.

Taking a deep breath, she...was not Lin anymore. She wasn't that number one assassin. She's Mu Rong Liu Yue, the granddaughter of the Mu Rong family that was disliked by everyone.

Liu Yue pinched her body. That body was very skinny but had strong bones. Her body should be able to endure training, so she didn't understand why the Mu Rong family disliked her so much.

Walking towards the simple and dirty copper mirror, Liu Yue looked at the person in the mirror. Slowly, a face that's so ordinary that you won't even recognise in the crowd appeared. It was like heaven and earth compared to her previous life's face.

Chapter 3: Unrivalled Beauty

She wriggled her eyebrows and was silent for a little while.

Liu Yue observed her reflection closely in the bronze mirror. Not right, she thought, she was changing her expressions but the reflection of her face had remained stationary. There was something on her face.

Eyebrows still frowning, Liu Yue turned her body and exited the old house. There wasn't any servants serving her here, except for an old grandmother. However, she was already too old and couldn't walk, so she had returned to her old home. She was all alone in this place, her future was all up to her now.

Taking a pail of water in, Liu Yue scrubbed her face hard in front of the bronze mirror. Then, the reflection on the mirror had alarmed Liu Yue. Her pale white, dainty face had a pair of shapely brows and pitch-black doe eyes. With those eyes and that face, how could this be an inferior face? This is a face of an unrivalled beauty, capable of taking down an entire kingdom.

And the most surprising thing for Liu Yue was that this face looked exactly like her previous life's face. If she were to grow up a little, she would look just like herself.

Touching the face that looked exactly like her, Liu Yue quickly searched through the body's memories. With such a beautiful face, why would she still be suffering in this secluded place? She could just show it off, but why did she chose to mask her appearance?

"My daughter, remember this. Before you could protect yourself, don't let anyone see your appearance. On your eighteenth birthday, Mom will definitely return for you."

Other than a memory vision, a soft and gentle voice resounded in her mind. That was Liu Yue's mother, Ou Yang Xue.

When Liu Yue was five years old, General Mu Rong had sentenced her mother to death. But Liu Yue remembered it very clearly, her mother

didn't die, she only disappeared.

Disappeared? It was a strange word. A five years old memory didn't help that much even if the memory was very clear. The word "disappear" contains too many meanings.

Raising her eyebrows, she thought, before she could find out any information, she won't bother understanding this situation. She wiped her face once again, she thought that her mother's words was right. If she didn't have the strength to protect herself, this face would be her source of calamity and bring her lots of problems.

The sun shone brightly outside as inside the house, a new person replaced the previous one.

Time passed quickly, and soon, a month had already passed by.

Today, the Mu Rong residence was filled with songs and laughter, the atmosphere happy and lively. It was General Mu Rong's sixtieth birthday.

The residence was filled with guests. Distinguished nobles and officials walked forth and expressed their blessings and good wishes to the General. Even the current Emperor had appointed the Crown Prince and three other Princes to congratulate the General for this day, giving him plenty of face and reputation. It had also further strengthen Mu Rong family's reputation and glory as Tian Zhen's Empire number one family of generals.

Chapter 4: Birthday Celebration

However, such a lively celebration that was favoured greatly by the Emperor, did not reach Liu Yue's secluded, scanty house.

Liu Yue, on the other hand, didn't care about the celebration at all. The previous Liu Yue had been abandoned by the Mu Rong family, so why would she care about those people who didn't even deserve her attention.

Sitting on the rattan chair outside of the house, Liu Yue rubbed her arms. Not bad, after a month of training, this body had improved a lot physically. It wouldn't be blown away by wind any more. After a harsh period of training, she managed to improve her power and speed. Even though it had not even reached one-tenth of her previous self's abilities, it was a relatively good improvement.

Standing up, she stretched her body to relax her shoulders. Liu Yue then bound two pieces of iron metals around her body and prepared to run ten rounds around the courtyard, training her lower body.

"Ah, the Beast had actually came out under the sun, aren't you afraid that you will scare the sun off?" A voice, sharp and unkind, suddenly sounded from afar. A group of men and women dressed in bright, gaudy clothes like a peacock walked over to Liu Yue.

(TLN: I couldn't find a better nickname for ugly...)

Liu Yue frowned and stopped her run. She turned around and faced the group of people.

The group was headed by a woman who had some beautiful features, her body adorned in a green gown and her hair decorated with countless hairpins. She dressed up like a flower swaying on the tree branch, but looking from above, her head looked perfectly like a bird's nest. No matter how she tried to dress up, she would never be a phoenix.

Liu Yue's gaze froze. It was Mu Rong Qiu, the woman who had caused the death of the previous Liu Yue.

"That's right. She didn't even think about how she looked like. How dare

she came out and scare others! Ah, my heart, it almost stopped because of this Beast! How are you going to take responsibility for this?” standing behind Mu Rong Qiu, a girl with an oval face and a haughty expression put on a sickly maiden act and clenched her fist over her chest, her expression full of mockery and disdain.

After those words, the whole group started roaring with laughter. All kinds of scorning looks gazed down upon Liu Yue, who was still standing still at her spot.

Butler Wu’s daughter, who had always accompanied Mu Rong Qiu, then started to walk forward. She had wanted to bully Liu Yue by pushing her into the nearby pond.

Liu Yue’s eyes flashed with killing intent, coldly looking at the person approaching her. That dark, pitch black eyes hid a force and depth that could engulf everything.

The kind of Qi energy hidden beneath that calmness had unconsciously caused a ripple in the air, and silence ensued.

Lashing the whip on her hands, Mu Rong Qiu looked at Liu Yue and felt a shiver. Her gaze was a bottomless pit, and she couldn’t help but felt threatened.

Shaking of her unease and breaking her eye-contact with Liu Yue, Mu Rong Qiu suddenly felt that there was no Qi coming out from Liu Yue’s body at all. She was a perfectly normal person.

So, it was still that weak Liu Yue.

Thinking that, she started to charge forward. The apple of Liu Yue’s uncle’s eyes, the darling of the whole family and Tian Zhen Empire’s number one beauty, immediately unleashed all of her pent-up wrath and fury on Liu Yue.

Chapter 5: Rules

The whip on Mu Rong Qiu's hands lashed ruthlessly, coming straight to Liu Yue's face. Mu Rong Qiu shouted angrily, "What kind of look are you giving me? You dared look at me like that, are you tired of living? Looks like there were no people around to teach you lessons when I was in the official residence these few days. You don't even know your own position. Today, I will teach you what's called rules."

The pelting whip tore across the air, lashing towards Liu Yue.

"Whip her, whip her with all your strength...:"

"Miss Qiu, teach this rude Beast a good lesson..."

Jeering voices rose up from amongst the people, cheering Mu Rong Qiu.

An angry glance flashed through Liu Yue's expression. If it was not her standing here today, and it was the old Liu Yue instead, this lash of whip might even take her life.

She gave Mu Rong Qiu a cold gaze. She, Liu Yue, was not someone that was easily bullied by anyone.

Still standing on her spot, Liu Yue's hand moved in a flash and "shua" grabbed the lashing whip swinging in the air, still keeping her intense gaze on Mu Rong Qiu.

The colourful long whip was stretched thin between Mu Rong Qiu and Liu Yue, both sides pulling relentlessly.

"Ah?" the group of people that came with Mu Rong Qiu looked at Liu Yue in astonishment. The usually weak girl who never retaliated no matter how bad she was beaten up or sneered at, the girl who had zero martial arts ability, could actually withstood Mu Rong Qiu's attack.

"How dare you..."

Before Mu Rong Qiu even finished her question, Liu Yue suddenly jerked her hand and pulled the whip towards her. That Mu Rong Qiu could not even dream to be Liu Yue's opponent, her long whip was snatched away

from her hands in an instant, as it flew towards Liu Yue.

“Beast, you dared to...Ouch...”

Before she can even finish her threats, Liu Yue had already grabbed the whip’s handle and lashed it back to Mu Rong Qiu. Only an after-image could be seen as the colourful long whip moved like a lightning across Mu Rong Qiu’s face. With just a whip from Liu Yue, Mu Rong Qiu flew across the courtyard.

“Rules? Let me teach you a lesson about rules today.” grabbing the pointed end of the long whip, Liu Yue looked at her unemotionally. Lashing the whip on Mu Rong Qiu, she didn’t held back even an inch.

Since when would this Liu Yue let anyone jeer and step on her? Not now, not ever.

“Ouch, ahh...”

Mu Rong Qiu was flogged to the point that she rolled on the ground, screaming painfully.

“You, you Beast...I’m going to tell...”

“Pa.”

Before Butler Wu’s daughter’s words even finished, Liu Yue also lashed the whip on her too. The long whip was like a poisonous snake that twisted around Butler wu’s daughter, tying her tight on the ground.

Chapter 6: What sort of filth

With a cold “humph”, Liu Yue swung her hands and the whip suddenly lashed out. The butler’s daughter, who was bound by the whip, was instantly thrown high up in the air.

“Peng.” A loud slam was heard as the girl that was thrown fell down to the ground hard. She laid there, motionless.

A sharp breaking sound resounded, she must had broken a few ribs.

“What kind of filth are you, who dared to scream and shout at me?” A cold voice, undoubtedly carrying the strength of a tyrant, resounded.

Previously, there was a government official who wanted her to assassinate a person, but he didn’t treat her respectfully. Just a little government official dared to make a big fuss at her, did he think Liu Yue was a soft-hearted person?

“Ah...” The slaves in the surrounding could only react after a moment. They started to scream in panic.

Liu Yue shot them a glance, and under her cold and austere look, the screaming slaves shut their mouth one by one. Their legs didn’t stop trembling but they did not dare to run. Under Liu Yue’s gaze, every single one of the could only keep silent in fear.

When did the most useless miss, Liu Yue, in the Mu Rong family, had become so fearfully strong?

She continued to lash her whip on Mu Rong Qiu’s body that was filled with injuries. She was in such a pain that her screams slowly weakened, and then not even a weep came out from her.

Seeing that, Liu Yue coldly humphed and folded the whip in her hands. She slowly walked towards the weak Mu Rong Qiu who could only squeak in pain and stepped on her hands. Increasing the pressure on her legs, a cracking sound resounded from Mu Rong Qiu hands as her bones was broken by Liu Yue.

Not even a squeak was heard as Mu Rong Qiu laid limp, thoroughly

fainted.

She would not be able to practice martial arts in the future.

The people around who was already shocked that they were trembling in fear, turned even paler watching the scene.

“In my territory, I am the law.” coldly throwing these words at their face, Liu Yue threw the whip on her hands on the body of Mu Rong Qiu who had fainted. She then turned her body and entered her house.

As a mercenary and assassin, she, Lin was the world number one in terms of abilities. She was the law, and she had set the laws in the assassination and mercenary world.

“Get lost.” Her austere voice carried the tone of an unquestionable order.

Mu Rong Qiu, as the murderer of Mu Rong Liu Yue, you would have to pay the price. Justice must be upheld.

The slaves that were trembling with fear, upon hearing Liu Yue’s order, suddenly moved, as if released from a spell. They hurriedly carried the fainted Mu Rong Qiu and the butler’s daughter, retreated, and ran away like rabbits.

This quiet courtyard, was finally quiet again.

Chapter 7: Demon

Striding inside the house, Liu Yue looked at her hands, shook her head and muttered to herself, "Still not strong enough."

As the number one mercenary, she must be proficient with the Eighteen Weapons Types. Knowing how to wield a whip was not something strange.

However, when she swung the whip today, her strength was far from her previous life's abilities. Her grasp was weak. She had wanted to break four of Butler Wu's daughter's ribs, but she only managed to break three. Such a mistake might make a huge difference in saving a person's life with modern medicinal advancement.

This body still needs training.

Clenching her fist, Liu Yue started to pack her clothes.

Having crippled Mu Rong Qiu today, the elders in the family would definitely demand for justice. She, whom was neither loved by her father nor her grandmother, would not receive any support. Her current martial arts skills had not completely recovered. If she could not face her opponents directly, she could only avoid a direct confrontation with them.

Anyway, the Mu Rong Residence was not a home to her. She had only stayed there to train her body and became strong enough to protect herself. Since she was already stronger now, it was time to leave this place.

Liu Yue also had nothing much to bring, just a piece of jade pendant that she always wore and the pair of clothes on her body. After throwing in another two pieces of clothes, Liu Yue turned her body and started to walk out.

"Running away after beating somebody up, is that one of your laws?" a lazy voice suddenly sounded beside Liu Yue's ears. It came out of nowhere, without any warnings or signs.

Liu Yue was alarmed. What kind of person could manage to come near

her so quietly that even she herself did not realise his presence?

Abruptly turning her body, she saw a figure of a black-haired man wearing a purple robe at the door, glimmering with sunlight. His face was a little dark as he had his back towards the sun.

Sunlight glittered behind his body, the spectacle was simply astonishing.

Liu Yue narrowed her eyes due to the bright sunlight.

Under the golden ray, the silhouette of the man slowly became clearer.

His features were sharp as sharpened sword. He had a pair of lush eyebrows and penetrating eyes, that had a tinge of ruthlessness in them. He was a sight to see with his high nose and cheery red lips that expressed a face of indifference.

On their own, his features were not that outstanding, but when put together in his face, their charm surpassed even the scenery in spring and autumn. He had a grace as high as the mountains and deep as the sea.

He was cold and charming at the same time, two types of personalities that shouldn't have belonged together in the first place. He carried with him an air of evil and ruthlessness, but looked handsome and bright at the same time.

Liu Yue had seen a lot of pretty boys in her previous life, but this man had managed to attract her for a moment.

This man was a demon and a beast fused together.

Chapter 8: The Visiting Person

The visiting person continued to stand outside the house, his arms folded across his chest as he watched Liu Yue. He looked around 16 to 17.

Slowly putting her bundle of clothes down, Liu Yue faced the guy. He had the ability to approach her so silently that she didn't realize his presence. Although it might be because this body was not trained enough, but still, she should not belittle this guy.

"That's none of your business." Liu Yue replied him.

As his mouth slowly stretched upwards, forming a devilish smile, the visiting person carelessly leaned on the side of the door. "Yeah, it's none of my business, but I love to be part of it. You could be my business in the future."

This concluded that this visiting person came to pick a fight with her.

Liu Yue frowned. This person had never appeared in her memory before. He couldn't be from the Mu Rong Family. Since he wasn't, she decided to not be hostile towards him.

Turning her body and swinging her clothes bundle over her shoulders, Liu Yue strode forward and walked towards the door. She growled at him, "Move over."

The purple clothed guy was still leaning on the door although he had heard her words. He neither moved over nor blocked her path, but instead chuckled slowly, eyes full of interest in her.

Seeing that he wasn't stopping her, Liu Yue walked past him and out of the house.

"Some people are coming already. I heard the steps of 43, 44, 45, a total of 45 people. Ah, who do you think have come? Could it be your grandpa?" chuckling in a low voice, he whispered words that were as soft as wind. Those words made Liu Yue stop at her tracks.

The people in the Mu Rong Family was already coming. News sure travel fast.

She couldn't leave anymore.

"I don't mind helping you carry some stuff." An arm white as snow reached out to her, as the purple-clothed guy gave her a devilish smile. Taking the clothes bundle on Liu Yue's shoulders, he turned his waist and revealed a silver coloured sword hung at his waist. He grabbed the sword and took it out from the sheath.

"I'll let you use this, but don't embarrass me." he said as he throw the sword to Liu Yue. The purple-clothed guy gave her a wide smile before retreating a few steps and sat lazily on a chair inside the house. He watched her calmly in this chaotic situation.

Catching the sword in her hands, Liu Yue frowned. Don't embarrass him? F**k off, she was not even related to him at all.

Although she thought that in her mind, she didn't say it out. She held the sword in her hands and took a few steps forward. Standing firm in the middle of her courtyard, the golden ray of sunlight shone magnificently on her body. Although clothed in a piece of old and tattered gown, she still had the arrogance and pressure of a ruler.

At the entrance of the courtyard, noises of people coming could be heard.

Slowly closing her eyes, Liu Yue used her hearing to listen. The steps of the people who were coming were disorderly, some were heavy, some were light. They clearly had different levels of martial arts.

Chapter 9: Who's Afraid of Who?

One, two, three...37 people.

Faintly frowning her brows, she deduced that she could only hear 37 people's steps. But the purple-clothed guy said there were 45, so there were eight people's steps that she couldn't hear.

This could only mean that these eight people were much stronger than her.

Slowly opening her eyes, she lightly put two of her fingers on the sword blade.

"You mongrel, you dared to murder your own cousin..." a thundering voice shouted at her as a bunch of people burst into the courtyard.

Liu Yue's eyebrows twitched a little as she swipe her fingers across the sword blade. The sword immediately made a "weng weng" sound, showing a sharpness beyond compare.

It shone with a silver light, cold as the moon, under the sunlight.

Bursting into the courtyard, they saw Liu Yue standing firm, alone in the wide courtyard, with a sword in hand, as if waiting for them. The austere and silent pressure she emitted stopped them in their tracks, making them afraid to move. This is Liu Yue...

"Fifth uncle, who is the mongrel? I, Mu Rong Liu Yue, am the direct daughter of your third brother. Could it be that even I am a mongrel in your eyes?" Slowly tilting her head, Liu Yue asked in a light tone. That gentle tone flowed with the wind, right as her father, Mu Rong Yi, stepped into the courtyard.

She looked gentle and calm, but her words were sharp and edged.

Mu Rong Yi, having heard what she said, slowly frowned.

Mu Rong Gang also frowned at the same time, and replied sharply, "The blood flowing through third brother's veins is the blood of a talented warrior, fierce as a tiger and that of an elegant noble. He wouldn't do

something as evil as murdering his own relative. If he ever did such an atrocious act, he wouldn't even be a member of our Mu Rong Clan. It was an act not befitting even animals."

"That's right, you evil witch. My daughter did you no wrong, yet you beat her up so much that her body is full of injuries. You even crippled her wrist. Not being able to practice martial arts forever is the same as becoming a cripple. We the Mu Rong Family will definitely not stand such an atrocious person as you in this house! I, Du Yuan Ru will never forgive you." Mu Rong Qiu's mother glared at Liu Yue with her eyes red in anger. She looked like she couldn't wait to tear Liu Yue's flesh apart and drink her blood.

Liu Yue glanced apathetically across the people gathered in her courtyard. There were both young and old and there were a lot of unfamiliar faces. Maybe they had all grown up and she did not recognize their faces. However, this did not matter at all to her.

Slowly wielding the sword in her hands, Liu Yue lifted her head and looked at her Fifth Uncle and Aunt who were furious beyond words. She coldly replied, "She did me no wrong? I, Mu Rong Liu Yue have lived here alone for 8 years and never stepped out of this courtyard in my life. Can I ask, Fifth Uncle and Aunt, where did I cripple Mu Rong Qiu's hands? Where did I beat her up?"

Silence filled the crowd, a short pause had ceased the ongoing spectacle.

Mu Rong Liu Yue still stood at her original place, never moving a single step.

Should this problem have not happened today, these people would not even know that there was a Mu Rong Family member living here.

Chapter 10: I'm not easily bullied

Quiet gazes fell unto Mu Rong Gang. Since Liu Yue had never left this place before, it was obviously Mu Rong Qiu who had come here to cause trouble. Mu Rong Qiu's bossy attitude was well-known in the Mu Rong Residence.

Immediately, the furious Mu Rong family members all started to calm down.

"My daughter took pity on you the loner, that's why she came here to accompany you from time to time. Instead, you had wasted all her good intentions and injured her to such an extent, you vicious person." Mu Rong Gang looked coldly at Liu Yue.

Upon hearing that, Liu Yue couldn't help but laugh. On her ordinary face, her mesmerizing eyes that held the depth of an abyss was filled with sarcasm and irony.

"Vicious? Well, Mu Rong's weapon speciality is the sword, yet today the injuries in her body was from a whip. And I have never owned a whip in my life. Can I ask, did she come to accompany me here with a whip to scratch my back, or to kill the mosquitoes? Or maybe she is a masochist and wanted me to whip her?"

As Mu Rong's spoke, some of the people in the crowd started to snicker and laugh.

Mu Rong Gang's face turned green and white at the same time.

"Fifth Uncle and Aunt, I, Liu Yue, am not that easily bullied. If you want me to seek your forgiveness after being beaten, I would never do it. You should not bully others too deep, those slaves who followed your daughter are not blind. The old Mu Rong Liu Yue is gone. I won't be bullied today, and I would seek revenge for all the wrongs I have suffered."

After she finished, Liu Yue immediately tore the sleeves of her clothes, revealing deep whiplash scars that decorated her whole pearl white arms. Although the scars had already healed a lot in one month, they could still

be clearly seen. It was definitely scars that were caused by whipping.

Silence fell unto the crowd as they watched Liu Yue, Mu Rong Gang and Du Yuan Ru.

“Fifth brother, although I don’t particularly love my daughter, she is still my, Mu Rong Yi’s, daughter.” Mu Rong Yi who had kept silent throughout the whole spectacle suddenly coughed and turned to Mu Rong Gang.

Mu Rong Gang frowned. The matter about her daughter bullying Liu Yue was not recent news, and there were no one who bothered to interfere previously. This Liu Yue had never dared to speak out nor retaliate, but she had suddenly created such a big problem today. There was such a big change in Liu Yue’s attitude, she had actually dared to talk back at him. She had covered all her scars previously but she chose to show them to all these people today. How could he explain this in a good way?

No matter what, she was still Third brother’s daughter.

Du Yuan Ru was also an astute person. Seeing such a reaction from Mu Rong Yi, she immediately turned to him and grovelled, “Third brother, sometimes Qiu-er can get too serious in practising her martial arts. She would sometimes come here to have a spar practice with Liu Yue. She had told me this before, but I had never taken it seriously or asked her about it. I only found out the truth today. Third brother, our children having injuries from a sparring match, isn’t that normal?”

Chapter 11: Sparring Match

Scars from a practice match. It could be a plausible answer.

Standing in the middle of the courtyard, Liu Yue immediately shouted out, not even waiting for Mu Rong Yi to reply Du Yuan Ru. “Since it’s normal to get injured in a spar practice, then why would Fifth Uncle and Aunt came here to interrogate Liu Yue? Liu Yue is still young and couldn’t control her own strength, how could you blame Liu Yue? In a spar practice, your life and death is decided by fate. Even though Liu Yue had so much scars, she never blame or complain to others.”

Following Du Yuan Ru’s words, Liu Yue’s argument couldn’t be rebuked, making Mu Rong Gang and Du Yuan Ru speechless.

The silent Mu Rong Yi had instead began to observe Liu Yue closely. His daughter was so different from the useless daughter who always cried in his memories. Would your personality change as you grew up?

“In a spar practice, your life and death is decided by fate. Good words. Liu Yue-meimei, looks like your physical abilities have increased greatly. Your foolish brother hoped to learn from you today.” In the short silence, an angry voice shouted out. An angry looking 17/18 years old guy walked out from the crowd.

When he came out, the young people around started to sigh a relief. Some of them sneered while some of them mocked Liu Yue, taking joy at her misfortune.

Liu Yue instead looked emotionlessly at the guy in front of her. Who was this person? She had no recollection of him.

“Mu Rong Chun Shui, your Fifth Uncle eldest son. His abilities is only inferior to Mu Rong Chen and Mu Rong Li, amongst the younger generation.” Just as Liu Yue was frowning in an attempt to remember, a faint voice resounded at her ears. It was that purple-clothed guy, who was sitting inside her house, watching this whole drama.

Mu Rong Chen and Mu Rong Li, one of them was her eldest uncle’s son,

and the other was her father's son. But she wasn't close to any of them, she only vaguely remembered there were such two persons. With regards to their abilities, how would she know how powerful they were? So, naturally, she couldn't deduce Mu Rong Chun Shui's abilities.

However, this was not a big problem. Her current strength may not defeat Mu Rong Gang's generation, but why would she fear the younger generation?

Looking at Mu Rong Chun Shui who was pointing his sword at her, Liu Yue clenched her jaws. She raised her left hand and beckoned Mu Rong Chun Shui to come with her forefingers, arrogant like always.

She didn't have any good feelings towards all of the Mu Rong family members.

As Liu Yue agreed, the crowds started to clap their hands and cheered for the fight.

The cheers made Mu Rong Chun Shui's face ashen. He did not like to fight someone who was weaker than him, but his little sister was the one injured, so it was another story.

Sword ready in his hands, Mu Rong Chun Shui said, "I'll let you attack me three times."

Chapter 12: Martial Arts Ability

“There’s no need to.” an emotionless voice replied as Liu Yue suddenly appeared right in front of Mu Rong Chun Shui.

Mu Rong Chun Shui’s eyes flashed with indignation. How dare she be rude towards him? He would teach her a lesson.

Moving in an instant, his sword blade had already flew towards Liu Yue.

Liu Yue was not even flustered with the coming attack. Instead, she flew towards the sword, her sword pointing towards Mu Rong Chun Shui’s throat.

Use your own life to take another’s life.

This method of taking somebody down with them made the crowd of people watching gasp with shock. Nobody would ever think that Liu Yue would use such a method.

Mu Rong Chun Shui frowned. Who would want to die together with her? He twisted his sword and retreated a step back.

His legs had only started to move back when the sword in his hand was suddenly thrown up in the sky. Then, Liu Yue, who was right in front of him, suddenly disappeared. Before he could react, a cold and sharp object poked at his neck. That sharp tip made Mu Rong Chun Shui’s face turned pale “You lose.” Standing behind Mu Rong Chun Shui’s back and pointing the sword at his neck, was Liu Yue.

What she had learnt was not a superior fighting technique, but assassination techniques. Her sword moves would draw blood, not those kind of moves for a sword dance performance. It was a sword skill with killing intent.

To take out his life with hers, he was definitely not worth it.

The entire courtyard was filled with silence as the wind softly blew through the courtyard. Every Mu Rong family members standing on the side were dumbstruck, mouth agape.

One move, with just one move, the third most powerful warrior amongst the younger generation, Mu Rong Chun Shui, was defeated under her hands.

Heavens, this was indeed hard to believe.

The courtyard was filled with cheerful and beautiful sun light, but it could not mask the thick killing intent swirling in the air.

“Pa, pa, pa.” A single clapping sound started as two people appeared at the courtyard’s entrance. One of them was a cultured and refined nobleman who was clapping, his face full of amusement.

The other was the Mu Rong clan’s head, Mu Rong Wu Di, the person who was celebrating his birthday today.

Even though he was sixty, he didn’t look old at all. He even looked capable and strong, like he was still in his prime.

“Liu Yue, lower your sword. How would you look like if you kept pointing the sword to your older brother?” Mu Rong Wu Di looked at Liu Yue with his clear eyes. Although his words were full of reproach, everyone could hear the excitement in his voice.

As a family of generals, an individual’s strength in martial arts would decide their status in this Mu Rong Clan.

“Yes, don’t be undignified in front of the Crown Prince. Liu Yue, come here and greet his highness, the Crown Prince.” This time, Mu Rong Yi’s face flushed red with pride and happiness, as he beckoned Liu Yue to come.

Chapter 13: Coward

A mere 13-year-old girl managed to defeat Mu Rong Family's third most promising youth, although her fighting technique was a little bit weird. Liu Yue had never had any martial art training since young, but today she displayed such a strange martial art technique. But why would this matter? She was his daughter, Mu Rong Yi's daughter.

Since she was his, Mu Rong Yi's daughter, he didn't mind all of these problems.

"What if I said no?" Liu Yue coldly replied, still pointing her sword on Mu Rong Chun Shui's trembling neck. A drop of fresh blood trickled down slowly, and a thick air of killing intent enveloped Mu Rong Chun Shui.

Mu Rong Chun Shui did not come to spar with her. He came to kill her. So why would she let him go?

Silence engulfed the courtyard. Everyone present were either looking at Liu Yue or Mu Rong Wu Di. Mu Rong Gang's face was white as sheets. It had been hard for his Fifth House (TLN: Mu Rong Gang is the fifth son) to train such a talent, if Mu Rong Chun Shui dies today, then their Fifth House...

"Father..." Du Yuan Ru was already trembling as she seek for help from Mu Rong Wu Di. However, seeing Mu Rong Wu Di's expressionless face, she couldn't bring herself to speak the rest of her sentence.

It was a deafening silence. Even in such a large courtyard, the sound of fallen leaves could be heard.

Liu Yue slowly tilted her head and licked her lower lips, her gaze blood-thirsty. She was really going to kill Mu Rong Chun Shui.

In the silence, Mu Rong Wu Di nodded, "In a spar match, there is no place for a discussion. It's all up to you."

Just that sentence announced the final decision.

"Father..." All of a sudden, blood left Mu Rong Gang's face. He stumbled

back as his legs loses strength, while Du Yuan Ru had immediately fainted.

Every single Mu Rong family members gasped as they watched the Mu Rong clan head abandoning Mu Rong Chun Shui.

Mu Rong Chun Shui, who was held at sword tip by Liu Yue, started trembling all over. His fear over his imminent death couldn't be hidden any more.

Watching Mu Rong Chun Shui who could not stop trembling like a rabbit, Liu Yue smiled coldly, "Coward."

With one word, Liu Yue put away her sword. This person was not even worth for her to kill.

Seeing Liu Yue letting Mu Rong Chun Shui go, the surrounding Mu Rong family members heaved a sigh of relief and cheered at the same time.

Mu Rong Wu Di, seeing this, smiled slowly as he beckoned Liu Yue to come, "Come, meet the Crown Prince."

Chapter 14: Sudden Comeback

“Heroes are made in their youths. Such a blessing that the Mu Rong family has a girl like this. Blessing.” Tian Zhen Empire’s Crown Prince, who was wearing a long yellow robe and standing beside Mu Rong Wu Di’s side, said, as he smiled at Liu Yue.

Tian Zhen Empire had an open-minded culture. As long as they had the ability, no one would care if they were women or men. Even women could be granted a government official’s position, or even conferred the title of “King”.

(TLN: So there’s an emperor, and there would be many kings under him. Emperor’s oldest son would be Crown Prince, and the rest of the sons would be “Kings”. A hero who has contributed many achievements could also be conferred titles, highest title is “King”.)

Putting away her sword, Liu Yue walked towards the Crown Prince. Although she was arrogant, she couldn’t offend somebody that should not be offended.

A person’s strength could only go so far, but a country’s strength was unlimited.

As Liu Yue walked nearer, the Tian Zhen Empire Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng, raised his eyebrows as he saw the silver sword in her hands, that shone under the bright sun light. Mu Rong Wu Di who was standing beside him also blinked his eyes.

“Very good, you didn’t embarrass me.” Under the warm sunlight, an overbearing figure commented with a lazy voice, his long purple robe trailing behind him.

“Third brother.” Xuan Yuan Cheng looked at the person coming out from Liu Yue’s house as a smile bloomed in his expressions.

As for the other Mu Rong family members, seeing Tian Zhen Empire’s King of Yi, Xuan Yan Che, walked out from Liu Yue’s house, started to whisper around. They suddenly came to an conclusion. How could the

person who was abandoned and isolated for so many years learn martial arts? If she was thought by the King of Yi, then it would not be surprising that she managed to become so strong in such a short time.

Previously, Mu Rong Gang had not taken much notice of the sword in Liu Yue's hands because he was too furious. He only realized that the sword was actually King of Yi's personal sword after Xuan Yuan Che showed himself.

It was a treasure sword that was bestowed by the current emperor.

In a moment, the smart-alecks nodded their heads one by one.

They didn't think, in such a tightly guarded general's residence, could a person just treat it as their own backyard, coming in and out as they please?

Seeing that the purple-robed guy was actually Tian Zhen Emperor's third son, Liu Yue only frowned as she threw the sword back at him.

"Thanks."

However, with a wave of his sleeves, Xuan Yuan Che had flicked the sword back to Liu Yue.

Liu Yue frowned as she caught the sword and looked towards Xuan Yuan Che.

"I'll let you borrow it for a while." waving his sleeves, Xuan Yuan Che dragged the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng out of the courtyard.

Glittering sunlight shone at that purple robe, dazzling all the others present.

Chapter 15: Imperial Edict

The surrounding Mu Rong family members looked towards Liu Yue with jealousy.

Liu Yue felt their gaze but chose to ignore them. She looked at the sword in her hands. This person was really a mystery.

The next few hours made Liu Yue finally realized the meaning of going straight to heaven from hell, or the feeling when an ugly duckling turned into swan. The change was that drastic.

From a secluded, dilapidated house, she moved to the main residence. Her tattered, coarse clothes turned into silk and satin. Her tasteless, sparse meals turned into exotic delicacies from around the country.

She had 20 maids for manual labour, 20 maids that would serve in the inner mansion, and four personal handmaids, all bestowed by Mu Rong Wu Di's wife, Xiang An Chen. All maids were personally selected of the highest quality by her grandmother.

Everything turned so good that it couldn't be better.

However, she was not satisfied.

The real Liu Yue might be so touched that she'd cry, but she won't. She had experienced richness and extravagant life before, so she was not attracted by these.

In the evening, the Mu Rong residence was even more lively. Other than Mu Rong Wu Di's 60th birthday celebration, there was also a new expert in the Mu Rong family, so there were even more things to celebrate for.

Liu Yue's seat was right beside Mu Rong Wu Di. She watch the lively scene as if she was watching a play, with the others as the characters in a story and she, the spectator.

Her father and stepmother were smiling so sweetly that it seemed flowers bloomed around them, as they received the flatteries and compliments from the rest of the family. They looked even happier than Liu Yue.

(TLN: stepmother aka the main wife. Her birth mother was a concubine)

However, other than the false well wishes, Liu Yue had also clearly noticed the people hiding maliciously in the dark.

Smirking quietly, she, Liu Yue, wouldn't even care about this Mu Rong Residence.

By tomorrow, Mu Rong Residence and she, Liu Yue, would be two different entities. She would never want to stay in the Mu Rong Residence another day.

Under the night sky, the stars glimmered like beads of diamonds.

The bright moon light sprinkled the earth as it shone down a silver light.

Then, dawn breaks.

"Miss, wake up. The elder wanted to see you." Four servant girls stood by her bed, holding washing basins and perfume as they quietly woke Liu Yue up.

Liu Yue slowly turned her body and lazily stretched herself. Bright sunlight greeted her views. She straightened her hands intending to give the four servant girls a karate chop on their necks.

Yesterday, she was stuck with those old geezers that kept latching on to her. Right now, it was her chance to sneak away.

"Miss, miss, there's a big incident, a big incident!" Before she even managed to move her hands, there was a furor outside her room. A servant girl barged into the room suddenly.

Following right behind the servant girl was her stepmother, Yi Qiu Yin.

Chapter 16: Marriage Bestowment

“I’ll go myself.” Liu Yue stood up as she coldly replied.

“What a good girl you are. You are so capable even though you are only 13 years old.” Yi Qiu Yin was grinning from ear to ear.

Hearing this, Liu Yue didn’t even give a shit.

The Mu Rong Residence Hall was crowded with people kneeling on the ground.

“Accept the Mandate of Heaven. The Emperor has announced an imperial edict: Miss Mu Rong Liu Yue from the Mu Rong General’s Residence is an elegant, intelligent lady with both integrity and talent. She will be bestowed a marriage with the Third Prince, Xuan Yuan Che, and granted the position of the Princess Consort. The auspicious date will be selected at a later. End.”

Sharp breaths could be heard all over the room. Liu Yue’s face turned black with anger. What does Xuan Yuan Che want from marrying her?

“Thank you for Your Majesty’s grace.” Mu Rong Wu Di immediately bowed his gratefulness. There were a lot of people from his family with prestigious positions, but there were none who had received a Princess Consort position before. Today was his family’s lucky day.

The whole house was beaming with happiness, the only person with a grumpy face was Liu Yue.

“However, Eunuch Li, my Liu Yue is only 13 years old, this...” Families would usually wait until their girls were 14 years old before discussing their marriage. But Liu Yue was only 13 years old...The Old General could only laugh awkwardly.

Eunuch Li quickly replied heartily, “It does not matter. The Third Prince has said that he would marry her first and then wait until the Princess Consort is old enough. Old General, your family’s Liu Yue is really fortunate, the Third Prince had even personally asked a favour from His Majesty to write this Imperial Edict. He would definitely take good care of

Princess Liu Yue in the future.”

“Really, then it’s okay. Haha, it’s alright then.” The hall was immediately filled with sounds of joy.

“Oh right, Princess Consort, the Third Prince had also asked me to pass you this letter.” Eunuch Li was smiling sweetly as he took out a letter from his robe, passing it to Liu Yue respectfully.

Liu Yue opened the letter to read it.

“Little imp, don’t give me a chance. If I catch you sneaking away, don’t blame me for breaking the promise of waiting till you are older.”

The flamboyant and beautiful calligraphy swam across Liu Yue’s frozen face.

This chap had actually seen through her thoughts and knew that she would leave the Mu Rong Residence.

Amusement filled her eyes, as Liu Yue laughed aloud instead of getting angry. She smiled with hidden intention as she thought to give him a visit.

When Mu Rong Wu Di and the others saw Liu Yue smiling, they had thought that Liu Yue was also earnestly hoping for this marriage. They became even more overjoyed.

Liu Yue faced an endless stream of well-wishes and congratulations all over again.

It seemed like in these two days, good things kept happening in the Mu Rong Residence. Yesterday they had welcomed distinguished guests from the Tian Zhen Empire Royal Family, and today another guest had come bearing an Imperial Edict.

Mu Rong Residence had received so many gifts that they were reluctant to receive more.

Liu Yue didn’t even bother with all the guests as she shut herself in her room, training her martial arts skills.

Chapter 17: The Spar in the Bathroom (1)

Liu Yue had suddenly become the Phoenix of the Mu Rong Residence. Her popularity even exceeded Mu Rong Xing, her cousin, who was dubbed the most beautiful woman in the Tian Zhen Empire.

With regards to the matter of her shutting herself in her room and training her martial art skills, the elders were glad to see her so hardworking. The younger generations didn't dare to approach her and could only hover outside her door, hence Liu Yue finally gotten the peace she needed.

The moon rises in the night sky as night falls, calm as water.

Liu Yue was wearing a blue-coloured male robe as she blew the light candles off. In the darkness, she sneaked away, running quickly through the endless dark night.

None of the guards guarding outside her door realized that Liu Yue had escaped from her room.

When there was a sudden change in brightness, people's eyes would tend to need a few moments to adjust. Liu Yue had used this moment to kill people before, but right now she only used it to sneak away.

She had already prepared everything during the day. Concealed in the darkness of the night, Liu Yue charged towards Tian Zhen Empire Royal Palace.

With her sharp senses, she had already clearly identified all of the expert martial artists that Xuan Yuan Che had ordered to guard the Mu Rong Residence. She could not hear even a single sound from them, but she could sense their presence. Sensing presence was one of an assassin's basic skill.

Liu Yue hadn't learnt the Light Body Technique in this world, but she had superb stealth skills, which would definitely surpass every single person in this world.

(TLN: Light Body Technique - Qing Gong. Basically it's a martial art

technique that allows you to fly. Let's pretend it exist.)

Her small body moved like a cheetah as she dashed quietly without a sound in the dark night. She soon arrived at Xuan Yuan Che's domain, and she quietly moved towards his residence.

In this world, there was nobody who could get away with threatening her.

She soon arrived at Liu Li Hall, the palace hall where Xuan Yuan Che lived in. His Duke's Mansion was still under construction, hence, although he had been conferred the title "Duke", he was still living in his Prince's Residence.

(TLN: Sorry guys...changing Xuan Yuan Che's title from 'King' to 'Duke' (referring to chapter 14). Coz it's kinda confusing that the King's position was below the Crown Prince's) And now, this large hall was filled with mist, and it was so quiet that even sounds of water dripping into the water surface could split the air.

Xuan Yuan Che leaned on a white jade bath as he soaked his body inside the warm water. His long black hair was draped over his back. Beads of water covered his ivory skin that was flushed with a shade of pink. In the thick fog, those beads of water slowly trickled down his skin. This scene, although it was only his back, was alluring in its own way.

Liu Yue who was hiding right outside the bath, frowned her brows slightly. He had actually made her watch such a steamy scene. She had watched a lot of ** in her previous life, but there was never a person who could make her feel this way just by watching his back. (TLN: ** is in the raws...) This Xuan Yuan Che must really be a devil.

Still frowning her brows, Liu Yue stealthily moved closer. Looks like she came at the right moment.

"Little imp, I really shouldn't have belittled you." Liu Yue had only taken one step as a hearty sound of laughter burst out suddenly.

Chapter 18: The Spar in the Bathroom (2)

Liu Yue quietly laughed in her heart, despite the shocked expression she had on the outside. Her figure disappeared suddenly as her sword charged towards Xuan Yuan Che, who had quickly retreated back with his Light Body Technique.

Xuan Yuan Che who was soaking in the water, had suddenly dodged Liu Yue's sword as he snatched the piece of long cloth at his side. The cloth which had been soaked from the steam in the bath, turned into a coiling dragon in Xuan Yuan Che's hands. The cloth shot towards Liu Yue who was hurriedly retreating backwards.

It was as fast as lightning, imbued with his inner energy.

In just a moment, a strong, powerful inner energy surrounded her. Before she could even react, that piece of long cloth had already twisted around her body.

The cloth tightened at her waist as her body suddenly flew across the air.

There was only sounds of water splashing as Liu Yue fell into the bath, right into Xuan Yuan Che's embrace.

His enchanting face was flushed red with steam. From the back, Xuan Yuan Che's red skin could pass as a devil. His real identity should have been a thousand year old devil, who had the ability to dazzle human beings and take their souls away.

The corners of his mouth curled upwards as he smiled with amusement. Xuan Yuan Che's hands rubbed across his Liu Yue's red lips as he spoke, "You couldn't even let me rest a bit. But, I like you this way..." (TLN: Are u masochist...?) Just as he finished his words, that flirtatious look on his face suddenly disappeared as Xuan Yuan Che looked down towards his chest. A cold, sharp blade was piercing his skin. It was a spring-loaded arrow hidden in Liu Yue's sleeves. Its black arrowhead was aimed right at his heart.

Liu Yue hid the shock from her expression, as she slowly laughed. In a long distance fight, without a cannon or sniper, she could never match these ancient people who could leap onto roofs and vault over walls. But in a short distance fight, nobody would dare to claim they are better than her.

“Do you still like me this way?” An enchanting smile bloomed across Liu Yue’s lips, with a tinge of blood-lust and a sneer.

Xuan Yuan Che who was looking at his chest mirthlessly slowly lifted his head and looked straight into Liu Yue’s eyes.

Her small oval face was quite ordinary, but that pitch-black, deep, piercing eyes had emitted a charm that blew his breath away. That smile on her lips brought out all of her charm, making him unable to tear away his gaze from her.

Dammit, her face was as expressionless as stagnant water previously. But with this smile, she had actually turned as bright as the sun. Xuan Yuan Che was not a person who had never seen beauties before, but he was nevertheless deeply attracted to her at this moment.

His mouth slowly curled up into a charming, devilish smile as Xuan Yuan Che laughed aloud.

Completely not caring about the arrow on his chest, Xuan Yuan Che reached out his hands to touch Liu Yue’s long hair that was wet from the bath, as he replied, “I’m liking you more and more, what would you do?”

Chapter 19: The Spar in the Bathroom (3)

Liu Yue frowned as she tightened her grip on her spring-loaded arrow. The moment she used a little bit of strength, the spring-loaded arrow would have pierced into Xuan Yuan Che's heart. "You could like me more."

Xuan Yuan Che looked at Liu Yue who was small-sized, yet bossy as hell, standing right in front of him, and suddenly laughed aloud. His big hands started to rub Liu Yue's head as he laughed, "Yes, yes. You are very special. I like it."

Seeing that Xuan Yuan Che was not even afraid of her arrow in the least, Liu Yue harrumphed coldly, "It's a pity that I don't like you at all. I came here today to warn you. Stop interfering with my life, I don't have the time to play with you."

After finishing her sentence, she straightened her idle right hand into a chop and swung it towards his neck.

(TLN: Karate chop to the neck = instant loss of consciousness)

"Little imp, your claws are quite sharp." Xuan Yuan Che laughed lightly as he suddenly moved his hand and grabbed Liu Yue's sleeves.

When Liu Yue saw this, her eyes flashed with fury as she set the arrow in her hands off.

The blasted arrowhead did not draw blood as Liu Yue felt the arrowhead slid away. Xuan Yuan Che's flesh was weirdly shrinking as the arrowhead had pierced through his outer skin layer, but it couldn't pierce deeper.

Dammit, the strength of her hands was not enough.

Liu Yue frowned her brows. This body only had one tenth of her previous strength, if only she had regained her previous condition, such a problem wouldn't have existed.

"The current you would not be my opponent." A cold snicker resounded in her ears. Though cold, they carried an air of arrogance.

Liu Yue wrinkled her brows and suddenly hit the water surface. With her body slanted, she flew across the bath and landed on the edge of the bath.

With her attack foiled, she didn't have another chance to attack.

A thick air of energy had surrounded her quickly. It was his inner energy.

Xuan Yuan Che who was gloriously naked from head to toe got out from the bath, his tall figure fully exposed in Liu Yue's eyes. His messy long hair draped over his broad shoulders as cherry red nipples decorated his porcelain white chest. His waist flowed smoothly down to his perfect long legs, as six-packs strong looking abs covered his stomach.

Beads of water blossomed on his skin that was flushed red from the steam, giving out a smell of **. This person was indeed the heaven's masterpiece in perfection.

Liu Yue raised her brows. This person, damn his sex appeal.

As her fingers slowly moved in her sleeves, she prepared her final attack.

That unparalleled face was brimming with a devilish smile, as Xuan Yuan Che watched Liu Yue who was standing at the edge of the bath. He walked closer step by step, as his eyes rudely feasted on Liu Yue's body, who was drenched from head to toe.

Chapter 20: The Spar in the Bathroom (4)

That mesmerizing eyes swept through her, and his gaze fell on the exposed flesh on her shoulders. Seeing her exposed shoulders, Xuan Yuan Che's eyes turned serious little by little.

Liu Yue frowned seeing this.

After a few steps forward, Xuan Yuan Che stood right in front of Liu Yue, his gaze still fixated on Liu Yue's exposed shoulders. He reached out his hands to gently caress that flesh.

There was endless whip scars all over her shoulders.

As his fingers slowly caressed her shoulders, Liu Yue felt a gentleness that could not be described with words. Then, Xuan Yuan Che slowly crouched down, lifting up Liu Yue's trousers. That snow white legs was also filled with scars.

Looking at Xuan Yuan Che crouching in front of her, she slowly extended her hands and put it on his forehead.

"Is it still painful?" a pair of large, warm hands rubbed her skin that was abused with scars. A flash of killing-intent appeared in Xuan Yuan Che's eyes, yet his hands was still gently caressing her scars.

Is it still painful? Liu Yue froze and her hands stopped moving. Nobody had ever asked her that question before. She was the number one assassin, and everyone had regarded her as a piece of iron or steel, unbeatable. Nobody had ever asked her if her injuries was painful or not.

The previous Mu Rong Liu Yue had also no one to care for her well-being.

Raising her eyebrows, she thought that this feeling was strange, but it felt nice.

Liu Yue lowered her head and looked at Xuan Yuan Che, who was kneeling right in front of her.

The scars she had hidden... Although it had disappeared a lot, the

marks could still be clearly seen.

Xuan Yuan Che's alluring eyes turned sombre as his warm hands explored every inch of Liu Yue's flesh. Although his gaze carried a little blood-lust, he gently said, "In the future, I would be your mountain. Whoever dared to bully you, I'll return it tooth for a tooth, eye for an eye."

Such gentle words had actually bore the weight of a fierce and unshakable determination.

I'll be your mountain. These simple words had actually stirred up a storm in Liu Yue's heart.

Liu Yue looked into Xuan Yuan Che's eyes. That pair of eyes shone with a grim and austere look, yet they couldn't hide a flash of love as he said those words. This person had meant the words he said.

Mountain. Yet again, nobody had ever said these words to her. Correction, nobody had ever dared to say these words to her. She had united the sky and she was the cloud and rain. Mountain, humph, she would never believe that there would be a person who was worthy enough for her to depend on.

However, even the strongest person would long for a safe harbour to rest. Even the proudest person would need a warm embrace that they could depend on. It wasn't because she didn't want to rely on anyone, she just hadn't found the right person, and nobody had ever made such a promise to her.

Laughing slowly, Liu Yue lifted Xuan Yuan Che's face and said, "I would never forgive anyone who bullied me, even if it is you."

Though she said those words, she took back her hands that were resting on Xuan Yuan Che's forehead. That's enough, today, with his kind words, she would let him go.

Chapter 21: You Are Mine

Xuan Yuan Che didn't know that he had just escaped from death. He thought it was fine as there wasn't any inner energy emitted by Liu Yue nor hidden weapon hidden in her hands. But he didn't know that what Liu Yue had intended to use...wasn't inner energy.

He should be angry listening to Liu Yue's cold words, but looking at those whip scars, he couldn't have the heart to be angry with her.

He laughed, "What are you doing trying to act strong in front of me? I would never bully you. There, from this day onwards, you are mine. Find me if you have any problems. You don't have to pretend that you are strong in front of me. You don't have to face everything alone. I'm your husband, and I'm not just for decoration."

As he said that, he stood up and drew a crooked smile. He reached out and rubbed Liu Yue's nose, his eyes full of understanding and love.

Yesterday she was independent and unyielding, and when she attacked, she did it cold-heartedly without mercy. He understood why. She wasn't like that from the beginning, she became that way due to her difficulties. She was strong, proud and cold-hearted, but she was also lonely. Just like him, she was also alone.

That's why in the moment he saw her, he felt that they, the lone wolves, should belong together.

As Liu Yue looked at Xuan Yuan Che's eyes, she felt that he was opening himself to her, so much that she felt that she could understand him thoroughly.

He was similar to her, that's why he chose her.

Looking at Xuan Yuan Che from head to toe, every inch of his skin was a perfection. His piercing eyes shone with a great sincerity.

She changed her mind.

"If I am yours, then, you...are mine." With such a perfect guy as her husband, maybe, she wouldn't be at a disadvantage.

In her previous life, she had never gone through such things. She had never married a significant other. Yet in this life, she was unexpectedly pushed into a marriage. Ah, she could only accept her life as it is.

Xuan Yuan Che froze when he heard her, and then laughed aloud. Amusedly, he said, "Yes, yes. I'm yours."

He agreed in a joking, teasing way.

Liu Yue, seeing the amused Xuan Yuan Che, snapped in a domineering tone, "You should keep this point in mind. You should never betray me, otherwise... you won't be able to repay the price of betraying me."

After saying these words, Liu Yue decided not to leave anymore. She tore away her clothes that was thoroughly drenched, turned her body and walked towards Xuan Yuan Che's bed.

Since he was hers, then his place should be hers too.

Chapter 22: Recovery of Martial Arts Skill

Watching Liu Yue brashly walking towards his bed, Xuan Yuan Che could only raise his eyebrows at her overbearing attitude. Yet, amusement filled his eyes. She had actually meant her words.

Looking down, he saw a yellow mark at his fingertips. Xuan Yuan Che lifted his eyes and looked at Liu Yue from afar. Turns out that his Princess Consort had had another trick up her sleeves.

The enchanting night passed as the night wind blew.

Time passed quickly, and soon, it was already a month.

“Boom!” A sharp and clear shattering noise resounded. Liu Yue was in the Palace Courtyard, shattering a large stone with a simple dagger into small pieces.

Standing closely guarding behind her was Xuan Yuan Che’s subordinate, a Dragon Rider Guard. He was Qiu Hen, first in command. His lips twitched endlessly as he looked disbelievingly at his Duke’s Princess Consort, the ordinary looking Mu Rong Liu Yue.

If one had trained their Inner Skills to the level of the Duke, they could probably shatter the big rock with a sword. But she didn’t even use Inner Energy, she only used a weird style of martial arts skill. How could such a small, insignificant dagger had the power to shatter such a big rock?

His Duke had even ordered him to protect the Princess Consort. With such a skill, why would she need extra protection? It seemed like she would be the one protecting him when danger comes.

Qiu Hen’s eyes were filled with shock and disbelief, but they were also filled with adoration and respect for the Princess Consort.

Their Princess Consort was still so young.

And she was already so powerful.

In the courtyard, Liu Yue held her dagger as a proud smile bloomed on her lips.

She had finally recovered her former martial arts skills and strength.

She swept her gaze on the big rock. Every thing on earth would have its weakest point, the same goes with this rock. When its weakest point was attacked, it would definitely crumble in an instant.

What she had learnt in her previous life was to find her enemy's weakest point and how to give them a fatal attack.

Killing people was the same. You would not need an extravagant, powerful martial arts skills, nor a sharp or mighty weapon. You would only need a strike, a fatal strike. Even with a rusty sword, it would become a sharp and powerful weapon in her hands.

Flinging her dagger up and down recklessly, Liu Yue turned around and said to Qiu Hen, "Did you finish making the thing that I requested?"

When Qiu Hen saw Liu Yue looking at him, he immediately bowed his body in reflex as he replied, "Replying Princess Consort, we have finished preparing. It is in the palace hall right now."

Liu Yue nodded as she listened, then turned her body and entered the Palace Hall. It was a preparation that she needed. If she couldn't make a cannon here, a small improvement with the current weapon technology wouldn't be a problem for her.

Chapter 23: A Gambling Game

After Qiu Hen respectfully watched Liu Yue walked away, he suddenly jerked his head up. She wasn't exactly an official Princess Consort yet as she had not married the Duke. Why would he be so courteous towards her and listened to all of her orders?

He was the leader of the best army in Tian Zhen Empire, the Dragon Riders. Even the 3rd-ranked official in Tian Zhen Empire would have shown respect to him.

Qiu Hen pouted his lips. Liu Yue had been emitting an aura of a grand ruler that made him follow her unconsciously.

He couldn't rebel against her.

These few days, Liu Yue's powerful talent had grown tremendously, and it would continue even in the future. That kind of strength that he had seen her release sometimes was so much more powerful than his. He guessed that only their Duke could probably match her strength.

"Officer Han, Officer... Princess Consort..." Inside the palace hall, as Liu Yue was just about to lift her new weapon, the guard who had always been staying at Xuan Yuan Che's side, Yan Hu, suddenly charged into the hall.

Officer Han who was standing at Liu Yue's side immediately frowned, "Why are you so flustered? What would you do if you startled Princess Consort?"

Yan Hu immediately calmed his breath down and stood respectfully at the door.

"What happened?" Liu Yue's gaze swept past Yan Hu in a flash as she asked.

In this one month, she had been staying at Xuan Yuan Che's Palace. She knew very well that these guards would usually not say anything much. Yan Hu was usually very serious, yet today he displayed such anxiety. Even though he was calm now, his eyes and expression were still full of

anxiety. It must have been a problem concerning Xuan Yuan Che, otherwise, even if the sky collapse, they would never shown such an expression.

Yan Hu was also military-trained. With nothing to do these few days, he had also observed Liu Yue's fighting skills. At the beginning, he didn't think much on her clean and concise technique. But as she trained her skill day by day, he finally had a whole new level of respect for Liu Yue.

This was because he knew that her certain-kill technique would definitely be too much for him to receive, even if it was only a single attack. Thus, in this Tian Zhen Empire that placed utmost importance on each individual's strength, he could only feel respect, even towards such a young girl.

In the moment he heard Liu Yue's question, Yan Hu immediately replied aloud, "Today, when the Duke was training in the millitary drill ground, the Crown Prince, The second prince, the Fifth Prince and the Seventh Prince had came. They had heard the news that Princess Consort was staying at this place. So they had persuaded the Duke to invite them to his house for a drink.

As they talked, the Princes had suggested a gambling game, and the Duke had agreed.

However, they had invited a gambling expert to play for them. Right now, the Duke had already lost two of his residences. I am here right now because he had ordered me to get the land deeds."

Yan Hu tried to explain the whole situation clearly to Liu Yue, as shortly as he could.

Chapter 24: Three Versus One

“Expert gambler.” Liu Yue rolled up her sleeves and coldly harrumphed.

“Let’s go and see.” With a wave of her hands, Liu Yue took off the men’s clothes that she was wearing for her training and walked out of the door.

Yan Hu, Official Han and even Qiu Hen could only look at each other, and then they hurried to follow her.

Thousand Flowers Pavillion. It was the most famous and most expensive House of Pleasure in Tian Zhen Empire. Everyone that visited this place was of high social status. The ladies in this place were all talented and good looking. They had clean reputations where they boasted their skills and talents instead of selling their bodies. However, technically, this place was still a brothel. It was just a little more prestigious.

Leaping down from her horse carriage, Liu Yue’s gaze swept past the brothel’s name.

She smiled coldly as she strode inside. Yan Hu hurriedly opened the path for her. The brothel’s Madame immediately smiled and welcomed them inside.

“Third Brother, open it quickly, don’t be such a sore loser.” She hadn’t even took a step in when she heard loud voices coming from the room.

“Seventh Brother, you are exaggerating. Amongst all the princes, Third Brother is the richest, he even had three times more assets than Oldest Brother. Anyone in this world can say that they couldn’t afford to lose, but Third Brother couldn’t.”

A gentle voice that seemed to side on Xuan Yuan Che came forth, but in reality, he was just after Xuan Yuan Che’s wealth.

“Oldest Brother’s wealth is boundless like the ocean, and in the future the whole world would be his. If I am wealthier than Oldest Brother, Second Brother, where would you place Oldest Brother?” an indifferent voice replied. His voice seemed indifferent, but in reality, he was hiding deep intentions.

“Haha, this topic has gotten too far off. Let’s come back to the main topic. Third Brother, quickly open it.” a cheerful voice quipped.

“Yes, yes, quickly open it. If Third Brother didn’t put your houses on stake, we wouldn’t have extra houses to let Third Brother use in the future.” The room was suddenly bursting with laughter.

“Your Third Brother hasn’t become that poor yet. Just a few houses, it is not even worth mentioning.” Xuan Yuan Che’s voice resounded, calm and collected.

So generous, Liu Yue smirked as she reached out her hands and pushed the door open, stepping into the room.

“Let me open it.” Liu Yue declared with a clear voice as she swept her gaze through the people in the room. She then walked towards Xuan Yuan Che, who didn’t have any prostitute at his side.

Xuan Yuan Che’s dark gaze that was devoid of expression fall on her.

Xuan Yuan Che didn’t expect that Liu Yue would come. After overcoming his initial shock, he looked Liu Yue deeply, and then lazily leaned on his chair and said, “Sure, open it.”

“Who is she? What gave her the right?” The Seventh Prince who looked gentle yet had a loud voice observed Liu Yue from head to toe, immediately looking down on her.

Chapter 25: Let Me Gamble

The wise Second Prince and the gentleman Fifth Prince, seeing Xuan Yuan Che's reaction, carefully observed Liu Yue, wisely choosing not to say anything.

"Seventh Brother, this is your future sister-in-law, don't be so rude." The Crown Prince who didn't comment at all during the earlier banter reproached the Seventh Prince after nodding towards Liu Yue.

"So this is the ugly..." Xuan Yuan Che had suddenly given him a death glare before the Seventh Prince could finish his words. The sharpness of those glare made the Seventh Prince shut his mouth at once.

Previously, even after losing so much, Xuan Yuan Che was not angry at all.

"Since it is our future sister-in-law, of course you have the right to open it." The young yet mature Second Prince smiled towards Liu Yue who was already sitting at Xuan Yuan Che's side.

Liu Yue nodded and smiled at back at him, then looked at the man with two lines of mustache sitting across her, who looked like a molester. Those exceptionally clean hands that looked like it was carefully taken care of, didn't escape her eyes.

Inwardly snorting in her mind, Liu Yue reached out to open the cup. At the same time, she glanced at the other side's opened dices, a six and two fives. Their chances of winning was already very high.

Her fingers made a small tap on the cup, unseen by normal eyes. Then, Liu Yue lifted the lid.

"6, 6, 5." Seventh Prince's eyes bulged open as he stared at the dices in front of him. Disbelief filled his expression.

The man beside him who looked like a molester was also staring in disbelief. He glanced at Liu Yue but then quickly averted his eyes.

"Che, how do you guys play this game?" Liu Yue asked cheerfully, as she played with the lid and smiled towards Xuan Yuan Che who was sitting

beside her.

Xuan Yuan Che raised his brows. Liu Yue was suddenly so affectionate towards him...Ah, there's something up her sleeves... He immediately laughed with her and replied, "It was Second Brother who set up the rule. Everyone will have a turn as the banker. Each game has three turns. The amount to gamble for each turn is set by the banker in charge of that game. Seventh Brother was the banker in this game, now it is my turn."

Liu Yue nodded after hearing the rules. She then turned towards Seventh Prince and showed a childish expression of a thirteen year old girl as she frowned and said, "So it is our turn...Then, I'll bet this much... If our luck has already been used up for the previous bet, then we would be in trouble...Yeah, we must be more careful."

As she finished, she put down a single golden leaf and nervously smiled at the Seventh Prince.

The Second Prince and Fifth Prince watching the scene, frowned as a glimmer of doubt flashed across their eyes.

The Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng sitting on the side slowly smiled and sipped his alcohol, choosing not to interfere.

The Seventh Prince looked closely at Liu Yue. He had heard that this girl had been abandoned by the Mu Rong Family for eight years. They had only realized that she was a talented martial artist recently. But she was still only a thirteen years old, young and naive little girl.

Chapter 26: Shocking Stakes

Looks like Xuan Yuan Che was just lucky in that previous game, getting such large numbers. It wasn't her doing, so why would he be afraid of her.

"Sure, since sister-in-law has said the word, Seventh Brother will humbly obey." Seventh Prince smiled sweetly and followed her, throwing a piece of golden leaf.

(TLN: Seems like their currency are golden leaves)

Today, he had won three of Xuan Yuan Che's mansions, with a total worth of more than 100,000 golden leaves. Such a small amount of bet could hardly matter to him.

"You can shake your dice." Seeing that both sides have put down their stakes, the lady-in-waiting acting as the judge started the game with her honeyed voice.

Lightly holding the cup with both of her hands, Liu Yue started shaking the dices violently.

Seventh Prince couldn't help but laugh aloud seeing such a scene. This was definitely not a gambling skill, she was even more foolish than his Third Brother.

Only the molester-looking guy was carefully observing Liu Yue as he frowned. However, it was not his place to say anything.

"455 versus 126, Seventh Prince won."

Seeing the results, Liu Yue turned towards Xuan Yuan Che and blinked her eyes. "We are doomed...All our luck has been used up..."

Xuan Yuan Che embraced Liu Yue with both his hands. Seeing a flash of killing intent hidden beneath her discouraged expression, he couldn't help but laugh and said, "It's okay."

"Once more, this time with two golden leaves."

"I follow."

"456 versus 235. Seventh Prince won."

Liu Yue watched the two golden leaves moved towards Seventh Prince place from her side and gritted her teeth. Dissatisfaction filled her expression as she said, "This time I want to gamble a little bigger."

"Sure, whatever sister-in-law put down, Seventh Brother will follow through." Seventh Prince thought that Liu Yue was like an ordinary gambler who would get angry if she lose a bet. He didn't think much and replied quickly.

These few golden leaves, how big would it get?

As he finished his sentence, the Second Prince and the Fifth Prince both started to frown. They gave a reproachful look towards Seventh Prince, but couldn't say anything.

"Okay, you are the one who said these words, Seventh Prince. Your Majesty the Crown Prince, you have heard it clearly right?" Liu Yue looked at Xuan Yuan Cheng and laughed softly, her previous ignorance and naive expression completely gone from her face now.

In the room, other than the hot-headed Seventh Prince, the other two's faces had turned pale.

"Naturally." Xuan Yuan Cheng looked at Liu Yue and nodded, smiling.

"Alright. Qiu Hen, bring me the stakes." Liu Yue curled her arms on Xuan Yuan Che's arms.

Qiu Hen, who was standing right behind Xuan Yuan Che from the moment he entered, quickly moved forward and brought out a scroll from his robe. He put it down on the table respectfully.

"There are seven residences in the capital under Xuan Yuan Che's name, worth 500,000 golden leaves. There are also two Jade Artefact Shops, worth 700,000 golden leaves. His Grace also owned 30,000 mu (1 mu is 6.67 hectares) of land and servant lodgings, totalling 3,100,000 golden leaves. Including the summer residences in Yanzhou and Taizhou that are worth 170,000 leaves, the total assets amount to 4,470,000 golden leaves."

Chapter 27: Who's Afraid of Who?

Every sentence that was spoken by Qiu Hen's cold voice made Seventh Prince's eyes opened wider and wider. That face was a shadow of his previously proud expression. It had flashed a moment of fury, but they had all turned into shock now.

This was all of Third Brother's wealth.

But 4,470,000 golden leaves...Even if he sold himself, he wouldn't worth so much.

The ladies-in-waiting who were enjoying the drama at the side were also shocked to the core. There were even those who were so shocked that they fainted.

Heavens, 4,470,000 golden leaves...This, even if an ordinary man lived 10 lives, he wouldn't have that much wealth.

The atmosphere turned heated in just a moment.

Xuan Yuan Che embraced Liu Yue's small body and swept a gaze to the others whose faces had gone deathly pale. Although he already knew that Liu Yue would launch a final attack, he didn't expect her to bet all of his wealth. This time, if he won, Second, Fifth and Seventh Brother would have to give all of their families' fortune to pay their debts to him.

"Miss Mu Rong, don't you think you've bet too high?" Second Prince was indeed the calmer one, in this kind of situation, he could still question Liu Yue calmly.

"Is it? Why don't I feel that it is big?" Liu Yue turned and faced the Second Prince, laughing, "Since I'm the banker, I wouldn't be afraid to bet high stakes."

As she said that, Liu Yue turned and glared at the Seventh Prince.

"I, I don't have that much...don't have that much wealth..." The Seventh Prince sucked in a short breath, stuttering a little.

"Yan Hu." Liu Yue immediately commanded in an indifferent tone.

Yan Hu who was guarding outside the door, quickly came into the room, bringing with him a piece of paper and a brush.

Seeing this, although Xuan Yuan Che was still looking grim and devilish, his eyes seemed to laugh uncontrollably. Turns out his Liu Yue had already prepared everything beforehand.

“We can draw a contract of loan.” Liu Yue laughed softly at Seventh Prince whose face colour was no different than a dead man right now. She slowly inclined her body towards the Seventh Prince. “What if...you won this turn? It would be a wealth that could last through several generations of your family. Having so much wealth, who would even dare to cross you, the Seventh Prince, in the future?”

Her deep dark eyes bored into the Seventh Prince's. Her clear eyes was like a deep abyss that sucks him deep into them.

Her gentle words lured him into her trap.

The hesitating Seventh Prince looked at Liu Yue's eyes and listened to Liu Yue's words. Then, he suddenly gritted his teeth and grabbed the brush. With a “shua shua”, he wrote his IOU.

“Seventh Brother.” Seeing this, the Fifth Prince deeply frowned and cautioned him quietly.

“Did the Fifth Prince waited too long and became impatient? I apologize, we would be starting very soon.” Liu Yue turned and smiled blandly at the Fifth Prince.

She glared at him sharply.

The Fifth Prince immediately shut his mouth, not daring to say another word.

Chapter 28: The Final Say

After a few brush of strokes and a red thumb print, the IOU was successfully created.

Yan Hu passed the document to Liu Yue. After perusing the document a while, Liu Yue smiled coldly and put it down on the table.

“Please.” Seeing that the lady-in-waiting had become frozen due to the shocking amount of stakes, Liu Yue smirked and waved her hands at the molester guy.

“Win, you have to win this for me.” The Seventh Prince face was flushed red right now, as he gnashed his teeth and glared at the molester guy. He couldn’t afford to lose this gamble.

On the side, Second and Fifth Prince also straightened their bodies in their seat, unable to take their eyes off the table.

They couldn’t afford to lose.

Even the ever-smiling Xuan Yuan Cheng also focused on the match.

Only Xuan Yuan Che was lazily leaning back on his chair, watching Liu Yue’s back, smiling, yet not smiling.

As the cup was overturned and held tight in her hands, Liu Yue shook it vigorously like all her previous turns. As the upturned cup was shaken with the speed of a jet plane, the dice inside produced clear and crisp colliding sounds.

Nobody could tell how many dice were inside the upturned cup, as only messy colliding sounds could be heard from it. The Second Prince and the Fifth Prince who were listening closely could only look at each other with a face of astonishment.

They then looked towards the molester guy, whose forehead was filled with beads of sweat and face as green as grass.

Liu Yue’s hand technique was way different from his.

“Peng.” Liu Yue twisted her wrist a little and slammed the upturned cup

onto the table.

Following Liu Yue, the molester guy also settled his dice down.

In the silent room, not a sound could be heard. Only sounds of heavy breaths could be heard.

The Seventh Prince eyes had turned bloodshot as he clenched both of his fists as hard as he could. The Second Prince and Fifth Prince who looked calm and collected even in this kind of situation were also actually clenching their fists underneath the table.

“456.” Liu Yue was not even looking at her dice, as she looked towards the molester guy, smiling.

Seeing Liu Yue’s points, Seventh Prince and the others sighed a breath of relief. 456, it was not a big number.

The molester guy stared at Liu Yue’s points, as his hand grasped the lid tightly. His face was brimming with excitement and joy as his fingers slowly moved to open the lid.

Seeing this, Liu Yue put her palm down on the table and tapped it lightly. A wave of energy flow through the wooden table into the dice inside the cup, shaking them a little.

“666, leopard, straight kill.” ‘peng’, the molester guy immediately opened the lid, violently shouting out his points.

(TLN: leopard is the combination name for triple numbers)

The Seventh Prince, Second Prince and Fifth Prince immediately burst out into cheering as they heard this, their eyes shining with ecstasy and delirium.

Slowly curling up her mouth upwards to reveal an icy smile, Liu Yue folded her hands on her chest. “Brat, look at it carefully before speaking.”

Chapter 29: Vomiting Blood from Anger

TLN: In China, you could vomit blood due to anger and stress. You could also die with a knock to your head. Oh, and apparently all terminal/serious illness have a common symptom: vomiting blood.

In Japan, too many oppai also make you get nose bleed.

Although she was obviously the youngest person in this room, she still used such a dominating tone. Xuan Yuan Che who was sitting right behind her couldn't help but laughed out loud.

"356, how could this be? how could this...?" The molester guy's face which was full of ecstasy previously suddenly froze like a sculpture. He looked disbelievingly at the points shown in his dice. He had definitely rolled a leopard, how could it...?

The excited, Second, Fifth and Seventh princes also became frozen with shock.

A single, small mistake had caused them to lose everything.

"Pu." With a stream of blood bursting from his mouth, the molester guy pointed at Liu Yue with his trembling fingers. "You..you...!"

Liu Yue only smiled coldly and played with three dices with her hands. She rudely replied, "You are the one who wanted to play this game with me. I had been playing this game all my life."

Along with her disinterested words, the three dices turned into dust in Liu Yue's hands and flowed down to the table.

Trying to cheat? If she was the banker in Las Vegas, they wouldn't even be wearing pants. Competing with her in gambling? Humph.

The molester guy vomited another stream of blood and fainted on the ground.

The Second, Fifth and Seventh Prince's faces had changed colour.

Liu Yue was calm and indifferent, as if watching an opera, as the three people's faces showcased an exciting performance of changing colours.

Slowly raising her brows, she reached out her hands and took the IOU on the table.

“Seventh Prince, you’ve lost.”

Blowing the IOU lightly, Liu Yue smiled gracefully and beckoned at Qiu Hen who was standing right behind her.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu immediately walked forward and collected the stakes on the table. Their faces were flushed red as if they drunk too much alcohol, as they tried to hide their excitement and maintain a poker face.

“Dong.” The Seventh Prince fell over from his chair.

“Ah...!” The surrounding lady-in-waitings all shouted in shock, there were even some who ran out hurriedly.

Curling her mouth, Liu Yue turned her head and looked towards Second Prince. “Second Prince, do you want to be the banker or should I be the banker?”

The pale-faced Second Prince twitched and forced out an awkward smile, “Only Seventh Brother wanted to play this game with Third Brother, I wouldn’t want to.”

“Oh.” Liu Yue looked regretful as she sighed disappointedly. She then turned towards the Fifth Prince.

Fifth Prince couldn’t even open his mouth as he immediately looked down the moment he made eye contact with Liu Yue, averting his gaze.

“Alright, then let’s leave it like that today.” Xuan Yuan Che looked towards Xuan Yuan Cheng who did not speak anything from the beginning to the end. Looking at the overbearing Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Che could only laugh as he pulled her towards him, hugging her at her waist.

Xuan Yuan Cheng nodded, and smiled towards the two people who were as white as sheets. His cultured and graceful demeanour never changed.

“Of course.” Liu Yue stood up and left the place.

Chapter 30: First Kiss

TLN: Kiss scenes are hard to translate.

Restraining the smile on her face, she coldly glared at the Second and Fifth Prince who looked deathly pale and said, "In 10 days, if I didn't see your money, I wouldn't mind finding you myself to collect your debt. If you three Princes don't have the money, I'm sure your mothers, who are the Imperial Concubines, would have some."

After she finished, she humphed arrogantly and pulled Xuan Yuan Che's hands, striding out of the brothel.

Ganging up to bully her person? Don't even think about it.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che could only pass Xuan Yuan Cheng a helpless look as he shrugged his shoulders. Then he went out of the brothel, leaving the two people crying their eyes out inside the room.

"Hahahah!" After coming out from the brothel and getting on their carriage, Xuan Yuan Che couldn't control his laughter any more.

"Very fierce, very fierce indeed." Xuan Yuan Che said as he pulled Liu Yue's waist to his embrace. He had wanted to teach the three people a lesson afterwards, there were lots of ways to teach them a lesson outside the gambling table. However, Liu Yue was even more ruthless than him. She had stripped them of all of their wealth in just a single game. It had saved him the effort.

"You are mine, how could I let them bully you?" Liu Yue raised her head arrogantly.

Xuan Yuan Che was stunned when he heard this, and then he couldn't stop his laughter as he laughed uncontrollably beside Liu Yue. She had such a small figure but her words were extremely domineering. It was so contradictory no matter how he looked at it.

Seeing Xuan Yuan Che not taking her seriously, Liu Yue frowned. If he thought nothing of her words, then...

She turned her head and swiftly touched her soft lips into his strong and

hard lips. She kissed his lips hard, passionately.

Xuan Yuan Che was dumbfounded for a moment, but he was immediately on guard as he pulled Liu Yue closer to his embrace and kissed her back.

Tossing and turning in the carriage, they kissed slowly as they grinded their lips together.

Silver threads hung down their red lips as their tongue mated together in the heated moment.

The kiss that started innocently turned violent and passionate in just a short moment.

Both of them had strong personalities, and none of them wanted to relent. Sparks flew between them as they challenged each other with each moment.

Their lips started to get hotter.

Their breaths started to get shorter.

The world outside the carriage was hustling and bustling, yet inside the carriage, their two bodies had almost intertwined into one.

Intense and passionate sparks collided with every kiss, as their kiss slowly became even more fervent, each of them not willing to let their kiss subside into a gentler one. Lips tightly locked, both of them moved as one, pleasing each other.

After a long while, their lips separated, as they both gasped for air.

“You are mine.” Liu Yue looked devilishly at Xuan Yuan Che as she reached out her hands to hug him. It was as if she was hugging her own treasure. Nobody should ever tarnish or bully her treasure.

Xuan Yuan Che who had finally snapped out of the heated moment, glared at her with sharp eyes as he shouted, “Who taught you to do this?!”

Dammit, she was even more skillful than him. Who taught her all these skills?

Chapter 31: I'm a Genius

Looking at the furious Xuan Yuan Che, whose eyes were filled with jealousy, Liu Yue had laughed carelessly instead. She lay her head down on Xuan Yuan Che's lap as she said seductively, "There is someone in this world who's called a "genius"."

Hearing such arrogant words, even Xuan Yuan Che was stunned speechless for a moment.

In this Tian Zhen Empire, the word "genius" had always been reserved for him.

He had led his first expedition at the young age of 12, and at the age of 13, he attacked the Meng Kingdom with little casualties. He had led 100,000 men and journeyed thousands of miles into the Meng Kingdom's capital. Nobody had the power to resist him. At 15, he led 300,000 men and annihilated the Meng Kingdom. Then, he crossed the West River and decimated the four of the smaller kingdoms around Tian Zhen Empire. At sixteen, he was given the title "King" and became the youngest King in the history of Tian Zhen Empire.

He was Tian Zhen Empire's unparalleled genius.

But right now, his little Princess Consort had the audacity to say such words. He didn't know whether he should be angry or laugh at her words.

Watching Liu Yue who was sleeping soundly and peacefully at his lap, Xuan Yuan Che could only scowl dissatisfiedly.

From outside the carriage, the passers-by could only hear an angry voice shouting, "Get up now and explain it to me clearly!"

The colour of spring filled the scenery, today was really a nice day.

The next day, the news about how the King of Yi had allowed his Princess Consort to gamble and won 4,412,000 gold leaves from three other Princes exploded throughout the Tian Zhen Empire. The news spread like a wildfire.

In just a short while, the little girl who caused an uproar when she was

bestowed the title Princess Consort a month ago caused another sensation again. But this time, everyone had learnt her name, Mu Rong Liu Yue.

As the outside world turned upside down because of her, Liu Yue was relaxing inside the Liu Li Palace, painting her nails without care of the uproar.

Her nail polish wasn't of a bright red colour, but a transparent one. When she applied it on her nails, there wasn't a single colour to be seen nor any odour to be smelled.

This was a prescription that Liu Yue had created with utmost care.

"Princess Consort, what does this thing do?" Qiu Hen stood at Liu Yue's side and frowned, not understanding what she was doing.

The Princess Consort had ordered him to prepare snake venom, pollen grains and herbs, among many other things, then squeezed them into a juice. What good will that do?

"It's just something useful." Liu Yue didn't comment much.

Poison extraction in the 21st Century was much more advanced than the olden times. One of her subordinates was extremely proficient in this, so she had learnt quite a few tricks.

Different poisons would require different handling. They may need to be consumed, or they may need to be prepared under special conditions.

She applied the mixture on her ten fingernails flawlessly.

"Princess Consort, the Empress wished for your company in the Bing Chen Palace to choose some pearls and jewelries. She said that the Xue Sheng Empire's ambassador had brought a lot of jewelries that were popular in their empire as gifts. The Empress had allowed you to choose two of them." Yan Hu announced as he entered Liu Yue's room, with a worried frown in his face.

Chapter 32: Feast of Hong Men

TLN: Title is 鸿门宴 (Hong Meng An), this is an idiom that meant a banquet set up with the intent to murder someone. It's based on the history where Liu Bang escaped an attempted murder by his rival Xiang Yu in 206 BC. Sorry it's the last chapter of the day, my mom is breathing down my neck telling me to sleep... [Goto Sleep Baby]

*

There wasn't any palace maids waiting on Liu Yue's side. She hated these formalities, and had no use for them.

Instead, she has got two Generals from Xuan Yuan Che's special forces to wait on her and be her bodyguard.

"Pearls? I guess that's just an excuse to see how divine I am, right?" Liu Yue lifted her head as her astute eyes uncovered the hidden intentions of the Empress.

Yan Hu nodded as he said, "Your servant thinks that it would be better for you to wait until Master return, the Empress..." although he didn't finish his words, Liu Yue could more or less guess his hidden meaning.

She had known that the Empress' son was the Crown Prince while Imperial Consort Chen was Xuan Yuan Che's birth mother. The Empress had the support of the Left Minister while Imperial Consort Chen has the support of the Right Minister. These two women had been constantly struggling for power amongst each other.

However, Xuan Yuan Che was simply too excellent, his valor had completely overwhelmed the Crown Prince's, Xuan Yuan Cheng. With such an imbalance, there was bound to be countless underhanded plots going on in the court.

Liu Yue had never lived with these ancient royal families, but what's the difference between this and modern power struggles? The modern people might even be better at scheming against each other than these olden people. After all, they had learnt from the 5000 year old history of

China's monarchy politics.

Although Liu Yue had never learnt them before, that doesn't mean she did not understand politics.

As her eyes glimmered with a sharp gaze, Liu Yue slowly curled her mouth upwards, "Have I, Mu Rong Liu Yue, been afraid of anyone or avoid meeting anyone? No, I'd also like to see how she's going to treat me."

With those words, Liu Yue whirled her sleeves and walked towards the Empress' Residence, the Bing Chen Palace, in her normal clothes.

She was just an ugly girl right now anyway, she wouldn't become a phoenix just by wearing nice clothes. Rather than prettying herself up, it should be sufficient with these clothes.

At her back, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu looked at each other for a while, then one of them immediately followed her while the other turned and ran towards another direction.

The Tian Zhen Palace was beautifully built, each corner exquisite beyond compare.

In the Bing Chen Palace, the Empress sat in the middle of the Palace Hall.

Liu Yue had not even entered when she heard honeyed chatterings from afar, causing her to have goosebumps.

"Miss Mu Rong has arrived." A high-pitched announcement was made and the chattering inside the Palace died down.

"Enter." A graceful and dignified voice rung as the door guards quickly bowed and invited Liu Yue to enter the Palace.

Taking her time to enter the Bing Chen Palace Hall, Liu Yue saw that there was already quite a lot of people who have gathered in the hall.

Slim and curvy, innocent and sexy, each and everyone had the face of a beauty. The whole Palace Hall was filled with beautiful women.

Chapter 33: The Two Powers of Harem

Amongst the women, a graceful and dignified lady sat in the middle on a high jade chair. She looked to be thirty years and above and she did not look too devastatingly beautiful that she could cause the downfall of a state. She wore a bright coloured robe and a phoenix hairpin decoration on her hair. She did not wear much decorations, but one could feel her dignified and noble aura, graceful and wise.

There was no need to guess, this was the Tian Zhen Empire's Empress, Liu Ye Qing.

On her left, a woman that looked to be of the same age with the Empress, wearing a purple robe, sat right next on her side. However, she looked even more beautiful than a flower, she could even be the queen of flowers.

There was no need look more. Having a face that looked similar to Xuan Yuan Che, this woman should be the harem's second in command, Imperial Consort Chen.

However, she did not recognize the other women in the Hall.

Stepping forward a few steps, Liu Yue smiled and bowed towards Empress Liu. Although she didn't like her, she was not someone who could only rely on her husband.

"Is this girl that Che-er choses? Be at ease and let's talk." Empress Liu smiled softly, dignified and graceful.

Liu Yue stood up right and smiled towards Empress Liu. Her ordinary face was like a thorn among the beauties in the whole room. The surrounding girls measured her with their eyes, and although they looked accommodating, Liu Yue could see the degrading expressions in their eyes.

They all looked down on her, but this did not matter to Liu Yue. In her eyes, these girls were only tools that could only eat and serve on the bedroom.

Even amongst the beautiful phoenixes and peacocks in the room, an ugly duckling could still unyieldingly stood upright, with her head lifted up loftily and chest stuck out proudly.

“Come here, let Imperial Mother see you clearly.” Imperial Consort Chen only smiled when she saw her pride, her tone sweet and gentle.

Liu Yue felt that Imperial Consort Chen’s sweet demeanour was not fake, and immediately walked towards Imperial Consort Chen.

Imperial Consort Chen held Liu Yue’s hands and measured her from head to toe. She smiled, “Although you looked a little ordinary, as long as Che-er likes you, everything’s fine. Older sister, don’t you think so?” Imperial Consort Chen said as she turned her head and looked towards Empress Liu.

Empress Liu smiled softly and nodded, “Naturally, ordinary looks doesn’t mean that she’s not good.”

When the women in the room heard these two harem leaders’ words, no one else dared to look down upon Liu Yue anymore. They took back their disdainfulness and kept it inside their heart.

“What do you do normally everyday, other than practicing your martial arts? Do you read any books?” Imperial Consort Chen tapped on Liu Yue’s hands lightly.

Having heard these words, Liu Yue’s stole a glance at a beautiful girl wearing a blue robe who had been emitting a hostile and despising aura ever since she entered the room. She chuckled lightly as she pretended to look awkward and replied, “I had never read books.”

Chapter 34: Poison Attempt

Her words were not wrong. Although she had qualifications that others would find it difficult to attain in the modern times, here in this world, beg your pardon, she had really never learnt anything.

However, she didn't need to.

"Pffft." A sound of laughter escaped. That girl wearing blue robe couldn't conceal her condescending expression as a snort escape from her lips.

"It's not a bad thing if a girl is not educated. In the future she can follow Che-er into battles and bring glory to the empire. A person who did not recognize words is in no way inferior." Imperial Consort Chen pretended not to hear that girl's snort as she smiled at Liu Yue.

She didn't like that girl, Liu Yue immediately decided at that moment.

In all walks of life, in every trade, you can be outstanding as long as you put in effort. Whoever looked down upon a person who cannot read was a bitch.

"Yes." Liu Yue quickly replied with a word.

"Alright, we shouldn't talk about this anymore. Come, sit down here, child. Choose any two pearls. Young people should wear attractive jewelries to give a more cheerful atmosphere." Empress Liu beckoned Liu Yue to come forward. At her side, an old lady-in-waiting prepared a seat and the set of jewelries for Liu Yue.

Liu Yue then sat nearby Imperial Consort Chen and took the only two jewelries left in the box.

"Liu Yue, come, I'll introduce you first. This girl wearing a yellow robe is called Liu Xin Qing and the one wearing a blue coloured robe is called Liu Xin Ai. You guys are around the same age, so you should get along well with each other. You can play together in the future." Empress Liu smiled as she pointed to the beautiful girl on her side Liu Xin Qing and the other girl who kept giving her death glares Liu Xin Ai.

"Younger sister, in the future, it will be best if we can get along well."

Liu Xin Qing smiled brightly as she said to Liu Yue.

However, Liu Yue could only hear the signal of a cold war. Such dignified words had instead made her froze all over, what hostility.

False pretentiousness, who's afraid of who? Liu Yue immediately put on a fake smile that looked even more pretentious than Liu Xin Qing as she nodded and agreed with her.

"Empress, the Xue Shen tea is ready." At this moment, a lady-in-waiting entered and reported to the Empress.

"Bring it in." Empress Liu waved her hands as she heard her, and smiled towards the people in the room. "This Xue Shen tea that the Xue Sheng Empire ambassador has brought for us is really delicious. Everyone should drink some to nourish your youthful skin."

"Thank you, your Majesty the Empress." The whole hall resounded with a tone that seemed to be moved to tears.

Xue Shen tea was simply a ginseng tea, although it was good for the body, there should be a limit to it. However, Liu Yue still received the Xue Shen tea that was given to her.

It was rose red in colour, and there was a thick smelling aroma when she received the tea. Not bad.

Aroma? Liu Yue suddenly focused on smelling with her nose and brought the Xue Shen tea close to her nose. As she smelled, a sharp gaze flashed on her eyes.

Marvelous, truly marvelous, the Royal Family Opera had finally started.

They had even dared to show off their poisoning skills to her, a poison expert.

Chapter 35: Neurotoxin

Her icy gaze swept across her hands. There were two thin flower petals that has a faint fragrance floating on top of the tea. It was peppermint flower petals. If consumed alone, it won't cause any problems.

The Xue Shen tea on her hands was also mixed with a little on plantain herb that would not cause any problems if it was consumed alone.

However, once all three of these herbs were mixed together, the side effects of the consumption would not be as simple as a normal poison.

A faintly discernible murderous smile appeared on her lips. Unexpectedly, there was a poison expert in this Tian Zhen Empire.

This poison wouldn't take effect immediately, but it would make the victim slowly turned into an idiot. Slowly, it would kill off the victim in ways that wouldn't be detected. Using modern words to describe, this would be a neurotoxin.

Playing with the flower petals, Liu Yue swept her gaze through the hall. Tian Zhen Empire unexpectedly had such a poison expert, she had really belittled this world's culture and technology too much.

"Liu Yue, why are you not drinking it? Does it not suit your taste?" Liu Xin Qing who was sitting right at the side of Empress Liu asked as she smiled at Liu Yue who was not moving, immediately attracting the whole hall's attention.

Liu Yue slowly swept her gaze through the women in the hall. Empress Liu's expression was gentle and refined while Liu Xin Qin's smile was normal, there was not any peculiarities.

However, who is Liu Yue? She was the devil incarnate, the goddess of all scheming and treacheries. These people, who tried to scheme against her, was like an inexperienced child that tried to show off his skills to an adult.

Her lips stretched into a thin line. Liu Yue already had a plan in her mind. She raised her cup to give a toast towards Empress Liu and Liu Xin

Qing, then drunk the whole drink in one gulp. Not even a drop of tea was left.

A woman's relieved smile did not escape Liu Yue's eyes. Seeing this, Liu Yue's steel eyes started to flash with a grim look.

The hall started to be filled with laughter and chatterings, every ladies present enjoying themselves.

"King of Yi has arrived." In the midst of chatter, the guards' voice resounded. As the guards finished their announcement, Xuan Yuan Che stepped into the Palace Hall.

"Che-er, why have you come?" Empress Liu quickly smiled at Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che paid his respects and looked thoroughly refined and respectful, not even a trace of his anger could be seen in his expression. He was so different compared to when he was with Liu Yue, where he was cheerful and lively. He was aloof and indifferent right now, and with the grace of a member of the royal family, he said, "Your son has come to look for Liu Yue. There was a relative from the Mu Rong Residence that wanted to meet her."

Imperial Consort Chen smiled and said, "Then take your little Princess Consort away, pay your respects to Older Sister." She looked towards Empress Liu as she finished her sentence.

Seeing this, Empress Liu also smiled and looked towards Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue, saying, "Alright, alright. Go on."

"Che-er will take his leave." With that words, Xuan Yuan Che dragged Liu Yue out of the hall.

Chapter 36: Anxiousness

Liu Yue didn't utter a single word as she followed Xuan Yuan Che out of the Bing Chen Palace. However, she didn't miss the hostile glare from Liu Xin Ai as she walked out of the Hall.

Xuan Yuan Che's hands were a little sweaty. Looks like he had hurried here, was he afraid that something would happen to her?

Raising her head to look at Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue's lips curled into a smile. How could someone do anything to her? However, this feeling felt quite nice. Very nice indeed.

Through the gardens and pathways, Xuan Yuan Che walked as quickly as he can.

After a moment, they had returned to Liu Li Palace.

"In the future, if you are summoned anywhere, you'll have to bring me along. Otherwise, I forbid you to go anywhere." Once they have entered Liu Li Palace, Xuan Yuan Che looked towards Liu Yue and warned her with a serious expression.

Liu Yue had not even spoke a single word when her body suddenly collapsed. Unsteady on her feet, her forehead fell into Xuan Yuan Che's embrace.

Xuan Yuan Che's face turned pale in a flash as he carried the unconscious Liu Yue and charged inside the hall.

He immediately bellowed, "Xuan Mo, come here, quickly!" His voice trembled a little, a complete difference from his calm and dignified voice in front of Empress Li just now.

When Yan Hu and Qiu Hen who were standing guard in Liu Li palace saw the current situation, their face also paled as they hurriedly ran out to look for Xuan Mo.

Quickly placing Liu Yue on his bed, at his back, Xuan Mo had hurriedly entered the room.

As he took Liu Yue's pulse and examined her, Xuan Mo's forehead sweated a little.

"How is it?" Xuan Yuan Che's expression was beyond awful as he asked worriedly.

"There are two types of poison that are quickly spreading through the Princess Consort's body..."

"Dammit, what are you trying to show off to me? Why can't you wait for me to come back before going there?" Xuan Mo didn't have a chance to finish his sentence as Xuan Yuan Che's face turned ashen, smashing the bedside with his fist.

The delicate white jade bed corner immediately shattered under his hands.

"Why are you explaining so much? Xuan Mo, do something quickly and save the Princess Consort." Officer Han who followed in scolded Xuan Mo, the King of Yi's personal physician, with a worried face.

The sweat on Xuan Mo's forehead flowed down even more quickly. "I don't dare to do anything. I don't know what types of poison these two poisons are. I only know they are extremely potent and spread out very quickly inside the body."

Xuan Mo gritted his teeth as he held Liu Yue's cold hands.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che immediately grabbed the lapels of Xuan Mo's robes and pulled him up in one go. His eyes were bloodshot as he roared, "You can't save her?"

"I, I... can't." Xuan Mo had never seen Xuan Yuan Che so furious before, he couldn't help but turned pale at his words.

The fist grabbing on the lapels suddenly broke away as Xuan Yuan Che threw Xuan Mo on the ground. He turned his body and pulled out a silver sword from the bedside. Full of killing intent, he turned and stormed away, "Evil witch! I'm going to get the antidote from her."

Seeing this, Yan Hu and Qiu Hen's faces turned anxious. Their Master

didn't look like he was going to get the antidote, he looked like he was going to murder someone.

Publicly going against the Empress, the consequences...

One foot stepping forward, Xuan Yuan Che had not even taken his second step when the unconscious Liu Yue laying on the bed suddenly grabbed his hands weakly.

"Che." That simple word was like a sun clearing up the storm in his heart, immediately stopping Xuan Yuan Che on his tracks.

Sensing the weak fingers grabbing his hand, Xuan Yuan Che immediately turned around and set his gaze on the person laying on the bed.

Eyes slowly opening, a familiar deep, dark eyes looked at him, as if sucking his soul.

As her eyes locked on Xuan Yuan Che's red eyes that was filled with murderous intent and anxiousness, Liu Yue laughed. This person truly loved her wholeheartedly.

"You underestimated me too much." A small smile appeared as she slowly curled her lips. Liu Yue grabbed Xuan Yuan Che's hands and slowly sat up.

Chapter 37: Eagle

“This... What is going on? Everything is back to normal.” Seeing her getting up, Xuan Mo was extremely surprised and he quickly checked Liu Yue’s pulse. His eyes widened with shock when he found a normal pulse. He looked at Liu Yue disbelievingly.

She was in a critical condition just a moment ago, how could she be...

“It’s just countering poison with poison.” Liu Yue took back her wrist from Xuan Mo.

She had to drink the poison that Empress Liu gave her. Otherwise, how would she play the part of a wolf in a sheep’s skin?

However, how could she let herself be poisoned? When she first swallowed the poison, she had already ingested the poison she hid in her sleeves. She only fainted just now because of the two poison clashing inside her body, it wasn’t a serious problem.

This body of hers was still far from her previous body. Her past self had ingested a hundred different types of poison and built a resistance to it. Even if it was the latest US neurotoxin technology, it wouldn’t harm her in the slightest bit. Yet, she actually fainted from the toxins in this current body.

Looks like she would need to train her body harder.

Xuan Yuan Che who was standing at her bedside glared at her with eyes full of wrath mixed with anxiety. A furious aura was slowly seeping out from him.

Seeing this, Liu Yue spoke with a calm yet unyielding tone, “I’m not someone who wouldn’t cherish her own life, but I do know my position here. I went to the Empress’ Palace because I am prepared, and I know that I can be absolutely safe. That’s why I went there.”

“So, did you mean that my worry for you is unnecessary?” Xuan Yuan Che’s expression turn icy cold. It turned out that all of his anxiety and worry had ended up as a joke.

Liu Yue only shook her head slowly when she saw this. She stood up from the bed and grasped Xuan Yuan Che's face, then gave him a gentle kiss on his lips. Her brows raised as she laughed out, "Of course not. I'm very happy. I'm really very happy. I've never been so happy before."

She emphasised her feelings three times to tell him the joy she was feeling right then. There had never been anyone who would worry so much for her. Never. But Xuan Yuan Che had actually wanted to charge into the Empress Palace, seething in anger, for her sake. She knew he was a calm person and would have never done such thing in a normal situation. That was why she was extremely happy.

Her hands twining around his neck, Liu Yue rest her head on Xuan Yuan Che's shoulders and said, "Che, trust me. I'm not a weak little hummingbird, I'm a strong eagle. I'm an eagle that can soar through the sky together with you. I am not that fragile, so trust me."

Her soft words flowed like a gentle river on Xuan Yuan Che's ears, so gentle yet so overbearingly confident.

The fury that filled his heart slowly dissipated away. He thought that he became so worried because he didn't believe in her enough. How could he forget that his little Princess Consort was an extremely capable and proud woman, with thousands of tricks up her sleeves?

Chapter 38: Take Full Responsibility of the Consequences

Seeing the two people embracing each other, Officer Han, Yan Hu, Qiu Hen and Xuan Mo looked at each other awkwardly and then retreated outside without a sound, leaving the two to their own peaceful world. At the same time, they had a renewed respect for Liu Yue.

“There won’t be next time.” After a while, Xuan Yuan Che’s harsh voice sounded. He glared sternly at Liu Yue who was still in his embrace.

“Yes.” Liu Yue laughed when she heard him. There would definitely not be a next time. It was absolutely unacceptable for an assassin to not have full control of her own body.

“With regards to this matter, I will...”

“No, let me deal with it. If she dared to lay her hands on me, she should take full responsibility...of the consequences herself.” Her eyes gleamed with killing intent as Liu Yue smiled enchantingly, like a vampiress in a fairy tale.

I’d rather be the bad person than be bullied by others. This was Liu Yue’s Law, her iron-clad rule in her assassin days.

Watching Liu Yue, even if it was him, Xuan Yuan Che could feel her killing intent.

Since the Empress’ poison attempt did not work, she would definitely attempt to kill Liu Yue again. Furthermore, her methods and ruthlessness would only increase with each attempt. It wasn’t something that can be prevented.

Since you couldn’t stop it, then it would be better to receive her first attack, and when the other party relaxed and let down their guard, that would be the time for them to die.

To receive the title “King” at such an early age, Xuan Yuan Che was definitely not a normal person. And obviously, his Princess Consort was

also not normal.

Mistaking an eagle for an easily-bullied dove, the Empress had already dug her own grave.

Reaching out his hands to caress Liu Yue's long black hair, Xuan Yuan Che wondered how the woman in his embrace could make him love her more with every single day.

The golden sun sets in the horizon and the moon ascended into the sky.

The darkness of the night quickly enveloped the earth. Bright stars sparkled in the dark night sky, casting silver white light upon the land.

Two shadows, one large and one small, sneaked out from Liu Li Palace and made their way into the Palace Treasury.

With his Light Body technique, Xuan Yuan Che leap across the walls. Furthermore, knowing each corners of the Palace like the back of his hands, he sneaked through the shadows like a mist, without anyone noticing.

As his feet strode towards the Palace Treasury, Xuan Yuan Che didn't forget to keep a look out around him incessantly. There were no one, not even a single trace of human being. Even Liu Yue who was following right behind him seemed to disappear, not a single Qi could be felt from her. Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che couldn't help but raised his brows in disbelief.

Unexpectedly, even at his level, he still couldn't sense Liu Yue's presence. If he didn't know that Liu Yue was following him, he wouldn't even believe there was a person right behind him.

What kind of technique is this? How could it totally erase a person's presence?

Chapter 39: Scheme

Moving swiftly in the dark, Liu Yue watched Xuan Yuan Che who was moving right in front of her. Seeing that he didn't stop glancing left and right, she couldn't help but stifle a laugh. Concealing her presence, that was her speciality. Avoiding the guards, it was a skill that was not even worth to be mentioned. There was once a time when she had avoided a whole building's infrared detection rays. Even that was nothing much.

In the night sky, a shadow darted across the roof like the night wind, while another shadow darted across the ground like a ghost.

Without a single sound.

In the Tian Zhen Empire's Palace Treasury.

Mountains of gold and silver piled up everywhere. This treasury was filled with different kinds of rare treasures. Those kind of unique treasures that would be the only one of its kind in this world, would definitely be found in this treasury. In such a radiant place, the brightness was almost dazzling.

"What are you trying to find?" Entering the treasury, Xuan Yuan Che whispered in a low voice to Liu Yue, who was following right behind him.

This Liu Yue had only asked him to show her the way to the Palace Treasury during the day, without telling him anything else. She still had not told him anything yet, and he couldn't guess her real intentions.

He did not think that she came here to steal precious jewels and treasures. As the King of Yi, he had so much of these valuables that he would never lack of it. With so much wealth, why would she need to sneak into the treasury to steal more?

Liu Yue smiled as she shook a finger at Xuan Yuan Che, then walked towards a wooden table full of bottles located at the back of the treasury.

Standing right in front of these vases, Liu Yue reached out her hands and grabbed one of the smallest bottles. Then, she sniffed it lightly.

"This is Decayed Bone Poison." Seeing her actions, Xuan Yuan Che

helped her to identify the contents of the bottle.

What Decayed Bone Poison, isn't this neurotoxin number 7? But this is an uncompleted version of the neurotoxin. However, since it was stored in the treasury, it must be a poison of the best quality.

Without saying much, Liu Yue moved her fingers a little and then returned the bottle to its place.

However, her little action didn't escape Xuan Yuan Che's eyes, who was following her every move.

"What did you put inside?" Xuan Yuan Che asked, his eyebrows raised.

Liu Yue laughed as she replied him, "You'll know when the time comes.". Then, with quick movements, she opened each bottle, identified each poison and then added something into the bottle.

These were all valuable drugs. They were poisons and antidotes of the best quality. Indeed, Tian Zhen Empire had a rich collection of drugs.

Xuan Yuan Che could only stand still at the side with his eyebrows raised. Adding something to poison was still okay, but adding something to precious and high quality antidotes, this...

"That's to cure serious diseases, it was really difficult to obtain it. You..."

"Simply because it was difficult to obtain, it will not be used easily. It will only be used in a life or death situation." Liu Yue slowly turned her head, "But we shouldn't use the antidotes here anymore."

Chapter 40: Holy Item

Hearing that, Xuan Yuan Che observed Liu Yue closely, and didn't oppose her anymore.

The poison that Empress Liu used on Liu Yue today was from the third bottle of poison on display. Since she had used a poison from this place, then she would definitely use the antidotes from this place.

Yet all the antidotes in this place, when she needed it, the person who consumed it will...

"You have to pull out weeds from the roots, otherwise, it will sprout out again with the breath of spring." Liu Yue picked up one of the bottles of antidotes and played it with her fingers. Then, suddenly, she let her finger loose, and let the small bottle fell to the ground.

Seeing that the small bottle was going to be shattered into pieces, Liu Yue suddenly moved her feet. In the next moment, the small bottle had already stabilized on Liu Yue's feet, safe and sound.

Xuan Yuan Che's mouth curled up as he smiled. What a scheme, what a brilliant strategy.

A flash of killing intent gleamed in her eyes as Liu Yue smiled back, then she bent down to pick up the small bottle resting on her feet.

Holding the bottle, Liu Yue had not stood back up yet when she noticed a book supporting one of the legs of the wooden table.

Liu Yue raised her head and looked at Xuan Yuan Che, "Is the Royal Family poor to that extent?"

In the place to store treasures and jewelries, the tables were actually supported with books.

Xuan Yuan Che followed Liu Yue's line of sight and then turned back to her, "That book supposedly was about a technique with strange powers and abilities."

Strange powers? Liu Yue who had already stood up, bend her body back

down again and pulled the book out with one tug. She wanted to see how strange the technique would be.

“Controlling beasts with music?” Liu Yue flipped the book to a random page and read the letters out loud, astonished.

“The whole book is only about how to control beasts with music. Hundreds of years ago, our ancestors regarded this book as a holy item. Unfortunately, hundreds of years later, Royal Father treated this as rubbish. Nobody could ever learn this skill. The book only wrote about non-existent theories, one lie after another.” Xuan Yuan Che explained, full of disdain.

Liu Yue only raised her brows at his words.

Although controlling beasts with music sounded a little out of this world, it was not completely impossible.

For example, she had known for sure that when a sound reached a critical point, it would have a power that would conquer every obstacle. It was not due to the loudness of the sound, but because it had reached a critical point. Such an example was when sopranos sung and break glasses with their voices. These are facts, they were not myths.

Since sounds had such a high attacking power, then using that to subdue or master a beast was not an impossible matter. You would only need to reach a critical point to do that.

“Let’s go.” Xuan Yuan Che saw that it was getting late and then pulled Liu Yue out from the treasury.

Liu Yue quickly stuffed the book into her sleeves and then followed behind. She could try to learn the skill When she had nothing to do. Since the real Liu Yue was quite good with zither...

Chapter 41: Who is Trying to Flirt with Her...

Under the glimmering star light, the night wind blows.

The whole palace was quiet and peaceful, like a sleeping dragon.

Everything doesn't seem to change, yet it seemed a little different.

The next day, as the day breaks, birds chirped and flowers blossomed.

Liu Yue was summoned to Tian Xi Palace to have an audience with Imperial Consort Chen.

Liu Yue was not someone who would be biased towards others, but she really liked Imperial Consort Chen. Hence she was willing to pay her a visit. Besides, she could find out a lot of information from her place.

Others say that one would not ask for a meeting without a reason. Hence, Imperial Consort Chen must have contacted her to keep in touch with her.

Wearing her purple robe, her dark, lustrous hair was styled into graceful braids that hung down her waist. They swayed with every step that Liu Yue took, elegant and refined.

"Qiu Hen, describe Liu Xin Ai." Playing with two small stones in her hands, Liu Yue asked Qiu Hen absently.

It was no wonder that Liu Xin Ai was so hostile towards her yesterday. Turns out that the Emperor had originally intended to marry Liu Xin Ai to Xuan Yuan Che. But Liu Yue had suddenly appeared out of thin air and destroyed Liu Xin Ai's dreams of marrying one of the richest Prince.

"Domineering and bossy, she is bold but not very astute. She is definitely not your match, Princess Consort." His assessment of her was short and straight forward.

Liu Yue was very satisfied with Qiu Hen's reply. She needed facts and real assessments, not flatteries or boot licking words.

Nodding her head, Liu Yue decided that Liu Xin Ai was not someone worth paying attention to. Liu Xin Qing may be worth some of her attention, but she was also nothing much to her. However, the Left Minister's Family, the Liu Clan, behind them would not be an easy opponent.

The Liu Clan already had the Empress who was the ruler of the harem, and the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng and Liu Xin Qing's positions in the Royal Family were also stable. Yet they had still wanted to harm Xuan Yuan Che. Their wild schemes were getting out of hands.

At first she didn't care about them that much, but since they had already schemed against her, then they shouldn't blame her for her being ruthless.

"Wow, Brother Che, you are so awesome.." In the midst of her thought, she suddenly heard a faint cheer from a far, cheering on a "Brother Che" flirtatiously. The voice made Liu Yue had goosebumps. Who in the world had such a disgusting voice?

"Princess Consort, the noise came from the Training Field over there." Qiu Hen quickly explained to her.

Training field, it was the place where Xuan Yuan Che practiced his martial arts skills and trained his soldiers. Liu Yue raised her brows and squinted her eyes. How could that person shout so loud that her voice travelled all the way here just to get Xuan Yuan Che's attention?

"Let's go and take a look." Liu Yue said unhurriedly as she turned towards the Training Field. She wanted to see who actually had the nerve to flirt with Xuan Yuan Che.

In the midst of the clamor, the Training Field was filled with soldiers clad in black armor. Crowds of people hoarded the Training Field, cheering and applauding voices rose in succession. The Training Field was bustling with excitement.

Chapter 42: Love Rival

Liu Yue walked towards the crowd of people. The soldiers, seeing Qiu Hen, immediately opened a path for them, allowing Liu Yue to walk through effortlessly.

“Awesome!” The flirty sound cheered once again.

As Liu Yue stepped out from the crowd, she saw golden arrows flew past the Training Field right into the bullseye of an arrow target, overlapping with each other. And these arrows were actually released from the same bow. Xuan Yuan Che rode past on a horse, holding a golden bow in his hands.

Liu Yue curled her lips. So it was only such a trick. Looks like Xuan Yuan Che was playing with these people. Shooting a dead target with such a large bow, if he still could not shoot the target, he should go back to primary school and learn the basics.

She remembered when she was ten years old, she could shoot a falling leaf a hundred meters away. Don't even talk about it now.

Tearing her gaze away from Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue looked at Liu Xin Ai on the other side, who was running towards Xuan Yuan Che. So this was the peacock who was spreading her tail as she liked.

“Brother Che, you are amazing.” Liu Xin Ai reached out her hands towards Xuan Yuan Che and prepared to jump onto the horse.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che coldly lashed his bridles, making his horse rise up on its hind legs to stop her from getting up.

“Brother Che...” A sour voice filled with indignation could be heard.

Liu Yue covered her mouth with her hands. She wouldn't need to eat dinner anymore today, her appetite had all disappeared from Liu Xin Ai's tone. This girl was really too obtuse.

“There should be distance between male and female.” Xuan Yuan Che coldly replied and rode away on his horse, not even giving Liu Xin Ai an inch.

“But we have been this way last time.” Liu Xin Ai followed him stubbornly.

“That was when we were four years old. There is no more need to mention it.” He replied with cold words, strict and austere, with not a single trace of emotions in them.

King of Yi of the Tian Zhen Empire was originally such an exceptional and enchanting, yet cold-blooded person.

As for his warm and gentle side, he would only show it to Liu Yue alone.

“Xin Ai, you should show King of Yi what you have learnt previously.” Standing at the side of the Training Field, Liu Xin Qing smiled as she said that. Beside her, the gentle and cultured Xuan Yuan Cheng was also present.

“Yes!” The crowd immediately cheered. Tian Zhen Empire revered martial art skills. Anyone with high-leveled skills would be respected by the people. Although Liu Xin Ai was domineering and bossy, her martial arts skills was not to be belittled. “Brother Che, I won’t lose to you.” A pampered voice resounded as Liu Xin Ai rode on a horse. She then grabbed the bow on her back and pulled out three arrows to shoot at the arrow targets.

Arms stretched, bow pulled, she was united with the horse as one.

You would know an expert archer when you see how he pulled his bow. The soldiers standing on the side immediately cheered on Liu Xin Ai. Her style of shooting arrows on a horseback was indeed beautiful and professional.

Chapter 43: Bully

Amongst the crowd, Liu Yue's lips curled to reveal an icy smile. The small stones that she had played in her hands the whole time suddenly shot out like a bullet.

The stones shot out towards the running horse like a shooting star, splitting the wind without a sound. Even if it produced a sound, it will be perfectly concealed within the thumps of the horse's gallops.

As the bow was stretched to its breaking point, Liu Xin Ai pointed her second finger to the target and was ready to release the arrow.

In that moment, the calm horse suddenly moved a little. A small stumble by the horse caused the arrow that Liu Xin Ai was releasing to stray away from its path.

The sharp black arrow split the air as it flew across the field and missed the target completely, falling into the bushes.

"Uhh..." Immediately, a displeased sound resounded within the troops. The soldiers who were excitedly cheering on Liu Xin Ai now looked at her with a look of scorn.

How could she try to shoot with that kind of ability?

Liu Xin Ai's face immediately turned red as she exclaimed, "It was the horse! It suddenly moved, otherwise, I wouldn't have missed the target."

The surrounding soldiers sneered and mumbled to each other. She couldn't shoot the target yet she blamed the horse. She had no class.

But Xuan Yuan Che only raised his brows as he looked towards Liu Yue, smiling yet not smiling. He saw what happened very clearly.

Liu Yue winked at Xuan Yuan Che as she turned her body and started to leave. Liu Xin Ai was indeed nothing much. She was not her opponent both physically and mentally. Liu Yue couldn't be bothered to fight with Liu Xin Ai.

"That's right! It must have been you, fugly woman, who attacked my

horse. Otherwise, how could I miss the target? It was you!" Liu Xin Ai who was in the Training Field suddenly saw Liu Yue. She immediately lashed out and charged towards Liu Yue on her horse.

She didn't care if Liu Yue was indeed the person who had caused her horse to stagger, if she say that Liu Yue was the one who did it, then Liu Yue was the culprit.

Hearing that, Liu Yue's expressions became stern.

"Liu Xin Ai, what are you talking about?" Xuan Yuan Che narrowed his eyes, a frightening sinister aura seeped out from his body. His voice was merciless as he rode his horse towards her.

"If she is fugly, then she is fugly. Brother Che, she must have ensnared you using a curse or something. Otherwise, why would you be attracted to her? She has such an ugly face and flat as a washing board. She has no martial arts skills and had been abandoned at a secluded corner of her house since young.

Humph, I would never believe the rumor that she was strong. I'm sure it was just a scheme by the Mu Rong Clan who wanted to raise their position in court by being connected to Brother Che through marriage. They must have had put on a show and threw the match purposely with just one attack from Liu Yue. What one-hit KO? Pei! You may be able to trick small children with this story, but you would never be able to trick me.(TLN: Pei = Sound of someone spitting) Fugly woman, if you are abandoned, then nobody wants you. Even if you marry a real dragon, you would never be a phoenix."

Chapter 44: Very Good

The foul words came out like a bullet train from Liu Xin Ai's mouth, not even giving Liu Yue an ounce of respect. In just a moment, all the soldiers turned their attentions to Liu Xin Ai and the 'fugly' looking Liu Yue.

"Xin Ai, you shouldn't talk nonsense." Liu Xin Qing's expressions changed as she hurried walked towards her sister.

"You dared..." Xuan Yuan Che whose expression was filled with killing intent suddenly stopped his words as he felt Liu Yue's hands patting his back, signalling him not to say anything else. Furthermore, he saw that although Liu Yue's face looked calm and composed, her eyes had flashed with unbridled anger.

He couldn't do anything but inhaled deeply and suppressed the anger welling in his heart. What was this Liu Yue going to do? She couldn't have endured that whole insult, could she?

Liu Xin Ai glared at Liu Yue with despise. She had purposely talked down on her and pointed out her bad history in front of the crowd, so that they would also look down on her. Then, losing the respect of these people, even if she had the position of the Crown Princess, her position would not be stable.

The position of the Princess Consort to the King of Yi, was hers alone.

Liu Yue looked towards Liu Xin Ai emotionlessly. Cold as ice, she spoke a few words, "His Majesty the Emperor had bestowed the marriage to me personally."

"So what..."

"Be quiet." Liu Xin Qing hurriedly walked over and warned Liu Xin Ai sternly.

"Don't talk rubbish." The ever-smiling Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng had also came forward. How could Liu Xin Ai know about Liu Yue's powers? Liu Yue was not a person to be trifled with. Once someone had become her enemy, she would trample them down ruthlessly without any

ounce of mercy.

At the same time, the Crown Prince walked towards Liu Yue and said, "Liu Yue, Liu Xin Ai is still young and not sensible enough..."

With a wave of her hands, Liu Yue stopped Xuan Yuan Cheng's words. Looking towards the arrogant Liu Xin Ai, her lips curled up into a beautiful smile as she said, "So what? Very good."

Just two words, 'very good', and Liu Yue immediately turned away and left the place. The crowd rubbed their eyes as it seemed that Liu Yue had suddenly disappeared.

Everyone was immediately stupefied. What kind of skill had she learnt that allowed her to move so quickly?

"You...Argh, quickly chase after her." Liu Xin Qin's expressions was deathly pale as she quickly ran towards the direction where Liu Yue had disappeared.

Xuan Yuan Cheng immediately turned towards Xuan Yuan Che with an ashen face and said, "Third brother, you know that Xin Ai often speak harshly but she didn't have any bad intentions. I would apologize to Liu Yue for her faults today. Could you talk with Liu Yue so that we could keep our family's harmony?"

"My Princess Consort's temperament, Older Brother, you should know it very well. How could I persuade her?" Xuan Yuan Che coldly replied, showing clearly that he would not take the Crown Prince's side in this matter.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Cheng glared at Liu Xin Ai and then quickly chase after Liu Yue.

He must stop her, otherwise...

Chapter 45: Condemning the other Party

(1)

In the Tian Xi Palace, the Emperor of the Tian Zhen Empire, Xuan Yuan Yi, was playing chess with Imperial Consort Chen in the garden. Suddenly, Liu Yue appeared, crying and kneeling at Xuan Yuan Yi's feet.

"What is going on? Did Che-er bully you?" Xuan Yuan Yi, who had a square face and a scholarly look, smiled towards Liu Yue and asked, his tone gentle and kind.

Although he had never seen Liu Yue before, but he had heard a lot about her. Having so many accomplishments at such a young age, who else could there ever be except for Liu Yue.

"Someone is bullying Liu Yue." Liu Yue said with a face full of tears.

"Who'd dare to bully my daughter-in-law? Tell me, Imperial mother will avenge them for you." Imperial Consort Chen immediately stood straight, her beautiful face looking grim.

"No, if anyone bullies me, I will personally pay them back myself. I only wish for Your Majesty's favour, please allow me to give them a beating to appease this anger in my heart. Please don't take their side." Liu Yue said with a heated voice and her head still bowed on the ground.

Seeing that Liu Yue had actually looked for him to ask for this kind of favour, Xuan Yuan Yi thought that the person who had bullied her must be of a high position. He had wanted to think about this matter further, but after hearing that Liu Yue only wanted to give them a beating, he decided to give her this favour. Fight if you want. Even if Liu Yue was skilful in martial arts, how bad would it get?

Furthermore, it was also not good to reject her in front of Imperial Consort Chen. He immediately laughed, nodded and said, "Alright, I agree to help you. But remember, you should not kill anyone."

"Liu Yue understands. Thank you, Your Majesty." As she finished her gratitude, she turned and quickly ran away. She appeared to be an

impulsive thirteen years old girl.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Yi smiled towards Imperial Consort Chen, “She is still a small kid.”

Imperial Consort Chen only smiled back. She had spoken with Liu Yue a few times. Perhaps, Liu Yue was not as simple as that.

Yellow Tune Street, one of the main road in the capital city of the Tian Zhen Empire.

At this moment, the Yellow Tune Street was crowded with people, bustling with noise and excitement.

At this Yellow Tune Street, there was a large mansion, the place of residence for a powerful aristocrat. The front door of this mansion was painted in red and decorated with two large statues of lion. It looked extremely majestic and extravagant. There were three words written in big, beautiful calligraphy on the signboard of this mansion, “Left Minister’s Residence”

Bang! A golden chair was suddenly dropped right in front of the Left Minister’s front door. Liu Yue swiped her robe and sat majestically on the chair, her hands holding a whip. She lashed the whip once, causing a white whiplash mark on the ground.

Liu Yue then proceeded to mark the Left Minister’s door with long, whip marks. Then she sat right in front of the door majestically, holding the long whip, not moving an inch.

Chapter 46: Condemning the other Party

(2)

An ordinary looking girl let out an aura that didn't allow anyone to approach her, cold and austere.

The people that were originally busy trading goods in the street looked at Liu Yue in confusion. They started to crowd around her to find out what was happening.

However, due to Liu Yue's frightening aura, they retreated back, only watching from a distance.

They only watched Liu Yue sitting alone right in front of the majestic Left Minister's House, looking sombre and grim.

The two guards standing guard outside the front door frowned. One of them, a guard with a fierce-looking face, strode forward and arrogantly said, "Where are you from, little girl, what are you doing here? How could you block the entrance to his highness Left Minister's Residence? Scram."

He said that as he tried to push Liu Yue out.

Before his hands even touched Liu Yue, Liu Yue, who was closing her eyes and looked like she was sleeping, suddenly moved her hands, lashing the whip out to the guard.

The guard did not have time to react before his body was slammed into the lion statue.

With a loud bang, the fierce looking guard threw out a stream of blood and passed out on the ground.

The surrounding people gasped with surprise. Someone was openly causing trouble in the Left Minister's Manor.

"Well done, you dared to cause trouble in the Left Minister's Residence. You have the nerve although you had such an ugly face." Seeing that, the other guard took out the sword on his hilt and charged towards Liu Yue.

Eyes still closed, Liu Yue lashed the whip again. The long whip was like

an angry dragon that instantly flew towards the guard.

Only the whip's shadow was seen and the guard suddenly howled painfully, blood flowing down his chest.

"You, you, wait and see." The guard who was slammed into the lion statue stood back up miserably, rubbing his waist as he staggered into the house.

Seeing this, some of the kind hearted people in the crowd immediately warned Liu Yue, "Little girl, get away from here quickly. The Left Minister is not someone to be trifled with...: "Yeah, the Left Minister was one of the Prime Ministers of this country. His daughter is also the Empress. I have also heard that his granddaughter is going to be Crown Princess Consort soon. Who would dared to pick a fight with them? You would only stir trouble for yourself..."

"Go quickly, you won't be able to escape when they have called all their troops..."

Hearing this, Liu Yue slowly opened her eyes and looked towards the people outside. She gave a cold smile and said, "From this day on, you can enter this mansion, but no one is allowed to exit this place."

Chapter 47: Condemning the other Party

(3)

Her aggressive voice immediately silenced the murmurs of the surrounding crowd. The Yellow Tune Street that was usually lively had now turned dead silent.

“No Royal Decree, no weapons and troops, is she even prepared to cause such a big trouble...?”

“Did you see that two attacks? That was not easy...not easy...”

In just a short moment, the crowd immediately started to mumble their astonishment.

Although Liu Yue had heard all of these whispers, she closed her eyes and sat back down calmly, not even a tinge of smile could be seen in her face.

“Who? Who dared to disturb our Left Ministers’ Residence?” At this moment, the large red-coloured front door suddenly opened again as a bunch of soldiers wielding swords and spears burst out, each and everyone filled with killing intent.

“It’s her.” The guard with the beaten up face immediately pointed at Liu Yue, his whole face distorted with anger. “She also said something about only allowing people in and not letting a single one out.”

When the leader of the troops heard this, he was extremely angry as he hollered at Liu Yue, “What a nerve you have! You dared to beat up our Residence’s Guards, don’t you have any respect for this country’s laws?”

Liu Yue, whose eyes were still closed, didn’t react to his question even a little bit. It almost looked like she had fallen asleep.

Seeing this, the Guard Leader was immediately furious as he waved his hand and shouted, “Charge, everyone! Break her legs for me, then tie her up and throw her into the jail! Our Left Minister’s Residence is not a place for you, a kid, to kid around.”

As he finished his words, the ten men behind him immediately brandished their weapons and charged towards Liu Yue.

Her lustrous black hair swayed in the wind as Liu Yue flicked the whip on her hands, her eyes now opened and showing a fearsome killing intent. The whip flew towards the guards fast as lightning.

A whiplash split the air and produced a thundering sound, just like the sound of thunder across the sky during a storm.

A loud “bam” was heard as the dark shadow of the long whip landed on their targets. The surrounding crowd almost couldn’t see the lightning fast movements before the whole place was suddenly covered with dust.

Liu Yue was still closing her eyes and sitting down on her chair, right at the same place.

However, in front of her, the ten large, bulky men were all pushed back from the attack. There were traces of whip lashes along their throats.

One whip. It was just one whip.

Over 10 large men collapsed with a single whip.

Taking off their helmets, the ten large men held their throats and writhe in pain. Beads of perspiration filled their foreheads as they felt a sinister aura seeping out from the little girl in front of them.

Closing her eyes and leaning back on the chair, Liu Yue slowly rubbed the long whip with her fingers. The indifferent look in her face had turned hostile and domineering as she glared at the guards in front of her.

Chapter 48: Condemning the other Party

(4)

“Gasp.” the surrounding crowd immediately gasped loudly. Seeing the sudden change on Liu Yue’s expressions, they were immediately alarmed and unconsciously retreated back a few steps. What a frightening girl!

The Guard Leader’s face turned ashen at this. One whole troop of soldiers ended up writhing in pain on the ground with one attack, and he was the only one left standing. He had never expected that this ugly girl actually possessed so much power.

“Who are you?” He must have heard about such a powerful girl in the city. Which General’s family was this girl from?

No answer was heard from Liu Yue. Instead, Liu Yue raised her head high and looked at him condescendingly, as if telling him that he was not worthy enough to know her name.

Her action was even more frightening than words. Such a condescending act, it was even worse than slapping the Guard Leader right at his face.

The Guard Leader’s face had slowly turned green, but he could not find a way out of this embarrassing situation.

“Impressive skills.” At this moment, an indifferent voice sounded. Two middle-aged men slowly walked out of the Left Minister’s Residence. One of them had praised Liu Yue.

“Military Training Officer Lin, she...” the Guard Leader looked like he had found someone he could depend on, and immediately turned to welcome the two men.

Military Training Officer Lin who had spoken just now dismissed him with a wave of his hands and said, “I understood the whole situation, you can withdraw now.”

Seeing this, the Guard Leader immediately stood at the side and gave

Liu Yue a sinister smile. These were two of the strongest people in the Left Minister's Residence. They would definitely be able to teach this rude girl a lesson.

"Little miss, don't blame us for being rude." Once he had finished his words, Officer Lin and the other man suddenly charged forward. Officer Lin brandished his sharp sword and flew towards Liu Yue, prepared to attack, while the other man flew towards the main road.

They had seen Liu Yue's attack just now from inside the manor. Hence, they had decided to go all out from the start.

Lips curling a little, Liu Yue revealed an icy smile. The long whip that was lying on the ground suddenly lashed towards the man who had charged towards the main street and twined around him, like a coiling dragon.

At the same time, she moved her hands and blocked the incoming attack from Officer Lin. Her movements were swift like the wind, and her style of fighting was unique and out of this world.

A thick air of killing intent arose from her body, enveloping the whole space in that place.

Officer Lin had bear the brunt of this aura. That thick scent of killing intent was almost like being pressured by Yama, the King of Hell. The pressure was so strong that he almost broke down from it. Officer Lin was deeply shocked. No one should be able to emit such a strong killing intent if he had not killed thousands of people before. This girl...this girl...

Chapter 49: Condemning the other Party

(5)

With his heart stricken, the sword in Officer Lin's hands trembled. That strange, empty-handed attack that had struck on his wrist did not belong to any Martial Arts School, yet the effects...

Her empty hands waved once as Liu Yue did a backflip. She then sat back calmly on her chair, calm and unhurried.

"Peng." A loud sound resounded. Officer Lin looked at his wrist in disbelief as he saw blood spurting out from it. His fingers did not have any more strength to hold his sword, that had fallen on the ground. His hands...

"I've said this before, no one is allowed to go out." the indifferent words sounded in the air like a bomb that had exploded in the sky, carrying an air of dominance and power.

Officer Lin's heart trembled. He turned his head and saw the man who was with him curled up on the ground, his legs in a distorted position. There was also a whip scar on his legs.

The two strongest martial artists from the Left Minister's Residence had both fallen under this little girl's hands, who was this girl exactly?

Shocking, it was truly an unfathomable scene.

The surrounding people who was watching the whole scene became stupefied, their eyes wide opened and mouths agape. Their minds unconsciously told them to run away, that this girl was simply too powerful.

Taking back the killing intent she had released, Liu Yue pulled the long whip back to her side. Looking around the defeated soldiers and generals, she gave a loud humph. The contempt she held in that single humph could be felt even by the crowd of people who was watching the scene.

The sun was shining brightly outside, yet this place seemed to be

overcast with dark clouds and storms.

While Liu Yue was beating the guards up, the Left Minister's neighbour who had built a good relation with him had called up the Governor of the capital city. Beating up the Left Minister's Guards in front of the main street, disregarding the law, this matter should be settled through the Governor's Judgement.

Riding high on horses, hundreds of soldiers charged forward majestically.

"I should work hard to gain the Prime Minister's favour with this matter." The Governor had personally led the troops, his eyes shining with excitement. He didn't have the chance to suck up to the Left Minister before, but today a chance had delivered itself on a silver platter.

As he finished his words, a cold, indifferent sound replied him before the Deputy Governor riding beside him could reply, "Are you trying to take credit for somebody else's work? Did you even know who was causing trouble for the Left Minister?"

The Governor immediately reined his horse when he heard this, and looked towards the person standing on the road side.

Wearing a green coloured robe, it was a young man with a cultured and intelligent features. He was one of the younger generation of the Mu Rong Residence, Mu Rong Chen. The Governor thought that he must show respect to him.

The Governor reined his horse and smiled towards Mu Rong Chen, "May I know who is it?"

"She is my little sister, Mu Rong Liu Yue." Mu Rong Chen leaned against the walls and looked towards the Governor, raising his brows a little.

Chapter 50: Condemning the other Party

(6)

“Mu Rong Liu Yue.” The Governor’s pleased expression immediately vanished.

She was even a higher ranked person he couldn’t afford to offend. She had the Mu Rong General’s support, the number one General, the number one family of warriors of the Tian Zhen Empire. She had even become the Third Prince’s Princess Consort. She had the authority to do what she wanted with the support of King of Yi. Furthermore, she even had the Right Minister’s support.

The Eastern Palace, the Western Palace, the Left Minister, the Right Minister and the Mu Rong Residence. He couldn’t afford to offend even a single one of these big powers.

The Governor rolled his eyes and immediately sighed, holding his forehead, “This is such a headache. My head is hurting too much. Quickly return, let’s return.”

He said that as he turned his horse and galloped away, running faster than when he arrived.

Seeing this, Mu Rong Chen who was leaning against the wall laughed out loud. He turned and saw Mu Rong Liu Yue, the sister that he had never heard before, who was surrounded by a crowd of people. He had indeed underestimated her.

A few moments ago, a messenger had come to the Mu Rong Residence. When the Mu Rong Clan Head Mu Rong Wu Di read the message that was sent, he didn’t say anything much and quickly ordered everyone to block off the Yellow Tune Street. No one, not even the Governor or the City Guards were allowed to pass through.

Everything was clear now, she had finally stepped into the war.

Balanced in all aspects, she had both courage and intelligence. This Mu Rong Liu Yue was just like a sleeping dragon. But once she spread her

wings, she would soar through the sky.

She didn't even give an ounce of respect to the ruling government of this country. This Mu Rong Liu Yue was indeed cold and ruthless.

In the Left Minister's front gate, the situation was still cold and austere.

"Move over, move over. You fugly beast, how dare you come to our house and behave so atrociously! Did you think there are no guards in our Left Minister Residence?" Right at this moment, Liu Xin Ai suddenly charged forward.

Behind her, Liu Xin Qing and the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng followed.

In the palace, they were one step too late in meeting the Emperor. They heard about how Liu Yue had asked for a favour to give Liu Xin Ai a beating. They had actually planned on how to resolve the matter peacefully in the palace, but unexpectedly, Liu Yue had went out of the palace.

Then, they heard countless reports that Liu Yue had gone as far as to wait in front of the Left Minister's Residence, and then beat up all of the Left Minister's guards. Since she had caused such a big trouble, they immediately rode to the Left Minister's place.

Hearing Liu Xin Ai's voice, Liu Yue who was still closing her eyes, opened them and emitted a thick killing intent. She grabbed the whip that was lying on the ground, and the whip suddenly flew towards Liu Xin Ai fast as a lightning, as if it had a will on its own.

Chapter 51: Condemning the other Party

(7)

“Little Miss, careful! Avoid it quickly!” The Guard Leader, who was the only one unhurt in that place, paled when he saw Liu Yue moved her whip and quickly shouted out.

Even their strongest Master, Military Training Officer Lin, had been defeated in Liu Yue’s hands. How could Little Miss be her opponent?

“Did you think I would be afraid of...Ahh...” Liu Xin Ai had not even finished her sentence when Liu Yue’s black whip had already flew towards her and twined around her waist. With a strong pull from Liu Yue, Liu Xin Ai’s body was slammed into the front gates.

“Xin Ai!” Liu Xin Qing who was following close behind, immediately screamed in alarm.

Xuan Yuan Cheng had not fully assessed the situation in front of the gates just now, but as soon as he take in the whole scene in front of him, his brows twitched and he immediately stopped his horse on its tracks, not moving a single step forward.

Liu Yue had a resolute look on her face. If he had tried to interfere, he would certainly be condemned.

“Peng”. A heavy sound of collision resounded as Liu Xin Ai slammed right into the red-coloured Front Gate. Liu Yue then snatched back her whip, causing Liu Xin Ai to roll on the ground a few times. However, she quickly stood back up.

Although her whole body was in pain having slammed against the door, she was not injured at all.

Seeing this, Liu Xin Ai thought that Liu Yue’s skills were simply empty talk, and shouted smugly, “Fugly, you should see my ski...”

“Peng.” She had not even finished her sentence when Liu Yue suddenly lashed her whip on the large Front Gate of the Left Minister’s residence,

that was made with Iron Wood. With one lash of Liu Yue's whip, the whole gate was shattered, its wooden remnants flying all over the place. The Front Gate collapsed with a loud boom.

Liu Xin Ai was immediately overwhelmed with shock. Iron Wood was the strongest and hardest wood amongst all types of woods. It was almost as hard as iron. How could it shatter with just a...

"If you dared to speak another rude word, the next whip will be on your face." A pair of sinister-looking eyes glared into Liu Xin Ai's as Liu Yue spoke with her cold voice.

Liu Xin Ai immediately turned pale. Liu Yue's eyes were filled with so much killing intent that she couldn't help but tremble. How could this girl turn so frightening in such a short time?

When Liu Xin Qing who was following right behind Liu Xin Ai saw that her sister was alright, she sighed a breath of relief. She quickly walked towards Liu Xin Ai and nodded towards Liu Yue, "Liu Yue, today, Xin Ai had wronged you. I will apologize in her stead. Please be gracious and forgive her this time. Furthermore, we are all a close family, it wouldn't benefit us all if we let this matter get too big."

Hearing that, Liu Yue coldly humphed and glanced towards Liu Xin Qing, asking coldly, "Who are you?"

Such a cold, indifferent three words made Liu Xin Qing rather awkward, not knowing what to do. However, Liu Xin Qing was still a little more sensible than Liu Xin Ai. She took a deep breath and smiled towards Liu Yue, "I'm the Left Minister's third granddaughter, my name is Xin Qing."

Chapter 52: Judging the Party at Fault (8)

“What qualifications do you have to ask me for a favour?” frigid words cut through the air, sharp like knives.

Liu Xin Qing was frozen on the spot. She immediately realized that Liu Yue was bestowed the position of the Princess Consort of King of Yi by the Emperor, hence she had the official position of the Princess Consort. On the other hand, Liu Xin Qing was a nobody. Although she would enter the Eastern Palace soon, she had no title and her identity was only the Left Minister’s granddaughter. That position was heavens apart from the position of King of Yi’s Princess Consort. She had no grounds, no qualifications at all in asking Liu Yue for a favour.

After thinking about that, Liu Xin Qing gritted her teeth. She lifted her head and looked around. Even if she didn’t have the qualifications, the Crown Prince should have it, right?

Sweeping past the crowd of people, she couldn’t even find the shadow of the Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng. Liu Xin Qing was so anxious that she stomped on her feet. How could this person disappear in such a crucial moment?

Seeing this, Liu Yue gave a cold smile. If Xuan Yuan Cheng dared to interfere, she would make sure he’d bear the consequences.

The front of the Left Minister’s Residence was filled with confusion, groans and painful cries. With the collapse of the large front gate, the situation had become even more chaotic.

“Everyone, withdraw.” In the chaos, a calm voice resounded. A middle-aged man of around fifty wearing a green coloured robe slowly walked out. There were a few strands of white hair on his black hair. However, his physique was still strong and well-built.

He carried himself with dignity. Finally, after beating up all of these small fries, their real master came out.

“Do I, the Left Minister, have the qualifications then?” he asked Liu Yue

in a calm and indifferent voice.

Liu Yue played with the whip in her hands as she looked deep into the Left Minister's eyes. Finally, he couldn't sit still inside his throne anymore, eh?

Both had no intentions to tolerate each other as they gazed at each other coldly.

"May I ask, on what purpose does Lady Mu Rong barge into my residence and injure my subordinates, turning a blind eye on the laws and regulations in this country, in broad daylight to boot?" An indifferent voice sounded, every word rebuking Liu Yue's lack of manners.

"I'm judging the party at fault." Liu Yue smiled emotionlessly as she raised her head arrogantly, like a tyrant at her best.

Everyone in the crowd immediately gasped aloud. They had never seen anyone who dared to condemn someone this way before. This Lady Mu Rong was simply too audacious!

Hearing this, the Left Minister twitched his eyebrows. He looked at the pale-faced Liu Xin Ai standing beside him and then he saw Liu Xin Qing giving him a signal to continue the talk inside. However, he was already forced to step outside by Liu Yue. If he still invited Liu Yue into the manor, he could just throw his face into the river.

Furthermore, Liu Yue's attitude was simply too rude. A little thirteen years old girl dared to speak so rudely towards him. He wanted to see exactly how difficult she would be to deal with.

After a small pause, he replied, "Alright, you may begin your judgement."

"You are guilty of looking down upon the Emperor's orders, ignoring the Emperor's orders, failure to respect a person of a higher position, slandering a loyal minister of the country, and looking down upon the current Princess Consort. Was that enough?" Liu Yue purposely shouted her last sentence loudly. Her voice was like a thunder splitting the sky, shocking the crowd.

Chapter 53: Judging the Party at Fault (9)

Hearing all these crimes, the Left Minister immediately frowned. He couldn't shoulder the consequences for even one of them.

His face blackened at that moment and replied: "Lady Mu Rong. Don't talk recklessly. If you can't hand out the evidence today, then don't blame me for reporting to the emperor that you had slandered the Imperial Officials." Having said that, he pointed at the imperial palace with his hand.

Liu Yue sneered as she heard that, "You want evidence. Alright. Is Liu Xin Ai your granddaughter?"

The Left Minister listened with a cold, hardened expression and muttered, "Yes."

"Today, in front of all the Dragon Rider Guards, Liu Xin Ai accused that I, the Princess Consort, had joined hands with General Mu Rong to shoddily deceive the Emperor. Left Minister, did you think that I, the Princess Consort, would not be able to defeat an enemy with one move?"

In her icy cold voice, the black whip in Liu Yue's hands suddenly waved and the other intact front gate behind the Left Minister was immediately shattered with a loud sound as pieces of woods flew in all directions.

"Slandering a loyal minister of the country, the Great General Mu Rong. This is the first crime."

Left Minister's face immediately twitched. This was a crime that can either be considered big or small. He instantly glared deeply at Liu Xin Ai.

Before he even managed to speak, Liu Yue's eyebrow pricked up and shouted, "I, the Princess Consort, was granted this marriage by the Emperor himself, and my name had already been listed in the imperial lineage. Yelling at me, the Princess Consort. How could you dared to do that?"

Defying the Princess consort of this dynasty. This is the second crime.

A lowly granddaughter of the Left Minister dared to deliberately insult

the Imperial Princess Consort of the present dynasty.

Offending a superior. This is the third crime.”

Saying in a cold tone. With each sentence from Liu Yue, the Left Minister’s face turned darker than before, as he frowned and knitted his brow.

“Humph! You can still turn a blind eye on slandering me, the Princess Consort and the Mu Rong Clan. However, she had the audacity to look down upon the Emperor’s words. When I, the Princess Consort, mentioned the Emperor’s name in defense, she had actually dared to reply rudely and said, ‘So what?’

Fine. If our Emperor of the Tian Zhen Empire means nothing, then does that mean you, the Left Minister, is something important?

The words of the Emperor doesn’t count as words and the Imperial Decree issued is not important either, then does that mean only the words spoken by you, the Left Minister, count as words?”

She spoke with a cool tone as cold as the ice and snow in the north pole. With her one sentence, ‘Does that mean only the words spoken by you, the Left Minister, count as words?’ immediately made the area around completely silent as numerous people held their breath.

These were all crimes that were treacherous and offensive to the law.

“Ridiculous. I, the Left Minister, revered the emperor and will even die for the emperor. When were there such comments? Miss Mu Rong, do not arbitrarily slander me.”

Chapter 54: Judging the Party at Fault (10)

Shiro: Thank you sponsors!! 6 chapter mass release~ Sorry for being late! Also, sorry for being so confused. I can't really grasp if Liu Xin Qing and Liu Xin Ai are the Left Minister's daughter or granddaughter. But it seemed like they are the granddaughters from this chapter... let's just assume they are the granddaughters, yeah? hahah. Enjoy!

*

The left minister's face became stern as he heard the last sentence. Other crimes could be settled through discussion. However, the last crime, that is a crime that will result in the execution of whole clan.

"You claimed that I slandered you, Left Minister. Do you want me, the Princess Consort, to bring someone here as the evidence for you to refer? These words were not heard by just one person, including your third granddaughter, Liu Xin Qing behind you." Pulling the black whip in her hands, Liu Yue's face had a cold, hardened expression.

The Left Minister immediately turned his head and casted Liu Xin Qing a glance. Liu Xin Qing knitted her brow and did not respond.

"Look at that! This is the power of the Left Minister. The person involved didn't dare to speak. Could it be that after tonight, the Crown Prince, King of Yi and Dragon Riders Guards that were present at that time would all recant and claim that they had heard nothing? Or maybe they would turn against me, the Princess Consort, and allege that I slandered you? It seemed like in this Tian Zhen Royal Court, Left Minister, your authority has even surpassed the..... "

"Miss Mu Rong." Before Liu Yue could finish her sentence, the Left Minister suddenly interrupted harshly.

Liu Yue's eyes instantly shone coldly and also roared: "Liu Cheng Qing. I, the Princess Consort, had kept in mind that you are an elder and also the Maternal Uncle of the Prince in this dynasty, so I yielded slightly in respect. But don't you dare to think that I, Mu Rong Liu Yue, can be easily picked on. In this Tian Zhen Royal Court, you can't hide the truth

from the masses.”

Each words and sentences relate back to the imperial throne. Such a big accusation, how would the Left Minister defend his stand?

The atmosphere instantly turned hostile.

If the Left Minster couldn't regain his composure, then he could end up going against the Right Minister, King of Yi and General Mu Rong, these influential powers, all at the same time.

Taking a deep breath,the Left Minister restrained the fiery anger within his chest and still appeared quite calmly.

“I, I don't mean that. ” When he was just about to speak, Liu Xin Ai unexpectedly stammered, “I just didn't like her. I did not mean to disobey Emperor. I... I didn't...didn't...”

As her comely amorous eyes saw the cold glances of Liu Yue, she unconsciously stammered the words “didn't” for a quite some time and couldn't continue her words.

The Left Minister raised his eyebrows slightly as he heard Liu Xin Ai and his anger immediately vanished.

He flashed a smile towards Liu Yue and said, “I see that my granddaughter had misspoken. Miss Mu Rong, a child's tantrum should be ignored. Plus, my granddaughter did not have the thought of defying the Emperor. I believed that if the Emperor had heard this, he wouldn't blame us. The Left Minster Faction do not dare to shoulder this crime.

He paused for a moment and continued speaking, “As for the charge of slandering loyal ministers of the court, I am afraid Xin Ai had also spoken recklessly. I will visit General Mu Rong and apologize myself, so that this matter would not disrupt the harmony between you and my family.

Chapter 55: Judging the Party at Fault (11)

As for the rude behaviour towards Lady Mu Rong, Liu Xin Ai had to be punished for that. How could she be so impertinent and lacked manners? Xin Ai, come over here and apologize to the Lady.” He then turned and beckoned Xin Ai to come over. With three sentences, the Left Minister had dissolved all of Liu Yue’s judgement. He didn’t have decades of political experience in the court for nothing.

Liu Yue had actually expected this from the start. She could not rely on Liu Xin Ai’s slip of tongue to bring the Left Minister down. It was something that would never happen. She only said those words as a bluff, but her main goal was this.

“Can an apology be enough?” Chilling words flew out from her mouth as Liu Yue grasped the long whip in her hands, smiling coldly.

“Then what does Lady Mu Rong mean?” The Left Minister gathered his sleeves and looked at Liu Yue.

“I meant you, the Left Minister. It’s your fault for not raising your granddaughter right. Don’t tell me you think that an apology is enough for all these?” her lips curling into a cold-blooded smile, Liu Yue lashed the whip in her hands on the ground once.

Hearing that, Left Minister immediately frowned. Seemed like his method of avoiding the major charges while admitting minor ones had failed.

He lifted his eyes and took a measure of Liu Yue. This girl was only thirteen years old, how could she have such a meticulous mind? Furthermore, she was ruthless in threatening others. If she grew up in the future, then...

“You have to see who the master is when beating a dog. I, Mu Rong Liu Yue, will definitely not ignore this sequence of fault when charging someone for crimes.” Faintly narrowing her eyes, a flash of evil crossed her eyes.

“Since you should just ignore a small kid’s rants, that’s fine, I, the Princess Consort wouldn’t argue with Liu Xin Ai. But it’s still the same old thing. If I don’t receive a satisfying compensation for this whole debacle today, nobody is allowed to go out of the Left Minister’s residence. You can only go in but not out.” Saying these tyrannical words, Liu Yue lashed her black whip again in front of the Left Minister’s Front Gate.

With her cold-blooded look, that ordinary-looking face was actually emitting a razor-sharp intimidating aura.

Hearing Liu Yue using his words against himself, his brows immediately twitched but he didn’t reply anything.

In that moment, the whole air stood still.

Although the surrounding crowd was not in the ten thousands, there should at least be hundreds to thousands. Yet no one dared to speak a single word. In this kind of situation, even the sound of a needle falling to the ground would probably be as loud as a detonating bomb.

The two stared at each other in the silence.

And at this moment, the palace was also in chaos. In the Tian Chen Palace, Tian Zhen Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi was frowning with headache facing the two powers of the harem, Empress Liu and Imperial Consort Chen. He could only gave them a bitter laugh.

He only took Liu Yue as a kid. He thought as a kid, she could just hit back when she was bullied, so he had given her permission to do so.

Chapter 56: Judging the Party at Fault (12)

How would he know that Liu Yue's guts was higher than the skies and that her behaviour was so absolute? She had actually went over to the Left Minister's residence and beat all of his guards up. Even then, none of the guards were able to go past her. He really did not know what to say.

"Your Majesty, you must back me up, your wife...The honourable Left Minister was disgraced by a little kid. If this ever gets out, it's nothing much if it was only my father's face that was disgraced, but it would also tarnish the reputation of Tian Zhen Empire!" Empress Liu droned on at Xuan Yuan Yi, full of resentment and dissatisfaction.

Back her up? He also wanted to back her up, but he was the one who allowed Liu Yue to do that. How could he take back his words?

"I have already given her my promise not to interfere in her business. I had also allowed her to give them a beating." Xuan Yuan Yi knitted his brows once again.

"Now she had already beaten all of them up, what else does she wants?" Empress Liu's face was filled with resentment and anger.

"But did she beat up anyone with the surname of Liu?" Imperial Consort Chen, who was standing at one side, asked the servant behind her with calculated and unhurried words.

"No, she had only beaten up some servants. She didn't touch a single hair on the Left Minister's family, even the impertinent Miss Liu Xin Ai." The servant behind her immediately replied.

Imperial Consort Chen only nodded and murmured a little "Oh."

She didn't say anything much, but she had blatantly laid her point in the open. The Emperor had promised Liu Yue to allow her to beat up the person who bullied her, which was the people with the surname of Liu. Since she still had not beaten them up yet, the Emperor's words could not be counted as done.

Xuan Yuan Yi sat in the middle of the two Consorts. Listening to both

sides, it was difficult to make any decision.

Hearing this, Empress Liu frowned and looked towards Imperial Consort Chen, “Little Sister, Liu Xin Ai was simply not sensible enough. Her words may be harsh and she would need to be punished. Liu Yue should just punish her alone, I wouldn’t complain at all. However, now she actually went to my father’s, the Left Minister, residence. What does she meant by doing that?”

Seeing Empress Liu rebuking her words, Imperial Consort Chen immediately put on an easy smile and said, “That’s true. Servant Li, how did Liu Yue explain her behaviour?”

“She said that it was a father’s fault for not raising his children well. Since his grandchild had made a mistake, she wanted to demand justice from the Left Minister.” Servant Li, who was serving behind Imperial Consort Chen, immediately bowed and replied to her question.

Imperial Consort Chen smiled and nodded at her words, then turned towards Empress Liu’s ashen face. “Older Sister had also said that Liu Xin Ai was not sensible. She is already sixteen years old yet she had not learn polite manners or how to be sensible towards others. Naturally, it was the Left Minister’s fault for not raising her right. Although Liu Yue is still young, since she had already accepted the marriage bestowment, then she is considered an adult. How could an adult pick a fight with a child? Naturally, she will find another adult to resolve the problem. Don’t you think that’s right, older sister?”

Every sentence that came out from Imperial Consort Chen’s lips was logical and made sense; they almost caused Empress Liu to vomit blood in distress. However, she couldn’t think of anything to rebut her words.

Chapter 57: Judging the Party at Fault (13)

After staying silent for a while, Empress Liu finally understood that she couldn't have her way today. She never expected that although Liu Yue was still young, she had thought forward with so much depth. She had actually turned the Left Minister's Family into a big joke, tarnishing their reputation.

After a pause, Empress Liu finally took a deep breath and looked towards the silent Xuan Yuan Yi and said, "Your Majesty, since it's that way, may I request for your help to command the Governor and the Police Commander to disperse the crowd watching the scene? It would not be good if such a large crowd gathered."

Xuan Yuan Yi stole a glance towards Imperial Consort Chen. Seeing that she did not disagree with this, he nodded and said, "Alright, I think I can do..."

"Royal Father." Before his sentence was finished, the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng stepped into the room and interrupted him.

"Royal Father, your son had gone to the Governor and Police Commander's office just now. None of them was present. It seems that the Governor had went outside the city with some of the guards to take care of some problems with bandits. The Police Commander, on the other hand, was bedridden with sickness. With regards to the three Head Polices below him, they had all brought the soldiers out to train. They wouldn't be back for a while."

The Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng shook his head, laughing bitterly.

As his words ended, the whole of Tian Chen Palace fell into a deathly silence, only the sound of Empress Liu's gritting her teeth was heard.

This was clearly a case of running away at the last minute. Defeating bandits, sick and bedridden, they had really thought of creative reasons. How could any bandits dared to rob someone near the capital? The Police Commander who was as healthy as a horse yesterday suddenly fell sick today, who would ever believe that?

They were only afraid of getting involved between the clash of the two powers. They didn't want to provoke any of the sides. Hence they chose to turn a blind eye and a deaf ear. Damn these two old geezers!

Empress Liu looked deeply into Imperial Consort Chen's eyes, who didn't change her expression at all since the beginning. No wonder she didn't disagree with her just now, they had taken care of this problem.

Imperial Consort Chen saw Empress Liu glaring at her and understood what Empress Liu had thought of her. However, Empress Liu had actually wronged her.

The Right Minister supporting her had not made a move at all. However, after hearing the news, General Mu Rong had immediately made their move. In terms of Military powers, General Mu Rong had much more power and authority than the Right Minister. Then why would they need to get involved in this? Looks like this Liu Yue girl was indeed impressive, she had already thought about it that far ahead.

"In that case, I have heard that Liu Yue would listen to Che-er's words. When Che-er told her not to leave Liu Li Palace for a month, she really did not go a single step outside. Che-er should be able to persuade her." Xuan Yuan Yi sighed a tired breath. Why can't any one of them leave him in peace?

"That's right." Empress Liu's eyes immediately brightened up. When Liu Yue visited her in her palace the other day, Xuan Yuan Che had pulled Liu Yue without asking her consent, and Liu Yue had followed him without resisting at all.

Chapter 58: Judging the Party at Fault (14)

How would they know that Liu Yue had stayed inside Liu Li Palace, not because Xuan Yuan Che did not allow Liu Yue out for a month, but because Liu Yue was training to recover her skills. It was not that she couldn't go out, she just didn't have the time to go outside.

"No need to ask him." Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng gave a bitter laugh and said, "Third brother had just gone to Chaozhou. He said that he was going to bring the Dragon Rider Guards out for training."

This was clearly showing that he would not help them at all.

The Tian Chen Palace fell into silence again, everyone was silent.

As time passed by second by second, the sky slowly turned dark.

In front of Left Minister's gate, Liu Yue had bought a piece of table, good wine and fine dishes, then calmly and unhurriedly dine right outside the Left Minister's residence. She completely ignored the people panicking inside the Left Minister's residence.

In the palace, other ministers who had wanted to use this chance to gain favour with the Left Minister, had sent some messengers to the residence. Liu Yue had allowed them in, but she did not allow them out.

With a lash of her black whip, the messengers who tried to go out were scared witless as they stumble back into the house. The Ministers could only send the messengers from the Palace, but they couldn't go back. What to do now?

As the night turned darker, lanterns were lighted up.

The crowd of people watching in front of the Left Minister's house did not disperse at all. There were even some people who brought chairs, lighted up some lanterns and quietly watched from the side.

Nobody tried to disperse them. Usually, there would be night guards that would impose curfews on the residence at night, but tonight, there were no guards that dared to interfere and disperse such a big crowd.

Hence, everyone was very happy to have their way, as they sat and continued to watch the scene.

Having eaten to her content, she put down a silver ingot and a servant immediately came over to clean the table. Liu Yue sat back and relaxed on her chair, closing her eyelids and pounding the whip in her palms. Her behaviour was as calm and composed.

On the other hand, the remnants of the Front Gates in front of her looked ruined and desolate. It made the honourable Left Minister's Residence look even more pitiful than their neighbour's simple house.

The Left Minister did not stay outside at the front gate. Liu Xin Ai, Liu Xin Qing and the rest had also went inside. At the front gate, there were only guards keeping watch outside, who would steal a glance towards Liu Yue at times.

Time quickly passed by, and the moon rose up in the sky.

The silver light shone down upon the earth, cold yet full of dignity.

Sitting on the chair quietly, almost looking like she's asleep, Liu Yue looked so enchanting and beautiful under the moonlight.

Her shadow was faintly discernible under the moonlight, her body seemed to melt into the dark. It was such a serene and alluring scene.

The surrounding crowd still quietly watched, almost like there was only her in that place.

As the moon sets in the west, dawn was about to break.

Chapter 59: Judging the Party at Fault (15)

The Left Minister's Residence remained quiet and so did Liu Yue as the two confronted each other.

"Here. Someone is leaving from here." In the midst of silence, noisy voices were suddenly heard. Those around the right side of the Left Minister's Residence sharply noticed that a person crawled out of doggy hole on the walls of the Left Minister's Residence and darted into darkness. Hearing that, the escaping person immediately shrieked.

Upon hearing the sounds, Liu Yue slowly opened her eyes. She sneered coldly and uttered, "I will only block the door. If the Left Minister wanted to crawl out through the doggy hole too, I will let him go. "

Her cool voice resounded in the dead night. After a moment of silence, someone among the crowd of onlookers burst out a laughter.

This laugh seemed to possess a chain effect and then everyone started laughing. The sound of the boisterous laughter and chuckles in the dark night were extremely conspicuous and so scornful.

In the midst of the laughters, the morning waking bell at the palace afar was struck and rang.

It was about 5-7am. The time to go to the court.

Loud footsteps was heard as brightly lit torches came into view. Suddenly, noises were heard from the Left Minister's Residence that had been quiet all this time. Numerous fire torches glowed and shone, allowing the ground to be seen clearly.

The Left Minister was in his court robes. His head adorned in a crown of peacock topped with a dragon pearl. He was also wearing his first-ranked official shoes. With a stern face, he stepped out of the door first.

(Shiro: Ministers in Chinese Royal Court have ranks. First-ranked is the highest rank amongst the ministers.)

Under the torches as bright as day, his full attire was radiated clearly.

Behind the first ranked court robes, the Left Minister had both of his hands behind his back and his back was tied by a birch. This is... bearing a birch to offer a humble apology. The surrounding crowd immediately made an uproar in excitement.

“It’s the father’s fault for not raising his children right. My granddaughter Liu Xin Ai had insulted and slandered the Princess Consort to the King of Yi that was appointed by the Emperor. It is my unshirkable responsibility. I am guilty and I will bear the birch and offer a humble apology to the emperor myself.”

As he finished speaking, he looked sharply, full of anger, at Liu Yue and yelled, “Bring her here. ”

Immediately, some servants forcefully brought Liu Xin Ai out of the door and pushed her to kneel on the ground.

“Since she is 16, she cannot escape the responsibility for the offense. According to the laws of the Tian Zhen Empire, the punishment for insulting a member of the Imperial Family is one hundred strokes with the large rod. Strike her now.” The Left Minister bellowed loudly as his face turned ashen.

The servants behind him immediately forced the frightened Liu Xin Ai on the ground. Then, they lifted the rods in their hands and started to beat Liu Xin Ai’s backside with the rods.

Noticing the cold glare from Liu Yue, they instantly did not dare to decrease the strength of their beating and beat Liu Xin Ai with their normal strength.

At that moment, only the sound of the beatings could be heard.

Liu Xin Ai have been pampered since childhood. She had never experience such pain and instantly bawled and cursed continually, “Mu Rong Liu Yue, you are a...”

Chapter 60: Judging the Party at Fault (16)

Note:

The author got too lazy to give title to each chapters from the Judging the Party at Fault part. So every chapter will be like a series like this from this point onwards.

*

“Beat her!” The Left Minister roared fiercely as he heard her speak, glaring at her furiously.

The rod fell even harder on Liu Xin Ai.

“Ouch! I won’t dare to do it anymore. Please Forgive me. I won’t dare... Ah...”

Hearing that, Liu Yue sneered as she sat peacefully on the golden chair, watching the scene unfold in front of her.

Wailing and bawling, Liu Xin Ai was beaten until she was breathless. If she really took all off the one hundred beating punishment, the delicate Liu Xin Ai wouldn’t be able to stand it.

As the beating continued, her crying sound slowly disappeared.

“With this, Miss Mu Rong, are you satisfied now?” The Left Minister asked. He did not glance at Liu Xin Ai who was lying behind him, but glared angrily at Liu Yue, seething with rage.

“Very good. Left Minister, you are indeed the Left Minister. You raised your family with a strict teaching.” Liu Yue slowly stood up. She raised her brows satisfiedly and suddenly flicked her wrist.

The black whip immediately coiled out and struck at the rod that was repeatedly falling on Liu Xin Ai.

“That’s enough.” Liu Yue said leisurely.

Liu Xin Qing who had been staying inside immediately darted out. With tears streaming down her face, she held Liu Xin Ai who had been beaten to the point of dyin. Hatred towards Liu Yue filled her heart.

The rod had already beaten Liu Xin Ai ninety times before Liu Yue had said ‘That’s enough.’. What’s the difference between beating to one hundred fully?

“Let’s leave today’s events at that. The Left Minister has indeed convinced people by virtue, Liu Yue really admires you.” Saying amicable words after beating people up, this was even worse than saying sarcastic remarks instead.

“If that’s the case, Miss Mu Rong, please excuse me, I, the Minister, will be going to the court. ” The Left Minister stepped down when he finished talking. He was actually walking to the court.

If he wasn’t afraid of being late at the court. He would have liked to see how long Mu Rong Liu Yue can guard.

Unfortunately, Liu Yue had planned everything and waited just for this moment

“There’s no need to walk. Someone, prepare a palanquin for your master. Such an honorable Left Minister walking towards the court bearing a birch, that would really tarnish your reputation.” Speaking calmly, Liu Yue waved her hand and smiled elegantly towards the Left Minister, whose face was swelled up with anger.

The Left Minister almost spewed blood as he heard her words. She was here guarding for a day and a night, didn’t she plotted such an ending? Tarnish my reputation? My reputation had already been tarnished! Nothing more or less could change that. And now she had actually said such words, pretending to be a good person. That had really infuriated him.

Among the ashen and the green faces, Liu Yue turned around and left, laughing out loud as if there were nobody present.

Her laughter resounded loudly in the quiet night.

That impudence and arrogance was carried out to the fullest extent.

Today, the Left Minister had suffered a huge loss at Liu Yue’s hands.

Chapter 61: The Strong Will Be Respected

(1)

The moonlight sank below the horizon as a dim glow shone faintly in the sky.

Arriving back at Liu Li Palace, Liu Yue saw Yan Hu and Qiu Hen purposely awaiting at the door. They raised their thumbs highly and gave Liu Yue a thumbs up with an excited expression.

The lights glowed brightly within the palace, shining down upon Xuan Yuan Che who was sitting on the chair. He gazed at her with a faint smile on his lips.

Seeing Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue grinned and quickly walked towards him. She fell into his embrace as she gently rubbed Xuan Yuan Che's face.

After being battered by the cold wind for one whole night, his hug felt warm and nice.

"You little one. You are really fierce today. " Xuan Yuan Che pinched Liu Yue's nose gently and smiled with an evil yet alluring expression.

Xuan Yuan Che thought of how the Left Minister, who had always been sitting high up on his throne and was even fawned over by some princes, had been thoroughly humiliated today. He even had to lower his head for a small girl! Xuan Yuan Che was inwardly pleased when he thought about it.

Liu Yue laughed insolently as she heard his words and responded, "Didn't I say before that those who dared to mess with me won't have a good ending?"

"You." Xuan Yuan Che immediately laughed heartily while lowering his head to give Liu Yue a hard kiss on her cheeks. He appeared to be in a good mood.

"However, you have to be careful in the future. " Liu Yue, who had

hugged Xuan Yuan Che and kissed him back, suddenly warned him with her eyebrows raised.

Who was the Left Minister? He held the most power in the imperial court and he was also the emperor's maternal uncle. He would never let it go easily after being forced to suffer in silence. Even before this whole debacle, Empress Liu had already had the audacity to poison her. Now that he suffered, he would definitely become even more aggravated.

"Didn't you already draw them out in the open?" Xuan Yuan Che winked lightly and a shadow of ruthlessness flashed across his evil-looking, yet alluring, eyes.

In the past, Empress Liu and the Left Minister hid in the dark and made a move whenever they wanted, which was impossible to defend against.

Yet today Liu Yue had caused such a huge disturbance. He, the King Yi of the Tian Zhen Empire who already had the most military forces in his hands, who had even outshone the Crown Prince, now had such an awesome Princess Consort. As King Yi and his Princess Consort joined hands together, they would be unrivalled in this Tian Zhen Empire. If the Left Minister and the other powers behind the Crown Prince, wanted to make a move, they would need make it quick.

The Left Minister and the others would hurry to attack, yet they would remain calm and unhurried. So now the whole situation is at their advantage. They would be lurking in the dark, yet the Left Minister and the others would be seen clearly.

Hearing Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue immediately drew Xuan Yuan Che into her embrace tightly. Then, she raised her head and playfully bit on Xuan Yuan Che's lips.

"Are you a puppy?!" Xuan Yuan Che exclaimed in pain and instantly pushed Liu Yue away. Liu Yue laughed out, bright as the sunlight.

Chapter 62: The Strong will be Respected

(2)

The glow in her eyes hid the smiling expression emanating from the depths of her heart. Xuan Yuan Che involuntarily raised his brows slightly. It was his first time seeing such a jubilant Liu Yue.

“How can you understand me so well?” Murmuring deeply, Liu Yue whispered while going forward, softly sticking out her tongue and gently licking the area that she just bitten.

Softly and very tenderly.

Thinking about how she and her subordinates had required more than ten years sticking together in life and death before they could execute a perfect teamwork, she wondered how she could have this connection with Xuan Yuan Che now after only such a short time. How could she not like this person? How could she not feel for him?

Xuan Yuan Che did not covet the position of the crown prince. However, his outstanding performance had already caused others to have a malice forethought. Or else, why would Empress Liu poison and oppose his beloved Liu Yue? The purpose was to deprive Xuan Yuan Che of any one that was on his side. Liu Yue hadn't understood that at the beginning, but if she hadn't comprehended it by now, she would be an idiot.

Xuan Yuan Che, who was so ruthless and cruel in the battleground, did not actually have the heart to be ruthless towards his own brothers, as anyone could tell at the gambling incident. Because Xuan Yuan Che would not lay his hands on his brothers, Liu Yue resolved to do it for him.

She would never be merciful to those who wished to harm Xuan Yuan Che.

“I will never let go.” Gently sucking Xuan Yuan Che's lips, Liu Yue mumbled, but firmly stated these five words.

She would never let go of this person.

Chuckling softly, Xuan Yuan Che tenderly kissed Liu Yue back while uttering in a deep tone, "Then you will have to hold on tightly."

Embracing and gently kissing.

On this bright and sunny day, Liu Li Palace was filled with an ambience of tender sweetness.

The sun was high in the sky. Like a paradise located in the outskirts of the capital, this beautiful place was one of Xuan Yuan Che's many manors.

It appeared to be a place for relaxation, but truthfully, it was the residence of Xuan Yuan Che's forces, the top-notch secret agents, Blood Shadow Guards.

The Blood Shadow Guards was in charge of the dark secret missions of the military forces, they were in control of the power of life and death itself. Together with Xuan Yuan Che's Dragon Rider Guards, these two forces existed as the deadly combo of the light and darkness. The Blood Shadow Guards were in charge of accomplishing things that Dragon Rider Guards couldn't step in to do.

Although they are named Blood Shadow Guards, they actually had another name, the Sacred Dragon Temple.

Sacred Dragon Temple, it was Tian Zhen Kingdom's the first-ranked assassin's organization.

"Blood Shadow Guards, is this all you can do?" A small body, with a height that only measured up to the waist of the Blood Shadow Guards, voiced out her dissatisfaction, surrounded by an aura of bloodlust. Liu Yue crossed her arms, glaring coldly at the Blood Shadow Guards training in the training ground as she commented sarcastically.

Xuan Yuan Che, who stood right behind her, raised his brows when he heard her ridicule. The secret agents that he had personally trained could only receive such a remark in Liu Yue's eyes?

Chapter 63: The Strong Will Be Respected

(3)

In the center of the courtyard, twenty Blood Shadow Guards glared icily at Liu Yue, who wore a sarcastic expression.

Xuan Yuan Che who had read the mood of the Blood Shadow Guards slowly walked one step forward and calmly said, "In the future, she will be your master."

That one sentence was immediately replied with a trace of hostility and killing intent. The twenty pairs of eyes bored altogether on Liu Yue, not with reverence, but with disdain and anger.

"No, she is unqualified." the leader of the Blood Shadow Guards, Du Yi, responded coldly.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che did not speak much. He only stepped backwards and looked at Liu Yue with a smile.

Yesterday, Liu Yue had already thought that without her original powers, her movements and plans would be restricted. She could not rely on the Mu Rong and the Right Minister's Clan as in the end, they were a separate body. Although they were currently working together for mutual benefits, after a while, they would definitely break apart again to serve each of their own benefits.

Liu Yue thought that she could only do whatever she wished if she had an absolute power on her own.

Therefore, Liu Yue asked Xuan Yuan Che for a favour and he also agreed to let her be in charge of his prided forces.

Now, it was time to show off her skills and powers. In order to subdue these prideful Secret Agents that held the power over people's life and death, what she needed was not sweet words and praises, but a showcase of absolute power and strength.

No more unnecessary words. With an apathetic expression, Liu Yue

slowly started to equip a silver silk glove. She stretched her left hand, then coldly crooked her finger towards the Secret Agents and said in an extremely icy tone, "Everyone attack me altogether."

The twenty Secret Agents' faces instantly darkened at her frigid words. Every single one of them were the top assassins of the Tian Zhen Empire. Neither of them would even need the help of another to assassinate a person. Yet right now, this mere thirteen years old girl actually had the audacity to dare them to strike at her altogether. This was definitely a humiliation. An unspeakable humiliation.

Scrutinizing the livid faces of all the Secret Agents, a flash of contempt gleamed briefly in Liu Yue's eyes.

"Since you all wouldn't move, then do not blame me for drawing the first blood." Her cold voice was still resounding in the air as her body flew forward, fast as lightning.

Her speed wasn't very quick, but she had already appeared before them in an instant.

Du Yi snorted coldly when he saw her. He didn't even unsheath the sword in his hand and charged directly towards Liu Yue, aiming his hands at the vital part of Liu Yue's chest.

Unexpectedly, Liu Yue didn't even try dodging his attack. Her hands, wearing the silver silk gloves, pinched at the sheath of her sword. Then her fingertips suddenly stabbed forward from a totally unexpected position.

Chapter 64: The Strong Will Be Respected

(4)

Du Yi froze with shock for a moment as Liu Yue who was right in front of him had suddenly flashed past him and pounced onto the other secret agents behind him.

Shadows of swords flashed as an aura of hostility instantly rose up in the courtyard.

Like a butterfly diving through the flowers, her shadows waved to and fro, in and out.

“Your highness, will the Princess Consort be alright?” Qiu Hen, who was standing beside Xuan Yuan Che, stared anxiously as if Liu Yue was a lamb that had pounced onto a pride of lions.

Liu Yue’s movement speed wasn’t that quick and it could be seen very clearly. The secret assassins before her, on the other hand, were extremely fast. Their blades moved with an unbelievable speed, fast as lightning.

If that was so, wouldn’t their Princess Consort lose?

“Heavens, The Princess Consort closed her eyes. She...she doesn’t want to live anymore.” Seeing that Liu Yue had closed her eyes during the fight, Yan Hu gaped in shock.

Others at this time would have probably wished to grow a few more pairs of eyes to watch their opponents. Their Princess Consort had instead closed her eyes. This...

Xuan Yuan Che clenched his fists. Did Liu Yue think too highly of herself? No matter what, these assassins that she was facing currently had meticulously trained for years. Even if she had good fighting skills, she was still a thirteen years old. She could only have trained for thirteen years even if she started training in her mother’s womb. What was she doing?

Little did he know that Liu Yue had previously been one of the finest mercenaries and was a first-rate assassin. She was the best amongst all assassins from the seven billion population in her previous world, which was incomparable to this world that only had a tiny population of one million.

She had walked through of piles of corpses in her life.

She had trained in “Asura Training Grounds”.

If one was talking of other fields of expertise, Liu Yue may not dare to boast, but in the world of assassins, if she had claimed the second position, no one else would dare to say they are first.

Fighting against these assassins, it was really a piece of cake. This was because their aura of bloodlust was simply too obvious, so obvious in fact that there was no need to see them with her eyes. Simply by relying on her senses, she could locate their positions vividly and clearly feel the sharp aura of hostility that was radiating towards her.

However, as she floated like a butterfly among the group of assassins that possessed impressive Light Body Techniques, Liu Yue’s movement seemed entirely like slow motion.

Their swords and knives that whistled past the side of her body, flashed past her head and chest, could almost be seen distinctly. The swords and knives were unable to even scrape her.

Xuan Yuan Che relaxed his clenched fists and stared at Liu Yue in shock. What kind of fighting skill is that? Movements so perfect, so calculated. How was it possible to execute such precise moves, dodging so many attacks, without any wasted motions but with such a slow movement speed?

Even before he could finish this line of thought, Liu Yue had suddenly returned back to his side and stood casually, brushing her sleeves.

Chapter 65: The Strong Will Be Respected

(5)

Behind her, twenty Blood Shadow Guards held their sharp weapons, confused, as they stared at Liu Yue, who was standing right in front of them.

A breeze blew through and butterflies fluttered across the courtyard.

“Look at that.” Qiu Hen suddenly widened his eyes and exclaimed in surprise.

On every outer garment of the Blood Shadow Guards, there was a hole the size of a finger in their clothes, near the center of their chest. The tear flapped in the wind, showing the tanned and taut skins of the assassins.

Every single one of them had it on their chest.

That was the most vital part of the human body.

The twenty assassins' faces immediately went blank. If Liu Yue was to have any sharp weapon in her hand, then they...

Before they could finish the thoughts in their minds, the Leader, Du Yi's expression changed in an instant.

Liu Yue who currently had her back towards them did not utter a single word and instead stabbed her hand, that was wearing the silver silk glove, into a humongous stone beside her, cutting into it like it was tofu.

Wherever her slim and tender fingers touched the large stone beside her, a piece of stone block the size of her palm was easily gouged out, falling perfectly into her hands, leaving empty gaps everywhere in the large stone.

The secret agents expression instantly changed.

If Liu Yue had used the slightest bit more strength when poking them with her finger, then all the Blood Shadow Guards at this moment would have...

“Bow to Master.” A single “Dong” was heard as twenty uniformed secret agents knelt down before Liu Yue without saying another word. The powerful one is king, and they were thoroughly convinced by her.

“Now, I need to consider whether you are all qualified enough to be my subordinates.” Liu Yue coldly turned around, still wearing the expression of contempt and apathy.

“Master.” When the twenty Blood Shadow Guards heard her, embarrassment and indignation flashed across their faces as they uniformly twisted their swords against themselves, prepared to pierce their own hearts and commit suicide.

“Liu Yue.” Xuan Yuan Che suppressed the astonishment in his heart as he called to her softly.

These assassins were meticulously trained by him personally. If they really were to die, it would make all of his efforts useless.

“Assassins, what are assassins? I have never seen assassins whose grief and indignation in their hearts would lead them to take their own lives. I have only seen assassins that would do anything to achieve their goals.”

“Killing people is not like embroidery. Why would you all need so many exaggerated and extravagant moves? Just one move. One move that would strike the vital parts should be enough.”

“Comparing skills. There should be no competition between assassins. They are either killing or not involved at all. Today, I did not come to fight you guys. If it wasn’t because you all still have some use, none of you would have walked out alive today. I, Mu Rong Liu Yue, can’t have trash as my subordinates. ”

Her words were cold-hearted and extremely ruthless.

Chapter 66: The Strong Will Be Respected

(6)

Although her words were cold and ruthless, Liu Yue's words made the twenty pairs of eyes of the Blood Shadow Guards' flare up in a transparent glow. Throwing away the swords in their hands and prostrating themselves before Liu Yue in admiration, they responded, "We are grateful for master's advice."

"Humph! I will return after ten days to test each of you. Anyone that is unable to meet my requirements will leave straight away." Liu Yue's eyes flashed icily, and an aura of hostility rapidly shot out. The cold sensation was terrifying like Satan's own aura, stealing the souls of the humans standing in front of her.

"Yes." The twenty Blood Shadow Guards that had been scared stiff shouted in unison. Such an aura of hostility was the real thing indeed. Their own aura couldn't even be compared to it. They were just too weak.

While they were still recovering from the effects of her aura, Liu Yue moved to the side and started to give out instructions. This was the experience gained through more than ten years of mercenary life lived on the edge of death.

The sun shone brilliantly as birds chirped and fragrant flowers bloomed in the garden.

Xuan Yuan Che looked at the rock in front of him that had a gaping hole punched in by Liu Yue's strength. Slowly, he stretched out his hand, condensed his inner strength upon the tip of his fingers and directly thrust them into the big rock.

Hearing only a loud banging sound, Xuan Yuan Che's mouth twitched slightly. His five fingertips were covered in blood, yet the only change he made on that big rock was five little indentations.

Though he had such a strong inner strength, he couldn't even make a dent in the rock. How had Liu Yue done it?

Xuan Yuan Che's eyebrows raised high in contemplation.

"What are you doing?" After giving some instructions to the Blood Shadow Guards, Liu Yue had walked in and found Xuan Yuan Che staring blankly at the rock, blood covering his five fingers.

She clasped Xuan Yuan Che's hands in hers with a good mood and thought that he was a little endearing as she tenderly cleaned his wounds. Smiling helplessly, she said, "You! Aren't you very smart normally? Why didn't you use your brain today? The human body might be strong but it still has its limits. How could it be harder than a rock?"

Xuan Yuan Che lowered his head when he heard her words and looked at Liu Yue inquisitively.

Seeing this, Liu Yue took off the silver silk glove on her hand and helped Xuan Yuan Che put it on.

"What is on my fingertips?" Xuan Yuan Che immediately felt it as soon as he wore the gloves.

"It is resistant to water and fire and neither swords and spears can penetrate it, but this was only its defensive aspect. It is actually its attacking aspect that dominates." Liu Yue rubbed Xuan Yuan Che's hands and softly raised her brows while she spoke.

These silver silk gloves had originally belonged to Xuan Yuan Che. She had only requested Qiu Hen to add some things inside. To be able to strike while attacking and to defend when retreating. This was what she wanted.

"How many more ingenious ideas are you hiding in this little brain of yours?" Xuan Yuan Che turned and hugged Liu Yue's waist as he raised his brows highly.

"You can discover that slowly." Liu Yue blinked at Xuan Yuan Che with an evil smile.

"You little minx ." Xuan Yuan Che helplessly pinched the tip of Liu Yue's nose. Although he seemed to wear an angry expression, a gaze of love glowed in his eyes.

Chapter 67: The Strong Will Be Respected

(7)

Liu Yue only smiled silently without replying Xuan Yuan Che back, and instead leaned in forward into Xuan Yuan Che's embrace. She had begun to like this feeling more and more.

It was warm and gentle, like the warmth of a morning sun in spring time.

After the commotion at the Left Minister's Residence, the Second Prince, the Fifth Prince, the Seventh Prince and their mother, an imperial concubine, had immediately become anxious. They had thought that Liu Yue was just a little girl and wouldn't be able to force them to pay their gambling debts, so they hadn't taken her warning seriously.

However, Mu Rong Liu Yue had even dared to go against the Left Minister, who was one of the supreme authorities in the Imperial Court and the Emperor's maternal uncle, and denounced his crimes publicly. Moreover, the Emperor had remained aloof instead of helping the Left Minister, who was left humiliated in the end.

Compared to the Left Minister they were nothing, they were just the family of an Imperial concubine. They didn't dare to think that this Mu Rong Liu Yue, who had not even spared the Left Minister of public humiliation, would leave them an ounce of respect.

Liu Yue had said that she would be at their door to collect the gambling debt in ten days if they did not send the money over. She had now proven that she possessed the capability to do that. If she really did come to their door, then they wouldn't be able to endure the shame.

Immediately, the capital was thrown into a massive chaos as people from the family of the three princes' had stormed out to the city to borrow from all of their friends and relatives, pawning all of their valuables with every pawnbroker.

A mountain of gold, silver and jewels was sent to Xuan Yuan Che in

carts.

Piles of expensive property deeds for shops were carried to Liu Yue in boxes.

Except for the beds they slept in, every other luxuries in the Second, Fifth and Seventh Prince's palaces was sent to Liu Yue.

Throughout history, poor people had been seen, yet none as poor as these princes.

Now, even those concubines and princes that had been thrown into prison were better off and much wealthier than these three princes.

The Tian Zhen Emperor, Xuan Yuan Yi, had witnessed everything that occurred, but could only watch the whole debacle helplessly. The treasures were sent to Liu Yue by the princes themselves, who hadn't uttered even a tiny squeak of protest to him, so he was in no position to speak.

He did however summon the three princes and reprimand them. The reputation of the Imperial family had been besmirched by their antics. On the brighter side, the wealth had only been lost to another royal family member. Else he, the Emperor, would have had no way to save face.

The reputation of Mu Rong Liu Yue in the capital immediately soared like the sun in the midday sky and she became almost as famous as the one known as Tian Zhen Kingdom's greatest Genius, Xuan Yuan Che.

Everyone on the streets was talking about the little Princess Consort. If the conversations in the teahouses weren't about King of Yi, they were about his little Princess Consort and the wonderful acts she had presented, retold again and again. The names of Xuan Yuan Che and Mu Rong Liu Yue seemed to have accompanied the breeze and traveled to the heavens.

This way, the story of the inseparable couple's fearlessness had already become more popular than anyone in the Tian Zhen Kingdom, even the Tian Zhen Emperor himself, Xuan Yuan Yi.

In Liu Li Palace, it was time for lunch. Imperial Consort Chen, who rarely graced the Liu Li Palace with her presence, had decided to join Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che for lunch that day.

Chapter 68: The Strong Will Be Respected

(8)

“Yue Er, these properties and goods sent by the Second, Fourth and Seventh Princes are valued at more than four million gold. How do you plan to deal with it?” The chopsticks in Imperial Consort Chen’s hands gently tapped the dish of ‘Misty Jade Silk’ on the table as she asked.

(TLN: Misty Jade Silk is some food that looks like Misty Jade silk... Hope that make sense. >_<)

Liu Yue savored a bite of ‘Five Leaves Encircled Sweet Osmanthus’ and felt that it tasted good. Wanting to share the taste, she casually added some of the dish into Xuan Yuan Che’s bowl while responding, “Whatever Che wants to do with it is fine with me.”

(TLN: Five Leaves Encircled Sweet Osmanthus is a food that looks like Sweet Osmanthus and have vegetables shaped like leaves surrounding it... >_<)

She had no interest in money.

Hearing her words, Imperial Consort Chen flashed a smile and looked at Xuan Yuan Che expectantly.

Xuan Yuan Che unhurriedly lifted up a bite of “Thousand Layers Flowing Silk”, to Liu Yue’s lips with a loving smile flashing in his eyes and replied softly, “I will hand it over to the national treasury. ”

Imperial Consort Chen was all smiles when she heard his words, and said, “That’s right. The tallest tree in the forest catches the most wind. It wouldn’t be pleasant if it was too excessive. Giving this wealth to your Father is much better than keeping it for yourself. You don’t need the money anyway.”

Too much wealth could sometimes become a source of calamity. However, Imperial Consort Chen had no reason to worry because Xuan Yuan Che understood that more clearly than anyone else.

Xuan Yuan Che nodded at Imperial Consort Chen. He would only deal with the people that wanted to harm him. Towards his royal father, he did not have other intentions.

“Lord... ” Qiu Hen who had been standing outside, suddenly entered hurriedly with a grim face.

“What is it? ” Seeing Qiu Hen’s expression, Xuan Yuan Che knew immediately that something serious had happened and put down the chopsticks in his hand.

“Reporting to the Lord. The Special Envoy from the border has sent a message through a carrier pigeon. The Ao Yun Kingdom wishes to send an ambassador to our kingdom in order to congratulate the Emperor on his birthday.”

When Qiu Hen had finished, Xuan Yuan Che and Imperial Consort Chen simultaneously frowned .

Seeing this, Liu Yue looked at Xuan Yuan Che and inquired, “What’s wrong? ”

“Ao Yun Kingdom is currently one of the most powerful kingdoms among the seven kingdoms that exist today, and they have never interacted with Tian Chen Kingdom before. Why would they suddenly come to celebrate the Emperor’s birthday now? ” Xuan Yuan Che answered, knitting his brows.

A few days ago, Liu Yue had gained more knowledge about the world she lived in. On this continent, there were seven kingdoms that co-existed in a perpetual state of war. All these years, the smoke from the aftermath of these ferocious battles had almost blackened the sky completely. It was only in recent years, that a large scale war had not erupted, there was only occasional minor skirmishes of no great import.

Like Ao Yun Kingdom, Tian Zhen Kingdom was also one of the most powerful amongst the seven kingdoms. So it was only natural that the Tian Zhen Kingdom and the Ao Yun Kingdom were like the Wolf and the Tiger respectively; well matched with each other.

Furthermore, there was Chen Kingdom standing in between the Ao Yun Kingdom and the Tian Zhen Kingdom. So why had the Ao Yun Kingdom suddenly thought of going through the bother of crossing the Chen Kingdom to come and celebrate the Tian Zhen Emperor's birthday?

"Who is the Special Envoy coming?" Xuan Yuan Che asked in a grim voice.

"The Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom, Du Gu Ye." Qiu Hen's words caused the main hall to fall into deathly silence. Why would such an important person come? What does Ao Yun Kingdom's plan entail?

Chapter 69: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(1)

“The fierce tiger paying respect to the wolf must have an ulterior motive.” Amid the silence, Liu Yue spoke slowly.

Xuan Yuan Che nodded when he heard her and responded, “That’s the principle. ” Otherwise, did the Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom had nothing else to do but to travel to Tian Zhen Kingdom through the thousands of mountains and miles of river?

It was well known that the Tian Zhen Kingdom was weaker than the Ao Yun Kingdom. Even if the Ao Yun Kingdom wanted to congratulate the Tian Zhen Kingdom’s Emperor’s birthday, there was no reason for them to send their Crown Prince himself.

“What is their motive?” Imperial Consort Chen knitted her brows and frowned deeply as she inquired, gazing at Liu Yue.

Hearing this, Liu Yue could only shrug her shoulders and reply, “How would I know? ”

She did not rule the Seven Kingdoms, nor did she entertain any thoughts of being enthroned as a female Emperor. She only possessed the most basic and commonly known general knowledge about the Seven Kingdoms. For answers to such questions, it should be directed to the ministers and officials in the imperial court and not to Liu Yue.

Seeing this, Imperial Consort Chen twitched her eyebrows and realized that she had asked the wrong person. Why had she asked Liu Yue about matters of government affairs? She then immediately turned her head and looked at Xuan Yuan Che.

Without waiting for her ask, Xuan Yuan Che directly said, “I don’t know either. ”

Did they wish to swallow up the Tian Zhen Kingdom? Tian Zhen Kingdom and Ao Yun Kingdom were still geographically divided by the Chen Kingdom. No one had ever heard about one Kingdom swallowing

another when a third Kingdom was in between the two. Plus, though the Tian Zhen Kingdom was weaker than the Ao Yun Kingdom, it wasn't all that much weaker.

Then, was it about wealth? Natural Resources? Manpower? Looking at the whole world, who could compare with the Ao Yun Kingdom in these areas? Could these be their motives? If it were said aloud, nobody would even believe it. Therefore, Xuan Yuan Che really couldn't guess the purpose of Du Gu Ye's visit.

"Isn't this under the responsibility of the Left Minister? He should contribute this time." Liu Yue picked her chopsticks back up and twirled it on her fingertips, smiling evilly. Then, she continued eating her lunch.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che and Imperial Consort Chen looked at each other and grinned simultaneously.

It was only natural that civil officials should welcome the civil officials of other Kingdoms and military officers would welcome the military officers of other Kingdoms.

Regarding the arrival of the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, the anxious ones should be the Left Minister, the Crown Prince and his party. The King of Yi's faction should just watch silently and see what happens.

"Eat. Eat. This sweet soup tastes very good today." Imperial Consort Chen smiled as bright as the sunlight.

Xuan Yuan Che continued his plan of feeding his Little Princess Consort. The people in the house were in a state of happiness and harmony, relaxed and worry-free.

Though the scene of spring time was beautiful beyond compare, it had turned into a scorching summer before long.

Time went by quickly. More than a month seemed to have passed in a flash.

The fiftieth birthday of the Tian Zhen Kingdom's Emperor would be celebrated in the next few days. The capital was decorated with lanterns and colorful banners. The atmosphere was jubilant and bustling with

excitement.

Strings of vivid red banners that decorated the Capital City of Tian Zhen Kingdom had amplified the already scorching hot summer weather into a hot furnace.

And amid this fiery hotness, King Yi, Xuan Yuan Che even added more fuel to the fire by the birthday present he gave to his Father, the Emperor of the Tian Zhen Kingdom. The gift was gold, silver, jewels, shops and properties land deeds that was worth a total of four million and five hundred thousand gold leaves.

Chapter 70: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(2)

More than four million in gold, silver and jewels was given to celebrate the Emperor's birthday! This had never happened before throughout the history of the Tian Zhen Kingdom, and would probably never happen again.

Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi, on getting such wealth, immediately issued an Imperial Edict and rewarded Xuan Yuan Che to recognize Xuan Yuan Che's efforts officially.

At once, all the civil and military officials eagerly praised Xuan Yuan Che for his filial piety that reached up to the heavens. The common folks also eagerly talked about King Yi's generosity. His popularity was almost as high as that of Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi himself, whose birthday was the one being celebrated.

Gearing up everyone to spread their good names, from the top of the hierarchy, the Emperor, right down to the bottom, the peasants, could only be possible thanks to Liu Yue, who was the one advising Xuan Yuan Che from the shadows and the only one bold and brazen enough to use such tactics.

Money should be given in the open, and wealth should be spent on weapons. This is the motto Liu Yue had followed strictly in her heart.

There were only two days to go until the celebration of the Emperor's birthday. Du Gu Ye, the Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom, who had entered the territory of Tian Zhen Kingdom one month ago, had finally arrived the capital.

The Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng, accompanied by the Left Minister, went out from the Palace Gates and welcomed the Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom personally. They welcomed him from the entrance gates of the Yellow Tune Street.

The Royal Guards stood solemnly while the soldiers were spread out

amongst the welcoming procession. A red carpet was rolled out at the gate of the palace.

Numerous civilians eagerly rushed to the streets wishing to see the face of the Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom.

Not for any other reason, but because it was said that the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, Du Gu Ye, and their own King Yi were named the Dual Kings of this world.

Rumors said that, Du Gu Ye had a beautiful appearance and was one of the most talented people of this world. In Tian Zhen Kingdom, only their King Yi could be comparable to him.

Rumors said that, at the age of seven, Du Gu Ye was ranked above most of the Imperial Court Officials and started commanding the warlords. When he was ten, he had abolished the inefficient ancient system and selected capable officials. In six years, under his guidance, Ao Yun became the number one Kingdom. At sixteen, he strategized and assimilated the seven small kingdoms around Ao Yun Kingdom into one, thereby sweeping away all the obstacles surrounding the Ao Yun Kingdom.

The strategies he devised in the command tent, won victories in battles a thousand miles away.

If Xuan Yuan Che was the unparalleled genius of the Tian Zhen Kingdom, then Du Gu Ye was the 'talent seen once in a century' of Ao Yun Kingdom. The juxtaposition of the two men was like the south and the north competing for glory.

In Yellow Tune street, numerous civilians flocked behind and around the heavily-armed Royal guards.

Apricot Flower Cove was the largest restaurant on Yellow Tune Street, and it was currently packed to the brim with people.

At the best table on the second floor of this restaurant, overlooking the street, Liu Yue was playing with a cup of the restaurant's signature red wine in her hand. In her previous life, as a mercenary always living on the

brink of death, even a fine wine was poison. As a mercenary, you would have to either remain sober even after a thousand cups of wine or not drink any at all.

She used to be able to remain sober even after a thousand cups of wine in her previous life, but her current body had not yet been trained to that state. So it was better to drink less. Besides, she doesn't like to drink alcohol anyway.

Chapter 71: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(3)

Liu Yue furrowed her brows deep in contemplation as she played with the small cup of wine in her hands absent-mindedly. The Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom had actually had the audacity to display such arrogance. Xuan Yuan Cheng had already waited for his arrival for half a day, yet he still had not arrived.

However, it did not matter. It wasn't her that was losing face.

As a family you should share go through both glory and defeat together. However, this quote did not apply to her.

Xuan Yuan Che sat opposite Liu Yue garbed in a plain attire. He shook his head when he saw Liu Yue playing with the wine. Wine is for drinking, not for playing with. He was just about to laugh and comment, when Xuan Yuan Che seemed to notice something, stopping to study Liu Yue properly. After a few moments he commented, "You seem to have grown taller. "

As he was saying this, he stretched out his hands and squeezed Liu Yue's cheeks, then smiled and nodded, "and rounder."

Usually, Liu Yue loved to sit on his lap, and so he didn't really notice any changes. Today, sitting opposite, he finally discovered that this Little Princess Consort of his had been eating healthily and growing well.

Hearing this, Liu Yue recalled her thoughts and pinched her cheeks a little. Have I gained weight? She didn't even notice.

However, thinking about it, it should be her growing period. Girls mature early. Usually around thirteen years old, they would more or less finish their growing spurt. But as for her, the Mu Rong family had neglected her for so long that she was still like a bean sprout at the age of thirteen.

Ever since she moved to Liu Li Palace, Xuan Yuan Che had commanded Officer Han to make all kinds of dishes for her to eat. If she still didn't

exhibit any growth, then it would mean that she was forever condemned to be a runt.

“So what? Even if I become fat as a round ball, you are still mine.” Liu Yue spoke confidently.

Xuan Yuan Che laughed at her words, and leaned over and pinched the tip of Liu Yue’s nose softly. He grinned, “So imperious. But I like it.”

Immediately, Liu Yue blew a kiss at Xuan Yuan Che happily. Xuan Yuan Che could only stare at her, rolling his eyes.

Seeing this, Liu Yue grinned cheerfully, making her doe eyes that glowed like obsidian squinted into a thin line.

Seeing Liu Yue grinned jubilantly, Xuan Yuan Che couldn’t help but smile himself. Leaning on the back of his chair, he held the wine cup with his fingertips as he looked endearingly at Liu Yue. With a faint smile, he asked, “So when are you going to show me your true appearance? I don’t want to be unable to recognize my Little Princess Consort in the future.”

Liu Yue had known from the beginning that Xuan Yuan Che knew that she had hidden her appearance, but he had never enquired, now it seems he cannot resist any longer.

Liu Yue’s mouth quirked and replied, “Then.....”

“The Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom had arrived.” As she was just about to speak, the loud announcer’s announcement rang out and interrupted Liu Yue.

Hearing this, Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che turned stopped their conversation, and looked towards the streets below.

The heavy footfalls of a procession resounded from afar and a purple flag fluttered in the wind. Two large words, AO YUN, were embroidered on the flag, looking proud and extremely arrogant...

Chapter 72: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(4)

Sixteen spotless snowy white horses of the highest pedigrees carrying sixteen brawny, huge men with a fierce aura led the way for the palanquin. The men were attired in shiny armor and radiated arrogance with their inexpressive faces.

Behind them, sixteen people carried a magnificent, grand palanquin painted in gold and white, marching forward steadily. There wasn't much decoration on the palanquin, it was just the gold and white colour of the palanquin body. However, the white coloured palanquin base was decorated in silver silk, while gold-coloured dragon statues decorated the top of the palanquin. Although these decorations were simple, they were a rare treasure and a luxury beyond compare.

Just like how Liu Yue's silver silk gloves were simple but invulnerable, and yet it was Tian Chen Kingdom's invaluable treasure.

Yet the fact that the whole palanquin was made by these materials clearly showcased the extravagance and wealth of the Ao Yun Kingdom.

Behind the large palanquin that was carried by sixteen people, there were only a hundred guards that followed. However, each of them strode with the power of a dragon and the footsteps of a tiger. Every single one of them was a strong warrior and an expert martial artist.

As the thundering sound of the welcoming ceremony echoed throughout the area, Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng and the Left Minister sitting high on their horses straightened their postures and urged their horses forward to receive the honored guest.

"I, the Crown Prince of Tian Zhen Kingdom, welcome the Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom on behalf of the Emperor. The Emperor is extremely happy that you came all the way from Ao Yun." Xuan Yuan Cheng, clothed in a yellow embroidered official robe, stood in the middle of the road with a smile on his face.

The tone of his voice was neither arrogant nor humble.

The sixteen riders halted and parted, bowed their respects as the sixteen people carrying the palanquin marched forward.

“The Ao Yun Kingdom and the Tian Zhen Kingdom have always had good relations. There is no need to stand on ceremony. ” A cold voice was heard as the sixteen people carrying the palanquin came to a halt. A fair and slender hand, slowly lifted the veil of the palanquin and Du Gu Ye descended from it.

Liu Yue immediately turned her head to look.

His waist length hair was tied together as they hung loosely behind his back. Beneath his perfectly arched eyebrows were a pair of beautiful eyes. Heavens! What kind of eyes were these? His irises were a combination of an insightful black with a hint of ocean blue. They possessed an icy coldness that could freeze everything, yet they were so beautiful that people couldn't take their gaze off them, mesmerized.

The rosy lips beneath his tall nose were slightly parted. Such an exceedingly beautiful visage, so beautiful that it would even cause cities and kingdom to fall.

(TLN: An idiom. 倾国倾城 meaning so beautiful as to cause cities and kingdom to fall.)

(Shiro - No I have no idea how a guy can be beautiful enough to cause kingdoms to fall - it's in the raws)

dop722Clothed in a moonlight white long gown that fluttered in the gentle breeze under the radiant sun. He looked like a celestial being that had descended onto Earth, elegant but extremely cold. (Shiro: Yes the manhua draw it black)

His eyes swept across the crowd, seemingly radiating an unearthly coldness that froze everyone and everything to their place.

His coldness was not like Xuan Yuan Che's cold aloofness, but a kind of icy cold apathy that seemed like everything in the world did not exist in his sight.

His cold aura spread out, causing others to praise his beautiful appearance, without the audacity to have any filthy thoughts.

If Xuan Yuan Che was said to be the combination of the Asura and a Devil, then Du Gu Ye was an ice lotus in the snow. One is alluring and cold blooded while the other, cool and impeccable.

Chapter 73: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(5)

Liu Yue raised her brows at the sight. No wonder he was as famous as Xuan Yuan Che in this world. He was indeed superior compared to other people; even she had to praise such a distinguished presence.

Li Yue's eyes locked onto Du Gu Ye as she continued to examine him. Suddenly, she felt a slight pain in her waist, causing her to immediately turn around.

Xuan Yuan Che was right beside her, glaring at Du Gu Ye. His fingers were firmly pinching her waist, as a cold aura enshrouded his bewitching face.

This guy, was he jealous?

Liu Yue understood instantly, and couldn't help but feel both happy and amused. She stretched out to grab the hand pinching her waist and held it tightly for a few seconds. All humans had the tendency to love beauty, and admire beautiful things. This was an instinct.

However, she was not a foolish, starry-eyed, infatuated girl. She had just given him a quick once-over. What was this person even jealous of?

Feeling Liu Yue's grip, Xuan Yuan Che turned his hand over and tightly gripped Liu Yue's hand, then turned his head and glared at Liu Yue. The meaning of that glare was obvious: Don't look at him. If you want to look at someone, just look at me.

Liu Yue immediately chuckled. This Xuan Yuan Che.

"Crown Prince Ye, please, you first." Xuan Yuan Che's voice was heard below.

"Crown Prince Cheng, please, you first." An apathetic and extremely cold voice replied.

However, no one minded it at all. The fact that Du Gu Ye, the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, had a very cold temperament was well known

throughout the kingdoms.

As she grasped Xuan Yuan Che's hand, Liu Yue stuck her head out again. Du Gu Ye's aura was a bit odd; it was the first time she felt a bit uncertain.

Du Gu Ye leapt onto a horse and went forward so that he was shoulder to shoulder with Xuan Yuan Cheng.

As the horses' hooves clattered forward, the cool and magnificent Du Gu Ye suddenly turned his head consciously. It looked like he was looking at Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue. That frigid pair of eyes seemed to understand everything clearly.

Liu Yue's dark black eyes met with the prince's dark blue eyes. Their eyes were calm, yet they seemed to understand everything.

Liu Yue had no doubts about it; he had recognized her, even though she believed that her name was not famous enough to be known throughout the continent.

The dark blue eyes scanned past Liu Yue's face and onto Xuan Yuan Che beside her.

Xuan Yuan Che's dark red eyes clashed with Du Gu Ye's dark blue eyes. These were primary colors that can combine to form numerous different colors.

Xuan Yuan Che was holding Liu Yue's hand with one hand and holding a glass of wine with the other as he stared expressionlessly into Du Gu Ye's eyes.

Sparks flew, and the auras emitted from them were shocking.

The two wonderful noble men, famous all throughout the wide world, were now facing each other from the distance.

After quite some time, Xuan Yuan Che slowly raised the glass of wine in his hand towards Du Gu Ye.

And at the same time, Du Gu Ye nodded towards Xuan Yuan Che. He had not given even one humble bow to the Crown Prince, yet he gave it to

his rival, Xuan Yuan Che.

Chapter 74: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(6)

Only a true rival can win the respect of the other.

Turning his head, Du Gu Ye left riding his horse and never looked back.

Xuan Yuan Che drank the wine in his cup in one gulp and stopped watching.

It was the first time that their paths had crossed, but this was just a beginning.

“How could a person be cold to this degree?” Yan Hu, who had been standing right behind Liu Yue, twitched as the distance between Du Gu Ye and Xuan Yuan Che increased. The Royal Army started to disperse, and the previously silent citizens below immediately also began to clamor.

Du Gu Ye’s coldness was not like the sharp chill of an assassin, nor the King’s coolness. It was a coldness that possessed no emotions, as if he was a one-thousand-year old ice that had been created wrongly and had become a human instead.

Xuan Yuan Che pondered in silence for some time when he heard this and then responded, “That is because there is no one in this world that can ruffle his emotions.”

After Xuan Yuan Che spoke, Qiu Hen immediately took a deep breath. No one. That meant he despised and looked down on everyone and everything. This ice-like man that had such dominance and pride.

Liu Yue remained quiet as she listened to Xuan Yuan Che. Her pupils shifted slightly as she thought: ‘if the icy eyes just now were a different color, how bright would they be?’

The early summer sunshine spilled down onto the Yellow Tune Street, bringing with it a hot yet ice-cold aura.

During the birthday celebration for the Emperor of the Tian Chen

Kingdom, Liu Yue, who was not an official, was not allowed to access the the Golden Hall. Thus, she had missed what had happened in the Imperial Court. Still, she had had the chance to watch the sparks between the exchange of the two world-famous men at a close distance.

However, Liu Yue did not feel any disappointment, since she did not have much interest in these things. She was more curious about the Left Minister, who had not made any move after such a long time. Now that the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, Du Gu Ye, had arrived, it was a good opportunity to attack.

Afterwards, she leisurely went to the special manor in the outskirts of the capital to continue instructing the Blood Shadow Guards.

However, she could not stay for long, as there was a birthday dinner banquet during the night. Although Liu Yue had not yet married Xuan Yuan Che, she was already considered the daughter in law of the Imperial Family. Thus, she was also counted as one of the female members in the family, and had to be present at the Emperor's birthday dinner banquet.

The palace was filled with rich colors a dazzling sight to behold.

Glittering stars shone down upon Tian Chen Palace as it burst with celebration for the joyous occasion. This made the colorful palace even more radiant and dazzling with brilliance.

The Tian Chen Kingdom Palace Main Hall, Sky Palace, was bustling with excitement.

The Emperor of the Tian Chen Kingdom sat proudly, high up on his dragon throne, while Empress Liu sat on his left and Imperial Consort Chen sat on his right. His refined face appeared to be very pleased.

The Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, Du Gu Ye, who had especially come to celebrate the Emperor's birthday, sat on the first distinguished seat below on the Emperor's left. The Left Minister, Right Minister and their wives, were seated behind Du Gu Ye.

Chapter 75: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(7)

At the Emperor's right hand, in the very first and most distinguished seat, sat the Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng. After him, the Second Prince, Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue were seated.

The other princes were not yet married; so only Xuan Yuan Che had Liu Yue with him. Hence Liu Yue sat alone in the designated seats set aside for the princes' consorts.

Clothed in a pink and purple dress, her long hair that was usually styled in a thick braid, was now coiled up meticulously on top of her head in honor of the formal occasion. However, two tendrils hung down, framing her face, since she was still regarded as a maiden. Liu Yue had insisted on wearing only a single emerald green, peacock hairpin instead of hairdo decorated with various pearls and hair ornaments. In a competition surrounded by beautiful women, this was considered as extremely plain.

(TLN: In Ancient China, girls wore their hair down when they were still a maiden and wear their hair up when they were married)

For the feast celebrating the Emperor's birthday, Tian Chen Palace had been divided into three halls. The kings, generals and ministers were feasting in the Main Hall graced by the august presence of the Emperor himself, while the third rank officers and their wives were seated in the Secondary Hall. Lastly, the lower ranks were seated in the Lower Secondary Hall.

Without the presence of the Emperor, the Secondary Hall and the Lower Secondary Hall were apparently more relaxed, with laughter and exciting noises rippling around. It was a nice contrast to the subdued Main Hall.

Liu Ye sat beside Xuan Yuan Che, twirling a glass of fine wine between her fingertips. She cast a glance at Du Gu Ye from across the table.

At this time, Du Gu Ye had changed out of the moonlight white robe that had made him seemed like a celestial being into light red and golden

robe. Seen from afar, it seemed like a ball of tender fire had enveloped a millennia-old ice. He did not appear to be too haughty; on the contrary, the robe suited him extremely well.

Beside her, Xuan Yuan Che was clothed in dark red, embroidered, official robes projecting a cool and arrogant aura. Between the two of them, one was icy and the other was cool, one wore light red and the other wore dark red as they faced off against each other from a distance.

“I, the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, have heard that the Tian Chen Emperor loves the sound of the musical flute. I know a little bit about the instrument, so how about I play a musical piece? Consider it played in celebration of the Emperor’s birthday.” Among the soft chatting sounds, Du Gu Ye’s icy voice suddenly spoke out.

As he finished his words, the large hall had a moment of silence.

It was rumored that the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, Du Gu Ye, was proficient in lyre-playing, chess, calligraphy, painting and the ancient art of war. The sound of his flute was even more outstanding.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Yi who sat high above him, immediately laughed. To be able to have the crown prince of the great Ao Yun Kingdom personally play a song to celebrate his birthday, it was a great honour to his Kingdom.

He then laughed loudly and responded, “Alright, I will listen earnestly.”

The Left Minister and the others around immediately cheered, and the sounds of the applause rippled around.

Only Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che remained silent.

Casting a glance at Xuan Yuan Yi who was all smiles, Liu Yue inwardly sneered to herself. Du Gu Ye was lowering himself to play a piece of music for Xuan Yuan Yi, yet this Xuan Yuan Yi really believed it was out of good will? Unfortunately, such a simple act like this was more often not as easy as it seemed.

Slowly sipping the wine held in her hand, Liu Yue leaned back on her chair and watched Du Gu Ye closely.

Chapter 76: Visitors With Bad Intentions

(8)

The proud Du Gu Ye slowly took out a white, flawless flute out of his sleeves. His porcelain fair fingers gently brushed across as he calmly bowed towards Xuan Yuan Yi. Then, taking the flute near his mouth, he softly played a tune.

A sublime musical composition poured down in torrents, as if thousands of trees were blooming brilliantly in spring time.

The sound of the flute winded out like flowing water and a spring breeze. As they listened to the music, it seemed like they were in a garden filled with a springtime scenery. There was the jingling of flowing waters and fluttering of butterflies and bees as the spring breeze blew across the flower fields, bringing a fragrance that refreshed their minds. The music truly felt surreal, as if they had actually physically moved into the beautiful garden. It was like being intoxicated but unable to awake.

The splendid Du Gu Ye was indeed extraordinary.

Liu Yue closed her eyes slowly and listened carefully. Originally, she did not have any sense of music, but the previous Liu Yue was a girl that played musical instruments and understood musical tunes well. Unexpectedly, she have inherited this feature as well. Hence, she could also differentiate between good and bad music.

She felt a spring breeze brush across her face. It seemed like millions of creatures could fall into deep sleep in this euphonious music. Silently and quietly, falling deep into a slumber.

Asleep? Liu Yue's slightly closed eyes suddenly flashed opened immediately. There was something wrong with this music.

The flute's sound possessed a really strong inner strength that could bewitch the human minds. If music had colours, this tone was like a painting with a myriad of different colours mixed and spiralling together, almost like an illusion. In other words, it was actually a hypnotism

technique, the technique that she was familiar with and had once skilfully mastered before.

Hypnotism through the flute. Turns out that Du Gu Ye had had such motive.

Scanning past the Second Prince and the others beside her, every one of them had shut their eyes close and was listening to the music comfortably. Some had even nodded off. Xuan Yuan Yi who was sitting high above was all smiles as he closed his eyes slightly and listening to the melody. They had all seemed to have fallen trap into this euphonious melody.

There was not a single person in the Main Hall that was awake.

This music has the ability to charm people. However, Liu Yue did not particularly think it was remarkable.

Music had a very strong mesmerizing power.

Her brows furrowed slightly, Liu Yue locked her eyes at Du Gu Ye who was already watching her carefully.

In his dark blue eyes, there were no surprise, no shock, and not even fear. He was simply staring at her emotionlessly.

Liu Yue's eyes immediately narrowed. This Du Gu Ye was looking down on her. He actually dared to look down on her, a hypnotizing expert.

Before she finished her thoughts, Xuan Yuan Che, who was sitting beside her, suddenly stood up and strode towards the rows of drums and bells at the corner of the hall with a chilling aura. Those drums and bells were also a kind of musical instrument.

Chapter 77: The Beginning of Chaos (1)

“As expected, Crown Prince Ye has played a great song. Let me, Xuan Yuan Che, accompany you. ” Xuan Yuan Che had already stood before the rows of drums and bells as his frigid voice rang out .

His icy voice resounded in the hall and those who had been held captive by the sound of Du Gu Ye’s flute were instantly awakened, unexpectedly.

As they heard Xuan Yuan Che’s words, the people in the hall seemed to have no idea that they had fallen into Du Gu Ye’s trap just a few moments ago, and immediately broke into loud cheers. It was a showdown between the two kings of the south and north. In this whole wide world, the only person who can match the Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom could only be their very own King Yi himself.

This time, they could finally watch an interesting show.

Amidst the cheers and applause, holding a small golden drumstick in one hand and a larger drum hammer in the other, Xuan Yuan Che struck the golden bell and the leather drum at the same time.

The clear and elegant tinkling sound of the bell combined with the heavy percussion of the large drum. The two very different kinds of sounds emitted by these instruments actually mixed together amazingly well and resounded like the roars of tigers and chants of dragons.

“Amazing.” Xuan Yuan Yi, emperor of the Tian Zhen Kingdom immediately cheered. The cheers was instantly resounded below.

Trained experts would have realized that Xuan Yuan Che’s double sounds of drums and bells had immediately suppressed Du Gu Ye’s flute sound. The atmosphere in the Main Hall was no longer quiet and exquisite, but a heavy curtain of air, a clash of a monstrous amount of energy.

Du Gu Ye did not turn to look at Xuan Yuan Che. His calm and apathetic eyes only moved slightly as the melody that his flute had produced took a sharp turn. His flute suddenly went high as an eagles

soaring up the sky, far into the clouds.

The elegant sound of flute and the deep, heavy sound of drums suddenly seemed like two enormous Green Dragons rising high into the air, swirling past each other in the Main Hall. The melodies crossed each other, soaring higher than each other; it was difficult to tell which was better.

Xuan Yuan Yi, who was sitting high above in his throne, grinned proudly at his son. Their Tian Zhen Kingdom had not lost to Ao Yun Kingdom. Xuan Yuan Che had brought honor for him and the Tian Zhen Kingdom.

The officials sitting below were also beaming with happiness, their elderly faces red in excitement.

Sitting on the ebony chair, Liu Yue leaned back on her chair and watched Xuan Yuan Che who was striking the percussion with agility. She smiled widely, turning her eyes into crescent shape, thinking that her Xuan Yuan Che was really magnificent.

The melodious sound of the flute mixed with the deep vigorous beats of the golden drums.

Gradually, sips of inner strength started mixing into the music. It was unclear whether someone had started it first or they had started together.

The melodious sound of flute became increasingly higher as the beating of the golden drum became increasingly heavier.

A deadly aura started to radiate out of the melody.

Du Gu Ye who had been sitting all this while suddenly stood up. There was not a single breeze of wind blowing in the Main Hall, yet his light red robe waved and fluttered in an unseen force.

Chapter 78: The Beginning of Chaos (2)

Standing behind Xuan Yuan Yi, Xuan Yuan Che's dark red robes also fluttered as an aura circled around him and his black hair moved although there was no wind.

The two people had begun competing with their inner strength, projecting it through their music.

A deadly aura enveloped the flute's sound. Under the high peaks and the trilling cascades, there lay hidden mounds of killing intent that concealed the sharpness of a million sword. Once released, it would be a strike with thunderous power.

In contrast, the sounds of the golden drum were thundering and forceful. It was like the sound of thousands of mounted troops charging straight ahead on a boundless grasslands. Booming murderous intent soar straight through the sky. If either of them had made a move, the colors of the sky and the earth would probably changed.

The two melodies were both arrogant, but one was cold and the other was hot. The melodies were like formless swords, meeting mid sky in a combat of life and death.

The enormous hall was in complete silence.

The faces of the officials below were either pale or flushed, like they had been affected by alcohol, they staggered, quivered, and trembled along with the vibrations of the two melodies.

Especially among the civil officials led by the Left Minister, their bodies trembled like flower.

The military officials led by General Mu Rong fared a lot better in comparison. Each one of them gritted their teeth, closed their eyes tightly and quietly fought back with their own inner strength.

What kind of people were Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye? The two were the most excellent ones among the young generation today and possessed transcendental martial arts. These two were not ordinary people.

In such a match, fought with all their strength, the melody that was instilled with all their inner strength was like a sharp sword and could not be underestimated.

The wine glasses and dishes in the banquet, clattered on the tables as they vibrated with the notes of the music.

The Secondary Hall of Tian Chen Palace and the Lower Secondary Hall had also quietened down, as if these halls too had felt the storms raging in the main hall. Across the Emperor's birthday celebration, there was only a complete and empty silence as the previous noise and excitement had dissipated like a dream.

Crackle! The jade bowls and plates could no longer withstand the pressure and shattered suddenly with loud crashes. Wine flowed onto the floor and the artfully presented food was now a scattered mess.

"Crash!" Liu Yue glanced at the cup in her hands. It had split into two and the wine within had spilled onto her body.

The smile she had showed till then disappeared and Liu Yue also became stern at that moment. She who did not have inner strength, felt taxed by such combat of the inner strength as she listened.

From the corner of her eyes, she glanced at the First ranked Imperial Consorts opposite her who had already fainted, frothing at the mouth. It was obvious that they had been blasted and injured by the inner strengths of Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye.

She glanced up at Imperial Consort Chen and the others that were seated high above and noticed that the faces of Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi, Empress Liu and Imperial Consort Chen were already ashen but they were still holding on firmly. If they had crumpled, then Tian Zhen Kingdom would have no face left to speak of.

Chapter 79: The Beginning of Chaos (3)

The sound of the flute and drums became increasingly sharper, almost breaking through the rooftop and straight towards the clouds.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows slightly. If this fight was not halted, the Main Hall would definitely be torn apart by these two.

Furthermore, even if Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye had not aimed their attacks towards the people in the Main Hall, the overflow from their surging Inner Energies could probably kill others in the vicinity who had not been trained in martial arts.

She might not care about the other people in the Hall, but she couldn't ignore Xuan Yuan Che's imperial mother, Imperial Consort Chen.

Looking around, she spotted a group of palace girls from the Musical Department who had fallen unconscious in the corner. Surrounding them were various musical instruments such as the zither, guzheng, flute and pipa.

Standing up, she quickly headed towards the seven-stringed zither. Liu Yue sat cross-legged, restraining the turbulence in her heart as she plucked its strings with her fingers.

It was her first time touching a zither and she hoped that her current body retained its muscle memories of how to play a zither.

"Clang clang clang." At first, her melody sounded unpleasant, but slowly the notes started to come together. The previous Liu Yue had been extremely skilled in zither.

Her zither did not sound as clear and high as the flute, and also not as heavy and solemn as the drum. Instead, it sounded graceful and emotional.

The sound had the same effect as admiring the beautiful sceneries on the banks of the Qin Huai River, stirring up a touch of lingering emotion and feelings. A trace of the endearing tune lingered in everyone's ears, like the fragrant smell of a flower. Her elegant body played, her smile

more beautiful than any scenery on earth.

Her wistful zither tune, underneath the murderous aura, sounded like there were eighteen innocent ladies brought into an execution ground, punished unfairly, an unspeakably difficult situation.

But it was this kind of heart wrenching pang that made the sound of flute and the drums falter and almost go out of tune.

Liu Yue didn't possess any Inner Energy and the only thing that was placing her above these two people was her killing intent. It was the killing intent trained from the depths of hell.

It was neither sharp nor austere. It wasn't like soldiers marching on an endless prairie, nor was it like a musical composition that was imbued with hidden killing arts. It was simply pure killing intent.

Unbridled, pure and concentrated killing intent, like it was emitting out from the Death God himself.

As the wistful tune continued, it produced visions of the eighteen enchanting girls stepping into the execution ground. At their back, a sinister looking Death God lifted his sickle high up. The images that Liu Yue invoked with her music were totally unharmonious, yet they projected formidable power.

It was a power that could destroy the world.

It was a power that could rule the whole world.

The sound of flute stopped abruptly as Du Gu Ye lifted his eyes and stared at Liu Yue, who had both of her eyes closed, with a trace of astonishment in his eyes.

A killing intent so intense that it had actually affected him! There was even a tinge of fear spreading through the depths of his heart. How could that have happened?

With the flute falling silent, the sound of the golden drum also started to fade away as Xuan Yuan Che turned around to look at the one emitting the shockingly powerful killing intent. Such a piercing killing intent could

be from none other than his Little Princess.

Chapter 80: The Beginning of Chaos (4)

But the killing intent that Liu Yue had displayed earlier was one designed for intimidation and tyranny. This time, it was a killing intent at its pinnacle that could bring out extreme fear in people's heart.

Liu Yue's closed eyelids suddenly opened in an instant, her abyss deep pupils looking calm and unruffled. Not a single trace of emotions could be seen. However, her gaze wasn't empty. It was an apathetic gaze that seemed to look down upon everyone in the world.

Du Gu Ye shivered a little. What a frightening gaze!

The sound of his flute slipped a few notes and Xuan Yuan Che's drum sounds also faltered a little. Both of them slowly drew back their Inner Energies, little by little.

The crowd in the Main Hall slowly let out a breath of relief. How dangerous! If the two princes had increased their Inner Energies by even just a little bit more, they might probably have needed to bury their dead bodies here.

However, they had not even managed to finish their breath before they felt the intense killing intent down to their bones. It was a killing intent aura that meant sure death for everyone in its presence.

Everyone in the Main Hall immediately turned into a statue as they were frozen stiff by the killing intent. Before they managed to wipe the sweat beads that had formed on their forehead, the hairs on their backs stood on end.

Such a killing intent, it was beyond frightening!

Liu Yue's fingers didn't stop plucking on the strings of the zither as her killing intent intensified.

The flute sound went softer suddenly and there was a break in the tune. The drum sound went fainter as Xuan Yuan Che's thundering drum beats broke the leather of the drumheads.

The flute and the golden drum sound both stopped at the same time.

The immense Inner Energy that had surged out in all directions completely settled down.

And at the same time, the sure-death killing intent quickly vanished, like a wave during low-tide, as it returned back into Liu Yue's body.

The guests sitting in the Hall felt like everything had disappeared in the blink of an eye. That icy breeze that seemed to appear from the depths of hell disappeared like it had never existed before.

Her two hands stretched out to press on the strings as Liu Ye's eyes slowly closed.

That year, one thousand ten-year-old children were thrown inside the Amazon Forest, and only one was allowed to come back. If they wanted to return, they would need to kill all the other children and confront all the beasts in the jungle.

It was a test epitomizing the belittling of human lives and also the most unreasonable demand in a lifetime.

When she became the first and the last one to return that day, her body had been emitting such an energy, a Death God's sure-death killing intent. A killing intent that would be able to destroy every single lifeform.

It was only after years of training that she managed to suppress such an intense killing intent. She was a living person, and she didn't want to become a killing machine. She had her own feelings. She had to surpass her own dark past and never again would she allow herself to fall back into the depths of it. Absolutely never!

Today, Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye were simply too strong. She had had to raise her negative feelings to their summit, before she could suppress their Inner Energies. She almost couldn't handle her own killing intent.

Although the Main Hall was a bunch of chaos, it was engulfed in a deathly silence.

Chapter 81: The Beginning of Chaos (5)

Furrowing his brows tightly, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly threw down the drum hammer in his hand. He swiftly turned and walked towards Liu Yue. Although Liu Yue's killing intent had already been suppressed, he felt that Liu Yue's aura was still impure, as if there was a halo of black aura surrounding her. He did not like it.

Xuan Yuan Che briskly walked a few steps to Liu Yue's side. Without waiting for Liu Yue to open her eyes, unexpectedly he bent down, embraced Liu Yue tightly and kissed her fiercely.

Liu Yue did not open her eyes, but her arms hugged Xuan Yuan Che back, wrapping around his neck.

Within the enormous hall, the people who had finally gotten a breathing space were cringing as they watched this scene unfolding before their eyes. If this young couple wanted to be intimate then they should do it in the privacy of their own home. How indecent of them, kissing in the public and in front of distinguished guests!

The Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi wiped the perspiration on his forehead and cast a glance at Du Gu Ye. Just as he was about to chide Du Gu Yue for being thoughtless, he noticed Du Gu Ye staring at Liu Yue. A fleeting flicker of emotion flashed across Du Gu Ye's cold eyes, changing his cold facial expression. There was not even a single trace of contempt in his expression as he looked at Liu Yue, but something else, something else.....

Xuan Yuan Yi's lips twitched a little, not knowing whether he should say it out loud.

After the kiss, the dark aura emitting out from Liu Yue's whole body had been subdued entirely. She chuckled as she made a kiss mark on Xuan Yuan Che's cheeks.

Seeing that Liu Yue had recovered fully, Xuan Yuan Che glared at Liu Yue. She didn't have an ounce of Inner Strength in her body, yet she had dared to get involved in this combat.

His hands twined around Liu Yue's waist tightly as Liu Yue continued to tangle her hands on Xuan Yuan Che's neck. They totally ignored the Imperial Court Officials and did as they liked.

"I wouldn't let him bully you. " Liu Yue spoke in a solemn voice only audible to the two of them. Her words made Xuan Yuan Che glare at her angrily, yet his heart was deeply moved.

He was not scared of Du Gu Ye, but if they fought, his Imperial Mother and Father would not have been able to endure it. Based on Liu Yue's attitude, if it wasn't for consideration of his Imperial Mother, she would have patted the dust off her butt and left. His reputation was not as important as his family. He had put everything at stake today for them after all.

This favour, he would have to accept it.

For a moment, the shocked ministers in the Main Hall were dumbstruck and the military officials that remained slightly composed had only absolute admiration towards the couple. Just like that, they let the two people, who had openly ignored the laws in the Imperial Court, continue embracing each other.

"You are quite profound. I, the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, admire you." In the midst of silence, Du Gu Ye slowly spoke out with his eyes fixed on Liu Yue.

"It is just a trifling skill." Liu Yue answered calmly.

A glow flashed in Du Gu Ye's eyes when he heard her words. He stared deeply at Liu Yue, then nodded frigidly and responded, "It is indeed just a trifling skill. It's such a shame to show it off."

Chapter 82: The Beginning of Chaos (6)

Other than Xuan Yuan Che, no one else in the Hall had understood the conversation between Du Gu Ye and Liu Yue. They stared speechlessly at each other, thinking, never before had they heard a person who agreed straight away to someone who, to be modest, had said that their skill was just a trifle. Besides, the person who had agreed so quickly was Du Gu Ye who had clearly lost in the clash.

Only Xuan Yuan Che understood that Liu Yue 's words of modesty had actually meant to be an insult to Du Gu Ye's skill with the flute. Du Gu Ye, on the other hand, had admitted to it.

The Main Hall was in a mess. Everyone was in confusion about what to do if this birthday banquet was to continue.

Xuan Yuan Yi immediately waved his hand and commanded Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng and King Yi Xuan Yuan Che to extend the hospitality of Tian Chen Kingdom towards the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, as he, the Emperor, would be leaving first.

When Du Gu Ye showed his skills, the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng had been unable to endure his attack. He wouldn't even know when danger was headed his way, so the Emperor had commanded Xuan Yuan Che to accompany the Crown Prince for his safety.

At that command, Liu Yue's sharp eyes noticed that the faces of the Left Minister and Empress Liu had turned ashen. On the other hand, Imperial Consort Chen was beaming with pleasure.

Xuan Yuan Che was already on par with Xuan Yuan Cheng, and now the Emperor had commanded the two of them to entertain the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom. Wasn't it obvious that the position of the crown prince was leaning towards Xuan Yuan Che's Faction?

The radiance of the stars shone brightly that night with the full moon and the cool breeze of night.

Xuan Yuan Che had stayed behind at the Palace to entertain Du Gu Ye.

Liu Yue, on the other hand, had silently slipped away when she saw that the Left Minister's subordinates had suddenly left the Palace.

The second day after the birthday banquet, the imperial family's hunting event was held.

Ideally, this hunting event should have happened during the seasons of spring and autumn. However, there was a tradition set by the ancestors who had founded the kingdom years ago. Once a year, every male royal family member should compete in a hunting competition. The ancestors had fought hard on horsebacks to make the kingdom what it was today, so the later generations should not forget their efforts. Therefore, since the whole of royal family had been gathered for the Emperor's birthday, on the second day after the birthday, a hunting competition was organised to compare the military skills of the male members of the imperial family.

Early in the morning of the second day, Xuan Yuan Che, the other Xuan Yuan family members and the imperial court officials headed towards the Imperial hunting grounds along with Du Gu Ye who was also invited to participate in this event.

About 15 li from the outskirts of the Tian Chen Kingdom's Capital, lay the hunting grounds of the Tian Chen Imperial family. The hunting grounds covered two tall mountains on which numerous animals had been reared.

(TLN: Li is ancient China's unit of measurement. 1 Li is 500m)

Although the beginning of summer had arrived, the weather was still warm and gentle. It was the perfect time where both pasturage and animals abounded.

In a small, open meadow before the dense mountain forest, sweet wine and seats were placed for Empress Liu, Imperial Consort Chen and some others. Liu Yue, Liu Xin Qing and a few others, including even the most beautiful girl in the Tian Chen Kingdom, Mu Rong Xin, whom Liu Yue had never seen before, accompanied them.

Seated according to the pecking order, General Mu Rong sat behind Liu

Yue.

Liu Yue played with the dried fruit in her hands as her mouth curved in an expression that seemed like a smile but wasn't really one, thinking to herself, "Going to the extent of even bringing out Mu Rong Xin! Mu Rong Wu Di, you must really want to create ties with the ones in higher positions."

Chapter 83: The Beginning of Chaos (7)

However, she didn't have the leisure to play with him today. She had more important things to do.

A gong was rung and a horn was blown loudly. The Imperial Royal Guards who were guarding the perimeters, immediately moved as fast as the wind and entered the forest in an orderly manner. They were trying to encircle all the animals in the forest and drive them towards the hunting party.

Xuan Yuan Che and the others wore suits of armour that covered their entire bodies as they sat proudly on their horses. Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi, the leader of the group, was clad in golden armour and held a large bow in his arms.

Behind the Royal Family, Mu Rong Wu Di and the other generals followed closely. The Ministers on the other hand, stayed behind on one side and waited upon the Empress and other female members of the Royal Family. It almost seemed like they were sucking up to the Empress.

"Yue Er." As Liu Yue was still observing the environment, a gentle and warm voice resounded behind her. It wasn't Mu Rong Wu Di, but it was his wife, Xiang An Chen.

Liu Yue turned her head indifferently and observed Xiang An Chen fleetingly. Over sixty years old, her hair was almost completely filled with silver threads, but she was still spirited and healthy. However, Liu Yue did not respond to her at all. She had no attachment whatsoever towards the members of the Mu Rong Residence. Everyone there were simply trying to gain her favour for personal benefits. Otherwise, why would they act so intimate?

Despite Liu Yue's cold treatment Xiang An Chen was not angry. Instead, she smiled and whispered, "Yue Er, could you do Mu Rong Clan a favour?" She patted her hands on Mu Rong Xin, who was sitting right beside her as she voiced out her request. Then she lifted her head and looked towards the cold and emotionless Du Gu Ye, who was sitting upright on a seat a

short distance away from them.

Beautiful and demure like a Chinese Peony, alluring like an autumn scenery. Mu Rong Xin was indeed beautiful, much more beautiful than Liu Xin Qing and the others.

However, in Liu Yue's eyes, Mu Rong Xin and Du Gu Ye belonged to totally different dimensions.

She didn't say any more words, but Xiang An Chen knew that Liu Yue had understood her meaning. This Liu Yue, although she was still young and tender, her mind was that of a mature woman's.

"Aren't you impudent?", Liu Yue thought to herself laughing coldly. Failing to pair Mu Rong Xin to Xuan Yuan Che or Xuan Yuan Cheng, the Mu Rong Residence had even gone so far as to think of pairing her to Du Gu Ye. This Mu Rong Residence had really tried to reach beyond their means.

"Liu Yue, catch." Before she could finish her thoughts and retort back, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly threw a bow towards her.

Liu Yue flicked her wrist and caught the bow that Xuan Yuan Che threw to her. Staring at Xuan Yuan Che with raised eyebrows, she thought that though she was proficient with all sorts of modern weapons and gadgets she was not that proficient with the bow, since it was such a backward weapon technology. This was because she had much more powerful weapons to be used.

"Let's have a match." Xuan Yuan Che looked at Liu Yue and flashed her a devilish smile.

Behind him, Qiu Hen and the other generals immediately burst into a huzzah. In the Tian Chen's Hunting Field, there was no such thing as female and male but only who was stronger.

Chapter 84: The Beginning of Chaos (8)

“Let’s compete then.” Liu Yue stood up suddenly and flashed a smile towards Xuan Yuan Che. She secretly signalled to Xuan Yuan Che with her eyes and he responded with a knowing smile. Then, he beckoned to his men to prepare their horses.

“I would like to try too.” Just as Liu Yue finished her words, Du Gu Ye suddenly spoke out, with his icy voice.

Why would this scholarly, celestial looking being that didn’t really seem to like physical fights show such interest in this today? However, Xuan Yuan Che naturally wouldn’t hinder the wishes of a guest.

When the bows and arrows were fully prepared, the Emperor of the Tian Chen Kingdom, Xuan Yuan Yi, gave the order to ride out and the sons of the Tian Chen Imperial family galloped their horses directly into the dense forest, going their separate ways.

Liu Yue did not follow Xuan Yuan Che, instead, she went in another direction. She was headed the same way as the Eighth Prince.

“Third Sister In Law, you are really awesome.” The Eighth Prince, who was not much older than Liu Yue, had the rare opportunity to go in the same direction as she was. He immediately flashed her a joyous expression, speaking entirely with respect and admiration.

“Thanks.” Seeing that the Eighth Prince’s sincerely praising her, Liu Yue responded with a nod.

“No need to thank me. Third brother and I are best buddies...” blabbering all the way, the Eighth Prince followed Liu Yue into the heart of the forest.

“Whoosh.” A river deer collapsed on the ground.

“Third Sister in Law, what are u using? Why is it so powerful?” the Eighth Prince asked curiously, seeing that whenever Liu Yue raised her hands, an animal would collapse. At this moment, the horses of the soldiers behind them were loaded with the animals killed by Liu Yue.

Liu Yue raised her hands and answered with two words, "Sleeve arrows." Except that she was using a remodeled version of the sleeve arrows.

"Third Sister In Law, give me one too!" the Eighth Prince came forward with a smiling expression.

Liu Yue raised her brows when she saw this. This Eighth Prince really was being overly familiar. She paused at that moment and replied, "After we return, I..... "

"Swoosh." Before she could complete her sentence, an arrow split the wind as it flew from within the dense forest, darting towards Liu Yue as fast as lightning.

"Assassins! Protect the Third Sister In Law." The Eighth Prince immediately tossed the bow and arrow in his hand away and grabbed the sword sheathed at his waist, rushing towards Liu Yue.

The military officers and Imperial bodyguards who had been following closely behind them dashed forward together, roaring loudly.

"Protect yourself." A cold light flashed in Liu Yue's eyes and she brandished the blade in her hand.

With a clear clashing sound that echoed, the blade in Liu Yue's hands slashed straight through the incoming arrow which fell to the ground in pieces.

Just at the moment the broken arrow dropped, numerous other sharp arrows darted out simultaneously on all sides from the dense forest.

By the ferocious murderous auras and the arrows which sped as fast as light, you could tell that they were all skilled assassins.

Liu Yue humphed frigidly as her hand flew to her waist. Xuan Yuan Che's silver sword immediately shot out through the the air and confronted the sharp arrows coming from all sides of the forest.

An onlooker could only see silver lights flashing across as Liu Yue faced the menacing, sharp arrows.

Yet, behind Liu Yue's back, a sharp, black arrow darted quicker than any

of the other approaching arrows. As it was getting nearer to Liu Yue, the arrow suddenly divided into two and hurtled towards Liu Yue's back. Liu Yue's sword could only defend against one of the two arrows.

“Third Sister In Law! ” The Eighth Prince was instantly shocked and terror-stricken.

Chapter 85: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (1)

The surrounding people could only look on in horror as the black arrow almost struck Liu Yue's back. Suddenly, a golden flash darted out behind Liu Yue's back and struck at the incoming black arrow.

There was only a loud "peng" as the black arrow fell to the ground, split neatly into two parts.

A golden coloured arrow had plunged deeply into the ground right behind Liu Yue.

As the sunlight shone through the trees, the golden arrow reflected golden rays, emitting a dazzling radiance.

Seeing this, Liu Yue frowned slowly and turned towards the front. Du Gu Ye, wearing a white robe that contrasted his long black hair, sat up high on his snow white horse's back. Looking at Liu Yue, he slowly lowered the golden bow in his hands, his face as expressionless as always.

The three mounted guards behind him had already charged into the forest to chase after the assassins.

Seeing this whole scene, the generals and guards who had been following Liu Yue and the Eighth Prince heaved a deep sigh of relief. Then they started to roar angrily and charged into the forest following the chase. How could someone dare to attempt an assassination on their Princess Consort?

The fallen arrow was now powerless and useless.

Liu Yue put away her sword, reined in her horse and sat up straight in her stirrups.

Everything that had happened, occurred in just a moment.

"Third Sister-In-Law, are you alright?" The Eighth Prince charged towards her, worry and anxiety filling his expression.

"I'm alright." Liu Yue did not even turn her head as she replied to the

Eighth Prince with a short sentence. She stared fixedly at the black arrow that had been split into two, lying on the ground.

What a magnificent archery skill. Du Gu Ye had shot an arrow out of nowhere, but he had thoroughly destroyed the hidden mark on the black arrow.

Liu Yue quietly looked up towards the sky, suspiciously. That hidden mark was the Left Minister's. She had intentionally made it look perfect and refined, all for today. She did not expect that Du Gu Ye's archery skill was so accurate that he could destroy the hidden mark totally.

Yesterday, she didn't miss out on Empress Liu's and Left Ministers expressions. Hence, she had secretly warned the Blood Shadow Guards that anything could happen in the forest today. A berserk wild beast, a stray arrow. This place was practically an assassination paradise.

If the Left Minister did not make a move on the day of the hunt, then there might never be another chance to attack Xuan Yuan Che. Once Du Gu Ye left the Tian Chen Kingdom, Xuan Yuan Che could be promoted to the Crown Prince position at any time, kicking Xuan Yuan Cheng out from his position.

Today was a good day. Through the Blood Shadow Guards, Liu Yue had received warning that the Left Minister had secretly made a move. However, rather than just allowing someone to use her as a target for their arrows, she would simply ensure that the blame fell rightly on the heads of the ones who committed the crime even if she had to fake some evidence. Liu Yue believed that one must control the decisive moment with their own hands, otherwise one would not be prepared to deal with whatever was coming. She didn't like being caught unaware if that happened.

Her heart was filled with fury but she maintained a calm demeanour as Du Gu Ye approached her slowly on his horse. Liu Yue forced two words out through her gritted teeth, "Thank you."

Chapter 86: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (2)

Damn. She didn't manage to frame the Left Minister. Yesterday night's worth of effort was spent in vain. She had purposely commanded the Blood Shadow Guards to act the part of the villain today, so that she could frame the Left Minister with the hidden mark in the arrow. However, her plan was destroyed by Du Gu Ye's honourable act.

It appears that she couldn't rely on the assassination attempt here to frame the Left Minister. She could only depend on the assassination attempt of Xuan Yuan Che.

Nodding coldly, Du Gu Ye galloped his horses forward, not saying anything. His face had not even a hint of pride or arrogance, instead, he was coldly indifferent.

Only, his eyes steadily locked onto the figure of Liu Yue. The pair of black and blue eyes flashed a colorful radiance as the sunlight shone through the trees from above. It was remarkably beautiful.

Liu Yue arched her brows slightly as she saw this. Nevermind. Forget it. This Du Gu Ye also had good intentions, and although his good intentions came inexplicably, but she should just forget about the incident today.

"Reporting to the Eighth Prince. We failed to pursue the assassins." The Royal Guards had returned from the heart of the dense forest. Failing to complete their mission, they bowed before the Eighth Prince and Liu Yue with an embarrassed expression.

"You are all useless bunch of..."

"Nevermind. With the assassins' high-level skills, even if they did manage to catch up to them, they would probably be killed immediately." The Eighth Prince's rebuke was interrupted when Liu Yue had suddenly raised her hands to signal him to stop.

What a joke. Those were her personally trained Blood Shadow Secret Agents. If these Royal Guards could catch up to her Secret Agents, she

should just retire from supervising them.

Hearing this, the Royal Guards looked at Liu Yue with a grateful expression.

At this moment, the three guards under Du Gu Ye who had been the first to chase after the assassins had also returned back on their horses, each coming from three different directions. Looking at Du Gu Ye, they faintly shook their heads.

Seeing this, Du Gu Ye lowered his eyes slightly and then gave Liu Yue a quick, upward look. His eyes seemed to understand something, but also not understanding anything.

“Dong... Dong...” “At this moment, a thundering sound of drums broke through the dense forest, resounding from afar.

Hearing this, the Eighth Prince’s face instantly paled as he shouted loudly, “Father is being attacked!”

The surrounding Royal Guards had also turned pale immediately.

Liu Yue looked at the direction where Xuan Yuan Che had disappeared to. Xuan Yuan Che had went the same way as Xuan Yuan Yi. Now that Xuan Yuan Yi was attacked, that would mean that her assassins had started their attempted attack.

Liu Yue displayed an anxious look, but she understood the situation clearly in her heart. Liu Yue knew that although the crime of attempting an assassination on Xuan Yuan Che would not be too big, it would be able to take down the Left Minister and Empress Liu.

However, since Xuan Yuan Che and Xuan Yuan Yi had went the same way, then the crime of attempting an assassination on the Emperor of Tian Chen Kingdom would definitely be bigger than the crime of attempting an assassination on Xuan Yuan Che alone. In that case, the Blood Shadow Guards should shoot a few arrows on Xuan Yuan Yi and then focus their attack on Xuan Yuan Che. If any evidence of that crime was found, the Left Minister would never be able to rise up again.

Chapter 87: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (3)

“Quick, let’s go.” Liu Yue shrieked loudly and immediately galloped her horse towards the location where the sound of the drums came from, looking extremely worried.

Seeing this, Du Gu Ye furrowed his brows. His eyes moved slightly as he stared deeply at Liu Yue, who was rushing away on her horse. He had also immediately followed her on his horse.

Liu Yue, Du Gu Ye, the Eighth Prince, and their party of people rode madly towards the direction of Xuan Yuan Yi at the speed of lightning.

At the same time, all the princes and military officers in the whole forest had also halted their hunting and hurried towards the area from where the drums sounded.

The glowing sunlight shone through the trees and sprinkled spots of gold over the beautiful grass and colorful flowers which seemed like fire. Everything was so beautiful that they were indescribable in words.

Meanwhile, the drumbeats were getting more rapid, sounding increasingly urgent. That mad sound of the drums seemed to almost tear through the sky.

The alarmed birds in the dense forest took off rapidly as the fluttering of their wings made extremely disordered noises.

Liu Yue rode her horse like she was galloping madly, but the horse she was on was specially selected by Xuan Yuan Che. It was the standard inferior quality horse that could only show an outward appearance and couldn’t run faster even if she begged it to be quicker.

As Liu Yue heard the frantic drumbeats, she unconsciously furrowed her brows slightly. The sounds of the drums was so urgent, could it be a serious assassination attempt?

How would that be possible? Qiu Hen and the others had secretly led

the Dragon Riders to guard Xuan Yuan Che. Even if the Left Minister had attacked at the same time, a situation like this probably wouldn't happen. Could it be that someone was really trying to assassinate Xuan Yuan Yi?

With her eyebrows arched highly, she thought that it would be fun now.

"Get on." as she was still lost in her thoughts, Du Gu Ye who had been riding beside her suddenly spoke coldly.

Liu Yue turned her head and glanced at the horse beneath Du Gu Ye. She didn't understand horses, but the horse Du Gu Ye was riding was definitely better than her "specially selected" horse.

She did not hesitate at that moment and with a smack on her horse's back, she jumped and somersaulted in the sky and stood on the horse's back behind Du Gu Ye. She wanted to see what had happened.

Du Gu Ye did not speak. He merely pressed the sides of his fast horse with his legs as he sat on it and the snow colored ferghana horse immediately darted out like a sword at more than double its previous speed.

The horse chased after the clouds and the moon with an amazing speed, comparable to lightning.

In seconds, Du Gu Ye's horse dashed into the midst of the location where the assassination attempt had commenced.

Du Gu Ye's horse was just too fast and so, it seemed like they were the first to arrive.

It was in utter chaos. The Emperor's Imperial Guards were attempting to escort the disheveled Xuan Yuan Yi as they hurriedly retreated backwards.

The Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng, who was right beside the Emperor had bloodstains smudging a large portion of his clothes from an injury to his shoulder. With a pale face, he staggered to his feet and followed the Imperial Guards. At the entrance of the dense forest, the sounds of swords and knives clashing were so intense that they could be heard even miles away.

Chapter 88: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (4)

There was no sign of Xuan Yuan Che or Qiu Hen and his party around. The people of the House of King Yi were nowhere to be found in the vicinity.

Liu Yue stood high on the horse's back and took in everything in her sight at the first glance. Her eyes flashed for an instant as an amorphous murderous aura shot out from her immediately.

"Whoosh. " A sharp arrow pierced out of the dense forest and darted menacingly towards Xuan Yuan Yi who was retreating hurriedly.

The Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi had Royal Guards around him, but there were only a few skilled ones among them. The only Military officer of Tian Zhen Kingdom in the group, General Fei of the second ranked aristocratic family, was protecting the Crown Prince on the other side.

Seeing this, Liu Yue frowned and swiftly moved her hand. A small arrow instantly shot out, arriving first even though it was shot later, and struck away the arrow darting toward the Emperor, Xuan Yuan Yi.

Although Xuan Yuan Yi's martial art skills was not really proficient, he was still an Emperor. He did not lose his management capabilities even in such a chaotic situation.

Turning his head, he saw that Liu Yue and Du Gu Ye had arrived. Immediately overjoyed, he exclaimed, "Liu Yue, quickly go. Xuan Yuan Che is still behind. We were ambushed just now. Xuan Yuan Che stayed behind to deal with the assassins and let me escape first. Quick, go to him!"

Xuan Yuan Yi explained the situation concisely with a few sentences.

Liu Yue instantly put on a cold expression when she heard the Emperor and realized that this was a real assassination attempt against Xuan Yuan Yi. It was not the Left Minister, as he wouldn't have had the audacity to attack Xuan Yuan Yi even if you gave him ten times the amount of guts

he had in him. So then who was the one behind this assassination?

“Lend me your horse. ” Frigidly leaving four words behind, Liu Yue unexpectedly grabbed Du Gu Ye and tried throwing him to the front.

Du Gu Ye did not object as he flew to the ground in a flash and gave his horse to Liu Yue. Requesting him to bring her here was fine, but if he was asked to save Xuan Yuan Che and be involved in this assassination against the Emperor of the Tian Zhen Kingdom, then he had no interest in doing so.

Furthermore, in his position as the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, he represented the whole of Ao Yun Kingdom. In such a situation, too much enthusiasm wouldn't be a good thing.

Riding on the horse, Liu Yue dashed forward without looking back into the dense forest.

Roars and war cries were heard as shadows and flashes of swords and blades flew everywhere. The strong odor of blood permeated the dense forest.

Only his two sons, Xuan Yuan Cheng and Xuan Yuan Che, along with General Mu Rong, General Fei and a few Royal Guards had followed the Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi during the hunt. There were not many people by his side.

Who would have thought that in their own territory, they would encounter such a large-scale assassination attempt? Xuan Yuan Che was obviously undermanned, as many royal guards retreated with Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi and Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng. There were only about ten people left to fight with Xuan Yuan Che in the dense forest, while reinforcements had not arrived yet.

The assassins wore green clothes. It was a light green that could easily blend in with the grass and trees as one.

Chapter 89: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (5)

There weren't many assassins, but every single one of them was definitely the equivalent of a hundred men in skill. Those dozens of Royal Guards that were guarding Xuan Yuan Che would be killed in just a single attack, as easy as cutting vegetables. Just in the moment that Liu Yue was rushing there, more than ten Royal Guards had collapsed.

Now the assassins were risking their lives, attacking Xuan Yuan Che madly, as if the target they were assassinating was not Xuan Yuan Yi, but Xuan Yuan Che instead.

And at the cliff on top of the mountain, Xuan Yuan Che looked austere. His hair flew in the sky while he was covered with blood and the silver sword in his hand had almost become a bloody sword.

He had already lost his horse.

Beside him, Mu Rong Wu Di, Qiu Hen and the other Dragon Riders guarded him tightly as the two sides attacked each other fiercely.

They wanted to kill Xuan Yuan Che.

Liu Yue's eyes instantly grew bloodshot as a ferocious murderous aura was released from her body.

"Clank. " A clear sound rang out as Xuan Yuan Che saw the sharp arrows that were flying towards him was knocked away in mid air by something. Unconsciously, he raised his head swiftly.

In his sight, Liu Yue dressed in green and blue was rushing toward him madly with a murderous aura.

Two swords crossed and came in at an amazingly fast speed. One sword then struck out from an unimaginable direction and a life was instantly ended by Liu Yue's hands.

Liu Yue's attacks were fast, and the speed of the snowy white ferghana horse was even faster. Wherever the girl and the horse passed, spots of

blood would bloom like flowers beside her. The people near her didn't even notice where the weapon was coming from before they collapsed on the ground with extremely shocked, lifeless eyes.

There was no fierce resistance, and no blood dancing in the sky to rain down like flowers. There were only the raising of a hand, the fall of the sword and death came with a quick stroke. It was like the Grim Reaper's deathly scythe reaping lives while all could only stand in silent acceptance awaiting their end, which was creepy on this fierce battlefield.

There were no expressions, no heat e, but only the murderous aura, the thick cold murderous aura. Deep inside Liu Yue's eyes, heavy flames burned and showed her bloodthirsty soul.

Seeing this scene, Xuan Yuan Che widened his eyes slightly. It was the first time he saw Liu Yue attacking and killing someone. He had seen Liu Yue's fighting skills many times in the past and knew that although Liu Yue's moves were concise, they were powerful. He had not yet, however, seen Liu Yue kill someone.

The icy cold apathy, and killing in one move. That kind of speed and that kind of assassination efficiency. Heavens!

"Killing people is not as easy as embroidery. Why would you need so many exaggerated and extravagant moves? Just one move. One move that strikes the vital parts and it will be enough."

These were the words that Liu Yue Yue had said in the past. He had thought that these were just words, because surely, it couldn't be possible to kill someone in just one move.

Now he knew that what Liu Yue had said, she could and would definitely do.

One move, just one move. Such economy of movement that could not be any more succinct, yet a move so decisive that others could never endure it. A fatal move.

Xuan Yuan Che was shocked.

Chapter 90: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (6)

Liu Yue rode her horse quickly and flew across the field, her whole body was emitting an aura of killing intent at its full force. That shocking bloodthirst was even scarier than the sword in her hands.

A dense cloud of cold air enveloped her body, making her seem like a death god wielding a scythe. That sort of grim aura that should have belonged to the underworld, inflicted fear upon the hearts of everyone present.

Qiu Hen, Mu Rong Wi Di and the others were stupefied as they watched Liu Yue rushing to their side. In that moment, Liu Yue, who was shrouded in a bloodthirsty aura held everyone present spellbound, unable to break eye contact. Everyone was filled with respect towards her. She was the true master of massacre.

The assassins in green were all frozen with fear. Assassins were killers, hence they were extremely sensitive to killing intent. With regards to other people outside of their assassination world, they could fight them head to head to their death. But with regards this queen of the assassination world that they were facing, they could only feel unbridled fear arising from the depths of their hearts. It was a type of fear that could not be stopped.

In just a moment, every single assassins almost seemed to forget their initial mission of assassinating Xuan Yuan Che, as they immediately charged towards Liu Yue.

Her sword blade moved swiftly, sharp and decisive.

The whole ground was filled with corpses and bloodbath.

No one was left alive on the grounds that Liu Yue had stepped on.

Blood trickled down her sword to the ground as Liu Yue stepped over the field of corpses. The blood-soaked Liu Yue came down from her snow white horse in a swift movement, as she came to Xuan Yuan Che's side.

Her eyes was filled with anxiousness as she looked at Xuan Yuan Che and asked, "Are you alright?"

Lowering his head, Xuan Yuan Che saw that although Liu Yue looked calm on the outside, her eyes were filled with worry and anxiousness. Xuan Yuan Che slowly reached out his hands and held Liu Yue's blood-stained face in his hands. He laughed out with a raised brow, "Aren't you belittling me too much? How would anything happen to me? These are all their blood, not mine."

He, Xuan Yuan Che, had fought in deadly battles since his teenage days. He was also one of the survivors who had climbed out of the hellhole. These mere assassins, although strong, would never be able to harm him.

However, his little Princess Consort's worry had thoroughly warmed his heart. With that grim looking eyes, fierce determination and a whole body stained with blood, her first sentence had actually been these three words, "Are you alright?".

He could actually hear such concerned words out of a cold-blooded person like her, a person who did not change her expression at all as she stepped over a pile of corpses. That sort of feeling, was something that could be described in words.

Holding Liu Yue's face with both of his hands, Xuan Yuan Che lowered his head slowly. Very gently, he placed a small kiss on Liu Yue's lips.

The kiss was very tender, soft and gentle like floating water, yet hotter than a sun's warmth on her skin.

Chapter 91: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (7)

Liu Yue slowly closed her eyes, allowing Xuan Yuan Che to kiss her gently while muttering, "All is fine if you are alright."

All is fine if he is alright. All is fine if her Xuan Yuan Che is alright.

His mouth curved into an extremely alluring smile and Xuan Yuan Che's kiss became even more tender.

The ground was full of corpses and the air was filled with the thick odor of blood. However, even in such a bloody battleground, where every blade was smeared with blood, the gentle kiss that they shared seem to create a field of blooming flowers around them. A field of fragrant, aromatic flowers.

The battleground had turned quiet without any noises of the blades and swords clashing with each other. The ferocious murderous atmosphere had also disappeared. Now, everything was calm, only the sound of the wind passing by, the rustling of the trees and the soft moans of the wounded soldiers were heard.

General Mu Rong Wu Di stood at one side silently. He had recovered from his shock at this time as he stared at the corpses lying all over the ground in front of him. His old-looking face twitched slightly.

Amazing. Liu Yue's sword was so sharp and concise, every move that she make was a fatal attack, slash by slash.

His hands trembled slightly as he pondered, if this sword were to pierce his body, could he guard against it? He knitted his brows tightly as he realized the answer was no. Her sword moved in such a strange angle and slaughtered with such an acute sharpness that was impossible to resist or guard against.

A single drop of cold sweat trickled down his temples as Mu Rong Wu Di secretly rejoiced in his heart. Fortunately, they had discovered her. Fortunately, they had chosen to stand by her side. Otherwise...

The hot early summer wind blowed, causing the stench of blood to fill the air.

At the side of the dense forest, Du Gu Ye watched the whole scene with a cold expression as shock flashed across his eyes. The breeze blew across his white robes that appeared graceful and pure.

“Princess Consort, you are so powerful. “After the initial shock and surprise, Qiu Hen and the others immediately looked at Liu Yue with pure excitement. As expected, their Princess Consort was indeed powerful.

Liu Yue had not even responded before Xuan Yuan Che pulled her tiny figure in his embrace and declared proudly, “Of course.”

Hearing this, Liu Yue couldn't help but flashed him a smile. After sharing a secret smile with each other, Liu Yue swept a glance on the assassins dressed in green that were lying on the ground behind her. Her face darkened as she asked, “Who are they? ”

“No idea. They weren't the Left Minister's men, or Du Gu Ye's.” Xuan Yuan Che also turned solemn as he answered with a deep voice.

These assassins skills were extremely high leveled. They were a lot more powerful than the Left Minister's men that they know. However, in comparison to Du Gu Ye's men, they were weaker. Therefore, the person behind these assassins was not the Left Minister and also not Du Gu Ye, the Crown Prince of the Ao Yun Kingdom.

“If it wasn't these two people, then who was behind this assassination? Liu Yue furrowed her brows and pondered who else could have the thought of attacking Xuan Yuan Che?

Chapter 92: A Sudden Birth of an Uncertain Situation (8)

It seemed like they were not after the life of Xuan Yuan Yi, Emperor of the Tian Chen Kingdom, but rather the head of Xuan Yuan Che.

Qiu Hen, squatted down and took off the mask of a dead assassin, "Dark skinned and a large build. They didn't come from the Tian Chen Kingdom." he spoke in a sober voice as he scrutinized the body.

The people of the Tian Chen Kingdom generally had a medium build. They didn't have a build as large as the bodies before their eyes. With such stature, it was enough to know that they weren't citizens of the Tian Chen Kingdom at a single glance. However, people with such stature were quite common in the other six kingdoms.

If they weren't Tian Chen Kingdom's citizens, then was it people from the other kingdoms? Liu Yue immediately furrowed her brows and turned to look at Xuan Yuan Che.

On the contrary, Xuan Yuan Che didn't show any reaction. Noticing that Liu Yue was staring at him, he laughed emotionlessly at the whole situation and raising his eyebrows, said "There are many people in this world that are after my life. "

As he spoke, Liu Yue immediately understood that it was because Xuan Yuan Che was too outstanding. Just as Du Gu Ye was able to make Ao Yun Kingdom the highest ranked and most powerful kingdom in a few years, Xuan Yuan Che would also be able to make Tian Chen Kingdom rise above the other kingdoms.

This would be a huge danger. Since he was unable to be used, then killing him would be the only choice.

Anyone can exist within the Tian Chen Kingdom, except for Xuan Yuan Che alone. This person was a threat to the surrounding kingdoms, an extremely huge threat.

Therefore, today was a good chance since the ancestral traditions of the

Tian Chen Kingdom were not a secret.

Reaching out her hands to hold Xuan Yuan Che's, Liu Yue looked upward and assured him, "Don't be afraid."

Xuan Yuan Che immediately laughed out loud when he heard her, and replied with a similarly arrogant tone, "If I was afraid, then I wouldn't be able to live until today." In the whole wide world, he, Xuan Yuan Che, had never been afraid of anyone.

"Alright. Your imperial highness Third Prince, let's return first and talk later." Mu Rong Wu Di was old and wise after all, so he interrupted at that moment.

Since it was the attempted assassination of Xuan Yuan Che, then currently, it would not be safe here.

Xuan Yuan Che nodded and pulled Liu Yue along. Then he helped by supporting an Imperial Guard in front of him who had been seriously injured, and was half squatting, half crawling, unable to get up.

Qiu Hen and the others around also started reorganizing.

"Swoosh. " Just at this moment, a sound of something breaking through sky was heard in the silent dense forest. A few metal balls the size of an infant's fist flew towards Xuan Yuan Che with the speed of lightning.

Mu Rong Wu Di roared out loud, "They have toxic gas inside them. Hold your breath and watch out." his face began to change colors as his gaze swept past the metal balls.

At the same time, Xuan Yuan Che also recognized this weapon and he swiftly grabbed the Imperial Guard and Liu Yue, and with a serious expression, began to retreat backwards leaving only an afterimage of his figure..

He was originally standing on a cliff on top of a mountain, yet when he retreated backwards, he immediately found himself standing on the edge...

Before he could stand firmly, the seriously wounded Imperial Guard

suddenly straightened his back and turned, hitting towards the chests of Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue. His palms were black as they were mixed with an extremely dense inner strength power and toxin martial arts.

A spy.

The three people were originally near each other, so if this attack that had the strength that could break mountains really struck the targets...

Chapter 93: Crisis, One After Another (1)

They were caught off guard as something unforeseen had arisen.

All the people around immediately turned pale with fright.

Nevertheless, what kind of person was Xuan Yuan Che? Amidst the heat of the moment, his face darkened in an instant as he switched his attack style with an incredible speed. He turned his hand into a palm and received the spy's palm attack.

Simultaneously, Liu Yue emitted a murderous aura as she swung her sword down at the spy.

A banging sound burst forth and Xuan Yuan Che could only feel a strong force rush at him. Even he couldn't stand firmly after receiving the attack and staggered backwards.

This person really had a powerful inner strength.

Yet this step backwards resulted in his feet immediately began slipping down the cliff.

Xuan Yuan Che immediately had a bad feeling within his heart. Seconds before he fell, he exerted all his strength and with his right hand and threw Liu Yue who had been in his embrace forward, while he himself fell backwards down the cliff.

At the same time, the spy that had clashed with Xuan Yuan Che vomited blood as he turned his body and attempted to run away quickly.

Unfortunately, a splash of blood accompanied his retreat, saturating the soil that had already been dyed red. The spy's muscular body was suddenly cut in two as he fell to the ground.

With one strike of her sword, Liu Yue had managed to cleave his body in half.

With an ice cold expression, Liu Yue didn't even look back at the spy that she had cut in half about the waist. She dashed towards the precipice, leaped and followed Xuan Yuan Che down without any second

thoughts.

The slim and tiny figure immediately vanished from the mountaintop.

It all happened in the blink of an eye, so quick that before Mu Rong Wu Di, Qiu Hen, and the others could even grasp the situation, everything had already ended. On the edge of the cliff, the figures of their King and Princess Consort had already disappeared.

Only a white swirl of toxic mist disappearing into the sky could be seen in the desolated area.

“King..... ” The heartbroken howls echoed above the mountain.

Liu Yue fiercely chased after Xuan Yuan Che down the cliff, diving head first as she reached out her hand to grab the falling Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che stared with bloodshot eyes at Liu Yue who had chased after him and roared loudly, “You are crazy.”

It took him effort to throw her back onto the cliff and yet she still followed him and jumped down.

“I am not crazy.” Liu Yue roared back in an even louder voice, flicking her wrist, the metal wrist band she was wearing, which didn’t look like a wrist guard or an armguard, suddenly sprang open as a thin string flew directly upwards from inside.

Xuan Yuan Che couldn’t get a clear look at the item, yet his body suddenly jerked to a stop and swayed in the middle of the sky, no longer falling downwards.

Xuan Yuan Chen’s eyes instantaneously widened and stared in extreme shock at the thing keeping him and Liu Yue suspended in the air. It was a Sky Silk.

Chapter 94: Crisis, One After Another (2)

He remembered that there was indeed such a thing in his treasury. However, he had given the key to the treasury to Liu Yue as he had decided to let Liu Yue manage it. He never knew that Sky Silk could be used this way.

Xuan Yuan Che calmly observed the thin but flexible and strong Sky Silk, gripped firmly by Liu Yue, that couldn't even be cut by a sharp sword.

A pool of warmth slowly appeared in his eyes, as Xuan Yuan Che said solemnly, "You are an idiot."

His scolding was said in a harsh tone, but it masked deeper emotions of friendship.

Liu Yue grabbed the sword with one hand and grabbed Xuan Yuan Che who was below her with the other. Just like that, she jumped down without any support, turned her head and looked at Xuan Yuan Che who was observing her with his head lifted high. She replied with an equally sombre voice, "I'm not stupid. I only know that we must seize hold of our happiness ourselves. Since it's my own happiness, I would never let it go from my grasp. Nobody is allowed to snatch it away, even if it is Death himself."

Saying this, Liu Yue tightened her hold on Xuan Yuan Che's hands. She had never experienced such a relationship in her previous life. Since she had in this life, she would definitely never let it go.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che looked determinedly at the resolute Liu Yue, her small face full of stubbornness and conviction.

He couldn't help but smile and said, "Little dumbo."

Liu Yue didn't retort back at Xuan Yuan Che this time, and only glared at him. Her glare was filled with resolution.

The two of them gazed at each other, lost in their own world.

My reflection in your eyes, and your reflection in mine.

Anyone, anything other than their existence vanished into thin air; their small world wouldn't tolerate any other existence beside themselves.

The wind blew softly, ruffling the couple's robes. The dark red and bluish green fabric fluttered gracefully in the wind.

Both of them tightened their hold on each others hands, and Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che suddenly burst out into laughter. The brightness in their eyes could rival even the sun's and the moon's lights.

Breaking off their eye contact, Liu Yue looked below Xuan Yuan Che's body.

There was still a long distance between them and the top of the cliff, and her Sky Silk wasn't going to make it.

In modern times, there were advanced tools made from alloys that would make escaping easy, but the Sky Silk that she produced with much effort was still lacking and not long enough. She wasn't satisfied.

"Give me the sword." As she was contemplating that, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly spoke out as he reached out his hands.

Liu Yue looked at the black spot on his hands. Unconsciously, her face darkened, but she didn't say anything. Her five fingers loosened their grip as Xuan Yuan Che's sword in her hands dropped towards Xuan Yuan Che.

Catching the sword with one swift movement, Xuan Yuan Che flipped the sword over. Seeing that the sword cut through the cliff as easily as cutting tofu, Xuan Yuan Che struck his sword on the cliff. At the same time, Liu Yue felt the pressure on her wrist loosen.

Chapter 95: Crisis, One After Another (3)

Raising her brows at that, Liu Yue immediately released Xuan Yuan Che and pounced towards the mountain wall. The pair of thick-soled shoes on her feet arched and a thin but extremely sharp blade immediately sprang out from each sole, piercing into the mountain walls. When Liu Yue's two legs were nailed firmly on the mountain walls, she flicked her wrist and the sky silk flew back to her speedily.

"You little thing. What other crazy things do you still have hidden?" Supporting himself with the sword, Xuan Yuan Che observed Liu Yue's movements and raised his brows as he saw this. He looked at Liu Yue, curving his mouth, as he asked.

Why was it that this Princess Consort of his, who usually seemed so normal, had all kinds of odd equipments during times of need?

"It is the means to stay alive." Liu Yue answered naturally.

Xuan Yuan Che arched his brows slightly when he heard this, but didn't ask whether she became like this because she needed to be fully armed to survive in the house of General Mu Rong. He stretched his hands towards Liu Yue at that moment and said, "Let's go."

"I will carry you." Liu Yue looked at Xuan Yuan Che and muttered.

The palm attack at the cliff must already have poisoned Xuan Yuan Che. If he was to use his inner strength, then that wouldn't be good. She would carry him, although it might be slower, but she resolved firmly that she would get both of them to the ground safely.

Xuan Yuan Che smiled slowly as he heard her. He immediately swung forward and grabbed Liu Yue's hands while whispering in her ears, "I am not that useless, so follow me."

With a rattle of his sword, Xuan Yuan Che held Liu Yue tightly as he leaped down, stepping on the jagged rocks protruding out from the mountain wall.

His dark red garment billowed like the wings of an approaching eagle.

The strong wind whipped around their faces as their black hair fluttered in the sky.

It was the first time Liu Yue felt that knowing the light body technique was not a bad idea. If she could also practice the light body technique as Xuan Yuan Che had, then it would be perfect.

With a twirl and a flutter, Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue stood firmly under the cliff.

Raising their heads and looking at the top of the mountain, they could only see tiny dots.

Liu Yue raised her brows. He was indeed much faster than her. Her heart throbbed a little as she turned over Xuan Yuan Che's hand that was holding her. His hand was thoroughly black; in fact, his whole arm had turned black.

She raised her head and looked at Xuan Yuan Che's face, noticing that his red lips had slightly darkened. This was the result of using his inner strength to counter the spy's palm attack.

"I won't die." Xuan Yuan Che chuckled when he saw Liu Yue staring at his arm.

Liu Yue shot a fierce glare at Xuan Yuan Che as she pricked his finger with her fingertips. A gush of black blood immediately started to flow out.

Chapter 96: Crisis, One After Another (4)

“Eat it.” Seeing this, Liu Yue retrieved a white pill from her waist and directly administered it to Xuan Yuan Che’s mouth.

Xuan Yuan Che cast a glance at Liu Yue who did not say anything much but had worry written all over her face. He immediately swallowed the pill given by Liu Yue without giving any thoughts to whether it was an antidote or a poison. Sitting down with legs crossed, he then flashed a smile at Liu Yue and said, “Give me an hour.”

He normally wouldn’t take this bit of poisonous wounds seriously, but he didn’t want his Liu Yue to worry.

Liu Yue remained silent when she saw this. Taking the sword from Xuan Yuan Che’s hands, she also sat on the ground, guarding beside Xuan Yuan Che as he forced the poison out.

In the midst of tall bushes, the two sat down quietly. Looking around the place, there seemed to be no others beside them, only a dense, boundless grassland could be seen.

The fresh aroma of the grasses and trees under the blue sky lingered as the immense white clouds floated by. It was a good weather.

Liu Yue sat unmoving like a statue beside Xuan Yuan Che while holding his sword. She watched quietly as the dark blood from Xuan Yuan Che’s fingertips dripped down drop by drop.

“Creak.” A soft moving sound resounded as a small green snake was pinned firmly to the ground by a sharp sword. Its body twisted a few times before stopping, lying still.

She carried the lifeless snake with the tip of the sword and threw it far away, without making a single sound.

Her movements didn’t disturb Xuan Yuan Che who was forcing the poison out.

Liu Yue went back sitting like a statue beside Xuan Yuan Che. She supported herself with her hands as she stared at Xuan Yuan Che, who

had his eyes closed in concentration.

“Woosh.” The sound of the moving gentle wind drifted across. Liu Yue who had been silent like a statue suddenly pricked up her ears tore away her gaze from Xuan Yuan Che as she turned around.

Other than the sound of the wind blowing across the grassland, there were no other sounds. It was really quiet, eerily quiet.

Her eyes squinted slightly as Liu Yue grasped the sword in her hands. A gleam of bloodlust flashed across her eyes. This was not the sound of the wind ruffling the grasses; there were people around.

Such an aura of killing intent could not possibly deceive her.

Her mouth curved slowly as a bloodthirsty grin bloomed on her face. She reminisced the time when she was ten years old, when she was already crowned the Queen of the Amazon forest. Today, this vast grassland was just like her favourite hunting ground at that time. Someone had actually dared to come to this place and played hide and seek with her.

Liu Yue arched her back silently like a cheetah and slowly disappeared into the bushes without making any sounds.

She cannot let these people get near Xuan Yuan Che. If they disturbed his process of forcing the poison out, she wouldn't be satisfied with her revenge even if they all went to hell.

Chapter 97: Crisis, One After Another (5)

Her green dress allowed her to melt into the surrounding grassland. Liu Yue squatted among the bushes as she glanced at the professional assassins approaching her slowly, one step after the other, with a cold expression. They were definitely proficient at hiding their presence.

They held swords smeared with highly potent poison. One could clearly see the black edge of the sword glittering with a faint colour of red and black. No one could tell how much poison had been used.

Looks like these people were already prepared beforehand. They were laying in wait for them.

True enough, these assassins had the ability to infiltrate the Imperial Palace's Guards strict defense and push them both down the cliff. They would definitely assign some people to lay in wait here. They had planned it well and executed their plans flawlessly.

A cold smile appeared on Liu Yue's smile as she suddenly hook her hands over an assassin's nose and mouth that had approached before her. The assassin, who was wearing a green uniform, had not even realized what was happening before the flexible sword in Liu Yue's hands sliced through his throat. He collapsed to the ground without making a single sound.

Releasing the dead man in her hands, Liu Yue turned and disappeared into the bushes.

"Woosh." The soft sound of the wind blowing was heard.

The sound of the wind suddenly died down with a flash of silver light, leaving only a slight scent of blood in the air.

"Chirp. Chirp." The cricket within the bushes was not some unusual thing.

The silver light flashed again and another assassin could only stare with widened eyes at Liu Yue who had pierced his throat with the sword. The eyes of the assassin were filled with shock.

“You didn’t conceal your presence well enough.” Mouthing these words, Liu Yue sneered at him as she pulled out the sword in her hands suddenly.

Turning around this small area, Liu Yue was like a viper silently stalking the prey. While these preys were still thinking that they were the predators, Liu Yue had already swallowed them whole.

Every time a silver flash appeared, the sword would take a life, bloodying the tall elephant grasses.

Those emerald green garment appeared and disappeared like a ghost.

Eleven. Liu Yue wiped the blood stains on the sword with the assassins’ corpses and vanished into the bushes in a flash.

The sound of the wind stopped and the chirps of the crickets were gone. Even the sound of the waving bushes disappeared. Everything seemed to have quietened, or perhaps, it had always been this quiet.

The last remaining assassin in the green uniform was frightened. No matter how many times he sent out the secret signal, the other assassins seemed to have fallen like a rock in the ocean. There was no response at all. It was as if they had all disappeared.

“Woosh. Woosh.” None. Still none.

A cold sweat ran down his back. What was going on? What had happened?

There were no murderous auras nor any single sound in the surroundings. There was absolutely nothing; and clearly, there were no other people. Then where had all his comrades disappeared to?

Chapter 98: Crisis, One After Another (6)

Was it possible that an assassin more skillful than them was hidden here?

Instantly, his hair stood on its end. Impossible. Absolutely impossible. Xuan Yuan Che of the Tian Chen Kingdom was a professional, yet he definitely wouldn't have such powerful strength. This feat would not be possible for someone who hadn't been specially trained to hide their presence completely, so who was it actually?

The wind rose and blew on the grasses.

The dense stench of blood slowly flowed with the wind.

The last remaining green-clad assassin immediately became more frightened than ever. This scent of blood, could it be... could it be...

"Chirp. Chirp." Suddenly his comrade's replies resounded beside him. The last green-clad assassin immediately became joyous and quickly turned and moved closer towards the person making the sound quietly.

In the bushes, a green-clad assassin sat with a drooping head as blood gushed out from his throat.

The green-clad assassin was immediately fearful, but before he could turn around and defend himself, a sword had already pierced through him and fresh blood trickled down from his throat.

He wanted to speak, yet no words were spoken. He wanted to scream, yet no sound came out.

The green-clad assassin widened his eyes as he turned his head slowly and saw Liu Yue sitting crossed legged beside him. Bloodstains were on her fingers and her face had a savage grin, strangely alluring yet bone-chilling.

He was unable to sense her presence even though she was right in front of him. He couldn't sense her existence, it was as if she was an invisible person. No, she was just a spirit, a spirit that did not give out a single presence of aura at all.

His throat echoed a faint squeal as his terror stricken eyes widened. Then, his body slowly fell to the ground.

They were mistaken. They had miscalculated. Xuan Yuan Che was not the hardest one to attack here, it was this little girl.

Unfortunately, this piece of intel could only be reported to the King of Hell.

Slowly wiping clean the drops of blood staining the sword onto the assassin's corpse, Liu Yue smiled coldly as she stood up and walked towards Xuan Yuan Che.

She liked assassinating in the forest the most.

Walking a few steps to where Xuan Yuan Che was, she saw that Xuan Yuan Che had already opened his eyes, looking rosy and healthy, the poison eradicated totally from his body. The bushes in front of him, however, had already been permeated by the black, poison-filled blood and withered dry.

"Why is there such a strong stench of blood?" Xuan Yuan Che asked Liu Yue who was walking towards him, as he sniffed the air and stood up from the ground.

"Just a few cockroaches." Liu Yue spoke calmly.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che raised his brows. Just a few cockroaches. This Liu Yue had actually dared to say as such.

"Was this location also unclean?" Xuan Yuan Che smoothed his brows with his fingertips and muttered.

Chapter 99: Crisis, One After Another (7)

“They were able to infiltrate the Imperial Guards and hid their identity. If they do not kill you now, then they would have let the people behind this assassination down.” Liu Yue said as she stretched her hands and threw the sword in her hands to Xuan Yuan Che.

She didn’t really like using swords. Compared to swords, she liked to use daggers more.

Attacking in the guise of an Imperial Guard meant that some high ranking people of the Tian Chen Kingdom were involved in this conspiracy. If Xuan Yuan Che had managed to return alive, then what other power could they wield?

“Are you scared?” Xuan Yuan Che asked with a devilish smile, holding his sword in one hand and reaching out to caress Liu Yue’s hair with the other.

“What did you say?” Liu Yue tipped her head to one side and crossed her arms over her chest as she answered coldly.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che’s mouth quirked up at one corner. Pulling Liu Yue’s hands, he raised his head and responded, “Alright, then let’s go.”

“Go.” Liu Yue said as she grasped Xuan Yuan Che’s hand. If it was him beside her, then she would venture forth even if there was a mountain of swords or a sea of flames before her. There was no place off-limits for her.

The wind blew, ruffling through the grasses and the clouds that decorated the clear blue sky.

Yet, even under the bright sunlight, the surrounding was gloomy and cold.

Stepping firmly on the edge of the mountain, Liu Yue bent down and scanned through the dense forest ahead, furrowing her brows slightly.

“Is there no other way? ”

“None.”

One asked directly and the other answered directly.

The mountain and dense forest before them had traps set up throughout the area. There were traps that were extremely clever and elusive. However, for the experienced Liu Yue, the traps were full of flaws, so many that she could discern the exact amount of traps and ambushes present in this dense forest with one glance.

The only problem was the sheer number of them. The entire forest had been mined with traps all over the perimeter and within, layered one over the other. If any of the traps were triggered, it would set off a chain-reaction. There was no way to dismantle the traps one by one.

Yet, they did not have that much time. This forest was too thick and it was really easy for forest fires to happen in early summer. If that were to happen, then they would not be able to escape even if they had wings.

“Should we rush through?” Liu Yue turned her head as she raised her brows, quickly pulling on her silver gloves .

“Rush through.” Xuan Yuan Che arched his brows frigidly as he picked Liu Yue up from the ground. His feet tapped continually and speedily towards the dense forest before their eyes.

Forcing their way through did not require any skills, they only required speed and strength.

Therefore, Liu Yue also did not object to Xuan Yuan Che carrying her. Instead, she twisted her body and climbed onto Xuan Yuan Che’s back.

Flying speedily and freely, Xuan Yuan Che leapt forth through the dense forest.

“Click.” Xuan Yuan Che’s eyes flashed cold as he tripped over something soft, triggering a trap. At this moment, four bamboo screens suddenly entrapped them on all four sides. There were also bamboo staves with sharpened tips, which had been concealed behind a big tree, swinging down towards them. The long bamboo staves were almost 11 feet long.

Chapter 100: Crisis, One After Another (8)

“Above us..... ”

Xuan Yuan Che didn't require Liu Yue's warning. Whistling, he tapped the ground once using his feet and rushed upwards like a huge bird and started to leap towards the enormous tree above his head.

His feet had only escaped by hair's breadth before the four bamboo screens slammed and smashed together to form a cage. In the same moment, the sharp bamboo staves savagely intersected across the whole cage. Had they been a second later, a bloody pulp would be all that remained of Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che flew high to a treetop. However, before he even managed to leap forward, the enormous tree rustled and trembled.

Silently, directly above the two person, a huge net of sharp spikes emerged out of nowhere and enveloped them completely. Those spikes glittered with a cold gleam under the bright sunlight, emitting a silver light full of gloom and doom. With the sound of strong wind swooshing down, the cold gleam of spike came down fiercely.

Seeing this, an icy glint appeared in the eyes of Liu Yue who was carried by Xuan Yuan Che on his back as she grabbed the approaching sharp spiky net with her hands.

The huge sharp spiky net that swooped down towards them glinted silver in the sun. If she was not mistaken, this net should be made of silver silk. Normal tools would not be able to cut this net open, but this would not be effective against her.

Her hand that was wearing the silver gloves met the approaching net with a bang. Liu Yue's five fingers tightened and as she tugged on the huge net abounded with sharp spikes. It hung in midair for a while before falling to the ground. The sharp, incisive huge net was immediately captured in Liu Yue's hands.

Her five fingers that was wearing the silver gloves rapidly flashed

across the net and the knives and sword on the net were swiftly snapped and tossed down. In the blink of an eye, the huge, sharp and spiky net was reduced to a pile of silver silk: the size of a fist.

Liu Yue stuffed it into her clothes, thinking that this was definitely a good item.

And below her, Xuan Yuan Che's footsteps didn't falter even a little bit. Only a bloodthirsty grin was seen across his face.

They glided to the ground; but the normal looking ground suddenly sank down. Xuan Yuan Che uttered a low "Not good"; the ground was completely unable to endure his weight, so he had no place to balance his weight.

This place was really just one trap after trap, layer after layer.

"It's empty." Feeling themselves unexpectedly falling, Liu Yue immediately understood their situation and flicked her wrist. Her sky silk quickly shot out and clutched at the big tree nearby.

Liu Yue leaped and immediately shared her momentum with Xuan Yuan Che who could not exert his own strength at that time. Together, they flew diagonally towards the side.

And at the moment the two left the ground, the loosened soil collapsed entirely, revealing the tall thorns and sharp spikes underneath.

The spikes underneath glittered like ice; there were the same black-coloured poison applied on the spikes like the one that was applied on the swords of the assassins in the green uniforms. Everything was smeared with highly poisonous toxin. If they had really fallen inside, don't even mention being skewered, even a small scratch would send them to their deaths. Not even Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue could counter against that. These traps were really set up to counter them.

They did not even manage to take a breath as the big tree that was grasped by the sky silk suddenly made a burst of snapping sounds.

Chapter 101: Turbulent Times (1)

When Liu Yue heard this noise, she immediately grabbed the Sky Silk and swept away with a swirl. The two figures flashed past as an endless amounts of fine needles that shot out from within the surrounding trees.

The black and poisonous needles were as thin as strands of hair and as numerous as a drizzling rain. If Liu Ye and Xuan Yuan Che had been late for even a single second, they would inevitably be turned into hedgehogs and poisoned beyond recovery.

The two figures bounced up and down within the dense forest, quickly and efficiently running away.

“This is not bad, however, the design is nothing special.” Liu Yue sneered as she dashed across the forest.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che who was right next to her and could not help but shoot her a glare. She actually had the nerve to criticize these traps and hidden weapons. In addition, these traps were so ingeniously designed and interconnected that even he himself had to handle them cautiously, yet this brat spoke in such a ridiculous manner.

Liu Yue saw that Xuan Yuan Che was glaring at her and couldn't help but grin and replied, “I will set up some traps for you someday. Only then will understand what is truly powerful.”

The hidden traps and weapons were brilliant not because they were numerous but rather because they were hidden ambushes and were capable of killing in one strike. Although there were so many layers of interconnected traps that would set off at almost the same time, as long as one avoided the first trap, the second one would not pose as much risk. One would only need to spend a little more effort for these traps.

Yet these people did not understand this principle.

Hearing Liu Yue's words, Xuan Yuan Che couldn't help but to arch his brow and responded, “Alright. I would like to see how powerful you are.”

The two bantered back and forth leisurely as they advanced forward,

giving no indication that they were engaged in a struggle of life and death.

Although the dense forest was not small, it was also not too large. As Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che continued crossing the forest, they finally managed to barge out of the dense forest abounded with traps.

Standing firmly after coming to a stop, Liu Yue scrutinized the impregnable and vast combat formation before her eyes.

There were thousands of soldiers dressed in green uniforms wielding cold and apathetic blades. The afternoon sun radiated down on them, although the weather should be warm and sunny, this area was icy cold and filled with killing intent.

On the area five feet in front, a dense and impenetrable army of soldiers in green uniform was arranged in a rectangular alignment. Just a glance was enough to determine that they were in the hundreds and thousands. Furthermore, they had blocked of every single way out.

Their blades glinted under the frigid sunlight.

Liu Yue squinted her eyes slightly. She was very sure that these men were soldiers. The auras of soldiers were entirely different from assassins. Assassins did not have the sense of collective honor and teamwork, but soldiers do. The fights of soldiers in battlefields were completely different from the strikes of assassins.

Chapter 102: Turbulent Times (2)

With her finger curved like a hook, a short sword with a cold glint was held in her hand. The corner of Liu Yue's mouth curved up as she said to Xuan Yuan Che, "They have called out the army; your opponent did not underestimate you."

"I guess I should feel honored." Xuan Yuan Che responded Liu Yue and clasped the soft sword in his hands.

The grandeur of the army showed that these soldiers were definitely some kingdom's imperial cavalries, or first-rate army. The people behind this assassination even sent these men to kill Xuan Yuan Che. It looks like the Left Minister had obtained something good when he invited the wolf into the house.

The sounds of the metal hooves, the swishes of the soldier's swords and the organized footsteps reverberated in resounded from the forest.

The gleam of the swords were icy cold as the murderous auras scattered.

With no words uttered and no gestures signaled, Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che moved at the same time. Liu Yue was positioned ahead and Xuan Yuan Che at the back, as they pounced towards the bloody cavalries like two fierce tigers.

As the numerous sharp knives were brandished, the tiger had entered into the pack of wolves.

Holding the short sword in her hand, Liu Yue walked in lead. Glints of knives flashed before her eyes and were coming directly toward her face.

The gleam of the sword was unseen as the short sword was almost invisible. Only very few droplets of blood that were light in color spattered rapidly on the ground like fingernail-sized flowers blooming in the meadow.

With the raise of a hand and the fall of sword, there were no defense but only attack as it was said that the best defense is attack. At this

moment, Liu Yue had exploited this principle to the fullest.

When the cold knife of the enemy still hung in the mid-air, her sword had already stabbed the person's chest. As the knife of the soldier was still aiming towards her head, she had already stood before the enemy and bloomed a tiny flower of blood for that throat.

Liu Yue's movements were not fast, but really incisive. It was an indescribable acuteness. Once her sword was out, the opponent would be dead in one strike. If she was to attack, the metallic bloody long knives of the opponent would never be faced as she would only encounter their fatal parts.

Liu Yue entirely ignored her own safety as if the long knives cutting closer was unseen.

Only when the knives were about to injure her vital parts, the hand wearing the silver silk glove would catch the knife as fast as lightning, and clasp the icy cold knife. At the same time, killing the enemy in one strike.

During the rest of the time, she would allow the wavering flashes of the knives and the splatters of her own blood. Yet, Liu Yue entirely ignored everything like the blood did not belong to her and as if it wasn't her getting hurt. That kind of frigid apathy left the people dumbfounded.

Obtaining the biggest benefits through the smallest expense and the mildest injuries.

She moved forward with tremendous velocity. Once she had went a step forward, she would never retreat backwards. Among the millions and thousands flashes of swords, there would only be advancing and proceeding.

Chapter 103: Turbulent Times (3)

Xuan Yuan Che who was following right behind Liu Yue had a fighting style different from Liu Yue's silent fighting technique. Only the flash of his sword could be seen, the blade's flash was like a silver dragon spiralling around the cold light of the blade. Only the after-image of the blade was seen.

Blood spattered about as the silver dragon danced. It was as if a torrential rain of blood suddenly filled the skies.

Parrying away the longsword that was swinging towards Liu Yue's back, Xuan Yuan Che immediately flicked his hand and sent the assailant straight to hell below. The silver light reflected off the blade shrouded the two as he eradicated any dangers lurking on Liu Yue's back.

Liu Yue had chosen to stand in front of Xuan Yuan Che because she trusted her back with him. Having her put so much trust in him, what else could Xuan Yuan Che say? He could only make it his priority to protect the woman he loved from any harms or injuries.

Liu Yue's sharp and ruthless measures opened a pathway for them, while Xuan Yuan Che's sword attacked in all directions, getting rid of the remaining enemies before following Liu Yue along.

Both of them worked together flawlessly.

Under the blue curtain of the sky, only a scene of bloodbath could be seen in this area.

There wasn't any screaming, not even a single squeak. There was only killing, desperate killing everywhere.

When Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che advanced one step forward, every cavalry that was bypassed immediately collapsed as their bodies tumbled backwards without a sound. The army had encircled Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che, leaving not a single path open. If they wanted to break through the encirclement, they would have to kill every single person there. Otherwise, they can forget about escaping from this place.

This was the difference between the Imperial Guards and the assassins. This was the teamwork that only exists in an army.

Liu Yue who had gone in first, advanced forward with a rapid pace, pouncing non-stop on her succeeding target. As she defeated one soldier, another one charged forward; when she defeated two soldiers, another two charged forward. The number of incoming soldiers seemed endless.

Her pretty brows knit together. Liu Yue had understood from the start that it was better to avoid provoking an army. However strong one's skills were, there would be a limit to it. Facing thousands or even ten thousands of soldiers alone would only result in exhaustion sooner or later.

Regardless of how strong she and Xuan Yuan Che was, they could not face off against over a thousand cavalries that were not much weaker than them alone. The cavalries had used an attack technique that relied on teamwork. Such great display of teamwork couldn't be calculated by a simple one enemy plus one enemy equals two enemies. Instead, their combined strength definitely exceeded that of two combined.

At this moment, their only chance to open a pathway was to kill as fast as possible and tear a hole in this strict impregnable defense around the forest. Otherwise, they would die here today.

Liu Yue's attack became even more ruthless. She didn't care about the attacks on her left, right and back, leaving them all to Xuan Yuan Che. Liu Yue only cared about moving forward, she only cared about the opponent in front of her.

Even when a sharp blade pierced her shoulders, she did not even look at her wound, leaving blood flowing out from the injury. Her eyes were only focused on her front, they were only focused on attacking to kill.

As long as she's not dead, any wound was not a serious wound to her.

Chapter 104: Turbulent Times (4)

Liu Yue moved at an increasingly faster pace as her black hair fluttered amidst the ferocious, murderous ambience. Like a trenchant arrow, she darted towards the massive siege in front of her. Cutting and slashing recklessly with the determination to rend everything.

This was suicidal recklessness.

The color of the blood was hideous and this battle seemed to be the only thing left in the world.

Only the sound of weapons clashing with each other was heard.

On top of a lofty mountain at a distance, Du Gu Ye dressed in white stared coldly at the battle happening below. As his white robes swayed with the mountain breeze , he appeared free and pure.

“That’s amazing, Xue Sheng Kingdom’s strongest defensive formation is about to be ripped apart.” beside him, a sturdy man looked below and said in a deep voice.

They could see clearly from this angle. The bright blue shadow moved at a crazy fast speed, and was about to destroy the first wave of royal knights that Xue Sheng kingdom was so proud of.

Du Gu Ye looked coldly at the blurry bright blue shadow blended in with the color of vegetation. But he could clearly see that this tiny figure released a chill that no ordinary person could withstand . If she grew older,there would hardly be anyone who could stop her.

“Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Che’s Dragon Riders have arrived.” added the sturdy man in his deep voice, looking behind him.

Behind him, the Dragon Riders led by Qiu Hen was approaching at lightning pace . They had obviously overcome the Left Minister’s obstacle. If they allowed Xuan Yuan Che’s men to get any closer to them, it would be impossible to conduct Xuan Yuan Che to his death.

Du Gu Ye looked solemnly at the blue shadow below. No sound came out of his mouth.

The sturdy man looked at the Crown Prince, his eyebrows knotted slightly, and said, "Your highness, she will become an obstacle for us."

Du Gu Ye heard him as an unfathomable expression flashed across his face.

Yes, she was Xuan Yuan Che's comrade. That would make her his enemy. A powerful opponent like this, would sooner or later become his biggest adversary .

However, he wanted to keep this opponent. A little part of him did not want to hurt her.

Du Gu Ye sighed and coldly waved his hand. Attending the King's birthday banquet was merely a pretence, the real reason he came was to kill Xuan Yuan Che, King Yi of the Tian Zhen kingdom; an opponent that would threaten Ao Yun Kingdom.

Now, since someone has launched the attack before him, he would lend a hand and aid the ongoing attack.

Immediately, a string of commands were hastily passed down.

Chapter 105: Turbulent Times (5)

TL Notes:

For people asking about the differences between pic and novels: In the novel, Du Gu Ye's clothes were white, but the manhua artist drew it black. Similarly, Xuan Yuan Che was supposed to wear a dark red robe while Liu Yue an emerald green robe, but the manhua artist drew it differently. The novel wrote that the enemies were cavalries but the manhua artist drew them as foot soldiers. There are subtle differences between the manhua and the novel, but if I excluded all the pictures that did not match the description of the novel, there wouldn't be any pictures left. So just take it easy if you see any differences between the description and the pictures, it's not translated wrongly.

*

"Boom." One-foot-tall fire suddenly flared up across the mountain. This sudden, yet powerful flame, roared in the heavily forested mountain and spread quickly like a wildfire towards Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Che and company, who were in the battle arena below.

White robes swayed in rhythm with the wind on the mountain top. Du Gu Ye stared coldly at the roaring flames below. His attacks won't be weak like Xue Sheng kingdom's; his attacks would be fast and fatal.

The sound of galloping horses resounded behind; Xuan Yuan Che's Dragon Riders were about to reach them.

The white figure took one last look at that light blue fabric that was about to be completely encircled by the wildfire, and turned away coldly, disappearing into the mountains.

The flames, filling the sky, spread out in an instant.

In the battle arena below, Xuan Yuan Che's face changed as he noticed the sudden raging fire headed towards them.

"Fire!" Xuan Yuan Che yelled, his face green with anxiety.

Surrounded by flaming grasslands, the wildfire had cut off any chance

of retreat .

“Don’t look back.” A cold, yet firm, voice boomed. Up front, Liu Yue didn’t turn back to look, instead she quickened her footsteps.

Liu Yue didn’t even look at the fire that was fast approaching, she only focused on what was in front of her. In order to avoid these flames, they needed to first break out of this formation. Worrying or talking about anything else would be futile.

Xuan Yuan Che didn’t say anything else, he understood immediately. Waving his sword around like lightning and thunder, he gave off a powerful and menacing aura.

As the wounds in their bodies increased, so were the number of men falling at their hands. The pace of their fight increased, weakening the defenses of the men blocking their escape in front of them.

As the sky gradually grew darker, the red flames of the sun could be seen reflecting off Liu Yue’s body, painting her in the colour of blood.

The fire was growing bigger and bigger.

The mountain wind fanned the approaching flames, and the blazing fire became unstoppable, approaching the two ferociously.

The scorching flame that was capable of burning everything it touched to ash, was already so close that they could be seen reflecting off of Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Che and the others.

“Let’s go!” Liu Yue yelled as she slashed apart her last opponent. She dashed towards the opening in the incomplete circle of defense.

Behind him, Xuan Yuan Che followed closely. Using his sword, he blocked his enemies’ attacks, grabbed Liu Yue, and sped out like an arrow towards through the opening.

Once they had ripped apart the surrounding defensive formation, stopping them became nigh impossible.

Chapter 106: Turbulent Times (6)

In the blink of an eye, the figures vanished into the forest ahead.

Only a couple of blurs could be seen as two figures vanished into the forest ahead.

They left a pile of corpses on the floor in their wake, along with numerous wounded riders.

Under the golden sunrays, the fiery red colour of the flames looked concentrated and intense. It looked even brighter than the sunlight.

This place was covered with knee-high grasses. Once a flame is lit, even a small spark of fire, aided by the wind, could burn across the prairie at an unimaginable speed. The lush mountain grass was obviously a fodder for the fire.

Ignoring the injuries all over his body, Xuan Yuan Che grabbed Liu Yue and dashed away at lightning pace.

“There is a creek up front, seven miles or so.” Xuan Yuan Che said. He threw Liu Yue across his back, gathered up his inner strength and sped away.

Liu Yue wrapped her knees tightly around Xuan Yuan Che's waist. She held on to him, tightly.

No matter how fast Liu Yue was, her speed could never surpass Xuan Yuan Che's. Plus, she wasn't familiar with the terrain here, so she simply held on to Xuan Yuan Che in silence.

“I'd like to see who's faster in the end.” Along with the wind, a moody, yet arrogant cold voice was heard.

As night dawned, the daylight behind Xuan Yuan Che diminished into a thin line in the horizon. At the same time, Xuan Yuan Che's strength emerged completely. His speed was as fast as a racing steed. There was no slowing down.

The night sky was painted with a red horizon, as if this entire bottom

half of the sky was burning up.

With the wind blowing from the mountains, even a little spark could turn into a wildfire, let alone a fire created from a huge ball of fire.

The huge balls of fire rolled, approaching closer and spreading wider. Waves of flames were coming in from all directions. The small flames, with the help of the wind, instantaneously turned into roaring flames that only grew stronger and wilder .

The fire chased Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue.

Their sweat had been vaporised by the heat and Liu Yue could almost make out the smell of burnt hair. This fire had spread too fast.

At the same time, Qiu Hen and company, who had been delayed by the Left Minister's scheme, had just rushed up the mountain. When they saw the big fire below them, their hearts stopped.

Looking at the scene before them, there was barely any green left in the mountain. What was left were the flirtatious sparks, running and jumping, buzzing without any control.

Seeing this, Qiu Hen knees went soft. He fell from his horse and kneeled firmly on the ground.

"I came too late, too late..." The strong and determined man's face turned lifeless.

He cleared out the assassins on the cliff and gathered the Dragon Riders. Without waiting for Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi's command, he whipped his horse and sped towards the fiery scene.

Chapter 107: Turbulent Times (7)

Qiu Hen wanted to be the first to descend to the foot of the mountain. If Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue were alive, Qiu Hen wanted to see them in person; if they were dead, he wanted to see their corpses.

Yet, at this moment, the entire mountain and horizon was engulfed in flames. How could anyone survive in such a heavy fire? Did his King, and his Princess Consort...

Xuan Yuan Che took a deep breath and sprinted rapidly.

This was a race with the flames in the mountain, and a competition with the wind in speed.

“Three hundred meters.” Casting a glance back, Liu Yue told Xuan Yuan Che the precise distance between them and the huge flames.

The distance given by Liu Yue was accurate, but Xuan Yuan Che could not understand this unit of measure.

(TLN: Ancient Chinese uses li as measure of units)

The fiery red flame behind them was accompanied by the crackling sound of the burning air. The rolling bank of smoke billowed closer as the scorching heat gave people a burning and searing feeling. Behind their backs, the raging flames drew closer.

“Trickle, trickle.” Amid the blaze, the sounds of the flowing streams resonated faintly. It sounded pleasing and extremely sweet.

Racing like an arrow, Xuan Yuan Che used almost all of his strength.

“Hundred meters, fifty meters, thirty meters..... ” With eyes reflecting the redness that filled the sky, Liu Yue was inhumanly calm at this moment as she measured the distance.

“Hold your breath.” With a roar, Xuan Yuan Che flew up and pounced towards the stream up front.

At the same time, the huge blaze behind them engulfed the area that the two had been standing before and crackled loudly as it passed.

Only a sea of fire could be seen through the horizon.

The fire continued burning for three days and three nights.

The outskirts of Tian Chen Kingdom glowed an orange-red color as the fiery red flame brightened the sky at night.

The fire raged on for three days and three nights in all three mountains.

Finally, a summer rain extinguished the endless fire.

The huge blaze destroyed the imperial hunting grounds of Tian Chen Kingdom. This news shocked the capital of Tian Chen Kingdom.

However, there was even a more shocking news. King Yi and his Princess Consort had died in the fire.

All the citizens of the Tian Chen Kingdom were stunned. Did their King Yi and his Princess Consort really die in the fire? Did they really die on the second day after the Emperor's birthday?

This was unbelievable for the citizens. Was the pillar of their Tian Chen Kingdom really gone?

Yet, the people had no choice but to believe this news.

When the fire had died out, every single Imperial Guards and Dragon Riders were dispatched into the charred mountain.

Chapter 108: Turbulent Times (8)

Even the Green Standard Army and Capital Garrison who were stationed fifty miles out, headed out all at once. They started a detailed search in these mountains that had been barred by the fire.

However, there was nobody; nobody to be found. With a fire that big, how could they expect to find any survivors?

In the Imperial Court, King Yi, Xuan Yuan Che was still absent. The court had been out of session for three days by the decree of the Emperor. Without the Emperor, the court officials buzzed around anxiously, without a clue.

Did King Yi really die?

While the terrible news buzzed about, some people started to take action.

Left Minister used the fact that the Dragon Rider Guards cannot go one day without a leader, and requested that the Crown Prince take command. The same rule applied to the three hundred thousand men and horses under King Yi. In the absence of a king, the Left Minister had asked the Emperor to take back the Tiger Ensign and personally take control of the army.

(TLN: Ancient China used a Tiger Ensign as a proof of authority to command their National Army)

Otherwise, what would happen if the three hundred thousand men and horses that had fought along Xuan Yuan Che was thrown into turmoil?

Meanwhile, a request to confer a posthumous title for King Yi Xuan Yuan Che as 'The Loyal Kingdom Protector King' was made to the Emperor. The request also included a proposal for King Yi to be promoted to Tian Chen Kingdom's first-ranked king. Furthermore, a cenotaph and an Imperial Family burial site was also to be built in his honor.

After much consideration, Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi approved it.

Without wasting a second, Left Minister instantly began working on

passing Xuan Yuan Che's troops to the crowned prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng.

As the Left Minister had taken action, so did the Right Minister and General Mu Rong's faction.

How could three hundred thousand soldiers and Tian Chen's best elite guards, the Dragon Riders, all fall into the hands of the Left Minister? If the Left Minister took control of this power, how could they continue to live?

A blanket of thick smoke began to spread through Tian Chen kingdom. In the darkness before dawn, all forces began to bare their fangs.

It was also at this very moment, the cold crowned prince of Ao Yun, Du Gu Ye, requested to head back to Ao Yun.

Xuan Yuan Yi could not be happier to send off the respectable man. When Du Gu Ye requested to leave, Xuan Yuan Yi immediately approved. If Ao Yun kingdom were to participate in Tian Chen's chaotic civil situation, Tian Chen Kingdom would be in an even more dangerous position.

A raging storm was approaching.

Tian Chen Palace - West Palace

"Sister, why do you look so lifeless?" Empress Liu smiled brightly as she asked Imperial Consort Chen, who looked inconsolable with sadness and heartache.

Imperial Consort Chen looked coldly at Empress Liu, smiled stoically, "Put away that disgusting face of yours." she said rudely to the Empress.

The Empress wasn't angered, but instead kept her bright smile at Imperial Consort Chen. Glaring at her, she gloated, enunciating each and every word, "Sister, you have lost this fight. Haha! Servants, send the Imperial Consort off."

Chapter 109: Turbulent Times (9)

As soon as her sentence dropped, four eunuchs immediately emerged. They approached the two women and then surrounded Imperial Consort Chen. The eunuch leader held a cup of wine in his hand.

Imperial Consort Chen glanced at the poisonous wine. A common method of death conferment in the palace.

“Please be on your way now, your highness!” That pitched, sharp voice sounded even creepier at this moment.

Imperial Consort Chen looked at the situation and let out a sudden laugh. This crisp laughter was filled with an indescribable hostility. Her eyes expressed insanity.

She wiped away the tears on her face and looked sharply at Empress Liu, who was smiling victoriously. “Who do you think you are? What right do you have to kill me?” She asked coldly.

Empress Liu looked at the Imperial Consort, who had laughed out an insane laugh. The Empress let out a cold laugh in return. “Imperial Consort Chen loved her son very, very much. She couldn’t accept the death of her son, the Third Prince, and therefore, killed herself with poison. How could you say that I killed you?” Empress Liu’s cold laugh turned into a victorious laughter.

Imperial Consort Chen looked sinisterly at the Empress who was laughing victoriously. “This is not the end, the winner hasn’t been decided.”

Hearing this, Empress Liu raised her eyebrow and mocked, “You don’t even have a son anymore, how could you fight against me? I think...”

“Empress Liu, I believe that the Crown Prince will not live to see the next morning.” Cutting off the Empress’ sentence with power and dignity, Tian Chen Kingdom’s best General, Mu Rong Wu Di, marched into the room. The rest of Mu Rong Clan’s descendants marched behind the General, wielding sharp weapons in their hands.

The Empress' face changed instantly. She pointed at Mu Rong Wu Di, "Mu Rong Wu Di, you dare to revolt!?"

"No, my loyalty to Tian Chen is absolute. I am only here to arrest the culprit behind the Prince's death." As soon as Mu Rong Wu Di's words ended, Mu Rong Yi and Mu Rong Chen who was standing behind him walked towards the Empress, tightening their grip on their weapons.

Empress Liu's face turned green with fear. "What evidence do you have? Mu Rong Wu Di, how dare you hold me hostage. Guards! Take them down!"

Nobody moved. There was no sound, there was nothing at all. There was only silence.

Outside the window, the moon shone brightly on an otherwise dark night. A bright and clear ray of moonlight fell on the floor.

Except for the four eunuchs who were cowering and shaking with fear, there was no other sound to be heard.

Chapter 110: Turbulent Times (10)

“You guys... You guys...” Empress Liu’s face got even darker and darker. Looking at the unmoving servants and guards around her, she understood that Mu Rong Wu Di had claimed control of the palace.

Damn. Her father had taken Xuan Yuan Cheng out of the palace to take control of the troops. Right now, the people by her side were no match for Mu Rong Wu Di and his men.

“I don’t need any evidence; he just deserves to die.” Mu Rong Wu Di looked calmly and patiently at the Empress, whose face had turned as pale as snow.

Hearing that, Empress Liu could only lift her finger and pointed at Mu Rong Wu Di, her body trembling all over. She didn’t know what else to say.

Imperial Consort Chen, who had remained silent ever since Mu Rong Wu Di came in, stood up slowly and asked, “What of the Left Minister?”

Even though she was asking the General, she directed fixed her menacing glare on Empress Liu.

“Naturally, according to the law, since the Left Minister and Xuan Yuan Cheng had colluded with Xue Sheng Kingdom and plotted to kill King Yi, such a crime is punishable by death.” Mu Rong Wu Di replied in a sombre tone.

A cold smile slipped from the corner of the Imperial Consort’s lips. She looked at Empress Liu, who had a blank expression on her face, ruthlessly. Imperial Consort Chen gritted through her teeth, “You took my son away from me and I shall return the favor. Your son shall not live past today, you bitch; don’t think that the Liu Clan is the only powerful clan in Tian Chen Kingdom.”

With this, Imperial Consort Chen flung her robe and left the palace.

The cold wind blew.

“No, no.....” Empress Liu screamed and sprinted insanely towards the

door. But she was stopped by Mu Rong Wu Di and his men before she could make it.

A crazy scream resounded throughout the palace, echoing back and forth in what seemed to be a peaceful night.

Deep in the night, Tian Chen Palace was still brightly lit.

“What is so important that Right Minister had to see me this late into the night?” Xuan Yuan Yi sat on his throne. Massaging his tired eyes, he looked at the Right Minister.

Right Minister did not have the refined, scholarly face of a court official; instead he held the sharp features of a fighter.

Right Minister bowed and knelt on the floor. He raised the report in his hand, and said, “Your humble Subject has just received confidential information that the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng, with the help of the Emperor of Xue Sheng Kingdom, conspired the murder against Tian Chen’s third prince King Yi Xuan Yuan Che. Your Majesty, please bestow a fair judgement.”

Shocked, Xuan Yuan Yi sat up straight. The eunuch next to him took the report from Right Minister and passed it to the Emperor.

Xuan Yuan Yi flipped through the report in his hand. With a slightly pale face, he stuttered, “Right Minister, this evidence is not...”

“Your majesty, the Crown Prince had conspired and had colluded together with Xue Sheng kingdom. The evidence is absolute.” Right Minister cut off Xuan Yuan Yi’s words in an extremely cold tone; he then bowed and stood up.

Chapter 111: Turbulent Times (11)

Such an attitude, it was practically the ultimate insult to the royal family.

Xuan Yuan Yi frowned hard. His hands, that was clutching the report tightly, trembled faintly.

The Right Minister coldly waved his hands, and the Head Eunuch standing beside Xuan Yuan Yi immediately retreated out the door in silence, leaving the Right Minister and Xuan Yuan Yi alone in the enormous Tian Chen Palace.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Yi didn't make a sound. Everyone on his side had already been controlled.

"Right Minister, I only have one left..." Xuan Yuan Yi looked at the right Minister and didn't finish his words, but his meaning was extremely clear.

Amongst his sons, Xuan Yuan Che was the most brilliant and promising, followed by the usually quiet and reserved Xuan Yuan Cheng. If both of his sons were destroyed today, then his Tian Chen Kingdom...

"The Eighth Prince, Tenth Prince and Thirteenth Prince are also talented individuals. Your Majesty, please abolish Xuan Yuan Cheng's status of the Crown Prince as his punishment for conspiring to assassinate the Third Prince. Then, please select one of the three princes as Crown Prince as replacement. I will do my utmost to serve and support whichever Prince that was selected; the same goes for Imperial Consort Chen."

Taking one firm step forward, the Right Minister wore a resolute expression, an expression showing that he would definitely not relent even an inch.

Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng must be killed today.

The Eighth Prince was thirteen, the Tenth was seven and the Thirteenth was still a one-year-old toddler. These three people.....Xuan Yuan Yi's face darkened.

“Your majesty, please forgive your rude servant. Having experienced many years of problems in the court, I believe that Your Majesty would also understand that there’s a need for competition between the left and the right faction in court. Only then would you be able to rest easy at night. If one of the factions were to collapse by any chance, Your Majesty, your worry-free days would be over.”

The Right Minister said menacingly.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Yi didn’t have to think to understand. This was also the reason why he was so jittery and uneasy these few days.

The Tian Chen Imperial Court was divided into two factions that rivaled each other, the Left and the Right factions. The two Great Generals were also divided, one supported the Left Minister while the other backed the Right Minister. Only when both sides compete and kept the other in check, would Tian Chen Imperial Court be able to maintain peace and harmony.

When Xuan Yuan Che and his subordinates collapsed today, the Left Minister had seized power. If he allowed the power that the Left Minister and the Crown Prince to increase, even he, the Emperor, would face an imminent danger.

There was no need for others to say anything; he also understood this point very clearly. However, Xuan Yuan Cheng was still his own flesh and blood.

Raising up his head and looking deeply at the threatening Right Minister, A cool breeze blew through an open window into the palace. It was obviously early summer, but the breeze was so cold that it froze one’s heart.

Today, the Left Minister had gained control of the Tian Chen army and the Right Minister was forcing the Crown Prince to abdicate. He faced such a predicament right after the death of Xuan Yuan Che. If he made a single mistake and caused an internal unrest, Tian Chen Kingdom would be in grave danger.

“Edict Granted.” Raising his head slowly, Xuan Yuan Yi closed his eyes

as he choked out those two words through his gritted teeth.

Chapter 112: Turbulent Times (12)

“Your servant complies with your wishes.” The Right Minister immediately bowed and moved forward. Taking a brush with his hands, he immediately wrote the Abdication Imperial Edict.

The bright color of the Imperial Jade Seal on the edict looked like chaos in one’s eyes.

A fast horse darted like the wind as it went straight out of the Palace Gates. The yellow bell sounded as night fell on the Palace.

When the Abdication Imperial Edict was announced, Xuan Yuan Cheng would be put in an extremely difficult situation. If he refused the edict, he would be regarded as disobeying the Emperor, and would be punished by death. If he accepted it, on the other hand, he would become a commoner, and to kill a commoner who was once a corrupted Subject would be extremely easy.

Without being sure of the outcome, one must not try to push their limits. Otherwise, everything could be destroyed immediately, and both sides would not benefit from that.

At night, the silence intensifies, bringing forth a gloomy atmosphere.

And at this time, outside the capital, the Left Minister was still with the Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng and the second general in command, General Fei. Clutching the Imperial Edict in his hands, they rushed towards Xuan Yuan Che’s three hundred thousand troops garrison day and night. Once they had the three hundred thousand troops in their hands, they would even be capable of revolting against the Tian Chen Kingdom.

Stars blinked across the skies, as both sides of the factions were in turmoil and distress.

And at this time, in an isolated area outside town, two figures were slowly walking towards the Capital.

“Are you tired?” Pulling Liu Yue’s hands, Xuan Yuan Che asked gently.

“No, I’m not. What does this even count?” Liu Yue tilted her head to one side and laughed as she gazed at Xuan Yuan Che. Her small face were half black and half rosy. The make-up on her face had actually been washed away by the river water previously, but the smoke and soot from the aftermath of the fire had stuck on her face instead. Her face was half ugly and half beautiful.

“You should be worried about yourself. Can you cope with the wound on your chest?”

“I won’t die from this. How about you?” Xuan Yuan Che grinned lightly, his devilish face wasn’t looking better either, it had become half green and half purple. He then raised his hands and touched the wounds on Liu Yue’s body.

The wounds had already become scars, and the scars looked savage and were great in numbers. But they were all superficial wounds, and Liu Yue didn’t even care about them at all.

“It’s a small thing.” Liu Yue shrugged her shoulders, her tone bossy like always.

Both of them looked at each other and burst out into laughter at the same time.

As long as they were not dead, there was no problem too big for them to handle. As long as they were alive, everything will be alright.

“Then let’s go. How chaotic do you think the Capital had become during these three days?” Xuan Yuan Che grabbed Liu Yue’s hands tightly, stepping forward in great strides.

“Who cares how chaotic it’ll be.” Liu Yue couldn’t even be bothered about that. As long as this person in front of her was alright, other things were insignificant.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che couldn’t help but to give her his devilish smile.

His little Princess Consort had only him in her eyes. This made him very happy. “Let’s go, the army that I controlled with my Tiger Seal is just

right ahead. We can join them there first.”

Chapter 113: Turbulent Times (13)

“Alright.” Liu Yue nodded her head.

Warm feelings rippled between the two of them. Both of them looked extremely miserable in their sorry state, yet they were still affectionate with each other.

The two held hands and followed the moonlit path.

That day, the two of them had rushed into the river at the last minute before the fire engulfed everything behind them. Due to the overuse of force, Xuan Yuan Che had slammed against a huge rock in the riverbed. After spewing a mouthful of blood from the collision, he had fainted immediately.

Seeing how big the fire was, Liu Yue had not dared to come out of the water. Instead, she held on to Xuan Yuan Che and floated along with the flow of the river.

Bobbing up and down, they were carried for almost 100 miles down the river. Seeing that they were out of the danger zone, Liu Yue carried Xuan Yuan Che and climbed out of the river.

On the riverbank, Liu Yue was covered with blood and injuries but they were only superficial wounds. There were no fatal injuries and so it wasn't a big deal.

However, Xuan Yuan Che's injuries were much more intense. It seemed as if the intense power that he had used to jump into the river had reflected back onto his own body. Heavily injured, there was nothing much Xuan Yuan Che could do.

Gathering herbs for medication was not a big deal for Liu Yue. The plants and herbs in this area were similar to what they had back in the modern times. However, she lacked the inner strength to actually cure him.

They stayed quietly by the riverside for three days and waited for Xuan Yuan Che's inner wounds to recover slightly. Then, they headed towards

the capital.

On the way, they didn't see any wild horses or wild donkeys. Instead, they ran into many wild beasts that had been chased out of the woods by the wildfire. They had killed plenty of leopards and tigers, but they couldn't tame these beasts to ride upon.

So, weak and dispirited, they kept walking. The areas by the river that they traversed were completely deserted without a soul to be found.

Under the quiet moonlight, the place was cold, yet hot.

At the Tiger Camp, stood Tian Chen capital's closest troops: three hundred thousand soldiers and horses, defending the capital's crucial territory. Whoever controlled them could swallow Tian Chen kingdom and destroy the Xuan Yuan royal family, all in one gulp. All other troops would be too far away to prevent such tragedy; they wouldn't make it in time to help.

And these three hundred thousand troops were under Xuan Yuan Che's command.

Because of this, the Left Minister had not dared to touch Xuan Yuan Che. To revolt against Xuan Yuan Che, they had to first gain control over this army. With this army, they would have everything; even if Xuan Yuan Che died and resurrected, they would no longer need to fear him.

Chapter 114: Turbulent Times (14)

It was night and all was quiet in the Tiger Camp.

“Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom...” Suddenly, the thunderous sound of drum rolls broke the silence.

That deafening drum rolls called for the assembly of the whole army.

Like a dragon that had woken from its sleep, the army instantly rose to life.

The whole camp bubbled with excitement, yet they remained organized; busy, yet orderly. In a flash, the troops had already lined up by the training court. The formation of thirty thousand strikers front-line troops in their armor looked like a dark green dragon.

With heavy equipment, the 128 Cavalry Commanding Officers; 1131 Infantry Commanding Officers; Heavy Armored Soldiers, Rearguards, and other authorities above Commanding Officers neatly filled out the training court.

From the time the drum rolls calling for assembly sounded to the organized lining up of the army, only a few minutes passed.

“A decree from the Emperor!” The Left Minister held the decree up high and yelled from his horse, galloping through the training court. Accompanying him were General Fei and the crown prince Xuan Yuan Cheng.

In their metal armor, the three Lieutenant Generals of the Tiger Army, Liu Chuan, Chen Si, and Zhou Cheng, knelt out of respect for the Emperor’s decree.

Without a sound, the thirty thousand soldiers also knelt down in unison to welcome the decree.

“As of today, the Emperor has announced King Yi’s unfortunate death. We must mourn his death, but at the same time, this army must have a leader. Hence, from today onwards, the Tiger army will once more be under the command of the Imperial family, under the command of his

Majesty and under the supervision of the crown prince.”

The Left Minister finished announcing the decree in a single breath with a feeling of great accomplishment. His face expressed excitement that this huge army was about to become theirs and they would no longer need to be afraid of anyone.

The whole army remained hushed. They did not cheer and they did not offer gratitude. They were just dead silent.

Seeing this, Left Minister called out, “The three Lieutenant Generals, accept this decree.”

With one knee on the ground, Liu Chuan, Chen Si and Zhou Cheng exchanged glances. With stone cold expressions, they slowly stood up and took a step back.

“Are you refusing the decree?” Left Minister cried out in anger.

“Where is the Tiger Seal?” Liu Chuan asked, looking sternly at the Left Minister.

The Left Minister froze. No one has any idea where Xuan Yuan Che hid the Tiger Seal and with the Dragon Rider guards guarding Xuan Yuan Che’s residence, the Liu Li Palace, none of them had dared to search for it.

“This is the Emperor’s own decree! What does the Tiger Seal have to do with anything?” the Left Minister’s face darkened.

Hearing this, Liu Chuan took another step back and replied coldly, “I will only listen to the commands of the one who holds the Tiger Seal. Orders given by any others will not be followed.” This cold response washed away the Left Minister’s excitement, and sent a chill down his spine. He shivered.

Chapter 115: Turbulent Times (15)

“Are you rejecting the Emperor’s decree? This is mutiny!” General Fei, who followed the Left Minister, roared in anger.

Liu Chuan, Chen Si and Zhou Cheng took a moment to communicate with their eyes.

Chen Si’s face was stone cold; he replied, “The Tiger Army shall only obey whoever holds the Tiger Seal. Others’ orders will be ignored.”

“Lieutenant General Chen, disobeying orders from the Emperor is considered a crime. All of you should take that into consideration.” Xuan Yuan Cheng, who had stayed silent till then, finally spoke up. He looked benignly at the three Lieutenant Generals.

Chou Cheng took a step forward, bowed to the Crown Prince, and answered grimly, “Thank you for the reminder, Your Highness. But the Tiger Army will only obey the General who holds the Tiger Seal. With the Tiger Seal, I am at your command, but, without it, the Tiger Army will not obey or bow to you.”

This uncompromising and disdainful reply demonstrated his unwavering resolve.

“We are loyal to our General’s command!” the thirty thousand soldiers all replied firmly. They weren’t loud, yet their unyielding tone showed their firm determination.

Their General is King Yi Xuan Yuan Che; he is their Commander-in-Chief.

“I see! So This is how it is. There is only Xuan Yuan Che in your eyes that you even dared to disobey the Emperor’s decree for Xuan Yuan Che? This sin is equivalent to mutiny! Guards, arrest these three Lieutenant Generals and hold them for trial in court.” said the Left Minister, his face pale with fear.

How on earth did Xuan Yuan Che train these soldiers, that they would risk their lives to obey him, rejecting the decree.

Ten soldiers standing behind General Fei marched towards the three Lieutenant Generals. Fortunately, the Crown Prince's party had come prepared, knowing that Xuan Yuan Che's men were a tough bunch. Or else...

Three soldiers pounced out like tigers from behind General Fei, attacking the three Lieutenant Generals.

Liu Chuan, Chen Si, and Zhou Cheng who stood on a high platform, responded with their own attacks. It wouldn't be easy to take them down!

Fists clenched and swords flashed.

Soon, the six men were engaged in a ferocious battle.

After-images of attacks blur past.

"Bam!" Chen Si had recklessly engaged in a battle with his opponent using internal strength. He staggered back. Blood gushed out from his mouth, and he fell onto the brightly lit ground. His opponent's internal strength was too strong. He couldn't even defend himself.

Chapter 116: Turbulent Times (16)

Impossible! Even though he was merely a Lieutenant General under King Yi Xuan Yuan Che, his skills were almost as good as General Fei. How is it possible that he couldn't win against these soldiers?

As he was thinking, the sharp sound of blades clashing against each other came again. And then blood splattered everywhere.

Liu Chuan's face turned pale. A fresh gash that ran across the whole of his back appeared, and blood spilled out from it. If he had been a second slower, this attack would have taken his life.

The tens of thousands of soldiers roared below them.

Chen Si's heart sank; Liu Chuan was much stronger than him, and yet...

"Careful!" Liu Chuan suddenly yelled, breaking his thoughts.

Zhou Cheng blew past him, and fell heavily in front of the two Lieutenant Generals. He clutched his chest with his hand, blood poured out from his chest. His face was pale, and blood trickled down the side of his lips. Still, Zhou Cheng clenched his jaw and swallowed his pain.

All of the three Lieutenant Generals were defeated.

Within moments.

"Will you accept it now or not?" Seeing this pathetic scene, Left Minister sneered, letting out a cold laugh. He raised the decree in his hand.

Liu Chuan, Chen Si, and Zhou Cheng exchanged another look. Powerful opponents like this were rare in Tian Chen; their opponents' skillsets were way higher than them. They couldn't be from around here. Left Minister had come prepared; it looked like the rumour that he murdered their General, Xuan Yuan Che, was true.

"Absolutely not!" The Lieutenant Generals' reply was steel cold.

"Very well, take them down." General Fei shouted. His three soldiers shot towards the three Lieutenant Generals.

The soldiers below the platform clamored up; step by step they marched

towards the platform, their faces masked with anger.

Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng who had remained passive and apathetic all this time, looked down at the three Lieutenant Generals. Smiling, he said, "Disobeying the royal decree and stirring up a revolution. I will give you two options, either you commit suicide, or you take these three men down. Choose one, and I will allow you to keep your positions as Lieutenant General."

These gentle words were said in an aggravatingly provocative tone.

The Lieutenant Generals replied coldly, "We will only obey our general."

"Well then, kill them all." Left Minister said with a dark face. The three soldiers pounced at the three Lieutenant Generals. They brought down their swords.

"Zoom!" Just as the sharp weapon was about to slash across Liu Chuan's chest, an extremely sharp and piercing object flew at the soldier.

The soldier didn't dare intercept it, he rolled and dodged the attack. The piercing weapon struck the drums behind them, and instantly, a thunderous boom exploded across the training court.

"Who dares hurt my men!" a savage, cold voice broke out from the darkness.

In the training court, the thirty thousand soldiers parted and created a path. Behind them, under the moonlight, two figures approached; one short, one tall. It was Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che.

Chapter 117: Turbulent Times (17)

The silver moonlight shone bitterly.

“General!” The thirty thousand soldiers cried out excitedly.

On the high platform, the three lieutenants’ eyes lit up again. Liu Chuan, Chen Si, and Zhou Cheng picked themselves up and walked towards Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue. They got down on their knees. “We are at your command, general.”

“At your command, general.” The thirty thousand soldiers knelt down. The whole training court went silent; the atmosphere was simply majestic.

Under the frosty moonlight, through the Tiger army dressed in black, Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue walked through heroically.

The Left Minister’s eyes widened in shock. Looking at the two figures walking through the army, he rubbed his eyes. How was this possible? How was this possible? They were dead! How could they appear here? Impossible, absolutely impossible! The Left Minister shook his head and took a step back.

The shock in his eyes at seeing them alive completely revealed his hideous nature.

“How bold of you, Left Minister! How dare you try to undermine my authority?” Xuan Yuan Che stepped onto the platform. He looked coldly at the Left Minister, whose face wasn’t looking very good.

Although he looked worn out, Xuan Yuan Che’s presence was still a sight to behold.

Liu Yue rested curled her hand around Xuan Yuan Che’s arm. She stood beside him and stared at the Left Minister. Her gaze was so frozen cold that it sent chills down his spine.

“Surprised to see us?” She asked, her menacing gaze locked on to the Left Minister.

“No... no... yes, um, no...” the Left Minister stuttered. His hands started to tremble.

Beside him, General Fei and Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng were left speechless. Caught in a wildfire that burned for three days and three nights, yet they still survived. Were they really humans?

The night wind blew. It was the beginning of summer, yet it was chilly.

The Left Minister shivered. But as an experienced politician, he quickly regained his composure. He held up the decree in his left hand. “The Crown Prince and I are here today by the decree of the Emperor. These three lieutenants rejected the Emperor’s decree; and disobeying the Emperor is an unpardonable offence punishable under the law.”

Xuan Yuan Che frowned. He didn’t wait for Left Minister to read the decree. Instead, he snatched it from his hand and opened it.

As he finished reading, Xuan Yuan Che let out a loud laugh. He tossed the decree back to the Left Minister, and proclaimed , “I, the king, am not dead. Therefore this decree is invalid, and if it is invalid, there is no reason for punishment.”

Chapter 118: Turbulent Times (18)

His cold voice was mixed with anger. If he hadn't arrived in time, his three lieutenants might not even be here anymore.

By then, the Left Minister had calmed down. He held the decree and frowned, "Third king, the decree is the decree. It can't be changed. I am thankful that your highness is returned safe and sound. As you have returned, the Emperor will now definitely pass down another decree to reinstate your position. However, right now, this decree must be obeyed."

As soon as the words fell from his lips, the soldiers behind the Left Minister took a step forward and stared at Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue, emotionlessly.

If they couldn't use an indirect method, they should just do things the hard way. They had to take over that army today at all cost. Otherwise, once Xuan Yuan Che returned to the capital, not to mention that all their investments would turn into a wasted effort, they could even be slaughtered, their entire clan could be thrown into a turmoil! They couldn't wait. No, they didn't dare to wait!

They could see that Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue were covered with injuries at that moment. They wouldn't be hard to take down.

Hearing this, Liu Yue narrowed her eyes, and smiled. She lifted an eyebrow and asked, "So what?"

With her two words, "So what?", it seemed that there were no laws and morals in her eyes.

"How dare you defy the Emperor's order!" the Left Minister roared, glaring.

Toying with the dagger in her hand; Liu Yue waved her hand. She looked at the the thirty thousand soldiers below her. "Who heard that?"

Utter silence... nobody made a sound. The thirty thousand soldiers lowered their gaze to the ground. There were no emotions on their faces.

The wounded lieutenant generals who stood behind Xuan Yuan Che,

looked up at the sky, pretending not to have heard anything.

The summer breeze blew.

The Left Minister's face darkened, he clenched his jaws.

Liu Yue's laugh was bewitching. Her expression was filled with scorn as she spun a sharp dagger nonchalantly around her fingertips, as if it were a quill pen.

Xuan Yuan Che waved his hand and instantly a chair was prepared for him. He sat down slowly with a swirl of his robe.

His cold gaze swept across the Left Minister, Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng, and General Fei. "Over here, I am in command."

His manner of speech was sonorous and resounding. With pride, he looked at the three of them scornfully.

"We will only obey the general!" Behind him, Liu Chuan, Chen Si, and Zhou Cheng shouted. The thirty thousand soldiers cheered in unison, their deafening cheers piercing through the sky.

Chapter 119: Turbulent Times (19)

The Left Minister and his party were highly ranked in the imperial court and excelled at playing dirty tricks. However, this training field was out of their jurisdiction. In this training ground, they might look like tigers, but they were only paper tigers. The army's deafening cheers turned their faces as white as a sheet of paper.

Seeing this, Liu Yue burst out laughing. Her enchanting hair blew in the wind complimenting the prideful aura that wreathed around her.

Hearing her murderous laugh, the ten soldiers from the Left Minister's party who had locked on to Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue couldn't help but take a step back.

Xuan Yuan Cheng, who had been quietly observing the situation, spoke.

"I think you are right, third brother. After all, you are still alive. At this point, the decree does seem ridiculous. Left Minister, let's stop this futile argument and return to the city with third brother. Father will be overjoyed to know that third brother is alive." Xuan Yuan Cheng took a step forward and smiled at Xuan Yuan Che.

The Left Minister tightened his fists. He noticed how his ten soldiers acted when Liu Yue spoke. If they were afraid of Liu Yue and couldn't take down Xuan Yuan Che in one sweep, or if there were any miscalculations, they would probably be minced into pieces by the huge army behind them.

After all kinds of calculation and all sorts of planning, everything had gone to waste in the end.

The Left Minister hated how it had all gone downhill. But they were in Xuan Yuan Che's jurisdiction and there was nothing more he could do.

Military power, military power, this goddamn military power!

Despite his frustrated thoughts, the Left Minister maintained an outwardly respectful and polite demeanour. "The Crown Prince is correct. I, the Minister, shall return and inform his Majesty." he gritted through

his teeth. With this, he turned and began to leave with his ten soldiers following behind him.

“Oh, so that’s it then?” Toying with her dagger, Liu Yue stood beside Xuan Yuan Che. Her faint glance fell upon the ten soldiers who stood in silence.

“What do you mean, Lady Mu Rong? Are you trying to force the Imperial Envoys to stay behind?” The Left Minister stopped, he turned his head and glared at Liu Yue.

Liu Yue laughed. “Imperial Envoys? Which country do you Imperial Envoys belong to? Xue Sheng kingdom? Ao Yun kingdom? Chen King...”

Liu Yue’s statement took him by surprise, but he hid it well and replied angrily, “What’s that supposed to mean? Where is your evidence?”

“Evidence, Left Minister? I have none. But now that you are in my jurisdiction, I have the right to punish whoever I please. What I say counts. My words are all the evidence that you need.” Liu Yue flipped the dagger and caught it in her hand.

Chapter 120: Turbulent Times (20)

Xuan Yuan Che glared at the Left Minister, his eyes filled with hatred. He also couldn't allow them to just leave after beating up his men.

"You..." The Left Minister's face turned green.

He knew long ago that Liu Yue was arrogant, but he didn't expect her to be this arrogant.

"Besides, what evidence would I, the Princess, need to punish a few Tian Chen soldiers? I want to beat them up because they are an eyesore. What can you say about that?" Liu Yue said arrogantly.

Her cold eyes swept across the ten soldiers in front. Their faces held no expression as they prepared themselves mentally. Liu Yue tossed her dagger casually behind her. Only wearing those silver gloves, she said, "Don't say that I'm using my position to bully you."

As she finished, laughter roared below the platform. Their princess was only thirteen, while the soldier in front of her was over twenty. Their princess must be kidding when she said she was going to bully them.

Xuan Yuan Che lightly caught the dagger that Liu Yue tossed and toyed with it.

Behind him, Zhou Cheng took a step forward. He whispered into Xuan Yuan Che's ears, "General, those soldiers are strong. The princess..."

Xuan Yuan Che waved his hand, cutting off Zhou Cheng's sentence. His Liu Yue wasn't a reckless person, her silver glove was much more powerful than any dagger.

Liu Yue was jet black with soot and had a worn out look all over her body, but her loftiness did not lose to anyone. Liu Yue took a step forward with a disdainful look on her face. She raised her right hand and pointed at the ten soldiers with her forefinger, then gave them a thumbs up sign before sinking her thumb down to the ground in a thumbs down sign. Her behaviour was beyond savage.

"Whoever can endure my ten attacks, I will let you go. Otherwise..." She

didn't finish her words, but her meaning was extremely clear.

Seeing that, the ten soldiers looked at each other and immediately wielded their swords, charging towards Liu Yue altogether.

Even when seeing a sword was about to be swung at her waist, Liu Yue didn't give a reaction. The surrounding soldiers immediately started to shout in alarm.

But before those shouts could come out, Liu Yue's hands moved like lightning and caught the long sword in her hands, but her body still has not moved a single inch. The soldier's cry of alarm was still stuck in their throats; they could only see a flash of light of the slashing sword, and Liu Yue catching it in her hands with a "boom" sound. A shadow flew past as the sword had broken into two, the sharp end of the sword piercing through the soldiers' chest.

Everything happened in a blink of an eye.

The remaining nine soldiers immediately darkened. They decided to go all out without holding back, focusing their everything on this battle.

Like a butterfly fluttering away, that silver gloves was even more powerful than other godly weapons in existence.

He had made the wrong move. Only the sound of his ribs breaking apart could be heard, before he fell to the ground, his head hanging down limply.

TLN: Fanservice: Manga rearranged the story in the novel, so remember when Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue fell into the river? This is one of the pictures:

Chapter 121: Turbulent Times (21)

A silver light flashed and all the soldiers collapsed to the ground one by one, as a flower of blood bloomed on their chests.

The attacks weren't filled with just a normal person's killing intent; the killing intent was almost demonic. A figure moved and attacked without conforming to any worldly sense.

Seeing this, the Left Minister's face turned green. It seemed like the Liu Yue who had turned his residence upside down previously had actually showed him some compassion back then. Otherwise, who would have been able to defend against her attacks?

Tightly clutching his robe in his fist, he thought, this Liu Yue must be killed at all costs.

Shadows and after-images followed the blade as it flew all over the place. Liu Yue suddenly whirled her body around and ruthlessly threw a punch at the soldier behind her. That soldier's defense was broken and bearing the heavy brunt of Liu Yue's attacks, he was pushed back a few steps right in front of Xuan Yuan Che. He spat out a mouthful of blood as his teeth fell all over the ground.

It was a punch that was neither heavy nor imbued with inner strength. It was just a punch that had the ability to knock out all the teeth in one's mouth.

This woman had no inner strength, the soldier immediately realized. His body hadn't even stabilized from the previous impact, before Xuan Yuan Che, who was standing right behind him, suddenly reached out and blocked all his meridians. Immediately, the soldier was frozen on the spot, unable to move even a single inch.

The only person left standing on that battleground was extremely shocked at this. He realized he wasn't strong enough to attack Liu Yue, hence he swung his blade at Xuan Yuan Che, who was grasping a soldier in his hands.

Liu Yue dashed forward and suddenly attacked, her fingers fast as lightning. She used two fingers to pinch on the seventh rib of the soldier who was attempting to dart past her and ruthlessly pressed down firmly.

Only a miserable groan was heard as the soldier's body was thrown into mid-air, then dropped to the ground with a loud boom. His whole body convulsed uncontrollably, and all of a sudden, he wasn't breathing anymore. There was not even a single scratch on his body.

The seventh rib is a human body's core. If it were to ever break, one would not survive even if they were an immortal. This was a fact that all mercenaries knew very well.

Silence engulfed the place and the only sounds that could be heard were the wind blowing and the soldiers' heavy breathing from the tension.

The thirty thousand soldiers below looked up at the serene-looking Liu Yue with respect and admiration. Their eyes were filled with absolute reverence and zeal.

On the other hand, the Left Minister and Xuan Yuan Cheng had immediately turned green at this outcome. In the dark, their bodies couldn't stop trembling.

The two of them gave each other silent looks, and quietly began to leave, only to realize that a few thousand soldiers had surrounded them without them even realizing. They had no way out.

On the high podium, kneading her fist lightly, Liu Yue turned around and picked up a tooth from the ground, laughing coldly, "This is a cheap trick that went out of fashion a long time ago."

*

(TLN: There was a scene in the manhua that wasn't in the novel, but I think it was really interesting, so I will just try to "write" that scene here lol. Or you can just proceed to the next chapter haha.) Then, with a swing of her hands, Liu Yue suddenly tore off her robes from her body, saying, "It's really hot after all that fight!! These clothes only looked nice, but it's such a pain to fight wearing this!"

The soldiers around could only gape at this scene, while Xuan Yuan Che was completely flustered as he shouted, "Liu Yue...you.."

Tearing her robes apart, Liu Yue was only left with her special wristguard a sleeveless dress that only covered her up to her knees. Her long black hair was tied up in a ponytail, and she transformed from a demure lady into a female warrior.

The Left Minister snorted and commented, "Shameless!", to which the Crown Prince replied, with his eyes averted, "I think it's still okay..."

Meanwhile, Xuan Yuan Che growled at the spectating soldiers, "All of you turn around! Otherwise I'll gouge your eyes out!"

Hearing that, Liu Yue could only shake her head slowly and said, "I say, Che, aren't your reactions a little too exaggerated? I'm not even naked, why are you so mad? You are so childish!"

"What?! I'm childish? You are the childish one! Your grandfather is childish, no, your whole family is childish!" Xuan Yuan Che replied indignantly.

Chapter 122: Turbulent Times (22)

Hiding poison inside a fake tooth was an assassin's suicide squad's suicide preparation. If anything went wrong, they would immediately commit suicide as a desperate measure. Other people might not know, but how could she not understand?

Hadn't she personally come down to fight them just to prevent this eventuality?

The Left Minister had asked for trouble. Previously, they had not had any solid evidence, but now they did.

Forcefully extracting information from a suicide squad might not be easy, but she was an exception. At that time, when she captured a secret government agent, hadn't she managed to force out the secret information from him? There was nobody on earth that could be obstinate till the end. You only needed to know the right way and method.

"Seize him and torture him for information now." Xuan Yuan Che grabbed the assassin that couldn't kill himself and ordered Liu Chuan in a sombre tone. That pair of eyes sharply glared at the Left Minister and the Crown Prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng, whose faces were beyond pale now.

"Yes." Liu Chuan immediately arrested the soldier and retreated quickly.

"I, Xuan Yuan Che, will not harm my siblings and relatives, but whoever dares to take advantage of me shall not be forgiven." Those icy words were a proclamation of a cold war to Xuan Yuan Cheng.

Smiling sweetly as she walked towards Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue tilted her head and laughed, "Didn't the Left Minister and Crown Prince offer to bring us back to the Capital? Sure, I agree with this idea. Let's go and take along some soldiers too. I reckon that the Capital will be very lively tonight."

Xuan Yuan Che twitched his brows at that, "Very lively? Alright, let us join in the excitement. Also, since it's on the way..." he swept his gaze across the Left Minister and the others and coldly raised his eyebrows.

Liu Yue followed Xuan Yuan Che's gaze, and saw that General Fei had disappeared.

She raised her brows as she thought that being able to escape without anyone realizing even while they were surrounded this tight, General Fei must not be a simple person.

"General, the Left Minister had actually come to takeover the Tiger Army. Your honour, I believe that your Dragon Riders are also facing the same situation." Zhou Cheng, who had not retreated, reported in a serious tone.

"Although Qiu Hen and Yan Hu aren't weak, but they weren't that much better than us. General, you must be careful."

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che nodded slowly and replied, "You should treat your injuries first." Then he abruptly announced in a loud voice, "Wu Lin, Qi Quan, San Yu, Qiu Su, prepare the horses and troops to accompany me back."

"Yes!" The Four Commanding Officers immediately replied loudly.

In an instant, the war drum resounded again, and the turbulent times had passed.

The thunderous sounds of the war drum that was beaten in the training ground could be heard far away, sounding like an army of excited war horses galloping across the field, quick and heavy hooves thumping on the ground.

Amongst the thirty thousand infantry soldiers on the training ground, some of them retreated to their camps while some of them stayed. On the other hand, the elite cavalry army had also returned with their horses while some others went back to their respective camps. All in all, forty thousand cavalry and soldiers stayed behind and immediately started preparing to the tune of the booming sound of the drums.

Chapter 123: Turbulent Times (23)

Seeing this, Liu Yue whispered to Xuan Yuan Che in a low tone, "I'll leave first and scout ahead. You should lead the soldiers and follow later. Qiu Hen and the others might need help; there's also your Imperial Mother in the palace."

Qiu Hen was almost on par with the three Lieutenant Generals. If, according to Zhou Cheng, he had been injured so much by just one attack, then Qiu Hen and the rest wouldn't be able to endure their attacks. The control of Dragon Riders would fall into the hands of Left Minister's men.

Furthermore, although the Right Minister was also powerful, he was still only a government official. She didn't care about others, but she must protect Imperial Consort Chen.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che grasped Liu Yue's hands tightly, "I..."

"You are injured." Xuan Yuan Che had only spoken one word, but he was cut off by Liu Yue. With Liu Yue glaring at him so strictly, Xuan Yuan Che could hardly say anything. His had only recovered a little from his internal injury, how would he be able to support her?

Xuan Yuan Che gritted his teeth hard at this. It was not as if he didn't understand what was important, but although Liu Yue's injuries were only superficial, she had suffered multiple injuries all over her body. Furthermore, she would be travelling alone.

"Don't worry, you know my abilities right? We'll meet in the capital." Saying this, Liu Yue smiled at Xuan Yuan Che, then turned away and left.

There was a sudden tightness in Xuan Yuan Che's heart. An indescribable feeling arose in his heart; he felt like if he let her go now, he wouldn't be able to see her again. Immediately, his hands reached out to grab the leaving Liu Yue.

Pulling Liu Yue back, Xuan Yuan Che immediately wiped away the soot that was covering Liu Yue's face. What kind of face would be under that

mess?

Shapely and symmetrical eyebrows, doe-eyes with pupils as dark as the night sky, a high nose and cherry-red lips greeted him. A small face that was only as big as his palm, was delicately chiselled, like it was the perfect masterpiece of a sculpture. So perfect that it could probably bring down a kingdom. Her beauty was dazzling like the brightly shining moon in the sky, clear but a little bit cold, yet magnificent and glorious. She was like a Moon Goddess.

Xuan Yuan Che etched her image, deeply and firmly, in his mind.

Liu Yue was astonished by Xuan Yuan Che's sudden unpredictable actions, but this wasn't something much. She laughed out, "I'll let you see it clearly after we returned."

When she finished her words, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly grasped her arms, and suddenly pulled her in for a kiss. In his passion, he hugged Liu Yue with a force that seemed like he wanted to fuse her into his embrace and knead her into his bones. His embrace was so tight, so intense.

The forty thousand soldiers watched in silence, the scene of the two couple entangled in an intense kiss and embrace under the moonlight.

"I'll wait for you." When their kiss was done, Liu Yue smiled as she whispered to Xuan Yuan Che. Then she turned around and left.

As the moon shone down on her face, the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng saw her face and was immediately frozen with shock. He couldn't believe the face he saw after Xuan Yuan Che wiped Liu Yue's face clean.

Chapter 124: Turbulent Times (24)

Where was that ugly girl? Where was Mu Rong Liu Yue?

Heavens, how could this be? How could she have such a beautiful face? This woman, this woman, who was she exactly?

He was so shocked that he fell one step back. The Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng had a look of indescribable shock in his face.

He remembered once sneaking into his Imperial Father's Secret Treasury and almost getting thrashed to death as a punishment. There he had found a beautiful painting, and a scroll of records that had been torn into shreds. That person in the painting, with Liu Yue...the words on that record...

The moon was shining brightly and beautifully on a hot early summer night, but Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng felt a sudden chill instead, it was a chill that came from his heart.

"Follow the Princess Consort." Xuan Yuan Che waved his hands and immediately dispatched a small team to follow Liu Yue, they were all the top-elites of the army.

In the night wind, Liu Yue led the small team and disappeared into the night in a blink of an eye, speeding along as they went.

Taking a deep breath, Xuan Yuan Che coldly swept a gaze at Xuan Yuan Cheng, whose face was filled with shock, and the Left Minister, who was as pale as paper, then said in an icy tone, "Follow me."

Banners fluttered in the wind as the troops marched in the dark. Forty thousand Tiger Army soldiers subdued the Left Minister and Xuan Yuan Cheng as they dashed towards the capital city as quickly as possible.

Walking through the boundless horizon, they were fated to be sleepless that night.

In the Tian Chen Capital, the capital's soldiers had surrounded the whole city gate; nobody was allowed to go out.

The Right Minister had taken control inside the capital, and the Left Minister controlled the outside.

Using one hand to cover a soldier's mouth and nose and a dagger in the other to slit his throat, fresh blood splashed Liu Yue's face as the soldier in front of her collapsed to the ground without a sound.

On the left corner of the city gate, a hundred capital's soldiers had been turned into a field of corpses. With a flick of Liu Yue's wrist, her Sky Silk shot out and rooted itself on the city walls. Tiptoeing upwards the wall, Liu Yue flew as she entered into the capital.

Behind her, the small team of Tiger Army soldiers pushed the corpses near the city's wall and then stepped on them to leap off the high wall. They did not make a single sound that would alarm the other soldiers.

The figures flashed like lightning as they dashed quickly.

At this time, the Tian Chen Palace was brightly lit, and the government officials was spread out all over the Tian Chen Royal Court. The atmosphere was solemn and grave.

And outside the Royal Court, black shadows flashed across without a sound eerily.

In this gloomy atmosphere, Xuan Yuan Che's Liu Li Palace reeked with even more hostility and killing intent. The killing intent could be felt even outside the Liu Li Palace. In the flickering light of the lanterns, a bloody massacre was taking place.

Chapter 125: Preparing to Battle (1)

A mass of soldiers was battling and the combat zone resounded with their clashing of weapons.

Inside Liu Li Palace, everything was dyed red with blood.

“Pu.” Qiu Hen spat out a mouthful of blood and staggered, his shoulder sporting a deep gash, gushing with blood. A figure flashed by and ruthlessly unleashed a searing backhand strike, slashing of the arms of an assassin dressed up as an Imperial Guard off.

“How bad is your wound?” After killing the assassin with a single slash of his sword, Yan Hu who was also drenched in blood, asked him anxiously.

“I won’t die yet.” Sword in hand, Qiu Hen fought on, back to back with Yan Hu. The two of them were covered in wounds, yet their courage grew the more they fought.

At their feet lay the bodies of many fallen Dragon Riders; they were all guards in charge of guarding the Liu Li Palace. And yet, even in the midst of corpses, many still fought on bravely, putting their lives on the line.

A knife attempted to cut towards Yan Hu, but it was blocked by Du Yi, whose face was filled with determination as he glared, full of murderous intent.

Yan Hu and Qiu Hen were surrounded by Du Yi and the others in the middle. There was even expert warriors from the Murong family: Murong Gang, Murong Yi and Murong Chen.

If not for the timely arrival of the Blood Shadow Guards and the Murong family, Qiu Hen and the others would probably not have been much of an opponent for these assassins.

The attackers masquerading as Imperial Guards were too skilled. To put it in perspective, there was only a handful of experts in Tian Chen Kingdom that could defeat them. Their savage killing intent was so intense that only Du Yi and the rest of the Blood Shadow Guards would

have the abilities to be on par with them; others were just too inferior.

Simply put, these men were not soldiers of Tian Chen Kingdom. They were not even citizens of Tian Chen.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu was already prepared beforehand. While they were in the forests searching for their King, they suddenly received a warning from the Blood Shadow Guards. Immediately, they knew something was wrong and quickly returned to Liu Li Palace.

Sure enough, these fake Guards had broken into Liu Li Palace seeking to take control of the Tiger Seal and the Army Seal.

Fortunately, they had returned in time. The fake Imperial Guards, seeing that Qiu Hen and the rest of the Dragon Riders had disregarded the Emperor's Decree and refused to obey the Emperor's order for them to be transferred to the Left Minister, immediately attacked them without mercy.

If the Tiger Seal and the Army Seal were stolen, then not to mention the 300,000 Tiger Army stationed outside the Capital, even the thirty thousand Dragon Riders who were Xuan Yuan Che's personal army that was situated right outside the Palace would be able to start a revolution and force the Emperor to abdicate, destroying everything with a single order of the Army Seal.

Even in death, we cannot give them the seals.

One by one, their companions fell, staining Liu Li Palace with their blood.

The whole room reeked of blood; it completely permeated the atmosphere.

"Hand over the Army Seal and the Tiger Seal, or else I will kill her." A bloody, cold voice dyed with murderous intent suddenly sounded.

Chapter 126: Trembling Heart (2)

Qiu Hen lifted his head and saw a beautiful yet miserable woman wearing a simple silk dress being dragged inside, under the flickering lights in the doorway. Who could it be but the Imperial Consort Chen.

Though his brows wrinkled, Qiu Hen's attacks didn't falter even for a short moment.

The assassin held a knife at Imperial Consort Chen's slim, beautiful neck. Under the pale red lights from the flames silhouetting the cold knife, her neck appeared especially pale and fragile.

The early summer breeze brought with it, not a pleasant cool air, but a chill from the land of ice and snow.

And at this moment, a solemn silence reigned inside the Tian Chen Main Court, which did little to mask the underlying tension and agitation between the Ministers.

.....

"Your Majesty, His Royal Highness the Crown Prince and His Royal Highness King Yi are brothers connected by blood and they got along very well. All of the Imperial Court Ministers and Generals were witness to that. So how could His Royal Highness the Crown Prince harm His Royal Highness King Yi? Your Majesty, please rescind your order." The Minister of Appointments, Shang Shu said with a face that reflected his anxiety.

"Minister of Appointments, those old tales are completely irrelevant to the issue at hand. For years, the Crown Prince had to live under the shadow of his superior younger brother, King Yi. King Yi was simply too outstanding; he completely stole the limelight from the Crown Prince. King Yi was too outstanding; his presence had already put a pressure on the Crown Prince. There's no doubt that the Crown Prince felt that his position was threatened; that sooner or later, King Yi will take his position away from him. With such a mindset, it would not be strange that he developed an evil plot."

“Correct, this is true. The fire that raged in the mountain at the same time as the assassination was too coincidental and not a natural phenomenon. The assassination would not have been possible without somebody on the inside orchestrating the whole affair. In such heavily guarded hunting grounds, how could the assassins so easily penetrate the royal security and execute such a large scale of attack? It must be...”

“Utter rubbish! His Royal Highness the Crown Prince.....”

Bright lights illuminated the Tian Chen Main Court, as both the Left and Right factions of the royal court argued bitterly.

“Tonight, after so many nights of continuous meetings, we are not here to discuss about the course of events that had happened. Instead, we are here because His Highness the Emperor was going to officially announce a Royal Decree: His Royal Highness the Crown Prince Xuan Yuan Cheng, is henceforth demoted to the rank of a commoner.” The Right Minister, sitting higher than the rest, just below the Dragon throne of the Emperor, swept the entire hall with cold eyes as the reality of the decree settled in with a heavy thud.

The sound level inside the the Imperial Palace immediately dropped and in the silence that ensued, both Right and Left faction looked towards each other.

The eyes of the Left Minister’s men held anxiety. If this dethronement decree was passed, then they were doomed.

While on the Right Minister’s side, they secretly held smiles of relief. They had initially thought that they had lost King Yi and lost. They didn’t expect that things had taken a new turn. Today, they must win.

“Could His Majesty please announce the Imperial Edict.” said the Right Minister, with a face full of triumph.

To the side, General Murong took a powerful step forward and raised both of his hands that bore the Imperial Edict. With both eyes, he looked at the person seated on the Dragon Throne, the Emperor of Tian Chen Kingdom, Xuan Yuan Yi, who hadn’t uttered a word till now.

Chapter 127: Trembling Heart (3)

Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi swept the entire hall with his eyes, looking at the different Ministers and their expressions. Taking a deep breath and with a casual wave of his hand he said: “Announce it.”

“Your Majesty, the Crown Prince cannot be dethroned. At this moment, Tian Chen has already lost King Yi. If it were to also lose its Crown Prince, then it will be akin to a death blow to the foundations of Tian Chen.” Shi Lang, the Minister of Rites, hurriedly said while kneeling down with a tearful face.

“Announce it.” The Right Minister shouted, with a cold pair of eyes.

General Murong opened the Imperial Decree in hand without encountering any resistance.

“Your Majesty.....” The Left Minister’s faction nearly fainted.

With the Imperial Decree announced, no matter how skillful the Crown Prince and Left Minister was at political manoeuvring, even if they were to win over the military, it would all be for nothing. Otherwise, if they turned to inciting a rebellion and taking over the Imperial Court, they would bear an eternal record of infamy through the generations.

The night breeze fluttered, cool as water.

.....

Outside the city gates, Xuan Yuan Che led 40,000 Tiger Army troops, rallying them and closing upon the city gates.

Hooves pounded the ground , “Tatata...” and soldiers radiated a powerful, austere killing intent and iron pride.

.....

Liu Li Palace

A sudden wind blew past, blowing out the lights in the palace for a moment. The lantern’s brightness dimmed.

“Hand over the Army Seal and Tiger Seal. Otherwise I will kill her.” The

fake Imperial Guard outside demanded once more, tightening his grip on the blade in his hand. Drops of blood immediately trickled down Imperial Consort Chen's pale neck.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu clenched their teeth so tightly that their mouths started to bleed.

To the side, Murong's elite guards did not make a sound. The blades in their hands only danced even faster. They could not interrupt for it was not their place to decide.

"Imperial Consort Chen, I am truly sorry." Yan Hu said, while slicing down one enemy in one strike. From his mouth, flowed a small trickle of blood. He didn't even look at Imperial Consort Chen, who was in an extremely sorry state.

This was for the sake of King Yi and the survival of numerous lives. They could not hand over the Seals to the attackers... they would not surrender them even if she was their King's Imperial Mother.

Under the dim lights, Imperial Consort Chen's hair was a mess and her robes sported several bloodstains, but her face portrayed a serenity belying the current strenuous situation. Her beautiful face held no trace of fear.

"So what if I were to die? It will be for the greater good! You look after my son's things well." With a face full of regal beauty and pride, at this moment, the Imperial Consort's beauty and grace was most astonishing.

When she saw that Empress Liu had actually dared to make a move on her son, she knew that the Left Minister would put in place other sinister arrangements today. Both the Army Seal and the Tiger Seal were kept in her son's Liu Li Palace, but there was no one there to defend it tonight. She must definitely help her son protect those seals well. She must absolutely not let them fall in the hands of those evil-doers.

She never thought that halfway through her journey, she would be caught and held hostage. However, she thought, it did not matter. Both Qiu Hen and Yan Hu were present and they would protect her son's things. This was enough.

Chapter 128: Trembling Heart (4)

“Just remember, you must not hand them over.” Imperial Consort Chen shouted, while throwing herself towards the long blade in front of her. She would not become a bargaining chip to hinder her son. She would definitely not put her son’s things at stake.

Graceful and beautiful, this was a mother’s love and devotion towards her son.

Just as that beautiful neck was about to be cut by the sharp blade, the fake Imperial Guard who was holding the Imperial Consort hostage suddenly trembled, and the sharp blade in his hand clattered to the ground. His entire body then fell forward.

The person closest to the Imperial Consort, Murong Chen, witnessed it all. Immediately he charged forward towards the staggering Imperial Consort.

Under the dimmed lights, a small arrow could be seen sticking out of the dead Imperial guard’s neck.

The heated fighting atmosphere inside Liu Li Palace came to a sudden lull.

At the palace doors, Qiu Hen’s eyes were drawn to the diminutive arrow protruding from the dead man’s neck. He was shocked. That was... that was the arrow that he had personally made. . . That was the arrow that he had personally made for his Princess Consort!

His expression immediately turning ecstatic, Qiu Hen almost jumped in joy in that instant. Shocked with disbelief and excitement, he hurriedly shouted: “It’s the Princess Consort! It’s the Princess Consort!”

As the news came out, everyone inside the palace was frozen with shock.

Under the dim lights, a small figure strode in, covered in red blood. Her unfeeling, cold face emanated a strong killing intent.

Red blood caked that small face, but they recognised that pair of eyes. It

was their Princess Consort. The one who was thought to have perished in the great fire at the forest. She was their Princess Consort.

“What era is it that you have gained the guts to rampage wildly around here?” Sharp and unfeeling, Liu Yue’s figure immediately disappeared. The short-sword in her hands immediately split the air and came down on the fake Imperial Guards guarding the Palace Gate, killing them without even allowing them to make a single sound.

In her blood-soaked clothes, her actions were both startling and bewitching.

Those sharp moves, that unique charisma. She was not a ghost, but a living, breathing human being.

“Princess Consort.”

“Mistress.”

Both Dragon Riders and Blood Shadow Guards were immensely excited. After three days of grieving in silence , they were suddenly liberated of pain. Their pillar of support had come back, their Princess Consort had returned!

“Yue-er, what about Che-er...?” Staggering around Qiu Hen and Yan Hu, the Imperial Consort asked. Once she saw that Liu Yue had come, her resigned face immediately lit up and she intently looked at Liu Yue.

A blood soaked Liu Yue had arrived. From her face, a hint of a bloody smile could be seen as she told them: “He took 40, 000 soldiers of Tiger Army to the Imperial City. Let’s see who in the Imperial City will have the guts to fight him back today.”

Chapter 129: Trembling Heart (5)

The sharp shortsword danced in Liu Yue's hands as she stepped on the field of corpses, walking towards Qiu Hen and the others.

Outside, she had forced her way through the fake Imperial Guards who had surrounded Liu Li Palace and charged in, leaving the rest of the assassins to be cleared by the Tiger Army soldiers. Indeed, it was more chaotic inside than outside. Fortunately she had come in time.

"Long live the Princess Consort!" Qiu Hen, Yan Hu and the other Dragon Riders were excited beyond words. Their King didn't die! Their King would return!

"Che-er!" Imperial Consort Chen, who hadn't shed a tear when held at blade point or while she faced a life and death situation, immediately cried with happiness when she saw Liu Yue. Tears overflowed from her eyes, but a tremulous smile bloomed on her face like a beautiful flower.

Hearing this, members of the Mu Rong Clan on the other side were also overjoyed as they cheered happily. Good, good! Xuan Yuan Che didn't die, the person they supported didn't die. This was indeed a good thing!

On the other hand, the fake Imperial Guards had a dark look on their faces; their expressions didn't look good.

A sword swept past and a few drops of blood splashed onto Liu Yue's garments. Her ordinary clothes had been thoroughly tarnished with the colour of blood, red as fire, just like a demon from hell.

Waves of killing intent revolved around Liu Yue's body and her demonic aura both startling and bewitching.

Trails of blood followed Liu Yue's sword everywhere she went. Nobody could stop her onslaught; not a single person could prevent their own deaths.

Killing from outside the city all the way to Liu Li Palace, Liu Yue had already been covered with blood. That sharp killing intent was so intense that it could kill without physical contact.

The reason that nobody could defend against her attacks wasn't because Liu Yue was too powerful, but because of that demonic killing intent emanating from her body. It was so intense that even the assassins were frozen with fright.

The fake Imperial Guards immediately started to retreat towards the Liu Li Palace gate.

"Thinking of escaping? Humph! Do you think this is some place where you come when you want to come and leave when you want to leave? Don't even think you can leave here today." Snorting coldly, Liu Yue threatened the assassins.

"That's right. Do you think you can come when you want to come and leave when you want to leave? It's not that easy. Brothers, kill!" Qiu Hen shouted loudly as his eyes turned bloodshot, like a panther. He wore an excited expression that carried a resolution to kill.

"Kill!" Every single Dragon Rider and Blood Shadow Guard charged spiritedly. With their Princess Consort here, why would they be afraid of anyone? Kill!

In an instant, it was as if everyone had consumed steroids. They charged forward like berserkers.

At the same time, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu took out the Tiger Seal and Army Seal from their robes and passed them to Liu Yue who had already charged forward. The seals were not safe in their hands, but they would definitely be safe in their Princess Consort's hands.

Chapter 130: Trembling Heart (6)

Liu Yue didn't say anything much and received the two seals, shoving them inside her robes. Grabbing Imperial Consort Chen's hands with one pull, she coldly commanded, "Whoever lets an enemy run away is a coward."

"Yes!" Qiu Hen and the others immediately replied with a loud "yes". Even the members of Mu Rong Clan voiced their agreement, forgetting the fact that Liu Yue was their niece, daughter, or a girl from the generation below them.

Liu Yue's body followed her sword along as she killed in all four directions. Leading Qiu Hen and the others, Liu Yue charged forward fiercely.

A malevolent killing intent suddenly filled the space.

In this instant, Qiu Hen and the others who had only been able to defend by a hair's breadth, suddenly became a force that nobody could withstand. The Imperial Guard impostors were driven back instead and the situation turned a full 180 degrees.

Seeing that the situation had turned for the worse, an Imperial Guard frantically attacked on one hand, and toppled a lantern with his other hand, splashing the lamp oil onto the ground.

Fire started spreading out in all directions. The fire from the lantern spread out to the curtains and splashed out to the velvet carpets.

In an instant, the small fire from the lantern had spread out in all four directions. With the help of the premeditated action of toppling and the deliberate intent for destruction, the blazing flame grew bigger as it rose up in the air.

They wanted to create an opportunity to escape under the cover of fire.

A cold glare flashed across Liu Yue's eyes as she slowly smiled. They dared to play such a trick against her, humph.

The stench of blood permeated the air. Tonight, in this Liu Li Palace,

who would be the winner in the end?

The night grew calmer yet the fight became more intense.

The summer breeze blew, blowing the stench of blood through the air.

And at this moment, the Tian Chen Main Court was still locked in a stalemate. Mu Rong Wu Di held the Imperial Edict in his hands, looking down on the subjects below and shouted, “By the Mandate of Heavens, the Emperor’s Imperial Order...”

“Your highness, you can’t dethrone...”

“Reporting...” Amidst the two voices that opposed each other, another voice announcing a report suddenly rung out. A stream of footsteps resounded outside, rushing towards the palace swiftly.

“What’s the problem? Announce it.” Emperor Xuan Yuan Yi, whose face had previously looked burdened, suddenly sat up straight.

An Imperial Guard Officer who was sweating from head to toe entered the Main Hall quickly. He didn’t even kneel as he reported with an overjoyed voice, “Announce...Your...High...ness...” Gasping for breath, his sentence barely made any sense.

The Right Minister immediately frowned and asked, “What exactly happened?”

Taking a deep breath, the Imperial Guard Officer tamped down his excitement and reported in a loud voice, “This servant reports to Your Highness. King Yi did not die!”

“What?!” Xuan Yuan Yi couldn’t keep his calm sitting down and immediately shot to his feet, his eyes wide open with shock.

Right Minister and General Mu Rong Wu Di were also frozen with shock. They staggered a few steps forward as they asked anxiously, “King Yi didn’t die, is that really true? Quick! Report it clearly.”

Chapter 131: Trembling Heart (7)

“King Yi didn’t die. Your subject had just received news from the soldier on duty at the entrance gate of the capital. Not only did King Yi not die, he has also brought 40,000 Tiger Army Soldiers into the city. They are currently on their way here.” The Imperial Guard Officer reported, finally wiping clean the sweat from his earlier rush.

“Heavens, this is too good.” The Right Minister threw a fist into the air violently, his face a picture of excitement and joy.

“Che-er didn’t die, haha, I always knew that Che-er wouldn’t die so easily. He is indeed our most outstanding King Yi of Tian Chen Kingdom, haha!” Xuan Yuan Yi immediately jumped with joy.

As for the court officials below them, the Right Minister’s Faction was unable to contain their joy while the Left Minister’s Faction was quietly relieved.

King Yi didn’t die, then the Crown Prince’s charge of murdering King Yi would not be valid. Then he shouldn’t be dethroned anymore. This was good, really good.

“King Yi brought 40,000 Tiger Army soldiers to enter the city?” Hearing this, the Left Minister’s Faction gazed at each other as the joy that they had just felt immediately got stuck in their throats, suppressed by the imminent danger.

Bringing an army into the city, what was King Yi’s intention? What was he trying to do?

“How about the Left Minister?” General Mu Rong Wu Di suddenly asked aloud.

The corners of the Imperial Guard Officer’s mouth slowly curled upwards as he quickly replied, “Your servant heard that he is returning back with King Yi. King Yi has found out the preparator behind his attempted murder. He is bringing the troops for reinforcements.”

Bringing the troops for reinforcement? Mu Rong Wu Di and the Right

Minister glanced at each other and slowly smiled. More like bringing the troops for punishment. Looks like this time the Left Minister would have no hope of recovering his power.

The other ministers who had dared to collude with the Left Minister also understood this in their hearts. Hearing the Imperial Guard Official's report, they realized that the Left Minister and Crown Prince's power would come to an end.

Xuan Yuan Yi's figure immediately fell back down on his Dragon Throne, his face a picture of helplessness. He sighed a deep breath as he realized that his Crown Prince could not be saved after all in the end.

However, being able to keep Xuan Yuan Che by his side was a situation better than the previous one. He still had such an outstanding son.

The bristling trees announced the arrival of Xuan Yuan Che's army.

"Reporting. Liu Li Pavilion has caught fire. Princess Consort is still inside." Having led the army into the palace, Xuan Yuan Che frowned hearing the report. He immediately turned his horse and galloped towards Liu Li Palace instead of the Tian Chen Main Court.

In Liu Li Palace, the fire from the lamp oil had engulfed everything in sight, walls of fire radiated blazing heat in all direction. The fire rolled, brewed and danced inside the palace.

Inside the palace, Liu Yue grabbed Imperial Consort Chen's hands in one hand while killing assassins with the other. Blood flew in all direction on the path that she treaded.

That bewitching fire bloomed right at her side, but Liu Yue acted like she could not see the fire. She was extremely calm and collected. The fear of fire apparently had no meaning to her.

Chapter 132: Trembling Heart (8)

Body after body of Imperial Guards collapsed at her side. A ravishing figure in blood-stained dress darted swiftly through the red blazing flame, her dark hair dancing in air.

Dragging Imperial Consort Chen out of the sea of flames, Liu Yue swept a gaze across the people around her and nodded her satisfaction.

Not a single one was absent, not a single one was missing.

Turning around to look at the Liu Li Palace, the Pavilion's interior had been thoroughly engulfed in flames. The fire had also spread outside, crackling brightly, staining the whole sky red.

"Are you guys dead yet?" Liu Yue asked in an icy tone.

"Not yet." Qiu Hen and the others replied altogether loudly.

"Good, follow me." Liu Yue waved her hand and pulled Imperial Consort Chen along as they walked towards the Tian Chen Main Court.

The scene of Liu Yue's small figure pulling along a person taller than her and being followed by a crowd of people that respected her looked extremely strange and bizarre.

However, nobody spoke at all, even Mu Rong Yi kept silent.

The row of people marched towards Tian Chen Main Court.

But at this moment, Xuan Yuan Che had actually entered the Liu Li Palace from the palace gates.

Halfway through the march, Liu Yue looked back towards the Liu Li Palace in the distance. The great fire had already burnt so big that the whole sky turned red. The red blaze looked even more prominent in the night sky.

Liu Yue frowned her brows. She didn't show much expression. It didn't matter if it burns, they could just build a new one.

"This time they must die a terrible death. How dare they hurt my Cher and Yue-er." Imperial Consort Chen finally recovered from the

massacre as she gritted her teeth and clutched her fist tightly.

Hearing this, Liu Yue suddenly stopped.

“What happened?” Yan Hu, who was behind her, immediately asked.

Hurt Xuan Yuan Che? Liu Yue’s brows twitched as she suddenly asked, “Did General Fei appear?”

“I didn’t see him, what actually happened?” Qiu Hen stepped forward.

Liu Yue frowned her brows as she looked towards the blazing Liu Li Palace from afar. General Fei had escaped from the Tiger Army previously and was missing currently. Could it be that there was some hidden...

This thought had just crossed her mind when she suddenly heard a sound. At the front of the Liu Li Palace that was burning brightly under the great fire, a figure seemed to leap into the sea of flames. The flames looked like it had been cut apart as the figure jumped in.

That clothes, that small figure. Liu Yue’s eyes immediately widened as she realised that it was her appearance.

“Not good.” Liu Yue immediately let go of Imperial Consort Chen, turned around and charged madly over to the Liu Li Palace.

And at this very moment as she charged over madly, a figure flew quickly from a distance, leaping into the fire without hesitation. The figure charged into the Liu Li Palace that had been thoroughly engulfed in fire.

That person was Xuan Yuan Che.

“Xuan Yuan Che.” Liu Yue’s heart immediately constricted as she increased her pace and dashed madly.

The enchanting flame that filled the whole sky burnt everything down without exception.

Liu Yue had only dashed a few steps when the Liu Li Palace’s roof, that was burning fiercely, caved in with a loud boom.

“No.” A cry that shook the sky, that tore apart people’s heart and soul, echoed in the endless night, as the dark green curtain of the night lifted, marking the start of this scene.

Chapter 133: Trembling Heart (9)

Red flame filled the sky, burning everything to ashes.

The tall building slowly collapsed to the ground.

No one who had gone inside came out. There was not a single movement, only the fire that danced around, getting bigger and fiercer every single second.

It was a fully dark night, but it couldn't even cover this blazing fire.

Liu Yue's eyes turned red as she spat out a mouthful of blood, almost going insane. In the next moment, she madly rushed into the burning Liu Li Palace.

Every single person was dumbstruck looking at the collapsing Liu Li Palace. In just a short moment, the building collapsed flat onto the ground.

They could only watch as Liu Yue rushed into the building frantically, tripping over her own legs and falling down hard onto the ground amidst the disorder. However, in the next moment, she scrambled back up and continued running madly towards Liu Li Palace.

With Liu Yue's strong martial art skills and mentality, that she had unexpectedly made such a mistake clearly showed that her heart was in too much of a mess to even control her emotions.

Running madly, fast as lightning.

"Master!" Qiu Hen and the others who snapped out from their daze immediately went frantic as they followed Liu Yue and charged towards Liu Li Palace. Blood permeated the air as grief and sorrow enveloped the whole place.

"No, no, Che-er..." Imperial Consort Chen fainted and fell to the ground hard, completely unable to bear the drastic emotional swings from gaining and again losing her son within the space of an hour.

In a moment, the whole place was left with only the shadows of the

people who had suddenly charged forward madly into the burning palace.

“Boom!” Thunder suddenly clapped and the dark curtain of the night sky was torn apart by a streak of lightning, lighting up the sky.

The sudden brightness shone down upon the orange flame, so beautiful that it was almost bewitching.

Under this sky, a figure clad in a blood-stained robe dashed towards the sea of flame, quick as lightning, completely without hesitation, entirely uncaring about anything else.

Liu Yue, who didn't know the Light Body Technique, was actually faster than Qiu Hen and the others who knew it.

“Boom... Crackle...” blast after blast of explosive sound resounded through the air.

Bright light from the flame flickered in disarray, lighting up the dark sky suddenly. Liu Yue's mind, while running madly towards Liu Li Palace, went completely blank and she only focused on the burning Palace.

With red eyes and blood rising in her throat, she thought that there was somebody she liked inside that place, someone she loved. He was someone she didn't have in her previous life, but had managed to find in this life. He was someone who knew her inside out, her husband, her Xuan Yuan Che.

Even if she had to live in poverty her whole life or jump into the Yellow river, she would still not let go of that person.

The fierce fire, the collapsing building.

The thunder in the sky clapped even louder, blasting one after another above everyone. Thick clouds covered the sky, as countless spears of lightning danced around, surging forward and shining down upon the place, making it bright as day in that instant.

Chapter 134: Trembling Heart (10)

“Boom!” Another part of Liu Li Palace collapsed. The front part of the Pavilion had already collapsed to the ground and the back part was teetering on the verge of collapse. Only a few pillars were left supporting the building and all the rest had crumbled.

“Xuan Yuan Che!” Screaming out miserably like a wounded wolf with her heart torn apart, Liu Yue’s cries reverberated through the cloudy sky, echoing around the palace courtyard.

Bending her body downwards, Liu Yue pounced forward, not even thinking of her own safety as she dashed into the collapsing Liu Li Palace.

“You are crazy!” Mu Rong Yi, who had snapped out of his shock charged forward and pulled Liu Yue’s hands, grasping them in a tight deadlock.

In front of them was the fiercely burning Liu Li Palace that looked like it was on the verge of collapsing. Even if there were someone inside, they would have been charred to death.

Even if Xuan Yuan Che was gone and they, the Mu Rong Family, had lost an important person on their side, as long as Liu Yue, his powerful and capable daughter, was still alive, the Mu Rong Family would never collapse.

There was no one as outstanding as Liu Yue in the whole of Tian Chen Kingdom.

Turning her head, a pair of red-stained eyes glared at Mu Rong Yi, who was holding her in a death grip.

Mu Rong Yi suddenly felt a chill. A pool of fear rose up from within him, and the hairs on his back stood on end. Heavens, what a glare! It was not a glare that reeked of blood and killing intent, but rather, it was a glare that was filled with hurt and loneliness. Grieved, crazed and reckless.

She looked like she would tear to shreds anyone who blocked her path and destroy utterly anything and everything that tried to stop her.

Facing such a glare, Mu Rong Yi couldn't help but let go of her hands. He didn't dare restrain her. He didn't dare.

With a jump, her small figure was immediately surrounded by flame. Her red-soaked dress entered into that red flame.

They were one body, both of them had the power to destroy everything.

"Xuan Yuan Che." Liu Yue, who had leapt into the sea of flames without caring about anything else, frantically moved swiftly through the fire as she yelled continuously. Those red-stained eyes almost cried tears of blood.

Flames danced at her side, burning fiercely.

But it was as if Liu Yue couldn't feel the heat at all, couldn't see the danger of the whole situation as she ran recklessly right into the centre of the flames. Recklessly!

"Peng!" Another pillar collapsed. The entire back of Liu Li Palace was in a mess with only a few pillars remaining to support the whole building.

Liu Yue moved away the fallen pillars that had filled the space: frantically, recklessly.

Her pale, small fingers had been scorched red by fire and her hair had been burnt until it curled. The clothes on her body had almost been charred to embers and her skin had been seared so much that it had started giving off a burning smell. The smell of burning flesh spread out all around, filling the sea of flame and the whole of Liu Li Palace.

Chapter 135: The Debt of Blood Must be Paid in Full (1)

The smell of burnt flesh reigned in the air. Liu Yue couldn't couldn't determine whether the smell came from her burnt body or from the piles of burning corpses.

“Boom...” an explosion resounded above her. Lightning flew everywhere like infinite silver snakes dancing in the sky, baring their fangs, fierce beyond words.

Rain dripped from the dark sky.

The twinkling bright stars were already long gone.

The only thing left on this earth was darkness and that bewitching firelight.

“Xuan Yuan Che, where are you? Answer me! Answer me...” frantically screaming out his name, Liu Yue continuously looked through the bodies lying on the floor.

She didn't care about herself. Her only concern was one person: Xuan Yuan Che, Xuan Yuan Che!

“Yue...” A tiny whisper floated from a corner of the court. It was soft, like a light breeze brushing by, that one could barely feel.

But Liu Yue heard it... She heard it.

She turned around, her face lit up with unbearable happiness as she rushed towards that soft voice.

“Xuan Yuan Che! Xuan Yuan Che!” She jumped over tongues of the fire and immediately saw a figure surrounded by flames.

With his leg stuck under a huge stone pillar, Xuan Yuan Che couldn't move. He could only lie there, with a pale face and blood trickling down from the corner of his lips. Through the fierce flames, he looked at her, straight at her.

The worry in his eyes disappeared when he saw her. That worry turned into happiness and all the hatred and anger in his eyes vanished into the smoke when he saw her.

Xuan Yuan Che's lips curved into a gentle smile.

Why was he smiling at a time like this? Was it because she was safe? Was it because he was relieved?

Liu Yue was speechless.

In front of him, someone about her size lay dead and covered in flames.

Flames surrounded Xuan Yuan Che too; his shirt had already been burnt off.

Above him, the ceiling creaked and suddenly, a flaming plank fell towards Xuan Yuan Che.

Without thinking, Liu Yue rushed forward. With all her strength, she caught the fiery plank and tossed it aside.

Chapter 136: The Debt of Blood Must be Paid in Full (2)

She didn't know from where she got this sudden power and this sudden strength from. She only knew that she had to prevent Xuan Yuan Che from getting crushed at all cost.

"You're crazy. Quick, lea...ve." Xuan Yuan Che coughed. The smile that had crept upon his lips when he saw Liu Yue running over was now frozen on his face.

It's real, it's not an illusion. It's real, Liu Yue is really here.

Crazy, this crazy girl. How could she rush into this sea of flames? This bastard, how could she throw away her life like this?

Xuan Yuan Che was instantly anxious. Anger rushed through him and he shouted angrily though his breath was weak.

Pushing away the broken pillar, Liu Yue ran to Xuan Yuan Che's side. She clenched her jaw as she smiled at the bleeding Xuan Yuan Che. "Don't be scared, I'm here."

As she spoke, she started pushing away the burning pillar that had fallen on Xuan Yuan Che's leg.

Don't be scared, I am here.

There was no angry reply, there was no complaint. There was only a smiling face. Only the six words he had never heard before, remained. Don't be scared, she is here.

Her face reflected the burning red flames. Although covered in red blood from head to toe, she was still heart-throbbingly gorgeous.

Xuan Yuan Che froze. As strong as he was, no one had ever told him not to be afraid. As tough as he was, no one had ever told him while he was at the verge of dying, "I am here."

His fist clenched and his heart tightened. An indescribable emotion filled his heart. He felt complete.

“You... Idiot...” Xuan Yuan Che muttered under his breath, looking at the brave and courageous Liu Yue. Looking at at his beautiful Liu Yue in the midst of this sea of flames, his eyes reddened.

This was his Liu Yue, his wife, the person who was truly in his heart.

In this life, it was a blessing to have had her by his side.

In this life, it was a blessing to have met her.

“Idiot, quick... Leave, I have injured my heart meridian, I can’t live...”

Following the spy that he had thought was Liu Yue, he had rushed into the flames. When he realized the truth, he fought the attacker and killed her. However, even though he killed his enemy, the fight had taken a big toll on his already wounded body. He had injured his heart meridian and his leg had been crushed under the pillar. What else could he...

“Shut up.” Liu Yue yelled angrily, cutting off Xuan Yuan Che.

Chapter 137: The Debt of Blood Must be Paid in Full (3)

Blood trickled between Liu Yue's teeth. She lifted the pillar that was many times heavier than her and tossed it aside. She looked at Xuan Yuan Che and said, "If you die, I will avenge you and then I'll accompany you in death. Whether I live or not is up to you."

Finishing her sentence, Liu Yue bent down, grabbed Xuan Yuan Che and hoisted him on her back.

Xuan Yuan Che was much taller than her. Her little body carrying Xuan Yuan Che's was like a child carrying an adult. So small, yet so determined.

Xuan Yuan Che rested his head by Liu Yue's neck. Hearing Liu Yue's determined words, he was touched. The worry and anger on his face washed away.

This is it, he decided.

Whatever will be, will be. If they can't make it out together, then they would die together.

His lips curved into a smile. He closed his eyes and muttered, "I'll try."

His voice disappeared into thin air.

The surrounding fire was flaming stronger and stronger. It had almost burnt out everything, turned everything into ashes.

The clouds rumbled.

Feeling the weight of Xuan Yuan Che on her back, Liu Yue clenched her jaw harder. She held him tightly and rushed out.

Out, they had to get out!

Even though she was carrying Xuan Yuan Che, who was much heavier than she is, she still ran like a leopard, dashing out.

Flames danced around her and her sleeves started burning. All she

could see was red.

At the same time, after hearing about Liu Li Palace catching fire, Xuan Yuan Yi and company also hurried to the scene.

The whole palace fell into panic.

Thunder rolled, and lightning danced in the sky. The disordered crowd ran around in chaos.

One by one, Qiu Hen, Yan Hu and Du Yi, rushed into the fire. They sprang into that crumbling Liu Li palace.

Nobody cared about themselves. In their eyes, only their king remained.

Flames roared up high into the sky.

“Quick, extinguish the fire!” yelled Xuan Yuan Yi, who had been carried there by Mu Rong Wu Di as quickly as possible. Seeing this scene, he felt his consciousness slipping away. Nothing should happen to his son!

Left Minister and crown prince Xuan Yuan Cheng were also brought to the scene by the Tiger Army.

Watching the roaring fire, the two people's eyes lit up in excitement as they heard about the two people who charged into the fire. There were mad happiness in their eyes, but there were also shock and confusement.

Chapter 138: The Debt in Blood Must be Paid in Full (4)

After jumping right into such a raging fire, how could anyone make it out? The whole place had been covered by a sea of flames, no one could possibly escape them.

With Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue, Qiu Hen, Yan Hu all lost in the flames.... With all of Xuan Yuan Che's allies dead, there wouldn't be any other powers left to conflict with them.

Every cloud has a silver lining.

But what kind of relationships did they have? How much respect and admiration do they have for Xuan Yuan Che that these steel-hearted people would follow him into the fire without hesitation? How could so many subordinates still charge right into the flames, even knowing clearly that it was impossible to survive?

These people were all crazy, crazy!

Xuan Yuan Cheng walked nearer, staring at the fire ahead. A weird look twisted his face. He didn't even know what he was feeling anymore.

Overhead, flames covered the sky, as bolts of thunder clapped one after another.

Beneath, countless people moved about, crying miserably.

It was a grim looking situation.

"Heavens...!" In this extremely grim situation, Mu Rong Yi who was the closest to the fire, suddenly shouted with astonishment, shocking everyone else's hearts.

A dark figure stepped out from within the waves of bright flame that had the power to burn anything down to the ground.

An extremely dense aura of killing intent cocooned her body, so dense that it almost looked tangible.

A boundless cold emanated from her, colder than a Siberian blizzard.

She charged out of the fire, her dark hair fluttering in the wind. The raging flames danced around and the storm resounded behind her.

The fire blazed around her, like a violent avenger seeking to destroy the whole world.

Behind her, a few dark shadows followed her, treading through the intense flames.

A Goddess of Fire.

Everyone present who saw that scene were shocked speechless. They could only watch dumbstruck like fools.

“Boom!” Suddenly, with a booming thunderclap, heavy rain poured down from the sky.

The bright fire met the dark rain in the air, each burning and extinguishing the other.

Liu Yue burst out of the fire with a single leap. Not caring about the fire burning on her clothes and body, she laid Xuan Yuan Che, whom she had carried on her back, down and rolled on the ground together with him.

The fire that had licked against the two people's bodies, was immediately extinguished under the pressure of the earth and the heavy rain.

“Imperial Physician!” Liu Yue, whose features were now unrecognisable, pulled Xuan Yuan Che, who had fallen unconscious long ago, into her embrace, as she screamed frantically.

Her frantic scream reverberated through the heavy rain, shocking everyone present.

“Imperial Physician, quick, quick...”

“Medicine, take it from the secret treasury, go...”

Chapter 139: The Debt in Blood Must be Paid in Full (5)

In an instant, everyone including the ministers and generals suddenly moved frantically, trying to handle the situation at hand.

Pressing a hand on Xuan Yuan Che's forehead, Mu Rong Wu Di shouted, "Protect his heart meridian!"

Mu Rong Yi and Mu Rong Gang standing by on his side quickly responded, pressing their palms on Xuan Yuan Che's chest and back.

Mu Rong Chen and Du Yi immediately stood on guard, protecting them. Although they were injured from head to toe, they still looked intimidating.

Du Er, Du San, Du Si tore off their clothes and spread them over Xuan Yuan Che, sheltering him from the heavy rain pouring down from the sky.

(TLN: Blood Shadow Guards are called by their code names, which are Du Yi, Du Er, Du San, Du Si and so forth. Yi, Er, San, Si meant 1, 2, 3, 4 respectively. Du meant...restrict, stop, prevent: from the dictionary. So Du Yi/Er/San/Si are from Blood Shadow Guards.)

Qiu Hen and the others had already been heavily injured from the beginning. After forcing themselves to follow Liu Yue into the burning palace, they couldn't endure it anymore and collapsed to the ground one by one.

They should never allow their King to meet such a mishap anymore, they would never allow it.

Amongst all of Xuan Yuan Che's injuries, the most serious were his internal injuries. The Palm Attack had destroyed his Heart Meridian. If it was treated successfully, the other injuries would heal overtime. If it was unsuccessful...

Liu Yue's face was pitch black and the only colour on her face was the

white from her eyeballs. She knelt at Xuan Yuan Che's side, holding his hand tightly, tightly.

Her face held no expression and she looked extremely calm. But everyone present knew that her calm was like the calm before a storm. If Xuan Yuan Che recovered, it might still be okay. If he didn't, Liu Yue would probably go insane and the consequences...

Nobody dared to imagine it.

Silence ensued amidst the burning fire and the downpour. The Tian Chen Officials were drenched to their toes, but they didn't make any movement at all.

"Here, here! It's the miracle potion from the hidden treasury." Amidst the silence, the Minister of Appointments staggered as he ran over, carrying the miracle potion that was taken from Xuan Yuan Yi's secret treasury in his hands.

Xuan Yuan Yi immediately took it from him and passed it to the Imperial Physician that was rushing over, saying, "Quick, this is the miracle potion that I had hidden in my treasury for a long time. It is the most effective medicine to heal internal injuries. Quick, give it to Che-er."

Seeing that, the Imperial Physician immediately opened the bottle, preparing to administer it to Xuan Yuan Che.

Liu Yue who didn't move or say anything after rushing out of the sea of fire and shouting for the Imperial Physician, suddenly grabbed the precious miracle potion and smelled it.

"Yue-er, it is a good medicine. I would only give Che-er the best." Seeing that, Xuan Yuan Yi immediately said.

A flash of killing intent appeared in Liu Yue's eyes as she suddenly stood up. Walking a few steps forward, she moved towards the Minister of Appointments who had brought the antidote. Her sinister looking eyes sent chills down everyone's spines.

The Minister of Appointments flinched involuntarily.

Chapter 140: The Debt in Blood Must be Paid in Full (6)

A flash of anger crossed her eyes as Liu Yue raised her hand and grasped the Minister of Appointment's jaws. If she had used even a little more force, the Minister of Appointment's jaws would probably be pinched off from his skull.

The Minister of Appointment cried miserably at once.

The other ministers and generals standing on one side frowned at that. What was this Liu Yue doing?

As that thought had only passed their minds, Liu Yue suddenly twisted her wrist and poured down the whole bottle of precious antidote right into the Minister of Appointments throat.

Everyone was frozen, thinking, what did that mean?

They could only watch as the Minister of Appointment's face turned white, his hands flailing continuously, like he wanted to pull out the antidote on his throat. But he couldn't manage to pull out anything.

"Yue-er, what are you doing, that precious antidote was hard to come by, you..."

"Cough..." Xuan Yuan Yi had not finished his words of anger when he suddenly saw the Minister of Appointments wailed miserably and collapsed to the ground, his whole body tense and rigid.

He had been poisoned.

The surrounding ministers and generals were so shocked that everyone faltered some steps back, eyes opened wide.

After a few screams, that Minister of Appointment's body froze and stopped breathing.

Seeing the situation, Xuan Yuan Yi's face started to twitch. If the antidote was administered to Xuan Yuan Che, then his son...

A flash of fear appeared in his eyes. Xuan Yuan Yi's face suddenly turned green.

At this time, there were still people who dared to harm his son.

Her cold gaze swept past everyone present as Liu Yue shouted, "Everyone who wanted to harm Xuan Yuan Che, hear me well. If Xuan Yuan Che is okay after today, I will let this matter go. If there is even a little bit wrong with him, you'll pay with your whole family and relatives."

Her icy cold words were filled with killing intent, reeking with blood.

Rain drops kept falling down the sky. It was a completely chaotic night.

The full night of summer rain passed quickly and it was dawn break in a blink of an eye. The downpour turned to drizzle and the winds subsided. Sunshine glittered down, making the flowers and grasses sparkle mesmerizingly.

It was a beautiful summer day.

However, in contrast, the Tian Chen Palace was filled with gloom and doom.

Unconscious. Xuan Yuan Che who had been unconscious since yesterday had not shown any signs of waking up. Mu Rong Wu Di and the others at his side still couldn't heal him even after channeling most of their Inner Energies through the night.

He did not show any signs of waking up even after all that.

Xuan Yuan Yi, Imperial Consort Chen, Right Minister and the others, could only watch helplessly.

On the other hand, Liu Yue didn't move a single inch away from Xuan Yuan Che through the night. Instead, she stayed by his side, holding his hands tightly.

Chapter 141: The Debt of Blood Must be Paid in Full (7)

“Yue-er, you should cleanse the injuries on your body first.” Imperial Consort Chen whispered softly, as she slowly caressed Liu Yue’s head.

This child, her whole body was covered with injuries, yet it seemed like she did not notice them at all. There was only Xuan Yuan Che in her eyes, there was only her Xuan Yuan Che, who still had not shown any signs of waking up until then.

Even she, as his mother, couldn’t continue watching this any more.

There wasn’t any reaction. Liu Yue didn’t even bothered to reply her, she only stared at Xuan Yuan Che lying on the bed.

She deserved death. She knew much and could do more, but she didn’t know Inner Strength. She didn’t know how to heal his injuries with Inner Strength, she didn’t know.

Exhaling a deep breath, Mu Rong Wu Di slowly opened his eyes.

“How is he?” Liu Yue immediately looked up and asked.

Xuan Yuan Yi and the others immediately surrounded them too waiting to hear his diagnosis.

Mu Rong Wu Di looked calm, but there was an absolute determination in his gaze as he looked at Liu Yue. With a tired laugh, he replied in a weak voice, “The Third Prince has suffered a heavy injury. His heart meridian received a devastating blow from an Inner Strength expert. If it was a normal person, he wouldn’t be able to recover. However, the Third Prince had originally cultivated strong Inner Strength in his body and hence he managed to protect the last thread of his artery. Therefore...”

“So, he will be okay?” Liu Yue grasped Xuan Yuan Che’s hands tightly, waiting for the answer.

Looking at the overjoyed Liu Yue, Mu Rong Wu Di could only shake his head helplessly as he sighed. With a frown, he replied, “Although Hou Jin

Kingdom's Poison Palm did not break His Highness' heart meridian, the poison has unfortunately permeated his body. Such an injury would be difficult to treat."

Liu Yue's face darkened at that.

Xue Sheng Kingdom, Ao Yun Kingdom, and now Hou Jin Kingdom. Just how many Kingdoms intended to get involved in this matter? Just how many people were after Xuan Yuan Che's life?

"How do we treat him? Tell me!" Saying that it was not easy to treat meant that there was a way to treat it. No matter how hard it would be, she would do it for him. She would help him recover at all cost.

Mu Rong Wu Di frowned. "The poison is stuck inside his heart meridian. One misstep could cause the poison to attack his heart. If that happened, nothing could save him anymore. From my knowledge, there is only one place on earth that has the power to save His Highness. However, the people from this place had a strange disposition. They are temperamental and always moved about randomly, so they couldn't be found easily."

As he finished, Imperial Consort Chen, Liu Yue, Right Minister and the others all looked at Mu Rong Wu Di anxiously. Even the Tian Chen Kingdom's Emperor, Xuan Yuan Yi, had an indescribable look in his eyes, as he frowned his brows tightly.

Continuing, without waiting for Liu Yue to reply, Mu Rong Wu Di suddenly gritted his teeth and said, "It's fine. I had saved one of their Clan's member a few years ago. Let's hope that they will remember this favour that they owed me. This matter, I will settle it."

Chapter 142: The Debt of Blood Must be Paid in Full (8)

“Yue-er, do not follow me. They have an aversion to strangers entering their domain. If there are too many people, I am afraid that they would even shove me out of their doors. Do not t worry, I would never do anything to harm His Highness.”

Liu Yue had not spoken but Mu Rong Wu Di had stifled her words before they could arise.

Liu Yue looked at Mu Rong Wu Di who was looking at her with a strict face. He did not seem like he was trying to deceive her. Frowning, Liu Yue turned around and looked at Xuan Yuan Che, whose face was pale as death, his legs were clamped with wooden splints and his breath was heavy and hard.

His treatment could not be delayed anymore. If it was delayed even further, the consequences would be unthinkable.

“I want a complete Xuan Yuan Che back.” Tightly grasping Xuan Yuan Che’s hands, Liu Yue slowly leaned forward and placed a soft kiss on Xuan Yuan Che’s lips. Her soft kiss was the opposite of the hard, determined tone in her voice.

“Do not worry. Even with this old body of mine, I will bring His Highness back whole.” Mu Rong Wu Di replied with determination, while looking at Xuan Yuan Yi.

There were many people who wanted to kill Xuan Yuan Che, so this matter would not be easily resolved. However, even if it would not be easy, he would still need to do it for Liu Yue, otherwise....

As soon as Mu Rong Wu Di finished his sentence, Liu Yue shouted out coldly “Servants, I want to wash up.”

Seeing Liu Yue’s temper change so quickly, from emanating intense killing intent just seconds ago to calling for a bath, the surrounding people were stunned, but they still reacted quickly and went out to

prepare.

After washing up lightly and changing her clothes, Liu Yue wiped off the blood staining her face and revealed her original looks, leaving everyone in the Palace Hall shocked speechless.

There had been too many shocking things that had happened over those two days.

Her beautiful features were almost dream-like.

Xuan Yuan Yi focused his gaze on Liu Yue and the shock that he felt were clearly displayed on his face seemed to almost choke him. There was admiration, respect, shock and...fear. With that face, this person...

Mu Rong Wu Di, Mu Rong Yi and the others, each sucked in their breath in a gasp. How could it be, her features... How could Liu Yue be so beautiful? This... This...

Wearing a light purple robe, Liu Yue ignored the others' gazes and slowly walked to the unconscious Xuan Yuan Che's side. Gently cradling his face in her palms, she softly whispered, "Did you see clearly? This is how I truly look. See what I will do to you if you cannot recognize me when I come back later."

Tenderly pressing her lips against his pale lips she whispered, "I'll wait for you."

Chapter 143: The Debt of Blood Must be Paid in Full (9)

I'll wait for you. Thousands of words and ocean deep-feelings were all filled into these mere five words.

It was a bright and beautiful day. The sky was clear and blue, with a few white clouds powdered here and there.

It was time for goodbye.

A goodbye to a separation of hundreds of kilometres, a farewell across valleys and mountains.

The sound of horse's gallops gradually faded away.

As the sky darkens, Xuan Yuan Che went further and further away, the figure of his carriage slowly disappearing into the horizon.

Behind the carriage, Xuan Yuan Yi's secret forces and twenty of the most outstanding Blood Shadow Guards followed. They were all dispatched by Liu Yue, who ordered them to keep Xuan Yuan Che safe at all times throughout the journey.

The fiery sunset filled the whole sky with a red glow.

Liu Yue slowly turned away. Qiu Hen, Yan Hu and the others followed her, their bodies full of injuries.

"It's time." Liu Yue swept a cold gaze across everyone present. With a wave of her robes, she walked forward.

"Yes." Du Yi and the others replied one by one, and quickly dispersed in all directions.

No one could get away with bullying them. No one could have a happy ending after harming their King to that degree. No one had ever been pardoned before, and it would not be an exception now.

Darkness filled the sky, night had finally come.

Wearing a red-coloured robe, Liu Yue held a short sword. Kicking open

the Left Minister's Residence main door, Liu Yue stepped into the manor.

She emitted a potent aura of killing intent, overflowing with anger.

Its time to deliver punishment by Imperial Court's law. No, Liu Yue didn't know anything about the Imperial Court's law, she only knew that the debt of blood must be paid back with blood. She would rather bully every single person in the world than let herself be bullied by others.

The Left Minister, Tian Chen's second General in command, Minister of Appointments, Minister of Rites, Crown Prince and the capital's Police Commander, she would not let any single person off today.

Forty thousand Tiger Army Soldiers guarded the capital's entrance. Nobody was allowed to go out of the city.

Thirty thousand Dragon Riders guarded the Palace Entrance. Nobody was allowed to go in or out of the palace.

Every single minister and general were ordered to go back to their own residences. Whoever dared to step out of their residence would be killed on the spot.

Today, the Tian Chen Kingdom would be turned upside down.

This was the price for offending Liu Yue, this was the price for harming her most precious and loved person.

Screeching, howling and miserable cries resounded through the silent night, sounding exceptionally clear and painful.

The Left Minister's residence was in chaos.

Blood dripped from the tip of her sharp sword. She marched onward, stepping on corpses underneath her foot. Hidden underneath that beautiful face was a killing intent resembling the Death God from hell himself. She would definitely not let anyone from this place off.

Outside the residence, one thousand Dragon Riders surrounded the whole of Left Minister's residence. Nobody was to be spared; this was the iron-clad order they had received.

Left Minister who was imprisoned inside his residence immediately

panicked. Liu Yue had come. She had finally come.

The cold night wind blew softly.

It was a bloody massacre.

Chapter 144: The Debt of Blood Must be Paid in Full (10)

The Left Minister, who was sitting inside his Main Residence, trembled non-stop. Sharp cries of pain could be heard outside, ringing out one by one. The blood curdling sounds made others shudder just by hearing them, the fear almost causing one's soul leaving one's body.

The stench of blood flowed with the wind, entering the main residence from the windows and the doors. It was extremely thick and potent, bringing chills down everyone's spines.

"No, no..." How could she not even take the government laws into consideration at all? How could she publicly slaughter everyone in his manor? She... She...

Amongst the tree shadows, the clean moonlight seemed to be tarnished by the red blood splatters on the ground.

The blood-red robe that Liu Yue wore became looked even more intense as she walked forward expressionlessly. Drops of blood dripped down the tip of her sword, drawing a scar of blood on the white stone pavement.

"Swoosh." The main residence's door was suddenly swung open by the night wind, making the Left Minister, who was sitting inside, jolted in shock.

An endless stream of killing intent reached out and shrouded his body. It was so chilling, like it had come straight from hell.

Under the moonlight, Liu Yue stepped forward, illuminated by the moonlight glow.

Her beauty could devastate a country, almost rivalling the beautiful glow of the moon. However, her beauty was also cold like ice, decorated with blood stains and splatters.

The Left Minister, who had never directly experienced Liu Yue's potent killing aura, was so shocked that color left his face. His body couldn't

stop trembling as his pants was quickly wet with his pee.

Such a sharp killing intent wasn't something that he could overcome.

Walking forward step by step, Liu Yue approached him closer and closer. Her sword glinted icily under the moonlight, as if she was the Grim Ripper.

"My... My fami...ly..." Left Minister stuttered and stammered, almost not making sense of his words.

"You will see them soon enough." She slowly raised her blood-stained sword, and started to swing it down right to the Left Minister's throat.

"No...no, those were not my people, they were not ordered by me. I didn't know who they are, they are forces under General Fei, not mine, not mine." Under such an uncontrollable fright, the Left Minister had actually said such an logical statement.

"Did you think I would let him off?" Her cold reply didn't even carry an ounce of compassion.

Her blood-stained sword swung down without hesitation, fast as a flash of light. Liu Yue didn't even lingered to watch, she immediately turned and walked away.

Behind her, Left Minister opened his eyes wide, his throat producing choked sounds but he didn't manage to say any comprehensible words. He slowly collapsed to the ground.

With a slow wave of her hand, a coloured signal soar into the sky, blooming in all directions across the Tian Chen capital city.

Every single forces under Liu Yue moved at the same time.

Those who dared to harm Xuan Yuan Che would need to pay for the consequences with their whole family.

Blood filled the air. Tonight was definitely a sleepless night.

Chapter 145: Resurgence of Another Chaos (1)

Bloodbath, it was a silent bloodbath.

A chilly atmosphere covered the whole of Tian Chen kingdom.

The capital's guards had all gathered at the Minister of Rites' and Minister of Appointments' Residences. The whole place had been enveloped in a desolate bloodbath. The whole place was completely still, as it was filled with the stench of blood and killing intent.

In the dark night, only Tian Chen Palace alone was brightly lit. Xuan Yuan Yi sat on his Dragon Throne with his eyebrows knotted together.

"Your highness, how do we deal with this situation?" the Governor asked in a serious tone; but his eyes were lit with relief and excitement.

Fortunately he had chosen the right side, or else he wouldn't be here today. Instead, he would be on the other side, bathed in blood.

Xuan Yuan Yi rubbed his brow. He looked out into the darkness, and thought that today was indeed an eventful summer day.

"Let her be. It's time for a clean up." Xuan Yuan Yi said slowly, gazing into the darkness.

Having ruled for so many years, he understood that "no fish can survive if the water is too clean". With seven countries in the world ruling side by side, there were bound to be spies from the surrounding countries. Sometimes when spies and informants were used correctly, they could be extremely informative and useful.

(TLN: 水清则无鱼: No fish can survive if the water is too clean (idiom that meant utopia doesn't exist))

But in these two years, the Left and Right Ministers had become more and more arrogant. On the other hand, he was somewhat powerless; hence the spies had also grown more powerful and arrogant. They had become so impudent that they managed to harm his Tian Chen Kingdom

this badly.

It was time to clean up; he would let Liu Yue do what he couldn't.

The Governor stood up and bowed. "It is late. Your highness should rest. Your humble servant will guard your side."

Xuan Yuan Yi sighed. He nodded his head, stood up and left.

The Governor followed immediately thinking that he shouldn't move around by himself today, as that would be like digging his own grave. Plus, he needed to stay by the emperor. The emperor shouldn't walk around too much.

Some people can't be saved, and some places cannot be visited.

As the darkness thickened, even the stars and the moon were hidden behind the terrifying darkness.

The residence of Tian Chen's Second General, General Fei's Court, was covered in blood.

"Speak." A sharp sound of bones cracking could be heard. General Fei's oldest son's hand was being broken over and over again.

"I don't know, I really don't know. Ah, just kill me..." The man on the floor kept struggling. His face was twisted in pain, his limbs were all dislocated.

Chapter 146: Resurgence of Another Chaos (2)

“Reporting, Fei Cheng Lie is nowhere to be found!”

“Reporting, we have looked through the entire place, Fei Cheng Lie and his youngest son is nowhere to be seen!”

These string of reports brought only a hair-raising chill to this bloody, silent night.

Liu Yue looked coldly at General Fei’s oldest son, who was on the floor screaming and writhing in pain. A murderous look covered her eyes. So, Fei Cheng Lie has escaped.

“Your highness, we found these in a secret room.” Yan Hu marched over, covered in blood. In his hands, he held a pile of half-burnt documents.

Liu Yue began to open and read the documents . Every page was full of commands and plans.

They had been planning yesterday’s assassination for five years. The details of how to kill and then escape were so in depth that the amount of documents were as thick as a book.

A flash of anger went over Liu Yue’s face. A plot of five whole years. They were already planning to assassinate him when Xuan Yuan Che was only 11 or 12.

Dammit, this Tian Chen’s emperor was fucking useless. All this time had passed and no one noticed anything.

There was also another top-secret document that they found. Tian Chen’s second general in command, Fei Cheng Lie, was actually a Hou Jin Kingdom’s Vice Minister of War. He had hidden his identity and lived in Tian Chen for twenty years. He even built a house, created a family and career here. General Fei, who had climbed up to such a high position in Tian Chen Kingdom, was actually Hou Jin Kingdom’s Vice Minister of War.

Liu Yue tightened her fists and crumpled the documents in her hands.

Damn you, spies of Hou Jin Kingdom.

The Left Minister was smart and capable, but with the biggest danger sneaked in right next to him, it could have all gone to waste. If Xuan Yuan Che wasn't so outstanding today, Fei Cheng Lie's first target would have been Xuan Yuan Cheng, the Crown Prince, that the Left Minister wanted to protect.

"Do not leave even one alive." After saying that, with the documents in hand, Liu Yue disappeared into the darkness of the night.

Fei Cheng Lie had abandoned his family and escaped. He left everyone, including his parents, wife, sons and servants. The only person he took with him was his beloved youngest son.

Alright, even if he had escaped from Tian Chen today, she would catch him sooner or later. As long as he is still alive in this world, she will definitely find him, she would never let him get away.

Chapter 147: Resurgence of Another Chaos

(3)

Under the dark sky, the smell of blood had stained the air and was beginning to spread in all direction.

The night continued getting darker.

Tian Chen Palace, in the Crown Prince Eastern Palace.

“Liu Yue, I beg you! You can kill me, but please spare my son Cheng-er, I’m begging you...” Empress Liu knelt in front of the Eastern Palace, looking shockingly miserable, with her long hair undone and strewn all over her face. She kowtowed relentlessly at Liu Yue who was walking closer, and was illuminated only by the moonlight.

Bloodstains flowed from her forehead, tarnishing her snow white skin.

Liu Yue swept a cold glance at Empress Liu, eyes filled with killing intent, “Who are you to beg from me?”

“I am no one, and I am definitely not anything of worth in your eyes. But I beg of you, please spare my Cheng-er, Liu Yue, I am begging you...”

“Shut up. you are not worthy to even mention my name.” Her voice did not contain fury, but only an icy cold tone that carried an absolute ruthlessness.

It was an absolute determination not to spare anyone.

Hearing the steel in Liu Yue’s voice, Empress Liu could only kneel on the ground, crying softly. Then, suddenly, as if she was possessed, she looked up and glared at Liu Yue, her eyes were full of anger. She gritted her teeth and said, “Mu Rong Liu Yue, don’t be too happy. Although we have lost today, we did not lose completely.

If you let Cheng-er go, I will give my life to you today. If you persist on being ruthless, don’t blame me for being ruthless too.

You were poisoned by me, if you let my son Cheng-er go, I will give you the antidote to the poison. Otherwise, we’ll meet Hades together. Even if

we die, we will not let you live.”

Her words were full of vengeance as they burst out from Empress Liu’s mouth. It was her trump card, it was her last strand of hope.

When she heard Empress Liu’s threat, Liu Yue’s mouth slowly curled, into an icy cold, yet bloodthirsty smile.

Liu Yue slowly walked towards Empress Liu, and knelt down beside her and grabbed Empress Liu’s lower jaw, her dark and bloodstained pupils locked on to Empress Liu’s frightened eyes.

Liu Yue coldly replied, “Did you really think that you have a chance of negotiating with me by playing with poison? Let me tell you something, I am the master of poison and toxins. You have misjudged me if you think you could use poison to turn me into a vegetable that will slowly die slowly by poison.”

When she heard the symptoms of the poison that she had administered to Liu Yue, the ferocious, dagger-sharp look on Empress Liu’s face was suddenly frozen with shock.

Chapter 148: Resurgence of Another Chaos

(4)

Her body suddenly snapped up to look at Liu Yue, but nothing came out from her mouth.

How could it...how could it be? How could she know what poison she gave her? Exactly how skilled was Mu Rong Liu Yue? Who was she exactly?

How could she know everything? Why was she helpless against her?

Her body started trembling as Empress Liu started to feel truly afraid. The fear in her eyes almost swallowed her whole.

Seeing the fear in Empress Liu's face, Liu Yue narrowed her eyes, killing aura emitting from her body, "Since you liked playing with poison so much, I shall personally send you away with poison."

Her hands shot out as she grasped Empress Liu's lower jaw with two fingers. Empress Liu's small mouth was immediately forced open wide.

With a flick of her wrist, that precious poison from inside the treasury appeared in Liu Yue's palms.

Smiling coldly, she poured the poison into Empress Liu's mouth, drop by drop. Liu Yue watch emotionlessly as Empress Liu's face distorted with fear.

With a cold humph, Liu Yue swung her hands, throwing Empress Liu hard down to the ground.

"Wuwu..." Unable to close her mouth, unable to speak, only weak, unstoppable whimpers could come out of Empress Liu's mouth. Then, she suddenly started scratching her whole body, using all the strength she had in her hands.

However, the more she tried to scratch away the itchiness, the more painful it got.

Countless bloody scars started to appear on her body. Her skin had been

torn away, revealing the flesh underneath.

However, Empress Liu didn't stop scratching herself as she kept rolling on the ground.

She wanted to stop, but couldn't. She had consumed a poison that will break one's heart and decay one's bone. After consuming such a poison, one would die from scratching as their bodies would be turned into mush.

They would watch themselves die yet unable to take their own lives. This poison was indeed the most ruthless and evil of all poison.

Empress Liu's body continued to distort as she approached her death. In the silent night, her cries sent chills down everyone's spines.

Raising her head, Liu Yue ignored Empress Liu who was writhing on the ground as she started towards the Eastern Palace.

The willow trees planted along the way danced with the wind, bringing the scent of flowers so sweet that it could penetrate people's hearts. The whole place was silent, so silent that not even a sound was heard.

Nobody heard it when Empress Liu struggled in her last moments; not even any breathing sound were heard. It was complete silence, a deathly silence.

There was no one in the Eastern Palace. All the servants were gone, the palace hall was an empty space.

Illuminated by moonlight, Liu Yue kicked the Eastern Palace door open, stepping inside the empty hall.

Chapter 149: Resurgence of Another Chaos (5)

“Creak.” The heavy sound of the palace door resounded through the silent night.

“You came.” Under the dim lights, Xuan Yuan Cheng, wearing his Crown Prince’s Robe, sat in the middle of the main hall. Playing with the wine cup in his hand, he looked at Liu Yue with a faint smile on his face.

Xuan Yuan Cheng was calm and refined, unlike the Left Minister who was devastated with fear and Empress Liu who was overwhelmed with shock.

Liu Yue gazed coldly at Xuan Yuan Cheng. Not bad, if he did not have the intention to harm Xuan Yuan Che, she would have spared him because of his demeanour today.

People should maintain their demeanour even in death.

Under the dark sky, the dim lights illuminated.

“There is no familial affection in the imperial family. It would only result in either your death or mine. I don’t blame the gods or you for this ending, my only regret was my lack of skill compared to you. I concede my defeat..” Xuan Yuan Cheng said as he smiled calmly at Liu Yue who was emitting a murderous aura.

Liu Yue stood coldly at the Main Hall door, watching Xuan Yuan Cheng.

“Such a shame that I didn’t get to meet a wife like you. Che is really lucky.” Xuan Yuan Cheng chuckled while shaking his head.

If he had Liu Yue, then the ending for today would have been different.
Fate has decided.

Laughing while looking at Liu Yue who radiated an aura of killing intent, Xuan Yuan Cheng suddenly shook his head and said: “Two lone wolves will naturally attract each other, with no room for any outsiders.”

Liu Yue gazed coldly at Xuan Yuan Cheng as she listened to his words and thought that this guy had quite a way with his words.

“Enough talk.” However, this does not mean she would spare him, thus she allowed him to choose his own manner of death.

Looking at the murderous but beautiful Princess Consort Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Cheng still showed no fear. He then held up the wine cup in his hands and indicated to her the moment had come. He slowly swallowed the drink without saying any superfluous words.

Winner takes it all. It was the rule from ancient times.

Seeing this, Liu Yue turned around and walked towards the door. Sometimes, enemies can also be given respect.

“Liu Yue, don’t be too happy. You and Che might not be together in the end.” Behind her, Xuan Yuan Cheng softly sighed as he spoke with a gentle tone.

“Do not make me grind your bones to ashes.” Liu Yue said without turning around, but her voice suddenly became even colder.

Chapter 150: Resurgence of Another Chaos (6)

Black blood trickled down the corner of his lips. Xuan Yuan Cheng stared at Liu Yue's back, and whispered, "Liu Yue, there are some things that you do not know; Che does not know as well. With your looks, your looks...aih...Failure is the foundation of success; success is the lurking place of failure...You two are bound to be separated... Never.... Possible..."

His soft voice faded away. Xuan Yuan Cheng tilted his head, and shut his eyes.

His body did not move, he remained highly seated in his throne.

Liu Yue knitted her eyebrows. What did Xuan Yuan Cheng mean? Damn, he never finished his sentence.

"My life is in my control and no one else's. Me and Xuan Yuan Che will be together forever because I said so." She swung her robe sleeve and strode out of the Eastern Palace.

In this world, no one can separate her and Xuan Yuan Che. No one.

Shadows of blood lurk within the dark night, killing intent filling the air.

The night was getting darker and darker.

The smell of blood was extremely strong, spreading to all four direction.

Tian Chen kingdom's ministers and generals was completely cleansed.

The massacre lasted through the night until dawn. And as the streak of morning light appeared in the blue horizon, everything peacefully returned to its place.

As dawn breaks, the sun shone brightly, lighting up the ground.

The ground was clean. There was nothing on it. Only the smell of blood remained in the air.

The morning clock rang; it was time for the ministers and generals to

start their office.

A new day continues.

Tian Chen kingdom has changed, but nobody talked about the massacre that took place at night. Nobody mentioned that a few officials were missing. Nobody even talked about the mourning for crown prince and the empress. Everyone was silent.

With Right Minister's authority that had become so powerful and Imperial Consort Chen as the Empress, nobody in Tian Chen would be able to fight against Xuan Yuan Che for his throne succession.

However, he was not present.

With the chaos that had been going on in Tian Chen, Tian Chen had now become the focus of the seven kingdoms.

Rain poured down as the wind blew through every corner of the country. This country was about to face a big change.

The peace between the seven kingdoms had now been shaken.

Tian Chen palace.

"There are ten thousand Chen Kingdom's soldiers at the border, and twenty thousand Zhao kingdom's soldiers are also close by. This is not good." Right Minister told Xuan Yuan Yi, clutching the information in his hands.

Chapter 151: Resurgence of Another Chaos

(7)

It's been a long time since the seven kingdoms had had an actual war. There were small battles from time to time, but never a war.

Now Chen kingdom and Zhao kingdom had sent soldiers to the borders of Tian Chen's kingdom. They were eyeing Tian Chen, getting ready to strike.

Xuan Yuan Yi put on a serious face and stayed silent.

Right now, Tian Chen's first general Mu Rong Wu Di was absent. Even though the Mu Rong Clan was still here, they still couldn't be compared to Mu Rong Wu Di.

The second general, Fei Cheng Lie, was a spy and he had already returned to Hou Jin kingdom.

His most outstanding son, Xuan Yuan Che, was not around as well. If he were here, Chen and Zhao kingdom wouldn't even dared to think of attacking.

Now, without Tian Chen's most powerful fighters, Chen and Zhao kingdom had targeted this chance, eyeing Tian Chen, ready to attack.

"Your highness, what will happen to Tian Chen?" Empress Chen asked with a dark look on her face.

"The only thing we can do is to observe silently and send soldiers..."

"Observe silently? If we wait for others to attack, to swallow Tian Chen, and then send soldiers, that will be too late." Liu Yue said, interrupting Xuan Yuan Yi.

Xuan Yuan Yi, Right Minister and Empress Chen looked at Liu Yue surprisingly.

"I don't know how to fight a war. But Liu Chuan, Chen Si, and Zhou Chen do. I will send them to protect Tian Chen now that Xuan Yuan Che isn't around." Liu Yue stated firmly.

Xuan Yuan Yi was shocked. He looked at Liu Yue.

Liu Yue stood up and walked out of the room. “No one will touch what belongs to Xuan Yuan Che. Before he returns, no one is allowed to touch it!”

With a steel determination, Liu Yue decided to guard Xuan Yuan Che’s Kingdom when he couldn’t. She must protect Xuan Yuan Che’s possessions. She couldn’t allow Xuan Yuan Che to face a desolated, ruined country when he returned.

Her tiny figure casted a long, long shadow under the scorching sun.

She wasn’t huge, but she was determined and strong.

The summer was fiery, but not as fiery as her heart.

The sky was ocean-blue, peppered with white clouds drifting with the wind. All was beautiful, all was good.

Chapter 152: Resurgence of Another Chaos (8)

Even without Xuan Yuan Che in Tian Chen, they still had Liu Yue.

If she did not know something, she could always learn it. As long as she was here, anyone who wanted to attack Tian Chen, would be sent back to their home.

Fighting a war day and night, she was not afraid of it at all.

In a blink of an eye, three years had already flown by.

As if they were welcoming the new spring, the flowers were in full bloom.

Willow trees sprouted new leaves, growing their branches towards the warm spring sun. Clear water in the rivers flowed with jingling sounds, so swiftly, so worry-free.

In the light blue sky, white clouds seemed to chase and play with each other.

Time to time, the clouds would change their shapes into rabbit, then turned into a tiger. Rolling in the skybed, they would change their shapes many times.

The mountain and rivers still looked as tender as ever.

Here at Yi Shui city, which was the biggest town south of Hou Jin kingdom.

This time, cherry trees had already blossomed and fell swiftly to the ground. Although it was spring, in this town, the hot weather felt like a summer's heat.

Because many people entered and exited from the North and the South of Yi Shui city, it had become the most crowded place in the world in just a short time.

The reason why so many people had come to Yu Shui, was because the

city's mayor had been posting notices that invited heroes from all the seven kingdoms to join their assembly. It did not matter if they were aristocrats, assassins or fighters, as long as they were skilled in martial arts, anyone was welcomed. They were all invited to participate in the Wu Lin Championship to fight for the title of the strongest martial artist.

The Wu Lin Championship itself was generally not a big deal. However, Hou Jin Kingdom's ruler had announced that the grand prize for this competition be that the winner of the competition would be bestowed the position of Third-ranked General to serve in the Imperial Court. Even their families would be raised to nobilities. It was a chance to succeed from rags to riches!

The second and third winner would receive twenty thousand pieces of gold and would be bestowed the title of a Fourth-ranked General.

Once these news was spread outside, every single martial artist in all seven kingdoms immediately made their way towards the Championship. It was a rare opportunity to gain power and riches.

Such a rare event, who wouldn't want to give it a try?

However, it was not just the fighters who wanted to fight, the other six kingdoms who had malicious intents had also sent their spies into Hou Jin Kingdom's Wu Lin Championship, inciting turbulent times.

Meanwhile, the supervisor of this Championship, the mayor of Yi Shui City, had also spoken.

"To pay tributes to our fellow martial artists who will be joining the competition, I will take out the treasure of my town, the "Blood Toad". This will be added to the grand prize."

The Blood Toad was a rare antidote for a lot of poisons and it could also cure any kind of diseases. It was an invaluable treasure, it's worth couldn't be valued by mere gold.

With this rare item added to the grand prize, who could resist the temptation to give this competition a try?

Chapter 153: Resurgence of Another Chaos (9)

Those who did not desire high ranks in court, desire the blood toad. And those who did not desire the blood toad, desire a high rank in court.

All those who were greedy were brought in by these desires. If it wasn't for name, it was for rewards. It's hard to find someone who didn't have a desire in the world today.

Because of their desires, people have crowded into Hou Jin kingdom.

Yi Shui City, in the past few days, had become the liveliest place on earth.

"Woosh!" Dirt scattered on the ground as three steeds stopped near a small shelter at Yi Shui City's borders.

"Waiter, get me three bowls of tea." Three bulky men jumped off their horses and walked towards the pavilion.

"Yes, yes. Please have a seat, sir." Inside the pavilion, the awfully busy old man in charge of the place shouted out. A twelve to thirteen year old boy who was in charge of pouring tea carried the teapot and rushed over. He had a big smile on his face.

These two days had been great. On usual days, there were hardly any customers. But these two days, this place had been filled with customers. Their tiny shop had barely any seats left. If only their business stayed this way, they would be rich.

Meanwhile, under the pavilion, many people had taken their seats; their humble place almost full. Different people of different sizes had traveled here from different directions. They had all gathered here, engaging in exciting conversations.

"Fuck, I'm so tired!! Fortunately we managed to arrive before the championship started." One of the bulky men who seemed to be the leader wiped the sweat from his forehead as he shouted out.

Sweating so much in the cool spring showed how rushed he was trying to get here.

“That’s right. If we came late, we would regret it for the rest of our lives.” said another, gulping down his tea as he sat down with a loud boom.

“You know, big brother, second brother, we shouldn’t held our hopes too high. I heard that Xue Sheng Kingdom’s number one fighter, Chen Mu, is here as well.”

These news silenced the whole pavilion as everyone pricked up their ears.

Meanwhile, an ordinary looking carriage drove by slowly. The windows on the carriage were shut tight neatly. The black steed pulling the carriage looked just as ordinary as the carriage itself.

These kind of carriages could be seen more than a hundred times a day in Yi Shui City now. No one would have paid any attention to it.

Chapter 154: Resurgence of Another Chaos (10)

Under the blue sky, the carriage trotted along the road. It wasn't fast, but it wasn't slow either. It just travelled as if it wasn't affected by the liveliness of the city, yet it had a pace of its own.

The carriage looked cold and icy, as if it couldn't be melted by the heat of this weather.

It kept its pace and posture as it travelled.

Although the carriage looked ordinary, a precious pearl had hidden inside.

The carriage drove over slowly. The carriage driver wore a straw hat to hide his face. When he overheard the conversation, he slowed down the carriage and passed by at a much slower pace.

"That can't be helped. Since Chen Mu is here, we will have to give him the grand prize. Besides there's still a second and third prize. We will still be given titles as court officials." said the oldest brother, the bulky man who first spoke.

Chen Mu is not only a skilled fighter in Xue Sheng kingdom. He was also a well-known character among the seven kingdoms. He always travelled alone, he was a true loner! Who would've thought he'd be here today as well.

In the carriage, a person was sitting on the cushioned seat. He toyed with the album on his hand. Hearing this, he stopped.

"That can't be for sure. Chen Mu is strong, but I hear that Chen kingdom's Feng Cheng is here too. Who will win isn't for sure." said another man.

"That can't be. He's here too?"

"God, why are all the skilled fighters here?"

"How would we have a chance then?" Hearing these, everyone in the

pergola started complaining.

Feng Cheng was also a world-class fighter. He had rejected to serve in the court no matter how much greatness Chen kingdom has promised him. But he made an appearance here today.

“Looks like there are many who wants the Blood Toad.” a voice murmured from within the carriage as it drove by slowly.

The voice was deep, and cold.

“Master, I have received news that Zhao Kingdom’s Crown Prince and Nan Song kingdom’s fourth prince are here too.” said another deep, cold voice.

“Oh, they have all come.” The person inside played with the book in his/her hands, as if he/she wasn’t surprised.

“What other news have you heard?” the person in the carriage asked, flipping a page in the book.

Chapter 155: Resurgence of Another Chaos

(11)

“Nothing else.” the driver of the carriage replied quite quickly.

“You are demoted. Go take your own punishment of thirty beatings.” said the cold voice from the carriage.

The driver immediately lowered his head and replied promptly, “Yes.”

“How can Du Gu Ye not come to such a big event? How can he not notice Hou Jin kingdom’s scheme? And yet you guys have not found out any news of his actions.” That cold voice was not threatening, yet, nobody could defy it.

The carriage trotted past the tiny pavilion, leaving everyone else behind. Phoenix Inn, one of Yi Shui City’s best tavern.

“Owner, your place is so empty. Why aren’t you allowing anyone to stay?” Meanwhile, many travelers who had not found a place to stay had crowded in front of Phoenix Inn, looking for a place to stay.

These couple of days, people have filled up Yi Shui city. All the inns were full, except for this one. However, Phoenix Inn did not receive any more guests.

“We have already told you, someone has booked the whole inn. We will not be recepting any guests. Please look elsewhere, no one would be allowed in here.” answered the inn’s owner.

“Booked the whole inn? Who in the world...”

“That damn bastard. Why would he book the whole place? This guy is fucking looking for a beat up.”

“I wanna see who did this...”

In just a moment, the people outside Phoenix Inn started complaining their dissatisfaction and anger, causing a ruckus.

Under all the racket, that ordinary carriage came by slowly, towards

Phoenix Inn.

“Don’t go there. There’s no place to stay in there.” Some travellers yelled to the carriage in bad mood. The inn wouldn’t even receive one tael of gold when they tried to. This ordinary-looking carriage that was about to collapse would never be able to make it in.

But the carriage ignored them and kept driving towards the inn.

In front of the door, the carriage driver swung his whip and threw something onto the inn owner’s hands.

The inn owner froze. He looked at the item in his hands and immediately smiled. He welcomed the carriage politely and bowed. “Sir, you are finally here. Please come in, everything has been well-prepared. We guarantee your satisfaction.”

The surrounding crowd let out an outcry.

At this moment, a white, long arm appeared from the carriage, lifting the carriage’s sunset-coloured curtains.

Chapter 156: Wu Lin Championship (1)

The person had naturally black and shapely eyebrows, fresh red lips, even without the help of lipstick, and eyes clear and bright like the stars. His elegance was indescribable.

In that moment, the crowd around that person slowly quieted down as those thoughts flashed across their minds.

They could only see the person in front of them who was wearing a simple, moon white long robes coming out from the carriage. His long hair was tied together, blowing in the wind. He didn't wear a lot of decorations, yet his grace was as high as the skies above him, proud and arrogant.

His whole body emitted an aura of quiet coldness and independence.

A pair of pupils black as obsidian swept across the crowd. Even the brilliance of the sunlight looked pale compared to him. He was handsome as if he came straight out of a painting. He was graceful and elegant, a man of the best qualities.

The travellers were people who had never seen such a person before. Seeing the beautiful man, they began to panic. They had never seen such a remarkable look.

The white-clad man swept his gaze across the people around him indifferently, then strode forward towards the tavern. The carriage driver also immediately followed along.

It was only after the white-clad man disappeared into the tavern that the crowd outside could react, every single one of them too dumbstruck to say anything else.

If it was a girl with such a beautiful look, they could still comprehend that, but it was clearly a man.

They were stupefied for a man, that was really...

It's just that his gaze had attracted them without them knowing why. They couldn't help but be drawn to him; it was as if he was born to

attract all the gazes around him.

Now that they think about it again, it was quite ridiculous.

The crowd of people who manage to break the spell immediately regretted. How could they be attracted to a man's gaze so much that they forgot to ask him if he would let them stay in the inn. Now, the man had gone inside and they couldn't ask him. Should they really stay outside tonight?

In the next moment, the crowd outside started to cause a ruckus.

Inside the inn, the carriage driver dismissed the Inn owner who was trying to suck up to them, then followed the white-clad man into the largest room of the inn.

"Master, please drink some tea." taking off the straw hat he was wearing on his head, the carriage driver revealed his face. He looked strict and cold; it was indeed the number one guard from Blood Shadow Guards, Du Yi, who was one of Liu Yue's subordinates.

"No need." the white-clad man lifted his head and looked towards the beautiful spring blooms in the courtyard outside.

Vibrant colours and beautiful sceneries, the view was splendid beyond words.

Observing closely, with those pair of black obsidian eyes, who else could it be but Liu Yue?

It was just that she was even more beautiful, calmer and more collected than the thirteen years old Liu Yue. She was practically a copy of Lin, her previous life's persona.

Chapter 157: Wu Lin Championship (2)

At this moment, she was wearing a whole body of white male outfit that masked her jagged and murderous aura, leaving behind only a cool aura and a handsome figure. There was no hint of her as a woman dressed as a man. Not even a guy could compare to the indifference and the elegant arrogance that she gave off. On the surface, she definitely looked like a real guy.

“Is there any news by the sea?” Liu Yue asked in a low voice, standing by the window.

“No.” Du Yi answered with a bow.

Hearing this, Liu Yue frowned as she looked out at the boundless sky. It's been three years since she saw Xuan Yuan Che.

Three years ago, she sent Du Yi and company to secretly protect Xuan Yuan Che to look for the mysterious clan. But when they made it out of Tian Chen Kingdom, Mu Rong Wu Di appeared and commanded them to stop following. Otherwise, if they were discovered, the mysterious clan would not provide any treatment for Xuan Yuan Che.

Left with no choice, Du Yi could only return to report their mission.

Three years ago, Mu Rong Wu Di escorted Xuan Yuan Che to look for that unknown person, with no information about his background and no name to be known. Since then, Mu Rong Wu Di had also not returned to Tian Chen kingdom. He would only send updates from time to time.

In the few updates, he mentioned that Xuan Yuan Che had been recovering. As the poison was located in Xuan Yuan Che's heart meridian, it was tricky to treat. One of the medicinal recipes needed a long preparation time. This was why they still couldn't return home.

Liu Yue tracked the news from Mu Rong Wu Di, trying to look for him, but she found out that Mu Rong Wu Di had left across the sea. The carrier pigeon had flown across the ocean, to a place where she wouldn't be able to find even if she tried.

With no hopes of finding him, all she could do is wait. Waiting for Xuan Yuan Che to return himself, she could only wait for him.

The clouds floated by, and the birds chirped their songs. Three years went by in the blink of an eye. Liu Yue was already sixteen.

Staring into the boundless sky, Liu Yue's frown turned into a smile. She had grown up, and she was different from when she was little. She wondered if Xuan Yuan Che would still be able to recognize her when he comes back. If he couldn't, she would definitely cast him into a cesspit.

Taking a deep breath, she gathered her wandering thoughts and turned to Du Yi, "Any news from the border?"

"Things are fine at the border. Chen and Zhao kingdom still have their soldiers there, but there are no sign of any threats. General Liu Chuan asks you not to worry."

Hearing this, Liu Yue nodded her head. Three years ago, Chen and Zhao kingdom sent their soldiers to Tian Chen's borders, wanting to attack Tian Chen. Knowing this, she took Liu Chuan, Chen Si, Zhou Cheng, the rest of Xuan Yuan Che's commanders and the ten-thousand strong Tiger army to guard the border.

Chapter 158: Wu Lin Championship (3)

She knew neither the art of war nor any military strategy, but Liu Chuan and the rest did.

And also, by some means unknown to her, Mu Rong Liu Yue's reputation had spread to Chen Kingdom and Zhao Kingdom. Upon hearing that she Mu Rong Liu Yue was leading Xuan Yuan Che's soldiers and commanders to oversee the battle, Chen Kingdom and Zhao Kingdom's tensions actually seemed to heighten.

Perhaps it was due to her notoriety and her origins from an influential family of military commanders.

For the Emperor of Tian Chen to have entrusted such an important military strength to her, she must not be merely skilled at killing. She may even have immense talent for a commander, hence everyone started to develop a caution when facing her.

Once the sentiment of cautiousness arose, they did not dare to attack on a large scale, but instead launched small-scale attacks to test out the waters.

Such small scale attacks were jumped upon by the battle-experienced Liu Chuan and the rest, resulting in an entire defeat of the Chen Kingdom and Zhao Kingdom armies.

Such a flawless defeat immediately curbed the offensive tendencies of Chen Kingdom and Zhao Kingdom.

Also, Mu Rong Yi and the rest who subsequently arrived also donned their armour to join the battle. The Mu Rong army emblem was also not a product of fraud, but a sign of impressive military vestige.

After a few small battles, Chen Kingdom and Zhao Kingdom failed to advance even an inch, and Mu Rong Liu Yue's name grew in prominence across the borders.

Chen Kingdom and Zhao Kingdom grew afraid of the Tian Chen Kingdom that had lost Xuan Yuan Che but gained a person like Mu Rong

Liu Yue, and immediately held back their attacks.

Such a stagnant situation carried on for two years.

Upon seeing that Chen Kingdom and Zhao Kingdom failed to procure any military advantage for themselves, the other countries at the border followed suit in stalling any form of military action. This stagnant situation gave a misleading impression of calmness, but the real situation was only known to the countries involved.

Despite that, Mu Rong Liu Yue's name resounded across the countries.

She became a powerful person who was well-versed in both martial and the literary arts, and also capable of commanding battles to defeat enemies. She rapidly approached the ranks of the then renowned top genius of the world, Xuan Yuan Che.

However, Liu Yue, Liu Chuan and the rest knew the reality behind such a reputation.

Mastering the art of war and military strategies cannot be achieved within a short period of time, and neither can the intricacies be grasped by merely theorising on paper. Actual experience on the battlefield was needed; each kill and battle was essential to build such mastery.

It was an era of raw killing of hundreds and thousands of people, where one single victory was built on the corpses of tens of thousands, rather than the modern era where wars were fought merely with the simple firing of a cannon or the dropping of an atomic bomb.

Chapter 159: Wu Lin Championship (4)

The strategies undertaken in the era of weapons in arms were not something the modern generation can understand. The control needed to strategize both human and military resources cannot be gained in just a day.

Hence, even though Mu Rong Liu Yue's reputation was as high as the heavens, she understood exactly the true extent of her capabilities.

Now that there was no cause for fear at the borders, she was going to do what she was best at.

To defend Tian Chen for Xuan Yuan Che, it was not necessary to fight the battle at the borders. Once they had pulled through the most dangerous moment, switching to the offensive was the best way to defend.

This was her motto.

"Du Yi, help me ..."

"Fellow traveller friend in the inn, my name is Yun Zhao. I have long admired this season's Wu Lin Championship, and have specially come a long way from Xue Sheng Kingdom, but I was delayed for a few days and all the inns are full; there isn't even a place to rest. Hai, why is it so crowded? My fellow traveller friend, can you let me stay in this room? I promise to be silent and not disturb you."

Liu Yue's words barely left her mouth as a clear voice suddenly sounded out, with a hint of helplessness and complaint, and lots of fawning intent.

The voice was brimming with the genteelness of a poor scholar.

Upon hearing the voice, Liu Yue stopped what she was going to say, bent her head and looked out of the window.

The room she was staying in was situated at the topmost area of the Inn such that entire street could be seen from her point of view.

At this moment, outside the inn, a man in a light blue robe was standing near the rear wall of the inn and was repeatedly bowing to her

with both hands clasped in front of him. A bright smile decorated his face.

His shapely eyebrows framed a face that gave off a positive radiance that resembled the bright rays of the sun. He was like a shining beacon of light, different from Xuan Yuen Che's enchanting beauty, and unlike Du Gu Ye's beauty that could cause a kingdom's downfall.

As Liu Yue looked at him, an indescribable look flashed past her eyes. She lightly tapped at the window frame with her fingers.

Behind her, Du Yi immediately bowed his head. Shit, their investigations failed to inform them that he was here too.

"Please let me stay here, I don't want to sleep on the streets." With an aggrieved expression on his face, Yun Zhao looked at Liu Yue with a fawning smile.

Upon seeing this, Liu Yue broke out into a slow smile. This person is somewhat interesting. Since he wants to come in, I'll just let him.

She nodded and said: "Sure." Her indifferent voice transmitted into the distance, in her usual chilly tone.

Chapter 160: Wu Lin Championship (5)

“Ah, thank you, brother, thank you.” said Yun Zhao. Upon Liu Yue’s agreement, he instantly smiled. His tone also became incredibly intimate. A second ago, they were only friends and now they seemed to have become brothers.

Without another look, Liu Yue turned and shut her windows.

“Go.” Liu Yue said to Du Yi, who had his head hung low.

Du Yi nodded his head, and quickly backed out without another word.

Playing with the teacup on the table, Liu Yue’s eyes gleamed. Looks like everyone who was supposed to be here had already arrived; and those who should not be here were here as well. Looks like the symposium would be much livelier than she had anticipated.

The spring breeze was fresh and cooling. The weather outside was clear and bright.

Three days passed, in the blink of an eye, it was already the day for the symposium to begin.

It was very crowded. The whole of Yi Shui city had crowded towards the symposium.

As usual, Liu Yue wore her long, white robe; with her black hair tied up. Slowly, she walked down the stairs, looking extremely casual.

“Brother, are you going to the symposium as well?” Yun Zhao asked loudly, with a smile spread across his face.

Liu Yue glanced at Yun Zhao. Expressionless, she nodded her head.

Yun Zhao had done just like what he had said, that he would definitely not disturb her peace. She had been here for three days and the place has been very quiet. Looks like he was quite the promise keeper.

“Good, good. I’m also going to watch for fun. We’ll be on the same road together.” Yun Zhao’s smile became even brighter.

He walked towards Liu Yue. He waved the fan in his hand and looked at

Liu Yue, smiling, "Pardon me, but I don't think I've gotten your name, brother."

"Liu Yue." Liu Yue threw out these two words, and continued walking.

"Liu Yue? Are you a member of the Liu Clan in Lin Nan?" Yun Zhao asked, trying to think.

"No." Liu Yue replied, monotone.

Yun Zhao raised his eyebrow. He didn't think that it was weird that Liu Yue did not belong to the Liu family in Lin Nan. He just smiled and said, "Brother Liu, the symposium will be lively and crowded. If brother Liu has a spot picked out, it would be nice if we could sit together." he murmured, following Liu Yue out the door.

"I don't have any spots reserved." Liu Yue answered.

Chapter 161: Wu Lin Championship (5)

Yun Zhao's eyes became wide open with surprise. He looked at Liu Yue as if she were some kind of monster.

"No way, brother Liu. With no seats reserved, you would have to go with the crowd outside the court. There are too many people there, you won't be able to see anything."

With that said, he suddenly let out a laugh. He patted Liu Yue on the shoulder, and said, "But that's okay. I reserved a spot, you should just sit with me. It would be nice if we could talk, and I can consider this as repaying brother Liu."

"Very well." Liu Yue answered without any hesitation, and continued walking out.

"Very cool!" Yun Zhao exclaimed, swiping his fan open. "I like your personality, brother Liu." he said, smiling, walking alongside Liu Yue.

The stage that was put up for the challenges has already been surrounded by many spectators.

The round stage was set up in the middle of a square just outside the city. The stage was bedded with green stones and was much higher than the surrounding spectators.

Around the stage, there were towers built up. The towers held many important guests and officials.

And behind the towers were the sea of spectators.

Looking out, there were tens of thousands of people. There were so many people that it made the place hot.

Following Yun Zhao, they went to the seat he reserved. A front seat on the west. It was considered a very good seat. Perhaps a seat that even money can't buy.

But without a word, Liu Yue naturally sat on the seat. And very naturally, she started sipping on her tea, as if she owned the place.

When outsiders see it, they might consider her rude or consider her not to be afraid of anyone.

Brother Liu, look. Feng Cheng of Chen kingdom. He's very good with a knife. He's never failed before."

"Ah, brother Liu, look, look! That's Chen Mu of Xue Sheng kingdom. Our most skilled fighter of Xue Sheng kingdom, he is definitely going to win..."

"Ah, quick, look, brother Liu..."

Chapter 162: Wu Lin Championship (7)

As he sat, Yun Zhao immediately spied the party of Chen Mu opposite him, and his eyes glowed in excitement.

Rapidly fanning himself, with incessant chatter, he went on and on about the skilled fighters of the Seven Kingdoms, as if they were all pets of his family and he knew every single detail about them.

A person as bright as the sunshine as him naturally had a lot to say; however, some things that he said could be quite useful.

Liu Yue sipped her tea and looked at the people Yun Zhao was excitedly gesturing at, taking note of every single skilled fighter she did not recognise.

“Brother Liu, you see, that is Yin Shui city’s mayor, this old guy actually owns a blood toad, what good luck he has! Why does it not happen to me? If I am skilled in martial arts, I will definitely go up to fight for the first place, the blood toad is such a worthy item.”

With both eyes glowing, Yun Zhao’s stare threatened to bore a hole on the mayor who had started to give his opening ceremony speech and announce the commencement of the martial arts symposium.

That gaze was even more intense than seeing one’s own lover.

In the seating area which was packed like sardines with people pointing their fingers and having discussions loudly and excitedly, only the larger area where Liu Yue and Yun Zhao were sitting at was not occupied, with only the two of them there.

One was handsome and radiant as the sun, and the other’s charm resembled the luminous moonlight.

That magnificent grace and mildly cool attitude, and that astounding handsomeness, made it hard to tear one’s eyes away from them.

Of most of the distinguished guests, thirty percent of them were concentrating on the impending competition, but seventy percent of them were studying and looking at the handsome Liu Yue.

Even the mayor of Yi Shui City could not resist looking more than twice at this area.

Such a handsome person, where did he come from and why had he not seen him before? How was it possible for such perfection to exist?

In contrast, Liu Yue maintained a cold demeanor, and ignored the stares from her surroundings, seemingly unperturbed and composed.

Yun Zhao, who sat beside her also continued to chatter excitedly and incessantly, and the ease with which they behaved attracted even more attention.

At this moment, it was as if these people were not here for the competition, but for Liu Yue instead.

“Who is this person?” East of the stage, a middle-aged man sitting beside the mayor lowered his voice and asked.

Chapter 163: Wu Lin Championship (8)

“I don’t know, he came three days ago and spent a generous sum in renting Phoenix Inn. I don’t know his background, I only know his surname is Liu.” The mayor also lowered his voice.

For such a person who spent so excessively, he would naturally investigate his background first. It was just that there was no trail at all, as if this person had just appeared out of thin air.

After hearing this, the middle-aged man lifted his gaze to glance at Liu Yue, and gestured with his hands. Immediately, somebody behind him inconspicuously retreated into the shadows.

The official start of the Wu Lin Championship was marked with scenes of flipping shadows on the stage, complete with the flash of knives and swords in rapid motion.

Eight people; four pairs of matches were competing at the same time, with each pair taking a portion of the stage.

However, there was actually nothing exciting to see on the first day of the competition, as it always starts from the lowly skilled. Skilled experts like Chen Mu and his party sat at the seating area, and there was no sign of any movement towards the stage.

It was rumoured that people like Chen Mu and Feng Cheng were reknowned, so they did not need to enter into the first round of competition and could start from the second round onwards straight away.

The fights on the stage were very intensive, and the onlooking spectators cried out in shock again and again. However the audience sitting on the VIP seats in front did not show much reaction at all, hence it was obvious that these were just average people.

“That is the blood toad.” After a round of ear-numbing monologue, Yun Zhao saw a white jaded case placed at the most prominent area of the stage, and inside it was the blood toad.

From here, one could only see a faint reddish tint; its real appearance was not clear.

“The blood toad, shit, why didn’t I see when he put it that, damn it.” Yun Zhao grumbled, with regret all over his face.

Liu Yue ignored the complaining Yun Zhao beside her. He did not see it but she did. The blood toad which was barely bigger than a baby’s fist was as transparent as crystal with a reddish tint, and it was rather pretty.

The blood toad was indeed a good item, if Xuan Yuen Che ate it, it would be even better.

Her eyes narrowing slightly, Liu Yue drank a sip of her tea.

“Number 34, Liu Yue, versus, number 35, Fang Xiong.” On the east side of the stage, the winner had already been decided, and the emcee immediately announced aloud the participants of the next competition.

Chapter 164: Wu Lin Championship (9)

Upon hearing the announcement, Yun Zhao blinked in surprise, and then blinked again as he turned towards Liu Yue, his facial features twisting together in shock. “Brother Liu, you are participating?”

Liu Yue shot the stunned Yun Zhao a cold look and replied lowly, “Is there a problem?” As the words left her mouth, she slowly rose to her feet.

Seeing that Liu Yue unexpectedly stood up, the surrounding onlookers could not help but fell into silence suddenly, their loud discussions stopping unanimously. They could only fixed their gazes on Liu Yue.

This beautiful man who looked like he had walked out from a painting was actually going to compete.

“Brother Liu, knives and swords are blind, you ... you don’t even have a speck of inner internal strength, what ... what are you doing jumping into the fray?” Yun Zhao’s gaze travelled a few times over Liu Yue from head to toe, his brows furrowing.

“Also, you don’t even have a weapon, are you trying to court death?” Yun Zhao looked at Liu Yue’s empty hands, with a disapproving expression on his face.

Liu Yue ignored Yun Zhao and proceeded to walk down from the VIP seating area.

In a second, the entire seating area quieted down, with gazes from all around locked on Liu Yue.

As she walked to the side of the arena, Du Yi, who had not appeared for three days, suddenly emerged from behind, handing Liu Yue a zither.

Liu Yue took it, and propped her hand to lift herself onto the stage, in one swift moment.

Her white robes floated with the wind, in the middle of a group of malevolent, fierce-looking and bulky men. It almost resembled the contrast between heaven and earth.

“Pretty boy, you better leave now, otherwise I may crush you to death.” Upon seeing Liu Yue, the rude and coarse Fang Xiong standing opposite him immediately sported an expression of disdain on his face.

The arena of the martial arts competition was a place where life and death determined everything. Once one stood on that arena, life or death was the mandate of the heavens, and it was no child’s play.

Liu Yue glanced coldly at Fang Xiong and did not say anything. However, the thinly veiled contempt in her eyes could be clearly seen.

On seeing this, Fang Xiong immediately flew into a rage. He brandished the sharp knife in his hands and roared, “Then don’t blame me for not holding back!” The words barely left his mouth as he swung the knife in his hands, directly aiming at Liu Yue. He was intent on killing Liu Yue with a single blow without showing any mercy at all.

With his left arm around the zither, Liu Yue barely looked at Fang Xiong who had launched himself towards her. Her fingers slowly stroked at the zither, in a graceful manner, as if she wanted to play it.

Playing the zither in a life-and-death situation was simply a foolish lack of self-awareness, practically courting death.

“Look out, look out.” Yun Zhao leaped into the air in panic.

Chapter 165: Wu Lin Championship (10)

The surrounding crowd also had pitying looks on their faces. It was such a pity that the blood of such an attractive man was going to be spilled on the stage.

Only Du Yi, who had stood next to the arena after he handed over the zither, did not say a word. Even the look in his eyes did not change, calm and peaceful.

Liu Yue's fingers slowly stroked at the zither as the sharp knife was about to chop down on top of Liu Yue's head.

As her fingers caressed the zither strings skilfully, she suddenly flicked her middle finger, plucking the seventh string of her zither. She lightly pulled at the string and plucked with her fingertip.

"Peng!" The clear and crisp vibration of the string resounded in the air. A bolt of wind blade shot out, as fast as lightning.

There was only one sound, a slight noise, no other sounds were produced.

The sharp knife halted above Liu Yue's head. The facial muscles of the fierce-looking Fang Xiong could not stop twitching. He looked at Liu Yue as if he had seen a ghost. The astonishment in his eyes could barely be concealed.

With all five fingers on her right hand pressing on the string, Liu Yue carried the zither, turned and walked away. Her long, moon-white robe flew in the wind, as ethereal as an immortal deity.

Leaping swiftly down the stage, Liu Yue handed the zither over to Du Yi with ease. Without even looking at anybody else, she took big strides towards the exit of the arena.

Today, she only had one competition.

"What, it's already finished?" The emcee stared at the leaving Liu Yue with a foolish expression on his face, and then looked at Fang Xiong who was still on the stage. How could he determine who won and who lost?

“It’s already over.” The mayor tilted his head and glanced at Liu Yue who had left. A profound look flashed past his eyes.

“Peng.” Before the mayor finished speaking, Fang Xiong, who had been standing on the stage with his sharp knife lifted highly into the air, fell backwards onto the stage.

Blood oozed out from his neck. The stains were very light, but it was definitely fatal.

Death with one single blow.

After a temporary moment of silence, the spectators at the viewing platform exploded into cheers. Chen Mu, Feng Cheng and company who were seated highly on the grandstand also unanimously turned their heads to look at Liu Yue who had left.

Instant death with one blow, killing with zither strings.

What a strange martial art, what an incisive and sharp skill.

The white floating figure of Liu Yue passed through the crowd and left.

Three years ago, she discovered that book of controlling beasts with music in Tian Chen Imperial Palace’s secret treasury. For these three years, she had mulled over it many times, and had also practiced for a very long time.

She realised in the end that to control beasts with music, a large amount of inner strength was needed to transmit the music into the distance, and to achieve the most fundamental level of control.

Chapter 166: Wu Lin Championship (11)

Otherwise, the zither sound wouldn't be able to be transmitted into the distance. Beasts wouldn't be able to hear it. How could you control beasts with music then?

She didn't have a single thread of inner strength, so her zither sound were based on pure strength alone. Obviously, it was not realistic to train herself from ground zero, building her inner strength. This Book of Controlling Beast with Music, it's best if she stopped thinking about it.

However, although she didn't manage to learn how to control beasts with music, she had found another skill. She had succeeded in mastering 'Wind Blades', a skill that had the ability to kill people.

Sharp blades of wind could contain a huge amount of power. Especially in the moment they were just released, their blades were quick and sharp. It would definitely be enough to take a person's life. This was the science of aerodynamics that she had studied before in her previous life.

Killing a person with a blade of wind was a skill that she didn't want anyone to find out.

Although Mu Rong Liu Yue was full of talents, but she couldn't release blades of wind. Instead, this Liu Yue could.

(Shiro: Mu Rong Liu Yue = the Liu Yue before (13 y/o), Liu Yue = disguised as a man (16 y/o). Let me just try to clarify this. In the case of Mu Rong Liu Yue, Mu Rong is the last name, while Liu Yue is first name. When Liu Yue disguised herself as a guy, she named herself as Liu Yue, where Liu is the last name and Yue is the first name.)

Mu Rong Liu Yue was a female, yet, right now, she was a male.

His finesse was unmatched, killing his enemy in one-shot. In mere moments, Liu Yue's story spread throughout everyone involved in the Wu Lin Championship.

Everyone's conversations revolved around Liu Yue for the whole day. That Liu Yue, who had that unfathomable air of mystery, an unknown

origin, and good looks that had become the cause for many men's jealousy and dissatisfaction.

"Awesome, you are too awesome, Brother Liu! If I had known earlier that you are so powerful, I wouldn't be worried at all. Ah, it was a beautiful victory." Yun Zhao, who acted close to her on his own accord had decided to abandon his promise of not disturbing Liu Yue when they returned to the inn that night, chattering to her continuously. He lingered around Liu Yue, excitedly chirping on his joy and excitement.

It almost seemed like he was the one who had clinched that beautiful victory.

Liu Yue didn't care about him but she also didn't drive him away. She allowed him to talk to himself, letting him disturb her late into the night with his high spirits and elation. It was only late at night when he returned back to his room, still in high spirits.

The night was filled with a thick mist. Tomorrow was the second day of the Championship.

Liu Yue rested her body beside her bed. No matter what, she would get the Blood Toad, the first position, Hou Jin Kingdom, and Pei Cheng Lie. Humph.

Did he thought that she wouldn't find him if he hid himself in Hou Jin Kingdom? Stop your wishful thinking! Anyone who harmed Xuan Yuan Che would not be let off. Even if she had to cross deep valleys and vast oceans, she would never let them off.

The moon rose up high into the night sky, it was a silent night.

"Shh, shh." The gentle sound of the wind blowing sounded extremely soft to one's ears.

Laying on the bed, Liu Yue immediately flashed her eyes open. There was someone outside.

Sha sha, sha sha. Following a gust of wind, a few shadows appeared.

Liu Yue looked on top of her forehead as a cold smile flashed across her

face. Not bad, they had made use of the sound of wind to sneak onto her rooftop.

She closed her eyes, wanting to find out what these people outside her house planned to do.

The dark shadows came pouring down, barely audible from the window.

Chapter 167: Wu Lin Championship (12)

The soft sound of wind blew through as a small slit opened from the window without a sound. Sips of green smoke crept into the room slowly.

The whole process was done without a single sound, so quietly that if not for Liu Yue's sharp senses and experiences, she would also not be able to realize it.

The smoke was extremely faint, with neither color nor scent.

Liu Yue sniffed at it a little. Not bad, it was an impressive ** scent.

The corner of her mouth curved up a little as she revealed a cold smile. Trying to play this card against her? She wouldn't even use such a cheap trick eight hundred years in the past.

The hazy smoke started to spread out inside the room.

In the next moment, the window suddenly creaked open as a dark shadow flew into the room, light as a cat.

Liu Yue pretended to sleep without moving a muscle. However, nothing inside the room escaped her notice.

The intruder had obviously thought that Liu Yue was unconscious as he walked towards her with ease and confidence. He took out a small bottle from his clothes and held a grey item in between his fingers as he made his way towards Liu Yue's neck.

A thick waft of smell attacked her nose. The smell had the ability to make their targets drunk.

The person clad in black reached towards Liu Yue's neck, but he suddenly froze, the hair on his back raising up on its ends.

In front of him, Liu Yue who was supposed to be unconscious, was actually staring at him quietly with a pair of dark pupils, her eyes wide awake.

The darkness inside those eyes almost swallowed him whole, cold and merciless.

Such a level of coldness and killing intent, he almost never seen it before in his life.

“Incense. Not bad.” Her cold voice resounded slowly, penetrating the silence.

Incense. Amongst the different kinds of poison, it didn’t count as one of the strongest or most vicious ones. It would not be able to kill a person at once, but once a person was infected with the poison, if they did not consume the antidote once a month and continue the treatment for a year, their skin would rot away and they would die. Hence, the poison was actually quite vicious.

Administering such a poison to her, they must have wanted to control her.

Liu Yue’s eyes flashed with an even darker colour. It was only her first match today, yet there were already people targeting her, attacking her.

The black-clad man, hearing that Liu Yue guessed the poison he had with one try, could only froze in shock. He didn’t even dare to lay a hand on Liu Yue. Instead, he flew outside like an arrow, his figure disappearing from the room in an instant.

Seeing this, Liu Yue humphed coldly as her hands moved fast as lightning, grabbing onto the zither near her bed. A strand of string was plucked, jolting the curtain on her bed as a blade of wind flew towards the intruder.

Chapter 168: Wu Lin Championship (13)

They dared to come here to attack her. Sure, they could get in easily, but she would never let them out.

The black-clad person's body was already in the air, diving into the darkness of the night.

Although the wind blade had a late start, it quickly caught up, and the figure jumping in mid-air suddenly dropped down onto the ground with a loud boom. The figure struggled a little in the courtyard, before coming into a complete stop.

A slit of blood slowly oozed out from his nape.

No matter how fast a person can move, they wouldn't be able to move faster than the wind.

"What happened? What happened?" In the midst of the soft echos of the fall, the voice of Yun Zhao, who was staying at the ground floor, resounded through the night.

Following that, Liu Yue's door was suddenly barged open as Yun Zhao charged inside, inappropriately clothed. He even held his folding fan in his hands.

Hmm, he arrived so quickly. Liu Yue thought as she eyed Yun Zhao, who had entered into her room.

Inside the room, Yun Zhao didn't notice any kind of fighting situation. There was only Liu Yue, who was sitting on her bed looking coldly at him.

It looked like he was even more anxious than she herself. Yun Zhao couldn't help but blinked his eyes in confusion.

"Get out." Liu Yue glared at Yun Zhao, coldly throwing him her dismissal. Then, she turned her body and continued her sleep on her own accord. She looked like she was not even disturbed at the least by the event that had happened to her just now.

Seeing this, Yun Zhao could only rubbed his eyebrows. Then, he

suddenly snapped up as he smelled the air inside the room. Frowning, he asked, “ ** scent?”

As he said that, he quickly walked towards the curtain near the window that had been torn, not caring about the fact that this was Liu Yue’s room. He looked into the darkness of the night.

In the courtyard, the figure of the corpse had already disappeared, leaving only a trail of blood that glowed under the moonlight. It wasn’t very obvious to the eyes, yet it would definitely catch one’s attentions.

Yun Zhao frowned as he looked at the trail of blood on the ground, then turned to look at Liu Yue who was sleeping peacefully as she liked. After a moment, he raised his brows as he commented, “So, it turns out to be a cockroach.”

Saying that, he rubbed his chin and fanned the elegant fan in his hands. However, with his disheveled appearance, he didn’t look elegant at all, instead, he looked ridiculous.

“Then I shall go back to sleep. If another large cockroach comes by again, Brother, you should call for me. I can help you beat it. Seems like there are going to be more in these two days.” Fanning the fan in his hands, Yun Zhao rubbed his eyes as he gave a big yawn.

Chapter 169: Wu Lin Championship (14)

Liu Yue ignored him, and Yun Zhao did not seem like he wanted Liu Yue to say anything too. He walked out of the room with drooping eyelids.

Liu Yue herself didn't seem to care about it all, so why would he be so agitated.

The shadows of the trees outside swayed with the wind, the night peaceful as a lake.

Inside the house, it was also peaceful and quiet.

It really seemed like only a minor event had happened, only a cockroach had come.

The next day was a beautiful, crisp morning. The crowd who came to watch the Wu Lin Championship had increased even more; it might be due to the rumours that the beautiful hero, Liu Yue, would have a match today.

In the VIP seats, Liu Yue sat together with Yun Zhao, just like the previous day.

She sipped on her tea unhurriedly, looking so calm as if she was not one of the participants, but one of the audiences instead. She looked even more carefree than the other audiences sitting around her.

“Liu Yue vs Fang Hong.” A voice announced, and the audience seated below suddenly burst into applause. Every single one of them were locking their gaze on Liu Yue.

Amongst them, there was a beautiful girl who had put on too much make up.

Fang Hong, thirty years old. She looked beautiful, wielding a lancet in her hands as she walked towards the stage. Her body that looked as hard as iron shook the arena as she stepped on the stage.

Liu Yue watched her opponent without any expression on her face. She only reached out for the zither at her feet, not moving even a single inch

away from her position.

“Liu Yue, Liu Yue.” Seeing that Liu Yue had not even started walking towards the stage, the audience started to chant out her name.

“Brother Liu, quick, it’s your turn to go up the stage.” Seeing this, Yun Zhao nudged at Liu Yue.

Cheng Hong, who was standing at the arena, stared at Liu Yue with a sharp killing intent. She brandished her lancet, pointing it towards Liu Yue, who was still sitting on the VIP seats. Her open challenge for Liu Yue needs no words to be shown.

Seeing that, Liu Yue only humphed coldly, but her snow white fingers suddenly plucked at her zither. She plucked two strings, while facing towards Fang Hong, who was standing far away at the arena, emitting killing intent throughout her body.

Only two continuous zither tunes could be heard, and suddenly, Fang Hong’s eyes opened wide with shock. She stared disbelievingly towards Liu Yue’s direction, her throat croaking incomprehensibly as her knees buckled to the ground. She knelt on the ground, unmoving.

The surrounding crowd suddenly burst into a clamour.

Meanwhile, a fresh stream of blood slowly oozed out from Fang Hong’s body, who was still kneeling on the ground. Crimson blood stained the ground around her.

Chapter 170: Wu Lin Championship (15)

Those who sat far away might not be able to see it, but Jin Shui City's Lord, who sat at the Host's seat, could see everything clearly and distinctly. Astonishment filled his eyes.

From such a far distance, how could she kill Fang Hong with nothing? What kind of martial arts skill was that? Exactly how strong was this Liu Yue?

The astonishment in his eyes couldn't be concealed. Jin Shui City's Lord immediately turned towards the middle-aged man beside him, and the middle-aged man was also wearing an expression of shock in his face, his brows knotting tightly together.

The other guests sitting on the VIP seats also started whispering to each other, an expression of disbelief painted their faces.

From the participants waiting area, Chen Mu and the others were also blinking their eyes in shock. Their eyes were glued to Liu Yue; the radiance that she emitted almost blinding them.

Colour slowly return to their cheeks, as the surrounding audiences, who were pale from the initial shock, gradually started to come back to their senses.

Their murmurs immediately surged louder and louder.

"Did you die or forfeit?" Amongst the murmurs, sitting beside the expressionless Liu Yue, Yun Zhao jumped excitedly as he shouted towards Fang Hong, who was still kneeling at the arena.

Fang Hong, who was previously so arrogant and bossy, quickly paled, her face white as death. She didn't say anything; instead, she bowed her head in defeat.

Her meaning was clear.

Her sleeves fluttering in the wind, Li Yue then stood up and turned to leave.

Yun Zhao, who was sitting beside her, didn't wait for Du Yi to collect Liu Yue's zither. Instead he took it with him, hugging it closely as he followed right behind Liu Yue, his face grinning happily. Just like that, he walked away brazenly.

His face that was originally already handsome, shone even more with his smile, dazzling like sunshine.

Nobody tried to stop them. Anywhere Liu Yue chose to walk, the sea of people parted to give way to her.

On their faces, there were respect, shock and fear.

The two matches that Liu Yue had participated in, both ended in one-hit KO. To them, Liu Yue was like a bright star hidden in the darkness of the night that suddenly emitted a bright light, making her impossible to be missed.

Her limelight outshone the other fighters, including Chen Mu and Feng Cheng.

"Have you investigated it?"

"Yes, he came from overseas." Seated on the VIP seats, Jin Shui City's Lord reported.

"Overseas?" The middle-aged man, whose face still wasn't revealed, slowly frowned his brows.

Chapter 171: Wu Lin Championship (16)

“Yes. From the rumours on the street, he came from the East Seas and went through the Qu Kingdom before coming to our Hou Jin Kingdom. He only had one servant with him.” Jin Shui City’s Lord replied in a low voice.

The middle-aged man nodded and asked, “Who’s behind him?”

“No idea, we have not managed to find that out yet. We dispatched a few people yesterday night, but they were not able to find anything before they were killed. It seemed like either he was not a normal person or he had no one backing him at all.” Jin Shui City’s Lord frowned.

“Investigate it, you must find that out.”

“Yes.”

The sun glittered down upon the ground, as birds chirped and flowers bloomed. The Wu Lin Championship was bustling with excitement.

Since there were no scheduled matches for Liu Yue in the next two days, she stayed inside the Phoenix Inn.

A lot of people had brought gifts to meet her, but they were all blocked by Yun Zhao at the inn’s entrance. It almost seemed like he had really become Liu Yue’s brother and spokesperson.

Liu Yue neither stopped him nor got angry with him, she simply allowed Yun Zhao to do that.

Actually, Yun Zhao was actually quite dependable. The number of people who came in these two days almost made the Inn’s entrance collapse, but nobody managed to get inside to meet Liu Yue.

“Brother Liu, you must be careful with your opponent tomorrow.” At night, Yun Zhao leaned against the paulownia tree in the backyard, fanning his fan as he warned Liu Yue, who was sitting inside the pavilion.

Moonlight shone upon Liu Yue who was wearing a white robe that covered her whole body, painting her into a cold yet dignified beauty. Her beauty could only be comparable to the moonlight shining upon her.

Yun Zhao stared fixedly at Liu Yue, his heart beating wildly in his chest.

He already knew beforehand that Liu Yue was beautiful without compare. Liu Yue had a face that would attract others even if they didn't want to. If Liu Yue was a girl, he would definitely marry her, even if he had to use illegal means. But it couldn't be denied that Liu Yue was a guy.

However, Liu Yue, this fellow, could actually bewitch him by just standing still. He really couldn't believe himself.

Liu Yue felt Yun Zhao's gaze on her but seemed indifferent to it. She only gave Yun Zhao a short glance, a glance that did not pose any questions, simply a cold and haughty one.

Seeing this, Yun Zhao frowned a little. Liu Yue's cold gaze possessed an absolute confidence and dominance. Liu Yue had really deeply shaken his own pride as a man, yet...

After mulling over it for a while, Yun Zhao banged hard at the paulownia tree beside him, then slumped down resignedly beside Liu Yue.

Chapter 172: Wu Lin Championship (17)

He wanted to get back at Liu Yue for damaging his pride as a man, but looking at Liu Yue's strength and character, he couldn't bear to do it, he couldn't. He really didn't know where he got the idea from.

He couldn't bear to try putting down Liu Yue's domineering attitude, or his strong character.

He was actually feeling a fondness towards a guy. He should pay the Buddha a visit when he got back; he must have been possessed by a ghost.

"Your opponent tomorrow is a high-ranking military officer in the Qu Kingdom. He might be a Qu Kingdom's citizen on the surface, but in reality, he was actually the number one Imperial Spy from the Southern Song Kingdom. His life's success could probably only be foreshadowed by heroes like Chen Mu and Feng Cheng, and his abilities should be on par with those two. You should be careful yourself, don't let your guard down."

Yun Zhao tapped his fan on his palm as he unhurriedly warned Liu Yue, who was sitting beside him.

Liu Yue lifted her head and slowly turned towards Yun Zhao. Bathed in the moonlight, she asked, "What has it got to do with me?"

Yun Zhao immediately choked as he glared frustratedly at Liu Yue. This person had actually asked him what has this got to do with himself, instead of asking him how he had gotten the sensitive information. How could Liu Yue's reactions always be miles away from his expectations?

Liu Yue was not even grateful for his good intentions.

"He'll advance if he won, and eliminated if he lost. It's the same for any other person." Liu Yue slowly replied, then stood up and slowly walked back to her room.

Her back looked full of confidence and arrogance.

Looking at the leaving Liu Yue, Yun Zhao frowned slightly. Liu Yue had

such a sharp determination; a determination that regarded everyone else as her enemy, that did not take others into account at all. Then, seeing it in another perspective, Liu Yue shouldn't be acting on someone's orders.

Lightly tapping his fan on his palm, Yun Zhao revealed a thin smile.

Since he wasn't under anyone's orders, then he...

The night continued on calmly, yet no one knew that under that calmness, a large storm was brewing.

Hou Jin Kingdom's Wu Lin Championship, how could it be a mere championship?

The golden rays of light fall from the sky. The clear blue sky and the fragrant scent of flowers and grasses was refreshing to the minds.

Thousands of people surrounded the arena to watch the championship, yet it was deathly silent. Everyone's eyes were focused on the two people standing on the arena.

One wore a white robe that fluttered with the wind, a beauty comparable to the moon.

The other looked ordinary, but had a shocking air around him.

Chapter 173: Wu Lin Championship (18)

The competition had gone down to eight participants, who would be fighting on a one-on-one match in turns. Many of the other participants had been eliminated from the competition a few days ago. The eight people left were divided into four matches, and these matches were the fight amongst the strongest of the elites.

Standing on the arena, Liu Yue looked coldly at Liang Cheng, who was standing right in front of her. His murderous intent and sharp blades were thoroughly concealed. Seemed like the top spy from Southern Song Kingdom was not that weak.

“Please.” Liang Cheng bowed towards Liu Yue with a calm face.

Liu Yue coldly threw a glance at Liang Cheng, full of arrogance. Under Liu Yue’s intentional arrogant attitude, her usual arrogant demeanour seemed even more brassy today. It was as if she didn’t acknowledge even a single a person in this whole wide world.

Showcasing such an arrogance to the audience, a lot of the audience concluded that Liu Yue was simply a youngster with muscles and skills but have no experience in real life. He simply had muscles for a brain.

The wind quietly blew.

Liu Yue’s five fingers were already in position, right on top of her zither strings.

It was at this time, in the corner of the seating area, a clear gaze stared right onto Liu Yue, who was standing on the arena. That gaze was so calm, so clear, and so familiar.

The winds and the clouds shifted.

On top of the arena, the two people suddenly started to move.

Liu Yue retreated back as her fingers started to pluck on the zither strings. A high zither note immediately rose up in the air.

And at the same time, Liang Cheng charged towards her quickly and

violently, like lightning. The sword in his hands shot forward, fast as light, but it was not aimed at Liu Yue. Instead, it was aimed right onto the zither in Liu Yue's hands. With his stance and fast movements, it almost seemed like Liang Cheng was completely throwing his body into Liu Yue's embrace.

Since the zither was used for long-range attacks, then short-range attacks could be its weakness.

His sword swooshed with all the power in his hands, fast like the clap of thunder.

Before Liu Yue's zither even resounded, Liang Cheng's sword had already cut through the zither.

Only the cracking of wood could be heard. Liu Yue's gaze froze as she watched the zither in her hands breaking apart.

The surrounding people that had sharp eyes watched this happened with bated breaths. They couldn't help but be tense. Some smiled with a smirk while some watched the whole scene expressionlessly.

With the zither broken, Liu Yue's wind blade attack was gone.

Chapter 174: Attacked on All Sides (1)

This Liu Yue had looked powerful without compare, but it turned out that he only amount to that much.

With his zither broken, no matter how sharp his wind blade was, he wouldn't be able to unleash his attack. As it turned out, it was actually that simple to break Liu Yue's attack.

Some of the audience seated in the VIP seats had already turned away from Liu Yue. Even if he looked handsome, if he couldn't win the fight, then it was useless to continue watching him.

When Liang Cheng saw that Liu Yue's zither had broken, an ice-cold glint burst forth from his eyes as he swung down his sword towards Liu Yue, his sharp blade splitting the air.

Without wind blade, Liu Yue, who didn't have an ounce of Inner Strength on her body, was practically a sitting duck.

And at a distance not far from there, Yun Zhao's expression had suddenly changed as he immediately stood up and stretched out his fan, looking like he was about to charge out from his seat.

It was right at this moment, fast as a blink of an eye.

Liu Yue, who had not changed her expression since the start of the match, suddenly gave a cold smile. Her fingers hooked on the strings of the broken zither, while her body dodged Liang Cheng's sword with a demon-like speed. Then, she charged forward, striking the zither in her hands.

The sun shone brightly, splashing its rays across the whole earth.

The light illuminated everything on the ground, clearly exposing every single detail.

However, at this moment, nobody could see Liu Yue's movements. Nobody could see how Liu Yue managed to suddenly stand right behind Liang Cheng.

Those movement had transcended the realm of quick, it was more like magic.

It was as if a slow motion movie suddenly changed to a fast motion movie. Nobody could see clearly on that moment between the exchange, they only knew that it had suddenly turned that way.

On the arena, Liu Yue stood right behind Liang Cheng, with her zither on her left hand. Her right hand was hovering on her red lush lips, as a silver coloured thread blossomed on her fingers. It was extremely thin yet bright; it was a string from the broken zither.

Liang Cheng stood with his back towards Liu Yue, but his expressions did not change. There wasn't even fear and astonishment, and his sword was still raised on his hands. However, he seemed to have lost his gaze.

Standing ramrod straight, trace of blood suddenly oozed out from his body. Crimson red blood flowed down from his forehead, staining his blue coloured clothes.

A strand of thin, silver coloured zither string lie across his forehead, deeply embedded into his flesh.

Chapter 175: Attacked on All Sides (2)

With a cold gaze, Liu Yue humphed arrogantly. She then jerked her fingers back and the silver zither string immediately bounced back to her hands, shooting off from Liang Cheng's forehead. The string fell on top her zither and trembled continuously.

Threads of blood vibrated on the zither made of redwood, permeating it with the scent and colour of blood.

The whole arena was engulfed in a deathly silence. It was in this silence that Liang Cheng's body slowly collapsed to the ground.

Her white robe flowing with the wind, Liu Yue looked beautiful and magnificent in this moment, although she still looked cold and unfeeling.

"Nice!" An excited voice shouted out, breaking the silence. Yun Zhao charged to the front, his expression full of joy as he continuously cheered.

The feeling he gave off was like he was the one who had won instead.

Liu Yue held the zither in her chest, and eyed the corpse on the ground coldly. Then she gave a clear and distinct snort.

What arrogance!

As soon as she finished, Liu Yue raised her head and looked to a corner of the crowd. There wasn't anyone. The gaze that she felt just now, the gaze that had followed her movements relentlessly, had disappeared from her sight.

That gaze had felt so familiar. It was equally sharp as cold, just like... could it be...

Liu Yue's eyebrows twitched as she took back her searching gaze from the crowd of people.

"That's really beautiful, brother." Yun Zhao stood right below the arena, snapping the fan in his hands on his other palm until it was red. His face was filled with excitement and pride.

Only then did the silent crowd surrounding them seemed to find their

lost voices back. They immediately gave a thunderous, continuous cheer, almost as if they were trying to shout to the heavens.

Liu Yue swept an indifferent glance across Yun Zhao and the people behind him, taking in every single one of the audiences without exception.

Their eyes were filled with astonishment and a little bit of greed, as they looked closely at the zither on her hands.

Seeing this, Liu Yue couldn't help but gave a cold smile. Suddenly, she raised her hands and smashed her zither on the ground with a loud bang. The redwood zither immediately split into 4 to 5 broken pieces.

The surrounding crowd was immediately shocked speechless, and they looked at Liu Yue with astonishment.

However, Liu Yue didn't speak any words. Instead, she turned around and leap off the arena, her white robe fluttering with the wind.

"Brother Liu, what are you doing? Why did you throw a tantrum? Such a good zither, isn't it a waste to break it?" In the midst of his shock, Yun Zhao lept up to the arena and picked up the broken pieces of zither, his face filled with disagreement.

Chapter 176: Attacked on All Sides (3)

And mumbled, "How could this be repaired."

The VIP guests immediately focused their gazes on Yun Zhao. Their gazes were deep and meaningful.

"There's no need to." At that time, Du Yi who stood right below the arena coldly replied.

Hearing this, Yun Zhao immediately raised his head in astonishment, looking at Du Yi, who had turned away and followed Liu Yue along. He asked in confusement, "Why don't you need it anymore?"

"An item that had been contaminated with people's blood or organs, my master would definitely hate it." Du Yi replied coldly, then continued to follow Liu Yue.

The confused crowd immediately frowned their brows. He didn't want it anymore?

"This is Brother Liu's weapon, if he lost his weapon, what will he do later on..." Yun Zhao stared at the zither on the ground.

"It was just a normal zither. As long as there is wind, my master would have his weapon." Du Yi's cold voice resounded from afar, strict and unfeeling.

His answer shocked everyone present.

Even a normal zither had such a power, how could this...

As long as there was wind, then there was a weapon? What kind of situation was this? Who exactly was Liu Yue?

The surrounding crowd was immediately shocked speechless while the VIP audiences immediately whispered into each other ears. The deep gazes in their eyes were so deep; they couldn't possibly get anymore deeper.

Yun Zhao's mouth twitched a little as he stared at the broken pieces of zither on the ground. He reached out his hands and touched them, and

concluded that it was indeed a normal zither.

He originally thought that Liu Yue's zither was one of the best quality. It definitely had some secret function, that enable him to unleash such a powerful attack.

But seeing things as it was now, it seemed like it wasn't the case.

Slowly standing up, a flash of shock grazed Yun Zhao's eyes. As long as there was wind, any kind of item could be used as weapon. This Liu Yue...

His brows quickly turned from a frown to a neutral one as a smile blossomed on his face. Yun Zhao waved the fan in his hand, smiling happily as he chirped, "Brother Liu, wait for me."

As he said that, he quickly followed Liu Yue.

The refreshing wind blew gently. Early spring weather was not that hot after all.

In the midst of the blowing wind, an unanswerable question was left behind in everyone's minds.

Night slowly fell. Amongst the four matches, four expert winners had finally emerged.

Chapter 177: Attacked on All Sides (4)

Amongst the four winners, there were neither Chen Mu nor Feng Cheng. Instead, it was four men whose origins were completely unheard of. And amongst these four was Liu Yue.

“Brother, in three days time, it will be your last fight. Four people will fight together in the same arena, and the last one standing will be the winner.” Arriving at the backyard of the Phoenix Inn, Yun Zhao sat beside Liu Yue, as he smiled happily, watching her.

Four great experts fighting at the same time, one against three others. It was a rule that had never been applied before, a massacre that had never occurred before.

Liu Yue threw an indifferent glance towards Yun Zhao and simply nodded.

Seeing this, Yun Zhao patted Liu Yue’s shoulders enthusiastically, with his face full of smiles, as he said, “This year, I am really fortunate to be able to stay with Brother Liu. I believe that the winner will be you, Brother Liu.

Brother Liu, hehe, I don’t have other requests, but if you really become the winner, could you let me see that blood toad? I came here from miles away, and it would be a waste if I didn’t see anything.”

Yun Zhao smiled brilliantly, not even standing at formalities. It was really as if Liu Yue was his own brother.

“Aren’t you a bit too sure of my victory?” Liu Yue slanted the teacup in her hands towards Yun Zhao.

Yun Zhao was all smiles as he replied, “Of course I’m sure, good brother, I say...”

“Peng.” An ominous banging sound resounded, interrupting Yun Zhao’s sentence.

Yun Zhao turned around to look, and, in the corner, Du Yi was carrying a black-clad corpse. He then threw the body outside.

Seeing this, Yun Zhao frowned and turned around to look at Liu Yue.

Liu Yue's face was expressionless, calm and unperturbed as if nothing had happened.

Yun Zhao blinked and said, "Thirteen cockroaches have come."

"It's spring, so there should be a lot of insects." Liu Yue sipped her tea, and replied unhurriedly.

Hearing this, Yun Zhao laughed out loud and leaned on the stone table in front of him. He smiled as he said, "You really refuse to submit to anyone in this world, other than yourself."

"Do you have a problem with that?" Liu Yue glared at Yun Zhao.

Yun Zhao could only feel the darkness of Liu Yue's eyes. It was as if she wanted to swallow him whole into an eternal hell.

Chapter 178: Attacked on All Sides (5)

He couldn't help but suck in a deep breath. Then, he shook his head and replied meekly, "Of course not."

Hearing this, Liu Yue smiled, her mood did not change much.

Seeing that, Yun Zhao leaned on the table and looked at Liu Yue, with his handsome beauty that was peppered with a cold expression. After staring at her for quite a while, he mumbled, "I have never seen you laugh out loud without restraint. With your good looks, if you really smiled, I even don't know..." He immediately shut his mouth at this point, for Liu Yue was giving him a deathly glare.

Laughing without restraint... She had laughed without restraint before, when Xuan Yuan Che was still by her side. She would naturally have been happy if Che was by her side. And when Che was not by her side, she wouldn't feel any amusement in everything else. There was nothing that could change her expression.

It wasn't because she was unfeeling. Rather it was just because that person was not by her side.

Playing with the teacup in her hands, Liu Yue looked far upon into the horizon.

Che, when was he coming back, she missed him so much.

She clasped the teacup hard in her hands. If he still doesn't come back after she settled Hou Jin Kingdom, she would search through every single island on the Eastern Seas to find him back.

She didn't want to wait like this anymore, she felt that she could die from anxiety.

Her Che, her Che.

Bastard, it was all because of these bastards from Hou Jin Kingdom. If it weren't for them, she wouldn't have had to be separated from Xuan Yuan Che for so many years, while only hearing news of him once a while.

She didn't even know if he lived or died.

Liu Yue suddenly gripped the teacup in her hands tightly.

"Peng." the teacup in her hands shattered into pieces from the sudden pressure. Drops of tea started flowing down Liu Yue's hands, staining those moon-white clothes, a faint colour of yellow.

Watching this, Yun Zhao froze. There was a flash of fury in Liu Yue's eyes just now, and although it went away in a blink of an eye, he had seen it clearly.

Fury. What was Liu Yue so furious about?

Although his mind was questioning this, his hands immediately reached out to hold hers. Raising his eyebrows, Yun Zhao said, "What are you doing, did the teacup make a mistake and irritate you?"

With a swing of her arms, Liu Yue brushed away the shattered pieces of teacup. She then stood up expressionlessly, a sharp gaze flashed in her eyes as she glared into the dark, night sky.

"Come out," With a cold voice, Liu Yue was suddenly filled with killing intent.

Chapter 179: Attacked on All Sides (6)

Yun Zhao froze. Come out? What did she mean come out? He didn't feel any...

Before his thoughts were even done, he spotted a movement out of the corner of his eyes. Someone... there was someone there.

Quickly moving his eyes, Yun Zhao looked towards Liu Yue whose face was filled with killing intent. Astonishment coloured his face. Even he hadn't felt anyone's presence, so how could this Liu Yue, who didn't have an ounce of Inner Strength in her body realise another person's presence faster than he did?

Not waiting for Yun Zhao to finish his thought, the black-clad figure obscured by the dark slowly came out from his hiding place.

This single person, fully clothed in black, appeared with his body not emitting even the slightest bit of presence. It was as if he had completely been blended into the darkness. His stealth skills were of an expert's level.

"My master wanted to meet you," spoke the black-clad intruder, who had only a pair of eyes revealed to the open, gazing coldly at Liu Yue.

As he finished his words, a dozen or so black-clad intruders, who were hidden in a few corners, revealed themselves. They didn't try to hide their presence anymore, as a wave of killing intent surged through them.

Liu Yue didn't even take a glance at the surrounding intruders. Her eyes narrowed as she threatened in a menacing voice, "I'm not going."

Her voice was resolute and determined, even colder than the tone that the black-clad intruder had used.

Hearing this, a burst of furious killing intent flashed on the black-clad intruder's eyes, "Then please excuse our rude behaviour."

As his words ended, every single black-clad intruders surrounding the courtyard immediately charged towards Liu Yue, brandishing their swords.

“Rude? I’d like to see how rude you can be.” At this moment, Liu Yue was actually in a bad mood from missing Xuan Yuan Che. She hadn’t had an outlet to extinguish the fire in her heart, but these guys had come just at the right time.

As her words ended, fingers spreading out like a tiger’s claw, she grabbed the zither laying on top of the stone table and held it in her arms in one swift moment. Her five delicate fingers grazed the zither, and crystal clear tones resounded continuously, sending noiseless wind blades to the enemy.

“Bam bam bam...” A heavy sound of collision immediately rung out.

Seven intruders was struck by the Wind Blades at the same time.

A breeze doesn’t have a fixed direction as it passed through; it was even more so for Liu Yue’s Wind Blades.

As long as Liu Yue’s fingers pointed to the right direction, the Wind Blade would go towards that direction.

Wind Blades was the best martial art skill to fight against a crowd.

The killing aura within the Inn started to become more intense.

The sound of zither and weapons clashed in the air, reverberating through the night.

Chapter 180: Attacked on All Sides (7)

The Inn's owner hid below his bed all curled up, cowering and trembling in fear.

At the beginning he thought he had gotten a rich, VIP guest, but who would ever thought that this guest was a killing machine? Oh God, if the guest continued to stay at his Inn, wouldn't his life be at stake?

"Bam." another sound rung out. One black-clad intruder flew across the courtyard as if he had received a heavy blow to his stomach, landing on the Paulwonia tree on the courtyard outside.

At the same time, black-clad intruders from the right, left and back of Liu Yue vomited blood violently before collapsing to the ground.

Drops of blood stained the ground, making it a dark shade of green.

With one move, four were dead while three injured.

Yun Zhao sat on the stone chair holding his fan, his brows raised in surprise.

Seeing that Liu Yue killed four people with just one move, the leader of the black-clad intruders immediately sounded a whistle and turned around, diving into the darkness.

At the same time, something flew towards Liu Yue, fast as lightning.

Poison grenade! At that time during the Hunting event after Tian Chen Emperor's birthday, it was these poison grenades that forced Xuan Yuan Che and her down the cliff.

A flash of violent killing intent immediately crossed Liu Yue's eyes. Her body flashed forward, not caring for the poison grenade at all, as she leaped high up into the sky, chasing after the black-clad intruder who had disappeared into the darkness.

"Bam." The poison grenade exploded and filled the whole courtyard with poison gas.

Yun Zhao, who was sitting down, immediately covered his nose and

mouth and followed Liu Yue quickly.

White smoke permeated the empty space. Du Yi, who didn't appear at all during the whole scene, suddenly appeared from the darkness, his eyes ice cold. His figure also disappeared into the darkness, following after Liu Yue.

Darting through roads and alleys, Liu Yue chased after the black-clad intruder violently.

She didn't know Light Body Technique, but she had sharp and acute senses. Even if it was Xuan Yuan Che, she wouldn't lose track of his presence when she was chasing after him. This mere black-clad intruder didn't even stand a chance.

The black-clad intruder had already disappeared into the darkness, vanishing completely.

However, Liu Yue definitely chased after him in the right direction.

Her beautiful moon-white figure glided through the darkness. If someone had seen this scene, they would have thought that she was a ghost.

The East Street of Yi Shui City, Du Residence.

"Have you attacked him? What's the result?" Inside the main hall of the Du Residence, an old man with a head full of white hair spoke to the black-clad intruder, whose body was full of injuries.

"He killed four and injured three in one move." The black-clad intruder respectfully kneeled in front of the old man as he replied swiftly.

Chapter 181: Attacked on All Sides (8)

Hearing this, the old man's expressions darkened like the colour of muddy water, "Damn him! Is he that strong? Servants! I want everyone to be mobilized now, we have to kill that person tonight..."

"Thinking of killing me? Sure, I'll serve myself on the silver platter right now. Let's see if you have the skill to kill me." Before the old man's words were even done, an extremely cold voice broke through the silent night, carrying a sinister tone of fury in its wake.

The old man's expressions immediately changed as he stood up in one swift movement.

The black-clad intruder who was kneeling before him was also shocked speechless. He had definitely shaken him off, how could Liu Yue still chased him all the way here?

Without giving them the time to question or be surprised, a sombre zither tune rung out in the Du Residence.

It wasn't a melody. Only a single tune was shot.

It wasn't a lullaby nor a deadly music, it was simply a killing machine. A killing machine that could kill with one shot.

With a single pluck of her finger, a single Wind Blade shot out.

Taking people's life in a swift movement, Liu Yue's plucking fingers denied everyone of their lives.

Liu Yue held her zither on her left hand and played it with her right. Her hands moved quickly across the zither, shooting a continuous stream of Wind Blades all around. The black-clad forces who kept coming from all directions collapsed on the ground one by one.

Thinking of killing her? In that case, she would kill them first.

Blood spewed in all directions, filling the ground with death.

Seeing this, the old man's face twisted wildly. In the darkness of the night, Liu Yue, who was wearing her white robe, stepped forward on the

bloody ground, so beautiful and dignified. However, in that deadly beauty, her movements were ruthless and cold blooded, sparing none in her stride.

“Quick, quick, kill him, kill him!” His face twisting in fear, the old man shouted panickedly as he retreated backwards in lightning speed.

Since he couldn’t control such a strong person, then he must destroy him.

If he let him enter the Palace Halls of Hou Jin Kingdom, then Hou Jin Kingdom’s strength will...

Though he was thinking of this in his heart, his feet was running quickly towards the back door.

Liu Yue looked like she had not seen him running away, allowing him to retreat through the back door.

“Pu.” Suddenly, a sombre sound resounded. It was the sound of a dagger digging into a person’s flesh.

Just as he took a step out through the back door, the old man’s foot stopped on it’s tracks. Raising his head, a dagger had settled deep into his chest, right to its hilt.

Chapter 182: Attacked on All Sides (9)

Gurgling some unintelligible voices from his throat, the old man looked up and saw the person standing in front of him. It was Du Yi, the servant who always followed Liu Yue along, the servant who never revealed his martial art skills to anyone.

Du Yi pulled out the dagger expressionlessly before turning around and walked towards the other direction. No one from this place would be able to escape from him.

Behind him, the old man's gurgling stopped as he collapsed onto the ground.

Darkness filled the night. The whole of Du Residence was drenched in blood, the smell of death reeking everywhere.

When Yun Zhao finally caught up, he was greeted with a ground full of dead bodies. Every single black-clad men had fallen on the ground. Crimson red blood permeated into the lush grasses, making it looked a dark colour of green.

The whole ground was filled with corpses, not a single one was alive.

And Liu Yue had already disappeared to another place.

Raising his brows, Yun Zhao snapped his fan on his palm. The Du Residence, or otherwise known as the Chen Kingdom's base in Hou Jin Kingdom, had been totally annihilated by Liu Yue.

Liu Yue had not left an ounce of sympathy in her wake, disposing her enemies so ruthlessly, making others tremble with fear. But this also make others want to obtain his strength. Such a powerful and skilled person, Liu Yue was indeed a captivating target to acquire.

The moon shone brightly, sprinkling its radiance onto the ground, beautiful and tranquil.

Holding the zither in her hands, Liu Yue looked at the road in front of the tower opposite the residence. There was another three black-clad people there.

Seemed like she had many opportunities to dispel the anger in her heart tonight. She had just wiped off the Du Residence, yet another bunch of black-clad people appeared. Humph.

Locking her five finger on the zither strings, Liu Yue's face was cold like a block of ice.

"Mr. Liu, my Master would like to meet you." The leader of the black-clad people spoke out, cultured and refined like a gentleman. He advanced forward and made a small bow towards Liu Yue.

He didn't wait for Liu Yue to reply and continued, "Please do not reject our invitation first. My Master looked favourably at Mr. Liu. Whatever wealth and power that Hou Jin Kingdom can give you, we can give it to you too. Why don't you think about it first?"

These people were a little better in negotiating than the previous bunch. They had used the carrot and stick method perfectly. However, his offer was not anything interesting or special.

Hearing this, Liu Yue swept a cold glance to the black-clad person in front of her, her ears on alert.

The sound of wind rustled in her ears as the night wind blew softly. There were sounds of breathing inside the tower. Lots of them.

Chapter 183: Attacked on All Sides (10)

Liu Yue's bright eyes turned slightly, her five fingers locking in on her zither strings. However, her expressions did not change at all.

"Brother Liu, please wait before replying." Just as Liu Yue was fastening her fingers on her zither, a heavy sound resounded from behind her.

A middle-aged man wearing a blue robe and a mask to hide his appearance walked towards her and greeted, "My master had also requested for Brother Liu's presence. My master had said that he would give Brother Liu anything you requested as long as they are within my master's capabilities. Whatever Brother Liu wants, it will be yours."

His heavy and thick voice sounded very sincere.

Liu Yue didn't turn around, still standing coldly at her original place. Only her head glanced slightly to the left.

"My master also wanted to invite Brother Liu to our residence. With regards to the conditions, there's nothing much to say; as long as it is within our capabilities, we will bestow it to you."

At Liu Yue's left, a sharp voice resounded. A tall and thin man walked out as he proclaimed his offer slowly.

As he finished his words, another voice resounded from the opposite side.

"You really have to think about it more, Brother Liu. I wouldn't repeat the same thing the others had said, but I would just like to say a few words to you. Joining hands with someone too powerful might not be good for you. Although some of the powers here are influential and strong, their foundation might be complicated and messy. Without a good foundation, it would be difficult for you to climb up the ladder and attain a high position.

Whoever Brother Liu chooses, it is not within our control. But we would like Brother Liu to think clearly and choose someone that will be suitable for you to grow, rather than choosing someone powerful that will give you

rich rewards.

I have finished my advice. Brother Liu, please consider this carefully.”

Saying all these in a mild, warm words, a man wearing metallic clothes appeared and stood at Liu Yue’s right.

Four people, four powers standing on each of the four sides of Liu Yue. They were indistinctly working together to surround Liu Yue in the middle.

Liu Yue swept a cold glance across the four people. Behind them, there were hundreds of breathing sounds, hidden in the darkness of the night. There were many people that were standing guard behind these four men, ready to protect them.

No one spoke a word as the four men fixed their gazes on Liu Yue, waiting for her to reply.

Liu Yue stood still coldly, her eyes glancing across all four directions. Her mouth suddenly curled up into a smile, a very mild smile, so mild that others were not able to discern the meaning behind that smile.

Chapter 184: Attacked on All Sides (11)

The bright moon shone brilliantly up above, clearly illuminating the whole scene down below.

Liu Yue stood in the middle of the road alone, surrounded by dark, potent shadows of the night.

The night was silent, so silent that it was beyond terrifying.

In the surrounding darkness of the night, the lowered breathing sounds started getting heavier. It was such a pressurizing atmosphere that it was choking just to be there.

As long as Liu Yue agreed to join one side, the other three sides would definitely do whatever they could to kill her. And that one side that Liu Yue had chosen, would do whatever they could to protect her.

Kill or protect, it was decided with Liu Yue's one word.

Enemies or friends, the change would be in an instant.

The people who were hiding in the darkness of the night held their weapons tightly. No matter what Liu Yue's answer was, it would be a fight to death for them.

They waited with bated breaths, prepared to stake their lives as they waited for the decision that would decide if they would be joining the other two sides in massacring the chosen side or be the one slaughtered on the one-against-three side.

That kind of situation was simply too intense; to the point that even trained experts couldn't help but breathe heavily with passing time.

A bloodthirsty smile slowly bloomed upon Liu Yue's magnificently beautiful face, her smile both enchanting and alluring at the same time.

The surrounding breaths started to get heavier. The answer would be revealed soon.

The night was peaceful, yet the killing intents were so thick in the air that it was almost unbearable.

Every single person grasped their weapons tighter than ever.

Under the night, a robe white as the full moon shining above slowly fluttered in the wind, emitting an aura as cold as the North Pole.

The corners of her mouth curled upwards coldly as Liu Yue locked her five fingers on her zither. A savage look flashed across her expression as she raised her eyebrows and looked towards the people in front of her. With the arrogance of a king, she proclaimed, "I, Liu Yue, will not submit to anyone's threats."

Before her cold and arrogant words drifted through the night, Liu Yue launched her attacks.

Her moon-white robe looked like a white meteor in the dark night as she dashed towards the front.

Zither tones resounded as sharp Wind Blades shot out continuously, fast as lightning, in all directions. The sombre tune emitted a thick killing intent in the dark night.

The killing intent was potent and malevolent.

Her actions made the expressions of the four people guarding at each of the four sides fall. Well done, Liu Yue. Such arrogance, she rejected their favours and chose to break through them instead. Didn't this mean she had never even cared about them in the first place?

Chapter 185: Attacked on All Sides (12)

Under this sky, no one had ever had the guts to fight against so many forces altogether at one time. This Liu Yue's arrogance was really higher than the skies; they really wanted to crush that confidence of hers completely.

With a ruthless wave of their hands, everyone hiding still under the dark night moved all at once.

Since they couldn't acquire her, they must destroy her.

They would never let any kingdom acquire such a skilled and talented person like her, definitely never.

All four sides that were originally at odds with each other in a deadlock turned against Liu Yue altogether at the same time, settling on her as their point of attack.

The night grew darker and heavier.

Her body sharp like a sword, Liu Yue dashed forward without yielding or avoiding their attacks.

Her five fingers danced quickly across her zither, making broken zither tones that did not resemble any kind of song at all. The tunes blended together, coarse and rough, without any musical sense at all.

However, every single string plucked immediately caused fresh blood spewing in all directions.

No one could withstand the Wind Blades that came at them fast as lightning. No one knew where the next Wind Blade would shoot towards to. No one had ever seen Liu Yue's movements that were fast like a ghost's.

A soldier had clearly reached her from the side, but in the next moment, with a swift movement of her legs, she had already moved to his back.

A blade had obviously been swung towards her, but in the next moment, the blade had struck into someone from their side instead.

No, she wasn't quick. She was definitely not faster than any of them. But her movements were unpredictable; her path in breaking through their formation was so weird that it was simply beyond their imagination.

The sharp sound of the zither penetrated through the dark night as invisible Wind Blades cut through every single thing like a sharp sword.

Liu Yue stepped on the people who tried to block her, and swept away everyone in front of her who tried to restrain her from leaving.

In the midst of zither tunes, her moon-white robe was splashed with drops of fresh blood, making it look like red plum flowers amongst the white snow during winter, blooming enchantingly.

Her feet moved continuously as her black hair swung in the wind. Her beauty was like the Moon Goddess's, cold and icy. She had an aura of coldness that had an iron-hard determination behind it.

Seeing all of that beauty, who would even dare to touch her?

Watching all these, a flicker of killing intent flashed on each of the the four leaders' eyes. The four sides who had not planned anything beforehand immediately joined together to surround Liu Yue in an attempt to murder her.

Such a powerful person's life must never be spared.

The night wind shifted. It was icy cold despite it being early spring.

Dark shadows danced under the moonlight, filled with killing intent.

Those four leaders' attacks could not be an ordinary one. Before their sharp sword even reached Liu Yue's body, the sharp sound of their sword swing pierced through the air.

Intense strength flew towards Liu Yue from all four directions. They were incomparable; the air surrounding them froze in an instant.

The leader of the four sides attacked together, leaving no gaps in between them.

There would only be one outcome for Liu Yue, who was surrounded right in the middle of the attack: Death.

Chapter 186: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(1)

The cold moonlight shone down upon the moment between life and death.

Liu Yue's cold eyes suddenly flickered, emitting a huge wave of killing intent. Her eyes weren't cold and unfeeling anymore, instead, they were exploding with murderous intent, the kind that gives out the taste of certain death.

It was the kind of deadly killing intent that could only be found within Mu Rong Liu Yue.

The four people who were charging towards her in mid-air were immediately alarmed. Her killing intent was so ruthless, so bloodthirsty.

Lifting the zither in one movement, Liu Yue broke her zither strings with one finger, flipped her hand and grabbed the strings. Without even looking, she immediately aimed for one of the four leaders, the one wearing black who was standing behind her.

The black-clad leader's sword cutting through the air briefly brushed past Liu Yue's strings that were as sharp as sword blades, the encounter as fast as a meteor on fire.

Liu Yue's zither strings slid past the surface of the sword and before his sword could touch her back, the zither string had already penetrated deep right into the black-clad soldier's chest.

With a flash of her white robe, streaks of blood as thin as those zither strings burst open out of his chest. The zither string as fine as a hair strand was already starting to retreat.

There wasn't any splashing of blood. Under that soldier's black coloured clothes, almost nothing could be seen.

But the black-clad soldier's eyes suddenly froze, wide-eyed.

Not even looking back at the black-clad soldier behind her, Liu Yue

pulled back her zither string. With a tug of her fingers, the zither string flew across the air towards her.

But as she pulled the string, she bent her body backwards to a 90 degree angle.

The sword behind her was still in the air, the pouncing figure of the black clad soldier still remained unchanged. With this, it was as if Liu Yue delivered herself to the sharp end of the sword.

The eyes of the three surrounding people charging towards her immediately lighted up. This Liu Yue was indeed seeking death.

Three sharp blades flew towards her instantly.

In a lightning fast moment.

They could only watch as a streak of silver light flashed across the dark night, so fast that almost no one had seen it coming.

And at the same moment, Liu Yue had already bent onto the tip of the sword of the black-clad soldier behind her, her body almost retreated into his embrace as he landed on the ground.

And in front of her, the three leaders had already charged towards her, their blades flickering with menace, landing onto the ground.

Silver light flashed, and the four were level with one another.

Flying dust settled down.

Everything happened in an instant. Before the surrounding people could grasp clearly what had happened, everything had ended.

Chapter 187: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(2)

Time felt like it had frozen in that moment. The surrounding crowd of soldiers that were hiding immediately stopped on their tracks, watching the scene. The flying dust had finally cleared up.

Being surrounded in a small circle, Liu Yue stood right in the middle, slowly lowering her head. Three swords struck at her body,

The moon was shining brightly above, illuminating everything clearly below.

The surrounding people immediately heaved a sigh of relief. Looks like it was finally over.

However, in that small circle, one of the leaders that wore blue, who had fought head on against Liu Yue, had a completely twisted expression. His hands grasped tightly at his sword but his body started trembling. An indescribable fear and shock filled his face.

“You, you...”

With a sound of a zither tune, blood splattered all around.

A flower of blood immediately burst out from the neck of the blue-clad leader who had fought head on against Liu Yue. And in this exact moment, a “pu” sound resounded from his chest as blood spewed in all four directions, bursting forth from a long scar that had formed on his chest.

Blood flowed continuously, dripping down slowly.

That blue-clad leader held the sword in his hands tightly and tumbled backwards, step by step.

The blue-clad leader’s sharp sword, that was struck inside Liu Yue’s body, was pulled out, yet not a single trace of blood could be seen. He had only stabbed through Liu Yue’s clothes.

Liu Yue who was looking down slowly lifted her head up. There wasn’t

an intense killing intent in her eyes anymore, and the killing intent that exploded from her body in an instant had disappeared into thin air.

There was only coldness in her eyes, a coldness that could only belong to Liu Yue.

Nobody had seen Mu Rong Liu Yue's killing intent just now, as the four leaders had surrounded her too perfectly, leaving no gaps in between at all.

Hence, the only people who had seen it was the four leaders. All the other surrounding soldiers didn't see it at all.

The killing intent that Liu Yue had emitted in that instant was deeply engraved in the four leader's eyes.

Gurgling sounds resounded on their throats, yet not a word could be spoken out.

The two leaders on Liu Yue's right and left side looked at her wide-eyed, absolutely terrified. They seemed to be trying their best to say something, but until the end, they could only watch as Liu Yue, who had been surrounded by them, revealed a cold smile.

A smile so enchanting that it was beyond compare.

Chapter 188: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(3)

The two generals on both sides of Liu Yue, left and right, collapsed backwards onto the ground with a bang.

A bloody scar had been cut horizontally across the location of their heart. It was a fatal injury.

Their swords were revealed following their toppling figures. Liu Yue's body had four more holes in her clothes that were created from the blades of each of the leader's swords. But they did not manage to penetrate even her skin.

A millimeter of difference had resulted in a loss that spanned a thousand miles.

Liu Yue was simply too precise and skilled at calculating the amount of strength and location of attacks with weapons.

Under the quiet and cold moonlit night, the surrounding black figures stopped their attacks and each one of them was frozen to the ground. They looked as if they had seen something that was completely beyond their imagination, so much beyond their wildest dreams that at that moment, nobody managed to recover from their shock.

Liu Yue stepped forward with a cold face filled with arrogance.

The black-clad leader beyond her, holding his long sword, toppled forward with a bang. The small cut across his chest had already spread into a freshly blossoming red-coloured flower.

Her moon white thin robe had a slight blood trace oozing out.

That was caused by herself stepping backwards, accidentally pressing herself onto the sharp blade of the black clad leader's sword. However the small injury was so insignificant that it could be ignored.

With the moon high in the sky, moonlight shone down upon the scene below. Everything had ended.

It was so fast that nobody could tell what she did or how she did it.

The music of the zither sounding, wind blades dancing in mid-air, Liu Yue's legs moved in one instant, immediately concealing her into the darkness.

Hearing the zither music, the people in the darkness then recovered themselves, while being shocked beyond imagination. They immediately gave chase as fast as lightning.

If they could not acquire her, they would not hesitate to destroy her, this was their task for tonight.

It was a task that must be completed no matter whoever died, even if only a handful of them were left.

The cold luminous moonlight waxed and waned.

Black shadows moved in the darkness.

In a blink of an eye, the moon had already set.

The forest in the outskirts of Yin Shui Town.

The tree tops made soft sounds as they danced lightly in the slight wind. The wind of early spring was so fresh that it lifted people's spirits. The 'ding dong' sound of river water can be heard, the moist breath of the river wind came through from the distance.

In the forest, Liu Yue held her zither and strolled slowly towards the direction of the river. Entirely clad in moon white, she looked unhurried and composed in the night.

Chapter 189: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(4)

The drops of blood on her robe that looked like blooming red plum flowers did not give her a ruthless or murderous impression, but instead further enhanced her handsome features.

Her indifferent face did not show any kind of unnecessary expressions. It was simply too easy for her to throw off those people chasing after her, in an attempt to kill her.

In this world, good martial arts skills or light body technique were not necessarily needed to be undefeatable in the entire world. As for chasing and dodging skills, if she, Liu Yue said that she was second, nobody would dare to claim first.

In her previous life when she was hired as mercenary, she once blew up the governor-general's official residence of Country T with one explosion and killed that year's governor-general incumbent. As a result, she was hunted down to be killed in their territory for one entire month.

Using whatever advanced tactics she could, didn't she still manage to escape from their territory unscathed and intact? In the end, she was still able to spend her days in leisure.

In this era of crude weapons, with no technologically advanced devices or weapons available, what could only be relied on is none other than people. To hide herself from the views of others was simply no effort at all.

The moonlit night was quiet and secluded, only the rustling sounds of tree leaves was present.

No murderous aura was present in the quiet forest. There was no signs of any human being at all. It was very silent, and very peaceful.

Liu Yue strolled slowly. The sound of water came from ahead, she should be reaching soon. Busying herself for an entire night had made her very thirsty.

Liu Yue meandered in a zigzag path across the forest.

The moonlight was starting to slant from the direction of the west.

Liu Yue's steps stopped in front of a large tree. Liu Yue looked at the Paulownia tree in front of her, a cold air suddenly arose towards her eyebrows. She frowned.

Something was amiss. She had just seen this tree.

Studying the Paulownia tree in front of her, Liu Yue's facial expression turned cold in an instant. She was very sure that she had seen that tree before, she had just walked past here.

The cluster of trees were as overgrown as a thicket. Liu Yue actually did not have a photographic memory. She was just careful and observant of her surroundings. Even if she thought that there was no threat, it was already an instinctive reaction to her.

Raising her head to look at her surroundings, Paulownia trees were all around her. They blocked her line of vision, and there was nothing to suggest that there was anything unusual.

No traps, no murderous intent, no danger, there was nothing at all, it was as if this was only a normal forest.

Upon seeing this, Liu Yue's brows furrowed. It was precisely because there was no murderous aura or traps which led her to step into the forest without thinking too much. She was extremely sensitive to killing intents and the smell of traps. As long as they existed, she would have realised there was something wrong early on.

Chapter 190: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(5)

But there was nothing here. Towards such an environment that neither showed the presence of people nor traps, she was not a God who would think that this place was not a place that she could go to.

The sounds of flowing water ahead travelled into her ear. It sounded quiet and remote as it continued to trickle down.

It seems that she had all along been wandering about in the same area. But the sound of the water trickling down had all along sounded from in front of her. What the heck is this place?

Frowning slightly, Liu Yue's lashed out her zither's strings. A long scar appeared on the Paulownia tree trunk. Liu Yue once again walked forward.

Following the direction of the water flow, Liu Yue become more alert.

Walking in a straight line, the sound of trickling water did not change at all, there was almost zero inaccuracy in bearings where the sound came from. Liu Yue also identified the general position of the stream, and advanced in that direction, without meandering from her course at all.

However, when Liu Yue once again stood in front of the Paulownia tree which she marked earlier, Liu Yue's frown deepened.

What the hell is this place?

A maze, a forest maze?

Nope, there was no miasma here. No odd phenomena which that was unnatural to her, which would mislead people's sense of direction.

Liu Yue had been to the Bermuda triangle and the Egyptian pyramids, and even the depths of tropical swarms and jungles.

She knew that under certain circumstances, there were places where would naturally produce strange phenomena that tended to mislead and numb humans' directional senses. For instance, miasma would induce

dizziness in humans, which would in turn befuddle their sense of direction.

Another example was the Bermuda Triangle. There was a huge untapped reserve of energy in the depths of the sea which would mislead compasses and locational devices, resulting in their inaccuracy in direction pointing.

As for the Egyptian pyramids, they had incorporated a type of perfect, exquisite calculation method that surpassed modern notions of mathematics, creating completely unimaginable astronomical positions and strange corridors.

Strange corridors, Liu Yue's brows creased, she understood now.

If it was not natural, then it can only be a creation of mankind. This maze was set up by somebody. She had neither studied any ancient China's philosophy of the Eight Trigrams nor did she have any knowledge relating disposition of forces.

(Yunichan: Eight trigrams are used in Daoist cosmology to represent the fundamental principles of reality)

However, this did not mean that she did not know of the ancient art of divination.

A slight breeze arose, and the sound of light footsteps came from afar.

Chapter 191: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(6)

Liu Yue's ears pricked up as she listened. Suddenly, she raised her eyebrows, and unhurriedly leaned against the Paulownia tree beside her, coldly looking in the direction of the footsteps which were growing in volume.

The arriving person did not attempt to mask his approach, portraying an air of confidence.

The spring breeze brushed past the treetops. A figure clad in light red with golden trimmings stopped at a place not far from Liu Yue.

A head of waist-long, loosely draping hair was tied simply, spreading out behind him. His eyebrows were sharply defined. Under those shapely eyebrows, his pair of irises were of a deep black colour with the blueness of the sea. Such an ice-cold gaze as if capable of freezing everything their path, but so beautiful as to make it hard for others to tear their eyes away from them.

Like a stalk of ice lotus flower in the snow, incomparably cold, but yet devastating in its beauty.

This was the Crown Prince of Ao Yun Kingdom, Du Gu Ye.

Liu Yue's cold gaze swept down towards her own casual style of dress. She was not even the slightest afraid of Du Gu Ye, who had exposed his original identity. That gaze in the day, as expected, her intuition was not wrong. It was Du Gu Ye, the Du Gu Ye she had had seen once three years ago.

Three years passed without seeing him, this Du Gu Ye had grown increasingly cold, and also even more incomparable in this world.

Du Gu Ye stood under the dimness of the light, his gaze fixed on the cold Liu Yue. His irises were shimmering, as if he was examining her slowly.

Liu Yue did not bat an eyelid, letting Du Gu Ye look over her. This person was different from the others, if she was not careful, she would be in danger of exposing herself.

She gave an air of one whose demeanour stood above the crowd, a free and easy, handsome man.

This is an elegance that could only be showcased by a man, a magnificence which can only be exuded by a man. This was not something a woman would have or pretend.

Du Gu Ye gave Liu Yue an intense look, and his brows slightly furrowed.

But, the feeling that this Liu Yue gave him was too similar, too similar to the little Imperial Concubine three years ago who was astonishing in ability, but not in looks.

The Mu Rong Liu Yue who killed so decisively, and had a surrounding aura of death and murderous intent.

That same Imperial Concubine who was initially unknown, but whose name suddenly became notorious overnight.

It was too similar, if not for the fact that the person in front of him was a man, he would almost be certain to believe him to be Mu Rong Liu Yue, the little Imperial Concubine who was currently supposed to be posted at the borders of Tian Chen Kingdom.

The cold and detached gaze slowly retreated from one of scrutiny to one of indifference as Du Gu Ye looked at Liu Yue.

Chapter 192: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(7)

Seeing this, Liu Yue knew he didn't recognise her, although he had already suspected her.

Disguising as a man was not a difficult thing to do. She also didn't have to force herself to act like a guy. Who said that only a guy could be cold and tough, only a guy could be strong and powerful?

Women could do it too. She, Liu Yue, was also powerful, and would not lose to any other men in this world.

Being elegant and unrestrained, who said that only guys could do it?

Indifferent from each other's coldness, a pair of dark blue eyes stared into a pair of pitch-black eyes, their line of vision meeting in the middle, their gaze sharp and penetrating, causing sparks of fire to fly in the middle.

"I should have killed you." As they stared at each other, Du Gu Ye suddenly spoke indifferently.

Liu Yue grabbed the zither in her hands and stared at Du Gu Ye with a face full of killing intent but didn't say anything. This person had not realised the danger that he was facing.

Seeing Liu Yue who was full of killing intent, Du Gu Ye's probing eyes quieted down instead. This person wasn't her. This person's killing intent was different; although it was still killing intent, it was entirely different from hers. It wasn't the Mu Rong Liu Yue that he had missed for three years but never visited again in the Tian Chen Kingdom.

"It's beneath me." Looking at Liu Yue's cold eyes, Du Gu Ye suddenly explained. He didn't know why, but he didn't want to be seen weak by this person.

Yes, he had hated it. He disdained sending people to fight for the positions of the Third-ranked General of Hou Jin Kingdom. He disdained

coming here to investigate. Everyone in this world knew that it could be any other Kingdoms, but it was definitely not a spy on the Hou Jin Kingdom's side.

He disdained it. It was beneath his Ao Yun Kingdom to do this; and it was even more beneath him, Du Gu Yue, to do this.

With regards to such an obvious problem, he didn't even want to interfere. He came here for another thing, and was only passing by to watch the festivities.

It was just that he didn't thought he would see her. This Liu Yue, who had become so renowned, so popular in these few days. This Liu Yue who had caught the attention of the VIPs of various Kingdoms.

She was too bright, to the point that he wanted to destroy her, yet he also wanted to capture her.

However, if he captured her, she wouldn't be so bright and dazzling. There were too many capable people bowing before him, Du Gu Ye, so much that he really did not want to see another one.

Furthermore, with such an untamed, unyielding character, he didn't think Liu Yue wouldn't submit easily to him.

Chapter 193: Killing Through a Tight Siege (8)

If he couldn't have him, he would have to destroy him. If Liu Yue could not pledge his allegiance to him, he will make him useless.

It was just that when he saw him from afar, he suddenly changed his mind. He didn't want to kill him. He didn't know why, he just didn't want to.

"Stop talking nonsense." A cold and indifferent Liu Yue was leaning against a Paulownia tree as she looked towards Du Gu Ye. She caught the flash of fear crossing his eyes in an instant, and her cold eyes lighted up immediately.

Her words was still drifting through the air before her hands suddenly shot out a quick Wind Blade right towards Du Gu Ye.

The Wind Blade was strong and swift, quick as lightning.

Du Gu Ye, who looked like he wasn't prepared at all, was almost cut down by the Wind Blade when he suddenly moved.

His wrist flicked a little and he took out a piece of jade flute from his sleeves, waving it right in front of him.

There was only a loud 'peng' sound, like the sound of sharp metals clanging together. Liu Yue's attack had been neutralized by the jade flute in his hands.

Seeing that, Liu Yue narrowed her eyes. Although she had not used her full strength, Du Gu Ye had blocked her attack with little effort.

She had never heard about how powerful Du Gu Ye was in martial arts. She only heard about his good strategy skills which was number one in all seven kingdoms. Now, it seemed like that wasn't only the case, this Du Gu Ye seemed to be deeper than he seemed, so much that it was unmeasurable.

A flash of killing intent suddenly crossed her eyes. This person was

simply too dangerous. He would definitely endanger Che in the future. He was alone right now, it would be a good opportunity to...

The moment that the thought crossed her mind, Liu Yue immediately stepped forward, her five fingers pressing on her zither strings.

However, as she moved her feet forward, the figure in front of her suddenly shifted. Just a moment ago Du Gu Ye was standing right in front of the thick forest. However, the moment she moved forward, although the forest still looked the same, Du Gu Ye was nowhere to be seen. He seemed to have disappeared into thin air.

Immediately, Liu Yue was shocked. What had actually happened?

Could it be...

Before the thought crossed her mind, Liu Yue hurriedly retreated one step back. Immediately, the scene in front of her changed. Du Gu Ye was still standing indifferently at his original position. He didn't even move a muscle; he simply stared at her indifferently.

Five fingers locking at the zither in her hands, Liu Yue bite down her teeth.

Damn it, what the heck is this trap?

Indifferently looking at Liu Yue who was full of killing intent, Du Gu Ye slowly spoke, "I won't kill you today. In the future, it's up to you to leave or stay."

Chapter 194: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(9)

Saying that, he immediately turned around and charged into the forest.

“Stop.” Seeing Du Gu Ye leave, Liu Yue’s eyes narrowed as she shot out countless Wind Blades towards Du Gu Ye’s retreating back.

The forest scene moved. Du Gu Ye stepped out suddenly and immediately, the scene around Liu Yue instantly changed. Du Gu Ye was gone, as if he had disappeared into thin air.

It was simply too magical, Liu Yue gritted her teeth.

The Wind Blades cut through the air into the forest, slicing through a few small trees, causing a row of rustling sounds.

“I will trap you here for three days. After three days, the trap will naturally dissolve. Liu Yue, you should be grateful for your good name. Otherwise, today wouldn’t be the day you were trapped, it would be the day you died.”

A low, emotionless voice resounded in the night. It echoed from all direction, prohibiting her from distinguishing the location where the voice was coming from. The voice wasn’t an arrogant proclamation, it was only an emotionless narrative.

As his words were finished, the forest slowly became quiet again.

There wasn’t any sound of breaths nor voices. Du Gu Ye had truly left the place.

Holding the zither in her hands tightly, Liu Yue gnashed her teeth violently. Then, she suddenly raised her eyebrows. A good name? What did he mean?

Could it be that this Du Gu Ye had let her off because of Mu Rong Liu Yue, her other identity?

A flash of confusion coloured her eyes. Why did he let her go? When did they build a relationship with each other?

Knitting her brows tightly, Liu Yue threw the errant thoughts and her wild guesses on Du Gu Ye out from her mind. Who cared what he thought, the most important thing to her right now was how to get out of this heck of a place.

Trapping her for three days clearly meant that he didn't want her to participate on the last tournament. Then her plan, her blood toad...

Definitely not. He would never destroy her plans.

However, how could she solve this damnation of a trap?

Although she was the most cunning of all mercenaries in her previous world, it doesn't mean that he would be able to understand ancient chinese traps. Five Steps Eight Trigrams, she had neither heard nor used it in the modern times before. These traps had really caused her a little trouble.

The moon sets in the west and the colour of blue started to fill the sky.

It was the indication of the advent of dawn.

And at this time, at the Jin Shui Governor's Residence.

"Everyone was killed, you say?" Inside the residence, the middle-aged person whose face was not revealed yet looked at the Jin Shui City Governor with raises eyebrows.

Chapter 195: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(10)

Jin Shui City Governor nodded his head, “Everyone was killed. He didn’t let anyone go nor joined with any sides. He killed everyone without holding back at all, his killing methods ruthless and merciless. It looks like he really wasn’t that person’s spy.”

The middle-aged person immediately stood upright in a swift movement when he heard that. The person’s expressions looked serious as he said, “Pass down my orders immediately. We, the Hou Jin Kingdom will protect this person with all our strength. Liu Yue is a rare treasure who was actually not in cahoots with other powers. If our Hou Jin Kingdom succeeded in obtaining him, it would really be a great fortune to us!”

“Yes, it would indeed be a great fortune. Although we held this tournament with a different purpose in the beginning, it is really heaven’s blessings to our Hou Jin Kingdom to be able to find such a talent.” Jin Shui City’s Lord hurriedly stood up too as he spouted pleasantries with an excited expression and walked towards the door with wide steps at the same time.

“Such a talent; We must never let him be destroyed by the others.” The middle-aged person also followed outside quickly.

They had initially thought that Liu Yue was definitely a spy from another powerful entity, hence they had stood on the sidelines when Liu Yue was attacked. They never thought that Liu Yue was actually not under anyone’s orders at all, that she was a pure, uninfluenced, talented martial arts expert. If their Hou Jin Kingdom still did not put an effort to help him, then they were really asking too much.

The first rays of bright morning sunlight broke through from the edges of the dark skies, illuminating the earth.

A new day had started.

There was no one. The siege that happened suddenly yesterday night,

and the bodies of the people who were killed by the merciless Liu Yue, seemed to have all disappeared without a trace into thin air. There wasn't any evidences left at all; they were completely nowhere to be found.

They didn't leave Jin Shui City, and there were also no news about them dying. They were simply missing, every single one of them was suddenly missing.

The different powers immediately started to move. Every single powers in Jin Shui City started to search for the missing people in secret.

Some of them were anxious, some were elated, and some were expressionless. The heavy undercurrent of turmoil surged through the bright, spring morning sun.

While the city was engulfed in this turmoil, Liu Yue was entrapped in the forest on the outskirts of Jin Shui City. She couldn't escape no matter what she did.

She couldn't comprehend this weird Eight Trigrams. No matter how she walked, be it straight, turning, backwards or vertically, she couldn't find the edge of the forest. She had also chopped off a lot of trees, but she still couldn't find a way out. Instead, she felt that there were even more trees than ever before. Liu Yue was a hair's breadth away from burning the whole forest away.

Chapter 196: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(11)

Three days passed in an instant. In a blink of an eye, the bright light of dawn had permeated the horizons, warming the whole earth with its heat.

Crowds of people gathered, the whole of Jin Shui City was so packed that not even a drop of water could trickle through. Almost every single person had come. It was the last tournament; whoever stands to the end would be the strongest in the world.

The entitlement of the World's Strongest had made everyone boil with excitement.

At the present situation, the whole place was filled with people. As far as the eyes can see, the whole place looked like a boundless sea of ants.

On the tournament place, the three people who represented the three other powers had arrived. Although nobody said anything, but it was evident that these three people were spies from other countries.

Only the person who had no backing and support, the pure and clean Liu Yue, had not arrived yet.

After she went missing three days ago, she hadn't appeared even once. It was simply frustrating the whole of Hou Jin Kingdom to death.

"Have you found him yet?" Sitting high up on the VIP seat, the middle-aged person wearing a light purple court robe whispered in a low voice with a calm expression.

"No." In comparison, Jin Shui City Lord didn't look that good.

"The tournament is about to start. It doesn't matter who the first position goes to, but Liu Yue, that person..." Jin Shui City Lord didn't continue anymore, he only frowned even harder.

"Find him. You must definitely find him." The middle-aged man's face had turned ashen.

“Yes.” Jin Shui City Lord was so anxious that beads of sweat had started forming on his forehead.

The sky was at its brightest; the last tournament was starting soon. Only Liu Yue had not arrived yet. He still had not arrived yet.

Layers of golden rays continued to shine. On the outskirts of Jin Shui City, cries of birds and beasts could be heard. The forest was calm and beautiful, as gentle breezes blew softly, cool and refreshing.

Liu Yue's expression was ice cold. Her hands moved swiftly as she attacked the large tree in front of her that was blocking her path. Immediately, the tree fell down with a loud boom.

Since she couldn't find a way out, she would force her way out. She followed the direction of the sun, obliterating everything that was blocking her path.

She didn't believe that she would not be able to come out.

“Boom.” It was yet another loud sound. Another tree was hacked down by Liu Yue once again as she stepped over it with one wide step. Before her feet landed on the ground, a rustling sound was suddenly heard nearby.

There were footsteps. Liu Yue's expression lighted up a little as she immediately turned around to see. Her hands moved swiftly to her zither, her fingers locking with the zither strings, ready to attack. If it was Du Gu Ye, she would definitely kill him with all of her might, not showing any mercy.

Chapter 197: Killing Through a Tight Siege

(12)

The sound of footsteps was quickly approaching Liu Yue. In the next moment, a person suddenly burst out from the forest. It was the person with the face like a brightly shining sun, Yun Zhao.

“My brother, so you are indeed in this place. It was so difficult to find you.” Yun Zhao plopped down on the forest ground in an extremely disheveled appearance. Liu Yue, who was standing still in the middle with a cold, hardened expression, immediately put down her guard. Her cloudy expression immediately cleared up, replaced with a brilliantly shining expression.

Seeing that the person who had turned up turned out to be Yun Zhao, Liu Yue couldn't help but let her fingers which were tightly holding her zither strings loose.

Yun Zhao wiped his sweat as he quickly approached Liu Yue, grumbling at the same time, “I say, how did you manage to offend the Ao Yun Kingdom's Crown Prince, Du Gu Ye? He actually used his Nine Kill Spell to trap you. Eh? That's not right, this is not the Nine Kill Spell, it's the Nine Trap Spell. He actually didn't try to kill you?”

Raising his brows in surprise, Yun Zhao felt that the whole situation was simply too strange and absurd.

“Is there a problem?” Liu Yue turned around and glared at Yun Zhao.

“No, of course not.” Yun Zhao immediately raised both of his hands up high. “However, it was just unusual for him to do this. He never made mistakes and he was always thorough and merciless when accomplishing things, so it was really unexpected that he didn't kill you.”

“You talked too much. Let's get out of here.” Liu Yue didn't wait for Yun Zhao to move but pulled his arm with one tug as she said in a low voice. She only thought about her tournament and her plans.

Seeing this, Yun Zhao immediately turned around and walked back,

saying at the same time, “So you could also feel anxious, huh? The tournament is starting really soon, you are lucky I spent three days of effort and finally managed to find a way out of this spell, otherwise...See how you are going to participate in that tournament.

Really, even Du Gu Ye had actually came. Fortunately he only used the Nine Trap Spell. If he had used the other one, I don't even need to think anymore. The only one who could dissolve his powerful spell would probably only be that Tian Chen's King of Yi, Xuan Yuan Che, who had been missing for quite a while. Others could only watch helplessly...”

Xuan Yuan Che. Hearing his name, Liu Yue's eyes flashed a little. Her Che.

The sun was shining brightly in the sky. The last round of tournament was starting soon.

The clear and loud ringing of the bell echoed through the tournament stage. The three participating sides had already climbed up the fighting arena and stand readily at their respective sides, but Liu Yue still had not appeared yet.

“Within the time period of burning one incense, if Liu Yue had not appeared, he will be seen as forfeiting the match.”

Time passed by by the seconds, and the incense burned shorter and shorter. Liu Yue still had not arrived yet.

“Time's up, Liu Yue had forfeited the match. Starting the tournament...”

Chapter 198: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (1)

“Who said I’m forfeiting the match?” A cold voice, icy and biting, suddenly resounded through the silent arena, interrupting the MC on the stage before he could finish his sentence.

It was a frigid voice with a determination hard as steel.

Suddenly, the audience members, who were originally shrouded in silence, erupted into thunderous applause and cheers. Their faces were filled with excitement as every single one of them turned toward the source of that voice, their favourite martial art expert, Liu Yue.

“Here he is, here he is...” Amongst the rowdy chatters, on the east side of the arena, two shadows suddenly appeared.

On the arena, Liu Yue’s moon white robe had already turned a grey, ashen colour. The bright red dots on her robe had already turned dark red. She looked thoroughly disheveled.

But it was that dirty, disheveled appearance that enhanced Liu Yue’s austerity and bloodthirst. Liu Yue who was originally cold and collected, was giving off a determined and furious aura under the influence of her appearance now.

Her belt fluttered in the wind and a surge of killing intent burst out from her body.

Involuntarily, without thinking at all, the audience near Liu Yue immediately retreated a few steps, giving way to Liu Yue to walk forward.

In the midst of the loud cheers, the crowd of people split open and revealed a straight pathway straight to the arena up front.

Liu Yue crossed the crowd of people with a cold expression and walked towards the arena.

Along her way, every single person held their breaths. The shocking killing intent that Liu Yue was emitting had drenched them in cold sweat.

Behind her, Yun Zhao carried Liu Yue's zither which had already been battered due to Liu Yue's brutal use. He frowned slightly as he followed behind Liu Yue. This zither could not be used anymore, what would Liu Yue use to fight later?

Her ashen robes fluttered as her shocking killing intent draws nearer to the arena.

"Let me borrow this." As she walked past the music team that was stationed to celebrate the winner of the tournament later on, Liu Yue pulled a pipa out of one of the music girl's hands, and continued to walk towards the arena.

Seeing Liu Yue had come, the MC who was standing on the arena immediately looked towards the Jin Shui City Lord, who was sitting on the VIP seat.

"He had finally come." Because of this, Jin Shui City Lord's complexion started to have colour once again. Seeing the furious Liu Yue, his heart could finally be relieved of a great burden.

Chapter 199: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (2)

Looks like she had gone through several battles these three days. Looking at Liu Yue, no one could guess how many dangers she had been through before finally coming here. But it was all good as long as she was here.

Without even waiting for the orders from the middle-aged person, who was sitting right beside him, Jin Shui City Lord immediately nodded towards the MC on the arena.

Upon seeing Jin Shui City Lord's approval, the MC immediately declared loudly, completely ignoring the ashen expressions of the other three people on the arena, "Alright, since Liu Yue had not forfeited the match, the last tournament match will start now. We'll have to see who survived in the end to find out who is the world's no.1!"

As his finished his words, Liu Yue who was walking over stepped up onto the arena. Her whole body which was emitting a suffocating aura of killing intent, almost melted the blistering hot spring afternoon, making the whole arena cold as the north pole.

Seeing this, the MC hurriedly jumped down from the arena. It seemed like Liu Yue was furious beyond words, she better not bring a disaster to him, the small fry.

On the arena, the three people who was originally standing on three different sides of the arena, immediately huddled up together in the middle as soon as they saw Liu Yue coming.

Without any warning nor hand gestures, the three people had immediately teamed up and faced Liu Yue as their common enemy. She was someone that they could only destroy by teaming up with each other.

Liu Yue jumped onto the arena in one step, not even paying attention to the three people surrounding her on the arena. Without a second word, her hands moved across the pipa and she struck its strings with her five

fingers.

The pipa's sound was originally not as loud and as graceful as a zither's sound. It usually produced a sound that was clear and flowing.

The sound of pipa resounded through all directions, each note pouring continuously from those five fingers. It gave off a sinister killing intent and an arrogance high as the sky above.

Wind Blades created from Liu Yue's fingertips shot out like bullets towards the three other sides, continuously like a machine gun.

It was no longer a music with tunes, no longer a song with a melody.

The smooth, swirling rage in that passionate melody, started a torrent of Wind Blades with an absolute killing intent.

Her long hair and ashen robes fluttered in the wind as killing intent enveloped Liu Yue's body. It looked like an endless whirlpool, a whirlpool that could start a torrential hurricane.

Chapter 200: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (3)

The colour of the faces of the three people on the arena changed drastically. As the sword in their hands waved about, only the sounds of clashing of sharp swords could be heard, filling the whole arena.

The three people's swords danced non-stop as they tried to push forward, but unfortunately their feet kept being pushed backwards, step by step.

That invisible Wind Blades, although invisible, was filled with a strength that wouldn't lose to any kind of physical weapons. In fact, it was even quicker and more artful.

It was practically impossible to guard against.

A flash of killing intent crossed Liu Yue's eyes as she suddenly grabbed a few strings from the pipa and turned around to face one of the three people. She then pulled the strings violently, her five fingers shooting out quickly.

Only a thundering sound could be heard as the skinny man facing against Liu Yue's strings that were pulled by her five fingers violently threw up a mouthful of blood. The sword in his hand broke into several pieces and fell to the ground.

His body staggered a few steps backwards and the few bloody scars on his chest suddenly appeared, causing blood to splatter everywhere.

The skinny man's face twitched a few times before falling backwards to his back.

It was one attack. It was just one attack unleashed in a split second.

Liu Yue didn't even look at the falling skinny man, she immediately turned around and slid her fingers on her pipa again, sending a flurry of swift Wind Blades towards the other two men whose face had already paled as death.

The original pipa song, “Ambush From Ten Sides” was indeed one of the songs of the best quality.

A thick swirl of killing intent, heavy and potent, filled the whole place.

Sword Qis rustled in the air, ambushing the whole space between the sky and the earth.

The intense pipa sound broke through the sky, filled with intensity.

Even some of the surrounding audience had started to seethe with excitement. Their faces were red, eyes round and fists clenched tight; they look like they had almost wanted to charge into the arena.

Under the blue sky and white clouds, passionate cheers resounded in all directions.

With a slide of her five fingers, Liu Yue moved her feet and turned around, and in an instant, she had already appeared behind the two people. She plucked the strings on her fingers, and produced just a single note.

A high-pitched melody almost split the sky apart.

Right at this moment, the man who had not had time to turn around, and whose back was still turned against Liu Yue, spread his hands out and fell to the front.

On his back, a bloody scar appeared, slowly oozing blood out.

“Good, excellent...” The surrounding audience immediately cheered out, their voices almost reaching out to the sky.

Chapter 201: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (4)

"Excellent, beautiful." That middle-aged person who was sitting on the VIP seat was immediately full of praises upon seeing this. He patted his hands lightly on his chest, while his face showed his elation.

On the other hand, the rest of the people sitting on the VIP seats were deep in their thoughts with a cast of dark clouds over their faces.

"Ambushed From All Ten Sides" was nearing the end, trapping the audience's in a trance as the music entered into an important part.

Her eyes flashing with bloodthirst, Liu Yue's right hand strummed at the pipa quickly. That speed simply struck the surrounding people speechless.

They couldn't even see the shadow of her fingers moving. They could only see a blurred movement and the pipa string that continued to vibrate.

So pipa could be played this way, could be played with such a quick speed.

The surrounding people were all dumbstruck.

"Peng peng peng." Three extremely high notes suddenly broke through the air, right to the sky above. The song "Ambushed From All Ten Sides" was finally done playing.

As the song resonates, the audience's hearts palpitated harder. The atmosphere was almost choking.

Liu Yue slowly pressed onto the continuously vibrating pipa strings, stopping them, and stood coldly in the middle of the stage. An aura of killing intent enveloped her as the wind blew on her ashen robes.

The last man with a big build who was the last one standing on the arena slowly collapsed in the midst of the dissipating music.

A light breeze blew and the man's clothes suddenly tore open, his cloth

pieces blown away by the wind.

And amidst these torn pieces of cloths, countless scars formed on his body. Blood spread out, blooming like a flower on the arena stage underneath his body.

Everything came to an end with a short song of “Ambushed From All Ten Sides”, and an unseen martial art skill.

The golden rays of sunlight shone down upon Liu Yue, making her look like a goddess who had just descended from heaven, although she originally looked ashen and disheveled. She looked extremely majestic, handsome without compare.

Her cold gaze swept across the bodies of the three men who had collapsed, and Liu Yue humphed indifferently before she slowly raised her head and looked towards the Jin Shui City Lord who was sitting on the VIP seats.

“World’s number one, brother Liu, World’s number one...” Amidst the dumbstruck audience, Yun Zhao was the first one to react. He immediately raised his hands and waved the broken zither in his hands, jumping with excitement beside the arena as he continued to cheer.

“The world’s number one....” In just a moment, everyone who was dumbstruck by the sound of Liu Yue’s music just now came back to their senses and immediately cheered. A deafening roar suddenly resounded through the arena.

Chapter 202: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (5)

"The world's number one", these four, short, words caused the roar from the audience to be like a stream gushing into the ocean, which eventually become a prairie fire, winding up into the sky.

Liu Yue's figure shimmered as she stood coldly on top of the stage under the blue sky and white clouds, and glittering light. She did not raise her weapon, neither was she jumping with excitement. Instead, she stood like a proud winner. There was only a proud aura of "I-am-born-to-be-the-world's-number-one" coming out from her, as if it was her birthright.

However, there was nothing wrong with this. Nobody felt that it was inappropriate and thought that she was supposed to be this way.

The qualification to be arrogant was not something that she was lacking.

In the VIP booth, Yi Shui city's mayor was overjoyed. He smiled and stood up slowly as Liu Yue looked over at him.

With both hands raised, Yi Shui city's mayor boomed, "I hereby declare Liu Yue is the world's number one!"

"Woaahhhhhh!" Deafening cheers exploded from the crowd. The audience became loud and excited.

As the crowd cheered and clapped, Yi Shui's mayor and the silent man who sat next to him, marched up to the stage.

"Great, Liu Yue, Great! Today, Liu Yue is the winner of this symposium. As for the reward, you will receive the title as a general of Hou Jin kingdom. Tomorrow, you will return with me to the capital, to see the king and to receive your reward." The middle-aged man looked at Liu Yue, his face blooming with happiness.

"General Liu, haha, we are all a family now. Come on, come on. The prize for the winner, the Blood Toad; please keep it safe."

Yi Shui's mayor held a jade box. He looked at Liu Yue with a broad grin across his face.

San Ping General, the lowest rank in Hou Jin kingdom is at least a a Du Tong.

(Shiro: Ancient Chinese ranking system, equivalent to Earl/Count...i guess? I don't know how to translate this to english) Liu Yue tossed away the pipa in her hand and took the Blood Toad that was presented to her. She looked closely at it, and then let out a slight smile. This Blood Toad was authentic. She would give this to Xuan Yuan Che when he returned.

Liu Yue, who had remained cold the entire time, was letting out a smile at this very moment. Seeing this, the crowd couldn't believe their eyes and their cheers continued to increase.

The swarming crowd went out of control and started pushing towards the stage, towards Liu Yue.

Chapter 203: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (6)

When Yun Zhao who was standing beside the arena saw this, he hurriedly jumped on stage, ran straight to Liu Yue and hugged her.

When the Yi Shui City Lord and the middle-aged person saw this, they waved their hands, signalling a few soldiers to go to Liu Yue and protect her. The soldiers tagged along behind Liu Yue who was walking off towards the crowd of audience.

The spring breeze blew under the scorching sun.

And right at this moment, on the outskirts of Yi Shui City.

“Crown Prince, he had escaped.” Seeing the Eight Trigrams that had been destroyed, an Iron Guard soldier beside Du Gu Ye’s reported in a low tone.

Seeing the whole scene in front of him, Du Gu Ye didn’t speak a word.

“Crown Prince, do we need to go and kill him right now?” the Iron Guard’s soldier’s face was cold and ruthless.

Du Gu Ye turned towards the direction of the Wu Lin Championship arena. At this time, the ear-splitting roars and cheers could be heard even from the outskirts of the city. Looks like he couldn’t stop her.

A flash of coldness washed his eyes as Du Gu Ye muttered something to himself coldly. Then, he said in an indifferent tone, “No need.”

As he finished his words, he shrugged his robes, turned around and walked away from this place.

Since he had let him off previously, he would let him off once again.

Having him as a general might not necessarily be a good thing for Hou Jin Kingdom.

His white figure fluttered in the wind, his long white-coloured robe glided through his path as he disappeared into the forest.

At this time, it was still that old and ordinary forest, just that an area in the middle of the forest where the trees had been chopped down had now appeared.

Under the blue sky and lovely spring sunshine.

The excited crowd had almost broken through the inn's door. The amount of people who came here to congratulate Liu Yue was innumerable.

However, with the presence of the talented Yun Zhao, Liu Yue could enjoy the quiet in the back garden.

Playing with the Blood Toad in her hands, a smile slowly formed on Liu Yue's face. Hou Jin Kingdom's Third-ranked General, this was indeed a good title.

Night slowly crawled out. Liu Yue had looked at the Blood Toad for the whole afternoon.

Driving away everyone that had come, Yun Zhao almost shouted until his throat was sore and his voice was hoarse. Right now, he was bringing a teapot and two teacups, walking towards Liu Yue who was sitting quietly in the back garden.

Under the bright moonlight, her moon-white figure could almost compete with the brilliant moonlight.

Chapter 204: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (7)

Yun Zhao observed Liu Yue closely for a moment before a splendid smile suddenly bloomed in his face as he approached Liu Yue with skipping steps.

"Heavens, that was really tiring." Yun Zhao plopped down beside Liu Yue, grumpy and full of complaints. But his grumbles couldn't hide the happiness and excitement in his voice.

Liu Yue glanced at Yun Zhao with a raised eyebrows but did not reply.

Yun Zhao had also gotten used to Liu Yue's cold behaviour. He didn't take it to her and instead poured two cups of tea, giving one to Liu Yue and gulping down the other one in his hands. He then said, "Didn't I say that the title of the world's number one is definitely yours? Now since it finally come true, can I take a look at the Blood Toad?"

As he said that, he reached out and took the Blood Toad away from Liu Yue's hands, not even standing in ceremony with her.

Seeing this, Liu Yue raised her eyebrows but released her hands, letting Yun Zhao take the Blood Toad in her hands.

Observing the Blood Toad closely in his hands, Yun Zhao sighed full of admiration, "It was indeed a beautiful item. It was only right that my brother received such a beautiful item, only my brother deserves it."

The way he says 'my brother' was very intimate. But he didn't made unnecessary movements and returned the Blood Toad back to Liu Yue. It was as if he really just wanted to look at it only.

Seeing this, a flash of deep, profound look crossed Liu Yue's eyes. But she didn't say anything and took the Blood Toad back.

Drinking another cup of tea, Yun Zhao almost seemed like he was revived from his tiredness. Supporting himself on the table, he smiled sweetly towards Liu Yue and said, "Tomorrow you would be going on a

journey to the Hou Jin Kingdom's Capital. The Third-Ranked General title was not that high of a position. In my opinion, a person such as you, brother, should be offered even a higher position. I say, brother, why don't you come along with me? I will bring you through adventures, and pay for your meals and accommodation. What's mine will be yours too, how's that? As your brother, I will definitely follow through my words."

Yun Zhao chirped his intimate offer straightforwardly, as if he had become sworn brothers with Liu Yue or went through a lifetime of relationship with her.

Hearing this, a faintly discernable smile appeared on Liu Yue's face. It was extremely vague that it was difficult to make out the meaning behind the smile.

Yun Zhao had finally asked her about it.

"I want to become an official." Replying Yun Zhao with a curt sentence, a choked Yun Zhao stared at Liu Yue for a while, not knowing what to reply her with.

Chapter 205: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (8)

Such a god-like person turned out to be rushing to become an ordinary official. It made him feel really resentful.

“Alright, alright. I have a brother in Xue Sheng Kingdom with an official as a relative. I'll guarantee you an official position, alright? I say, brother, it won't be a difficult feat for me,”

Yun Zhao looked at Liu Yue rubbing his brows, as if he was at his wits ends with Liu Yue, as he replied with a complacent tone.

“I don't want to go.” Liu Yue replied deliberately as she slowly kept away the Blood Toad on the table and raised the tea that Yun Zhao served her to her lips.

Hearing this, Yun Zhao's eyes opened wide like a fish's. “You don't want to go? What does that mean? Brother, don't tell me you came to Hou Jin Kingdom because it is close to where you lived?”

Indifferently glancing at Yun Zhao's shocked eyes, Liu Yue nodded, “It's convenient for me.”

Having heard what was said, Yun Zhao's mouth twitched a little as he stared at Liu Yue, his face full of disbelief.

“Don't tell me if it wasn't Hou Jin Kingdom that organized this Wu Lin Championship, if it was another country instead, then you wouldn't...”

“Does it need to be asked?” Liu Yue coldly replied Yun Zhao.

Choking for a while, Yun Zhao slowly took a deep breath. He thought that Liu Yue had ventured overseas to Hou Jin Kingdom because it was close to her hometown. Furthermore, Hou Jin Kingdom was holding an Wu Lin Championship, that would fulfil Liu Yue's wish to become a government official. That was why he had come.

Looking deeply into Liu Yue's cold-blooded, expressionless face that did not give away any ounce of thought, Yun Zhao grasped the teacup on his

hands and slowly poured a cup of tea for himself. He then reached out and poured Liu Yue some tea too.

“Then, brother, did you mean you won’t leave this place no matter what?” Looking at the green tea on Liu Yue’s cup, Yun Zhao asked casually.

Liu Yue looked at Yun Zhao indifferently and played with the teacup on her hands, looking at the green tea inside. A flash of ruthlessness flashed across her eyes, but her face was expressionless when she replied, “Yes.” indifferently.

Hearing this, Yun Zhao slowly frowned as he observed Liu Yue who hadn’t made a single mistake.

Under the pure white moonlight, Liu Yue who was covered in a moon-white robe looked like she was emitting a faint silver light. Her beautiful and proud look was simply enchanting, making others unable to take off their gaze off her.

Chapter 206: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (9)

It seemed like there wouldn't be a second person with such a magnificent presence in this world. Her cold and proud look was intense and violent, yet it was also making a surge of emotions waved surface in other's hearts.

Lightly gritting his teeth, Yun Zhao showed a distressed face as he looked at Liu Yue and said, "Then we will separate here, brother."

"Take care on your journey." Liu Yue turned her head to the side a little to look at Yun Zhao and suddenly raised her teacup towards Yun Zhao, saying slowly, "Thanks."

Saying that, she prepared to drink the tea on her teacup.

Hearing Liu Yue thanking him, although simple and indifferent, made Yun Zhao felt really moved in his heart. This Liu Yue who was always cool and aloof could actually thank him. Was he thanking him for helping him out of that forest this morning?

This person was not one without emotions and feelings. This person was not someone who didn't know the ways of the world.

Although she was indifferent, so indifferent that others would think that she didn't care about anything at all, in reality, she had paid attention to the details in her world.

His heart trembled a little as Yun Zhao looked at the teacup that Liu Yue had brought to her lips, and his heart twitched suddenly without any reason.

He raised the teapot in his hands and poured some on Liu Yue's cup as he said, "Let me pour some more for you, yours is already empty."

As he said that, his quick hands tilted the teacup and poured some tea on Liu Yue's teacup. But it was already full originally, hence when Yun Zhao poured more, the tea inside started to overflow and spilled on Liu

Yue's robes.

Liu Yue couldn't help but to put the teacup on the table as she looked coldly at Yun Zhao.

The moon white robe on her body was tarnished with a patch of light yellow colour from the tea. Although the colour was faint, it was extremely obvious.

"Ah, my mistake, my mistake. Please don't take offense, brother." Seeing this, Yun Zhao immediately took back his hand and smiled at Liu Yue, currying favour with her.

Seeing this, Liu Yue looked at Yun Zhao deeply then stood up, "Excuse me." As she said that, she turned around and walked towards room no.1 that was named the Sky Room.

Behind her, Yun Zhao watched Liu Yue walking away under the bright moonlight. His giggling and playful expression slowly disappeared.

Looking at the teapot in his hands, Yun Zhao then raised his head and looked at the starry sky. He slowly sighed a breath. He couldn't bear to do it.

He couldn't even bear to destroy him, how could he bear to kill him?

Chapter 207: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (10)

He didn't know when he became so indecisive.

The moon was high up in the sky full of twinkling stars.

As she entered her room, Liu Yue looked down towards the stain on her robe that had started showing signs of corruption. She then slowly raised her head and looked towards the back garden.

It was a colourless and odorless poison, one of the most potent poison in this world. The victim who had consumed it would immediately die a violent death, there wouldn't be a possibility to cure it.

It was not a poison that an ordinary person could get, and it was also not a poison that anyone could possess.

She had initially thought Yun Zhao would make his move at this last moment. Otherwise, when she go to the Hou Jin Kingdom's capital, he wouldn't have the opportunity to anymore.

She had also been waiting for Yun Zhao to make his move, only then would she have the most important evidence and a definite intention.

It was just that unexpectedly, he stopped right at the last moment and spilled the poison over, giving up in poisoning her.

She frowned her brows as Liu Yue looked away from the back garden. What was this Yun Zhao thinking? Why did he let go of this good opportunity? This person was simply an unfathomable mystery.

The stars in the sky shone brightly upon the different moods inside and outside the inn.

The next morning, Liu Yue had already at one point of time left somewhere in the morning, and had returned back at a certain point of time. Du Yi who looked mysterious and full of secrets, had risen and was walking down to to the first floor.

As he made his way downstairs, he thought that the Yi Shui City Lord

and the guards of the middle-aged person should be arriving soon. Today was the day that they would journey to the Hou Jin Kingdom Capital.

Stepping across the steps, downstairs, a man wearing a water-blue long robe suddenly approached Liu Yue at a quick speed.

Liu Yue saw the approaching figure and slowly raised her brows. What does this Yun Zhao wants?

Du Yi who was on her side did not feel Yun Zhao's killing intent at all, hence he stayed at Liu Yue's side and did not move at all.

Quickly approaching Liu Yue, Yun Zhao raised his head and looked at Liu Yue as he said, "Brother, I want to follow you along. Anyway I can go anywhere to sightsee, and the Hou Jin Kingdom's Capital looks fun. I couldn't bear to part with you, brother,"

That brightly shining smiling face was almost putting blooming flowers to shame. But seems like in Liu Yue's eyes, it wasn't the case at all.

Glaring at the face in front of her, Liu Yue raised her eyebrows up high and a smile that didn't look like a smile appeared on her face. She looked towards Yun Zhao and spoke.

Chapter 208: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (11)

This face in front of her had both eyes in a mess of bruises. His face had black and green patches all over, his nose was bleeding, and his lips were split. Where was the handsomeness that the sun couldn't even compare to, his face was practically in a terrible state.

But on such a beat-up face, this Yun Zhao was still brimming with his classic brilliant smile. As his facial features scrunched up, it was an even more wretched sight to behold.

Even if Liu Yue was not an enthusiastic or warm person, she also felt that upon comparison, this person's appearance now was indeed a little excessive.

Seeing Liu Yue looking at him with a barely present smile, Yun Zhao could not help giving a little embarrassed chuckle. He lowered his voice. "I don't have a choice, the Kingdom of Hou Jin has my longstanding adversaries, I have to cover up a little."

Talking and touching his sinister-looking face at the same time, his cheeks twitched. "However, their attacks are fiercer than usual, I reckon it's because they are making full use of this rare opportunity which they only managed to grasp with effort."

Adversary, maybe it is not just a mere adversary. In Liu Yue's heart, she understood it more clearly than anybody else.

But if he wants to follow, it did not matter, she also wanted to see what this Yun Zhao really wanted to do, and what intentions he had. Moreover, he could also prove useful to her.

At this moment, Liu Yue also did not say much. She started walking down the stairs.

Upon seeing this, Yun Zhao immediately followed her from behind, squeezing Du Yi who was initially walking behind her to the side, in such a natural movement that it seemed as if he was really Liu Yue's brother.

Upper Northern Kingdom of Hou Jin City.

Yi Ya City of the Kingdom of Hou Jin was not very far from Yi Shui City. It took merely twenty plus days to travel.

The journey was peaceful. Yi Shui City Lord and the middle aged official brought a large number of troops and horses along the way, and moved towards Yi Ya City with much fanfare.

Under the protection of so many troops, nothing like Liu Yue's experience of being plundered at Yi Shui City happened throughout the whole journey, and nobody made a move.

Of course, on the territory of the Kingdom of Hou Jin, if they wanted to spend their utmost efforts in protecting one person, how would there even be any opportunity for anybody else to make a move.

Previously they had looked on without lifting a finger, hence Liu Yue gave her independent support.

Chapter 209: Receiving the General's Position, Meeting the Ministers (12)

Now, as they spent their full strength in protection, naturally nobody could behave in such an unbridled manner.

In the splendid radiance of spring, hundreds of flowers bloomed after one another, and it was a massive meadow of glorious fragrance.

The journey was not lonely either. This Yun Zhao knew many things, and his knowledge was so widespread that it spanned the northern and southern tips of the large river, and across the ages of a thousand years, and there seemed to be no bounds to it.

In the midst of a journey filled with intellectual discourse, the twenty-odd days of travelling time flashed by in a blink of the eye.

Kingdom of Hou Jin's capital, Yi Ya City.

Not as elaborate or magnificent as the Kingdom of Tian Chen, the Kingdom of Hou Jin's capital oozed a form of dignified magnanimity, a type of grandeur that overlooked the entire continent's southwest region.

Being a country amongst the seven kingdoms whose strength was merely second to the northern Overlord Ao Yun, and the eastern Kingdom of Xue Sheng, Hou Jin was was the lord of the entire southwest.

Hence, that imposing manner completely pervaded into its capital, which stood proudly looking down upon everything else.

The interior of the imperial palace was adorned in gold and jade in a glorious manner, towering and majestic in its stature.

The imperial palace's main hall, Qian Qing Hall.

Eight white jade enormous pillars stood tall and arresting, embellished with wyverns spiraling with fangs bared and claws brandished, overspilling with its awe-inspiring overtone.

At this moment, the Kingdom of Hou Jin's hundreds of civil and military officials spread out on two sides. On the highly elevated nine dragon

throne, the Emperor of Hou Jin, clad in dark purple dragon robes, was positioned on his seat, his entire body emanating an intimidating aura.

On the lower steps, Liu Yue, as always clad in a body of moon-white robes, with the addition of a light red belt tied on her waist, knelt on a single knee in the middle of the hall.

“By the order of the heavens, by the will of the Emperor’s, the exceptionally skilled Liu Yue with political and military achievements that surpass most, with strategic talent and skill being first in this generation, and also serving the Kingdom of Hou Jin with a heart of loyalty and dedication that can be proven by the sun and the moon, is specially bestowed the title of Third-ranked High Military General, granted the privilege of coming before the Emperor and granted a High Military General Official Residence. That is all.”

The sharp voice announcing the decree resonated in the gloriously decorated main hall, and spread into the distance.

“Your servant receives the decree.” Her clear and distant voice ringing out, Liu Yue unhurriedly lifted her head and took the imperial decree from the smiling head court eunuch’s hands.

“Official Liu, please rise.” The Emperor of Hou Jin, with a face of formidable might and a valiant figure, looked at Liu Yue with a satisfied look on his face, and extended his hand.

Rarely did he meet such an expert without any background and with just and honest intentions. It was practically exceptionally good fortune, how could he not like it.

“Thank you Your Highness.” Liu Yue bowed slightly. With her head bent down, a hint of a cold smile flashed across the corner of her mouth.

She as Tian Chen’s Concubine Yi, has now become a Third-ranked official in the Kingdom of Hou Jin. Hehe, this was really a case of the reversal of the wheel of fortune.

Whatever that was owed to her, must be returned to her. This time, she has returned in a confident manner, to become a serving court official of

the Kingdom of Hou Jin.

Chapter 210: Meeting an Old Friend (1)

With shapely, angled brows, he was incomparably handsome.

The ministers and ruler of the Kingdom of Hou Jin had heard about this newly appointed Third-Ranked Military General for a long time, and that he had really good looks. But they did not suppose that upon seeing him with their own eyes, he was even better than what was rumoured about him.

Each one of them could not resist staring at the natural and unrestrained Liu Yue.

Looking down at the Liu Yue on the step below from his high position, the former whom stood exuding calmness and coldness, the Emperor of Hou Jin felt that the more he looked at him, the more he felt that he was good, and the more pleasing to the eye he seemed to be.

In this moment, his eyebrows twitched as he looked at Liu Yue and said, "Official Liu, I am unaware whether you have studied the art of war before? Are you well acquainted with the current situation of the seven kingdoms?"

"I am unable to, I do not know." Liu Yue raised her head, looking at the Emperor and answering in a clean and sharp manner.

As she finished her words, a slight ripple immediately bubbled forth in the solemnly silent hall. Different ideas and notions flashed past the minds of the civil and military officials at once.

"Oh." The Emperor looked at Liu Yue, raising his voice a little.

Liu Yue looked straight into the eyes of the Emperor, and upon seeing this, continued in a considerably direct manner. "Being someone from overseas, I do not know the situation, I will obey all as the imperial order commands."

"Good." As Liu Yue finished her last word, the Emperor immediately called out, nodding as he smiled widely at Liu Yue.

His eyes revealed praise, and it looked like he was extremely pleased.

The prime minister at the side swept a slight gaze across Liu Yue, and also nodded his head lightly.

The Kingdom of Hou Jin did not lack military generals or adept officials. Liu Yue's skill in martial arts was already so high, that if she also knew the art of war, and understood the current military situation of the seven kingdoms, such an individual highly capable in both civil and military matters was a far too outstanding person, and would sooner or later be a potential danger, and one would not dare to put her in any important position.

However, if she was only highly adept in martial arts, and did not have much other strong points, and also harboured simple thoughts and intentions, such a person would definitely be very useful.

He would be like a sharp blade in their hands, only knowing how to kill their enemies, and will not bite the hand that fed him.

Not bad, not bad, this Liu Yue is an excellent choice to cultivate for their use.

The intentions of the people in the middle of the hall became evil at once.

The astute and circumspect ones like the prime minister and company revealed much praise in their gazes. On the other hand, some people's gazes turned disdainful as they looked down on Liu Yue. Some others heaved a sigh of relief, as Liu Yue's arrival seemed to pose no threat to them.

Without changing her facial expression, but having already noticed and understood the meaningful looks and glances around her, Liu Yue laughed coldly in her heart, though her face remained even.

Chapter 211: Meeting an Old Friend (2)

“Official Liu comes from overseas, yet demonstrates laudable loyalty to me. Such young and brave talent has potential when put to good use.” The Emperor of the Kingdom of Hou Jin smiled as looked at Liu Yue.

“However, one cannot be too ignorant of matters of the central plains. In my opinion, from now on, follow the Crown Prince closely and learn more.”

As the words came out of the Emperor’s mouth, a commotion immediately broke out among all the officials in the hall.

To be able to follow the Crown Prince closely, which one of his followers was not a First-ranked Official? This Liu Yue was just a small Third-ranked Military General, but was given such a privilege to enter the Crown Prince’s cabinet. It seems that the Emperor thought highly of this Liu Yue, he would certainly become successful in his career in the near future.

In this moment, the officials immediately heaped massive bright smiles on their faces. The way they looked at Liu Yue was practically enthusiastic to the extreme.

“Yes.” As usual, Liu Yue replied evenly, as if he did not know what a big privilege had been handed to him.

But it was this even calmness and ignorance that made the Emperor like him even more.

There were too many intelligent people on this earth. It was precisely such simple, wholeheartedly loyal people that were indeed rare and valuable.

“I am unaware of your age this year, General Liu?” In the midst of the fawning and pleased gazes, the Crown Prince, who had been standing in front of the Emperor on the white jade elevation and had been silent all this while, suddenly flashed a smile at Liu Yue.

Refined and gentle, but also emanating some vigour in his stature, he

may not be able to compare to the likes of Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye, but the Crown Prince of Hou Jin, Chen Fei, was also considered to be a talented individual.

“Sixteen.” Liu Yue was really direct with his answer.

Upon hearing this, the Crown Prince nodded his head. “Sixteen, about time to settle down.”

After muttering that sentence in a low tone, Chen Fei smiled as he turned his head to speak to the Emperor. “Father, as the idiom goes, when one settles down one achieves goals, I think General Liu is a young and talented individual, and also close in age to the Seventeenth Princess. Such a pair made in heaven, what does Father think?”

As the Emperor heard this, he glanced quickly at the Crown Prince, his eyes twitching slightly.

He understood the meaning behind Chen Fei’s words. Such a talent was rare, a mere court official position was secondary, the best way is to tie his entire person in this country, to restrain his heart and intentions.

To do so, the undoubtedly best way is to tie him to the imperial family.

Chapter 212: Meeting an Old Friend (3)

As he glanced at Liu Yue in a profound manner, the Emperor of Hou Jin slowly smiled and nodded his head. "Not bad, not bad, the Crown Prince's suggestion is reasonable. In today's celebration, let me herein add another celebratory event, I bestow upon the Seventeenth Princess and Official Liu, to choose another day for marriage."

As he finished his sentence, an uproar immediately erupted amongst all the civil and military officials in the main hall.

For one who just stepped into the imperial court, he was immediately bestowed marriage with a princess, and became a prince consort. In so many years of the history of the Kingdom of Hou Jin, this was the first; such honour and glory was practically unprecedented.

Even though the Seventeenth Princess was born to an ordinary concubine, and was not regarded as very honourable in position, but she was still a princess.

In this moment, all the civil and military officials who had the ability to etch a place in the middle of this main hall, where every one of them was definitely not somebody who could be easily dealt with, all immediately started congratulating Liu Yue in succession.

Such a highly regarded individual, how could they not build up connections with him.

Liu Yue however was slightly stunned, she thought of hundreds and thousands of possibilities, but never thought that her arrival immediately spawned a royal marriage. To bestow marriage upon Concubine Yi of the Kingdom of Tian Chen, what kind of joke was this?

This Kingdom of Hou Jin was so desperate for people?

"Prince Consort Liu, thank the King for the privilege." The prime minister of Hou Jin who stood at the foremost position of the hundreds of officials, smiled at Liu Yue as he prompted him.

Liu Yue raised her eyebrows, and the corners of her mouth lifted into a

smile. A bestowed marriage then, she had nothing to fear.

“Thank you Your Highness.”

A shimmering brilliance of golden light sprinkled outside the Palace Main Hall of the Kingdom of Hou Jin, spread out in a pool of gold.

An appointed general and a government official, and also the prince consort of this reigning dynasty.

Such news was like a strong gale on the grassland, at that very moment blowing across tens of thousands of miles of high altitudes, and spread across all directions in rapid speed.

“What, a royal marriage?” At night, in the General’s Official Residence in Hou Jin’s capital, Yun Zhao with an entire face of black and blue bruises, stared at Liu Yue with his mouth open.

“Is there a problem?” Liu Yue leaned back on her chair as she looked at Yun Zhao.

The Kingdom of Hou Jin handled matters with considerably commendable speed, in such a short time she already had a General’s Official Residence, and the highly rumoured status of the Prince Consort, perhaps from now onwards, there was nobody in Hou Jin’s Capital who did not know of this already.

This guy’s face was practically a more and more horrible spectacle to endure, it has been twenty-odd days, not only did it not recover, but it seemed to be also getting worse, as if he had fought his entire way over.

The corner of Yun Zhao’s mouth twitched, his entire face in an expression of disbelief.

Chapter 213: Meeting an Old Friend (4)

“They are really ruthless and quick. This Chen Fei should really not be underestimated,” Yun Zhao’s face darkened as he waved the fan in his hands.

He observed Liu Yue from head to toe unhappily; he was extremely unhappy about this news.

The reason for his unhappiness was not because of Liu Yue wanting to stay in Hou Jin Kingdom, it was because he didn’t want him to marry. Imagining him having a wife made his stomach churn.

He didn’t want Liu Yue to marry.

Didn’t want Liu Yue to marry? Suddenly, Yun Zhao was so surprised by his own thought that he almost jumped.

Why did he have such a scary thought?

Even if he wanted Liu Yue to follow him, even if he wanted to be his sworn brother, it was a matter of course that this brother of his would marry someone. Why would he be uncomfortable with that?

He must be mad, mad. Yun Zhao fought with his inner self.

“I’m going to bathe.” After saying that, Yun Zhao turned around and immediately disappeared. With that kind of speed, he must have used Light Body Technique.

Looking at the direction where Yun Zhao disappeared to, Liu Yue thought, ‘Why was he in so much hurry to bathe? He even used the Light Body Technique, humph.’

She didn’t pay attention to Yun Zhao, but from the corner of her eye, she caught Du Yi, whose face had been a picture of arctic a moment ago, trying to control his expression, making his face looked extremely distorted.

After a ruthless glare, Du Yi immediately turned back and retreated.

Their Imperial Princess was going to marry a Princess. This was indeed

a good news, an extremely good news.

If this news was spread to the public, how shocking would it be to everyone? Their Imperial Princess marrying a Princess, that was really a ridiculous joke.

Even he, who was cold and emotionless, couldn't endure it a little.

Seeing Du Yi's distorted face as he retreated, Liu Yue rubbed her temples. It was not as if she was the one who wanted to marry.

Raising her head and looking at the Eastern Seas direction, Liu Yue revealed a smile, showing her white teeth. She said in a low voice, "You haven't come back, why haven't you come back yet?"

"Humph, if you still haven't come back, I'm going to marry that Princess and make you die of anger, you asshole." Gritting her teeth, Liu Yue rubbed her knuckles as if she was preparing to box someone.

The spring breeze blew as the news spread quickly towards all directions.

At Yun Cheng Residence in the Qu Kingdom.

Under the moonlight, a horse carriage hurried towards Tian Chen, with a speed as if they were almost flying.

Chapter 214: Meeting an Old Friend (5)

The horses that was running and pulling the carriage looked so ordinary that they could be easily forgotten and ignored when others saw them. However, they looked extremely spirited when they ran, and had a speed that even a racing horse couldn't compare.

The four horses ran through the dark night with a lightning speed. However, that horse carriage was stable and did not jolt too much.

It was as if someone was lifting it up from the bottom. It was extremely stable.

Inside the horse carriage, two lanterns shone with a sparkling light, emitting a bright radiance. In the silent night, two figures could be seen inside the carriage, one sitting upright while the other leaning against the walls.

"Cough, cough. Take a look at the news we received just now." An old-sounding voice resounded, carrying an amused tone.

The old man sitting inside the carriage was filled with amusement as he passed something to the young man leaning against the carriage. It was a letter that they had just received from a Carrier Pigeon.

"What is it about?" That young man who was closing his eyes opened his eyes when he heard him. He received the letter that the old man had passed to him.

His voice was deep, filled with an unexplainable rich and sexy tone.

"What, marriage ceremony? Marrying a wife?" Suddenly, the deep voice had changed pitch, and the sound of teeth grinding ensued. That young man immediately sat upright as his whole face darkened.

As a cold wind blew into the carriage, the temperature inside the carriage seemed to decrease by a few degrees.

"Heheh, heheh." The owner of the old voice tried his best to keep his voice down, but a few burst of laughter escaped his lips.

That old man's face was filled with smiles, but he didn't dare to laugh out loud. He could only turn around, looked outside the carriage window and tried to choke down his laughter with all his might.

"Go to Hou Jin Kingdom." An expression that didn't seem quite like amusement or anger crossed the young man's eyes as he waved his hands and knocked on the carriage door.

The carriage immediately turned towards the direction of Hou Jin Kingdom.

The cold night wind blew as the moonlight shone brightly.

In the Hou Jin Kingdom's Capital.

Located in a strategic place in the southwest, the prosperity of Yi Ya City, the Hou Jin Kingdom's capital, was much more than the Tian Chen's Capital.

Many people walked through its streets that was filled with different stalls. The whole place was extremely lively.

"What, are you not used to it?" At the White Tiger Road, the Hou Jin Crown Prince who wore a golden robe looked towards Liu Yue who was standing beside him.

She was still wearing a white robe covering her whole body. It seemed like she had dressed according to her wishes, but even with this ordinary style that she wore, she had made the people in the streets turn to her for a second look.

Chapter 215: Meeting an Old Friend (6)

“It’s too noisy.” Liu Yue replied indifferently.

Since the moment the news about her marrying that what’s-her-name princess was announced, her General’s Official Residence had practically become a wet market.

Today, the Minister of Appointments came. Tomorrow, it would be the Assistant Minister of Rites’ turn. The next day, it would be the Minister of Transport. Everyone was coming to visit her in an endless stream.

Liu Yue had left these matters for Yun Zhao to handle. It was not because she wanted quiet. It was just that the information that she wanted couldn’t be taken from the visiting dignitaries.

The Hou Jin Crown Prince, Chen Fei laughed as he heard her. He then replied unhurriedly, “It’s not a bad thing if you did not form a relationship with them,”

Pausing himself for a while, he then smiled at Liu Yue and said, “The auspicious date has been determined. The eighth of next month is a good day. The Ministry of Rites had started to prepare for the celebration, you can ask them whatever you want if you have any requests.”

Hearing this, Liu Yue replied with a ‘yeah’, her reaction was neither enthusiastic nor cold.

Seeing this, Chen Fei laughed and nodded satisfiedly, “Right, come with me to see my Third Brother today. His Third King’s Residence was just right beside your General’s Official Residence. He is a little hot-headed, but he’s also not bad.”

Liu Yue deduced that ‘not bad’ meant that he wouldn’t threaten the Crown Prince, and that he was his person.

Although she had a plan in her heart, her expression did not change.

“Your majesty, your majesty.” A square faced young man suddenly burst forward from a crowd of people and jogged towards them as he called out.

Seeing this person, Chen Fei stopped in his tracks and asked, "What happened?"

The square-faced man looked extremely young, she reckoned that he was more or less her age. His thick eyebrows and big eyes were spirited and his strides were strong. He must have practiced some martial arts.

However, all of these were unimportant. The most important thing was that his face looked extremely familiar.

Liu Yue couldn't help but to deeply observe this young man who seemed to be very close to Chen Fei. He really looked familiar, but she couldn't remember where she had seen him before.

The young man ran towards them in a few steps and stood right beside Chen Fei. When he saw Liu Yue, he didn't speak.

Seeing this, Chen Fei laughed, "It's okay."

The young man's eyes flashed with a hint of doubt, but he didn't say anything else and took out a small piece of bound paper from his robe.

Chapter 216: Meeting an Old Friend (7)

“Your majesty, this is the news from West Cliff.”

West Cliff? Liu Yue’s eyebrows twitched a little.

West Cliff was Hou Jin Kingdom’s secret organisation organized by the Royal Family. If we used modern terms to describe it, it was an agency, a well-known spy agency.

During the three years she was in Tian Chen Kingdom, the Blood Shadow Guards that she had trained herself, spending her utmost effort and time, couldn’t even manage to get any information on Hou Jin Kingdom’s West Cliff organisation. They also couldn’t infiltrate inside.

That was why she had come to Hou Jin herself.

Her ears pricking up, although Liu Yue’s expression did not change at all on the outside, she was listening closely in her heart.

Opening the letter, Chen Fei looked at it in a glance and smiled, “It’s not something urgent, it’ll not be too late if we send someone to retrieve them tomorrow,”

The young man immediately replied with a short ‘yes’ and then looked at Liu Yue.

Liu Yue also looked at him, her hands folded in front of her chest.

Seeing this, Chen Fei laughed, “Liu Yue, this is my attendant, Fei Yan.”

Fei Yan. Liu Yue suddenly realized. His surname was Fei. Right, no wonder she thought that his face looked familiar. Turns out that he looked like him, Fei Cheng Lie.

She had only seen Fei Cheng Lie two or three times, and had never observed him closely. Hence for a moment she only felt that his face was a little bit familiar, but couldn’t tell who he looked like.

He was Fei Cheng Lie’s most treasured son. He abandoned his parents, wife and children and only brought his youngest son back. Who would he looked like if he didn’t look like Fei Cheng Lie?

She had to travel far and wide looking for him, but she actually found him so easily now.

Fei Cheng Lie who was hiding in Hou Jin Kingdom was like a stone that was thrown into the ocean. She couldn't find him even after 3 years. Today, his son had conveniently appeared right in front of her.

"General Liu." Fei Yan immediately bowed towards Liu Yue.

Seeing this, Liu Yue smiled as she patted Fei Yan's hands, leisurely saying, "We are all our own people, you don't have to be so formal."

Amidst her speech, Liu Yue's slender fingers had slid on the back of Fei Yan's hands unnoticed, leaving a red scar that not even Fei Yan had realized.

"I like the way you say it." Chen Fei happily nodded his head.

As he reached out and patted Liu Yue's shoulders, he smiled, "It should be this way. In the future you can get to know each other more, and cover up for each other's weaknesses."

Chapter 217: Meeting an Old Friend (8)

“Yes.” Fei Yan immediately replied respectfully.

Liu Yue only smiled a little, and didn't say anything much.

“Let's go, since we are outside the palace today, we should go to visit the Third Brother...”

“Ahh!” Chen Fei had not even finished the sentence he was happily saying when Fei Yan, who was perfectly alright just a second ago suddenly cried out miserably as his face changed colour. His whole body was trembling as he collapsed onto the ground.

His whole face had turned white as his whole body lay on the ground and shook continuously.

Chen Fei's expression immediately changed and shouted, “What happened?” with concern as he inspected Fei Yan who was still trembling uncontrollably on the ground.

Liu Yue's eyes flashed as she grabbed onto Chen Fei, stopping him from inspecting Fei Yan.

Chen Fei immediately turned around, and Liu Yue said with a stern voice, while looking at Fei Yan who was lying on the ground, “He's been poisoned.”

The surrounding guards who were hidden amongst the crowd charged forward even before she had finished her sentence.

The surrounding ordinary citizens who were bustling with excitement just a few seconds ago, were alarmed by this turn of events. Not daring to stay near, they immediately walked away as far as possible.

Hearing Liu Yue's words, Chen Fei raised his eyebrows and stood up straight. He had no intention of personally inspecting Fei Yan's condition.

The Guard Chief that had immediately come forward and inspected Fei Yan's condition, then looked towards Chen Fei with a serious look, “He is poisoned.”

“What poison? How did he get poisoned?” Chen Fei’s complexion didn’t look too good.

That Guard Chief knitted his brows tightly and shook his head, “I don’t know.”

As he said that, Chen Fei’s eyes seemed to flash with anger. That Guard Chief was immediately so shocked that he didn’t dare to raise his head.

“Let me see.” At this time, Liu Yue who was holding onto Chen Fei immediately let go of his hands, moved forward and squatted beside Fei Yan. She bent over and inspected him.

In a short time, Fei Yan’s face had already turned black. His breath was laboured and his trembling was becoming more and more severe.

Liu Yue’s expression turned cold as she tore a piece of her robe and wrapped it around her hands. Tearing Fei Yan’s clothes open, they saw that the skin under that clothes had already started to turn black very quickly. The black colour was slowly spreading towards Fei Yan’s heart.

The poison was extremely potent.

Chapter 218: Meeting an Old Friend (9)

“Silver needle.” Liu Yue said coldly.

The Imperial bodyguard beside Liu Yue immediately gave a silver needle to her. Liu Yue took it and pricked it at Fei Yan’s shoulders. Immediately, black coloured blood that had a fishy smell splurged out.

Seeing this, Liu Yue checked all of Fei Yan’s other limbs then raised Fei Yan’s hands to observe it more clearly.

Although the skin looked fine, there was a small scar.

Right when nobody was paying attention, Liu Yue wiped the finger and erased the faint scar from his hands, wiping out all traces of injury.

“Hit his Bai Hui and Tan Zhong acupoint, I don’t know how to hit pressure points,” Standing up, Liu Yue ordered in a low voice.

The Imperial Royal Captain who was squatting beside her immediately hit Fei Yan’s Bai Hui and Tan Zhong pressure points with a movement as quick as lightning.

After his two pressure points was hit, his dark complexion immediately diminished slowly.

Chen Fei, who did not speak at all throughout Liu Yue’s diagnosis and treatment, looked at Liu Yue with a raised eyebrow, “How is it?”

Liu Yue shook her head, “It’s really weird. i’ve never seen such a poison before. I could only stop the poison from spreading temporarily, I can’t detoxify it,”

Hearing this, Chen Fei swept a glance across the surrounding guards.

Every single person was looking down. It was obvious that none of them had an inkling of what poison it was.

“Men, carry him and follow me,” Seeing this, Che Fei said in a low voice and ordered immediately.

“Yes.” Those Imperial Royal Guards immediately tore off their clothes and wrapped them around their hands before supporting Fei Yan up.

“You, come along too.” Giving Liu Yue a glance, Chen Fei nodded towards her.

Liu Yue didn't say anything much and only responded with a short “yeah.” She followed them from behind.

The group of people immediately turned around and walked towards the east of the palace.

They walked quickly, and in a few moments, the group of people reached a dark house on the east of the palace.

Fei Yan's body was pitch-black; other than black, there was only black. There was no other colour. There were only two statues of lions baring its fangs and claws in front of the dark house, everything looked so calm and peaceful.

There wasn't a single person in the area surrounding the house. The whole place was brimming with a gloomy, sinister ambience, as if it wanted to swallow every person that had came to this place.

Liu Yue looked up to the plaque hung on top of the dark house, “West Cliff”.

Chapter 219: Meeting an Old Friend (10)

This was Hou Jin Kingdom's secret weapon, its trump card. This was the place that she had spent three years looking for, the "West Cliff" that she couldn't figure out all along.

A thin, cold smile flashed across her expression. After spending so much effort on infiltrating this place, she had actually enter this place from the front door so blatantly.

The group of people walked towards the dark house. Before anyone managed to knock on the door, the front door immediately opened with a loud sound. Two people wearing black immediately came out and welcomed them.

"Your Highness the Crown Prince..."

Before the two people finished their polite greeting, Chen Fei waved his hands, stopping their greeting and said, "Fei Yan was poisoned, prepare a space for him in the Fourth Hall."

The two people's face immediately changed when they heard this. One quickly went back into the dark house, while the other quickly came forward and looked at Fei Yan who was still carried on the Imperial Royal Captain's back. Seeing Fei Yan's bad complexion, his face immediately crumpled as he turned around and rushed into the dark house.

"Follow along." Chen Fei turned and spoke to Liu Yue, before following closely from behind.

As for the guards behind him, everyone retreated neatly, standing far in front of the West Cliff's front door and didn't follow them inside.

Seeing this, Liu Yue didn't say anything as she followed Chen Fei into the buiding.

The front door closed as the two people entered.

Against expectations, although the front door looked small, the space inside the building was actually quite big. Seems like all the houses along these street had been summed up in this whole space.

Liu Yue observed the path she walked. The so-called First Hall, Second Hall and Third Hall were all names to partition the whole place. The place was closed securely, without a courtyard, nothing inside could be seen from the outside.

The place was also extremely deserted, as if no one was actually inside the building.

Quickly moving along the large corridor, Liu Yue tailed behind Chen Fei as they entered the Fourth Hall.

Fourth Hall, West Cliff's Fourth Hall was the division in charge of detoxification and poison identification.

The two people entered the Hall, which was a place that was as big as one of the halls in the Hou Jin Palace. Bottles and vases spread out along the walls of the room.

Potent smell of herbs spread out in the room. There were too many kinds of herbs' smell mixed together that it wasn't clear what kind of materials were present inside the room.

And in the quiet, silent room, three people had already gathered. There were two handsome looking middle aged people and one youth.

Chapter 220: Meeting an Old Friend (11)

At this time, their faces were all gloomy. As they took out a white-coloured pill from one of the bottles and squeeze it into Fei Yan's mouth, they also covered his body with some mysterious medicinal herbs.

Seeing this, Liu Yue stood at the side and watched indifferently.

"Fourth Hall Master, what poison did he get?" Chen Fei walked towards one of the middle-aged person and asked.

"I don't know, I've never seen this before." That Fourth Hall Master frowned as his fingers moved quickly across Fei Yan's body, hitting a few of Fei Yan's pressure points.

"Could he be saved?" Chen Fei frowned as he heard his reply.

It turned out that even his West Cliff Fourth Hall did not know what poison it was, this...

Hearing this, the Fourth Hall Master muttered to himself irresolutely, "We should be able to save him. His Bai Hui and Tan Zhong pressure points were both hit at the right time. It controlled the spread of the poison. As long as we control the poison and prevent it to spread further, we should be able to detoxify it."

Hearing this, Chen Fei nodded and seemed to let out a sigh of relief. He turned around and looked at Liu Yue, full of praises, "You have saved his life. I'll reward you later."

"That's what I, your subject, ought to do." Liu Yue replied humbly, completely not claiming credit for herself.

Seeing this, Chen Fei's impression for Liu Yue turned even better. He thought that Liu Yue was a really simple and a good subordinate. He couldn't help but to pat Liu Yue's shoulders.

"How did he get poisoned?" Patting Liu Yue's shoulders, a flash of killing intent suddenly crossed Chen Fei's eyes. How could such a thing happened right under his nose? It was really ridiculous, how could there be someone who dared to touch his people?

That Fourth Hall Master listened as he detoxified the poison on Fei Yan. He replied in a serious tone, "This was also what your subject wanted to ask Your Highness. How did Fei Yan actually get poisoned?"

Chen Fei frowned as he heard this, "Can't you guys find it out?"

His Fourth Hall was actually unable to find out how Fei Yan got poisoned. This was simply inconceivable, the Fourth Hall Master was their poison expert, after all.

Hearing Chen Fei's astonished question, the Fourth Hall Master could only look down in embarrassment.

Afterwards, he shook his head in an ashen expression, "I couldn't manage to find it out. He didn't drink it, nor were there any signs of injury. This poison was also not due to a poisonous smoke. It was a poison that could only be used upon body contact. Your Highness, we really couldn't find out the source."

Chapter 221: Meeting an Old Friend (12)

After hearing this, Chen Fei furrowed his brows and turned towards Liu Yue, “What do you think of it?”

Liu Yue looked innocently at Chen Fei, “I don’t know anything about poison.”

Liu Yue’s face was so sincere and subtle, that even Chen Fei began to question himself for asking her this question.

“Your highness, it looks to this subject that.....”

“The House Master has arrived.” An icy voice called out as the sound of fast footsteps approaching could be heard.

“Fei Yan, Fei Yan.” an anxious voiced called. Even though the speaker wasn’t here yet, the sound had already transmitted over.

When Liu Yue heard this, her expression sank and both her eyes lit up. This voice...

“Bang!” the person knocked opened the doors to the Fourth Hall and rushed over to the bed where Fei Yan was at with a face full of anxiousness.

He had a mighty looking face and a sturdy physique. His whole body emitted a sense of familiarity.

Yes. It was so familiar that Liu Yue had often wanted to cut him up piece by piece and burn his remains in her dreams.

It was Fei Cheng Lie, the man who was once the second general of the Tianchen Empire.

The Fei Cheng Lie, who ruined Xuanyuan Che’s life three years ago and stirred chaos in the Tianchen empire. The Fei Cheng Lie who was the great general of the Hou Jin Kingdom twenty years ago.

Liu Yue slightly squinted her eyes. So he was actually hiding in West Cliff. No wonder she couldn’t find him all this time. It’s because he was here.

Relying on Hou Jin Kingdom's strength, West Cliff's House Master immediately rose to power after returning from Tianchen.

"Don't worry House Master, he won't die." The Fourth Hall Master said, looking at the anxious Fei Cheng Lie.

After listening to these words, Fei Cheng Lie's complexion began to look calmer. As long as he doesn't die, it's all good. It'll be all good.

"House Master Fei, there's no need to worry. As long as we're here in the Fourth Hall, there won't be a problem." Chen Fei intervened.

Fei Cheng Lie was too anxious before. He cared too much for his son. When he heard this, his expressions changed, turned towards Chen Fei and bowed, "This subject greets Your Highness the Crown Prince. May your highness pardon my offense."

"Nonsense, it's normal to act like this for one's own child. I won't take any offense." Chen Fei smiled as he waved his arm.

Fei Cheng Lie lifted his head as if he was a criminal in court.

Once he lifted his head, he immediately took notice of Liu Yue who was standing next to Chen Fei. Fei Cheng Lie could not help but he surprised. He blinked a few times and stared intensely at Liu Yue. This face...

Chapter 222: The Lost One Has Returned

(1)

The more he looked at this face, the more familiar it seemed. It felt like he had seen that face somewhere before. Fei Cheng Lie frowned as he examined Liu Yue from head to toe.

That face, that nose, those eyes.

Fei Cheng Lie suddenly shivered. That face looked very similar to a face that made him lose his appetite and gave him nightmares.

That night, even though the small, little face was blood red. He could still see clearly amongst the hundreds of thousands of Tiger Army soldiers.

She had such a beauty, such a strong determination that almost seemed to bit through his bone.

Mu Rong Liu Yue. Even after three years, he was still unable to forget that strong and powerful, royalty and that cold, murderous feeling that she gave off.

“You...” Fei Cheng Lie’s expression changed. He pointed at Liu Yue.

Fei Cheng Lie’s change in expression shocked everyone around him. Everyone looked at Liu Yue and the atmosphere in the room changed.

Liu Yue remained calm; unaffected by Fei Cheng Lie’s change in expression.

Seeing Fei Cheng Lie’s pointing at Liu Yue, Chen Fei turned to look at him. “What’s wrong, master Fei?”

Chen Fei then turned to look at Liu Yue.

Liu Yue’s expression remained unchanged. Only curiosity sparkled in her eyes; her eyes twinkled.

Fei Cheng Lie pointed at Liu Yue. He saw how Liu Yue looked at him with cold curiosity; completely different from what he remembered.

Fei Cheng Lie's expression changed again; he studied Liu Yue once more.

It's wrong, wrong. The person standing in front of him was a man, not a woman.

The feeling this man gave off was completely different as well. Mu Rong Liu Yue had that murderous, proud, passionate, personality.

But the Liu Yue in front of him was cold, with hardly any emotion or passion.

This feeling is completely different from that woman in his memory.

Fei Cheng Lie took another careful look and was relieved. It's not her, thank god it's not her.

Chapter 223: The Lost One Has Returned

(2)

After retracting his finger that was pointed at Liu Yue, Fei Cheng Lie embarrassingly smiled, "General Liu is definitely a talented individual. It's just that you look so much like one of my enemies, that I almost made a mistake. I've embarrassed myself in front of you."

After speaking, Fei Cheng Lie felt a lot more relaxed. They were definitely completely different. One was a man and the other was a girl. The difference was as great as the heavens and the earth. Fei Cheng Lie actually thought that they were the same person. It seems like he was a bit too afraid of Mu Rong Liu Yue.

Chen Fei couldn't help but give a glance towards Fei Cheng Lie.

After seeing Chen Fei shake his head towards himself, Fei Cheng Lie knew that he was in the wrong.

Chen Fei then turned towards the emotionless Liu Yue and started smiling, "If Master Fei made a mistake, then you guys must really look alike. Ah, Liu Yue. Do you have any brothers or sisters? If you do, then allow me, the Crown Prince, to do some matchmaking." After saying that, Chen Fei began to laugh.

Hearing this, Liu Yue's expression did not change much as she calmly said, "None."

Liu Yue looked at Fei Cheng Lie very calmly. As though this was just a small mistake of people mistaking others, Liu Yue did not show even the slightest feeling towards it.

This made Fei Cheng Lie abandon any ideas about them being the same person.

Seeing how this all ended, the people who came with Fei Cheng Lie all calmed down as well.

After speaking with Fei Cheng Lie to issue for the arrest of the culprit,

Chen Fei led Liu Yue out of West Cliff.

Under the golden sunlight, Liu Yue turned and looked at gloomy black door, smiling sinisterly. If she had dared to come, then she wasn't afraid of Fei Cheng Lie finding out her identity either.

Next, she followed Chen Fei to Third Prince's Residence for a bit. When nighttime came around, Liu Yue returned to the General Mansion.

"West Cliff's House Master. So it was him all along..." Du Yi frowned.

"No wonder why we couldn't find him." Liu Yue tapped her fingers on the table with a calm face.

"If it's the West Cliff's House Master, then it's going to be a bit difficult. According to my sources, this person never leaves the Eastern Mansion. Besides from the most trusted people of the Hou Jin Empire trusts, no one can enter." Du Yi frowned and said.

Chapter 224: The Lost One Has Returned

(3)

Liu Yue didn't say anything after hearing this. After all, she knew about this already.

The reports say that the West Cliff's House Master had always been a mysterious person. Previously, he would show up to the Hou Jin Empire's Emperor's birthday banquet, but for the last few years, he didn't even show his face. He was simply too secretive with his movement and traces.

Today, if it wasn't for the fact that she poisoned his son and he came running anxiously, she wouldn't have been able to find Fei Cheng Lie even after she died.

"Is that thing in the West Cliff as well?" Liu Yue asked after pondering for a bit.

Du Yi nodded and said, "Yes. My sources are very reliable. However, I don't know where it is hidden."

Liu Yue continued to tap her fingers on the table while rolling her eyes around.

The first reason she came to Hou Jin was for revenge.

The second? According to rumors, the Hou Jin Empire was only able to become a great power in the southwestern region due having a very detailed map of the three southwestern countries.

The map describe the terrain of the area in detail. With such map in hand, the other countries could not compete against them.

Amongst the three countries, Tian Chen had the greatest power.

How could something as important as this map end up in the Hou Jin Empire?

West Cliff is a place where only the important people of the Hou Jin Empire could enter. But right now, isn't she considered one of these people?

“Brother Liu, Brother Liu, the night is still young, come out and have some tea.....” Yun Zhao said as he walked closer to the room.

Liu Yue blinked, and with a wave of her arms, she stood up and moved towards the rear hall.

Drink tea? Good idea.

The clear spring sky was filled with stars. The scene was absolutely mesmerizing.

Time passed quickly. In an instant, a few days had already gone by.

The big wedding was almost here. Everyone was intensely preparing for it.

While Liu Yue and Du Yi was busy accompanying Chen Fei in the imperial palace, Yun Zhao unwillingly helped Liu Yue to deal with people scurrying over to the General Mansion to curry her favour. These people had almost trampled over the General Mansion’s front gate.

Liu Yue had allowed Yun Zhao, an outsider, to become the head servant of the household.

So no matter what happened, he would not abandon his post.

He really didn’t know what to do.

Chapter 225: The Lost One Has Returned

(4)

On this day, Liu Yue brought two bottles of high quality tea over to West Cliff.

In West Cliff's Fourth Hall.

"His highness the Crown Prince asked if Fei Yan was doing better." Liu Yue casually said as she sat in the Fourth Hall.

The Fourth Hall Master sighed and frowned a bit, "He's awake but the situation is not well. We can't fully expel the poison from his body."

After hearing the situation, she raised her brows and said, "The Crown Prince said that if you need anything, don't hesitate and ask for it directly."

In her mind, Liu Yue let out a cold laugh. She was the one who poisoned him. These people shouldn't even think about dispelling the poison.

"Naturally." The Fourth Hall Master nodded bluntly. It seems like his relationship with Chen Fei is not a simple one.

Liu Yue stood up and gracefully said to the Fourth Hall Master, "Today I came with two objectives. The first is to ask about Fei Yan's injuries on the Crown Princes' behalf. The second is to bring some tea that the Crown Prince had gotten his hands on and give them to the West Cliff's House Master.

This Fei Cheng Lie doesn't really like anything except for good tea.

She only found out about this fact after Fei Cheng Lie had ran away.

Today, Chen Fei had picked some high quality tea leaves and sent Liu Yue to deliver them immediately.

The West Cliff basically acted as the right hand of Chen Fei. He needed to treat the House Master well.

The Fourth Hall Master didn't say much and lightly clapped his hands.

The seemingly normal wall was suddenly pushed opened and a person walked out.

The person nodded at Liu Yue and walked towards the table with the tea. After testing and confirming that there was no poison in the tea, he turned towards Liu Yue and said, "This way, General Liu."

He turned around and started walking towards the opened wall.

Seeing this, Liu Yue followed.

Behind the wall was an empty space. It wasn't a secret room or a tunnel or anything. Instead, it was an amazingly decorated courtyard.

However, it was still dark and damp, and gave off an oppressive feeling.

Liu Yue didn't make a sound as she followed the youngster. She focused on the road straight ahead but there was actually nothing ahead.

West Cliff's first hall, second hall, third hall and fourth hall. She was able to see the doors that led to each hall when she walked in. However, in order to enter the other halls besides from the Fourth Hall, she had to enter through the secret passage in the Fourth Hall.

Chapter 226: The Lost One Has Returned

(5)

The way the arrangements were made was very clever.

“General Liu, please wait for a moment.” Upon arriving at a courtyard, the youngster told Liu Yue as he turned and entered the dark courtyard.

Liu Yue stood in front of the garden and examined her surroundings. The road was shaped like the word “王” (King). It seems like this is where Fei Cheng Lie stays.

After quite an amount of time, the youngster returned and said, “The House Master is preparing a secret medicine right now so he is unable to come out. Would General Liu please revert my thanks to His Highness, the Crown Prince, for his courtesy. These two pills here are for General Liu as thanks for your visit.”

Saying that, the youngster handed the two snow white pills to Liu Yue and left.

Hearing this, Liu Yue’s eyes darkened. Preparing secret medicine? Bullshit. How can Fei Cheng Lie know how to prepare secret medicine? It was obvious that he just didn’t want to see her.

Playing with the snow white pills in her hands, a sweet scent wafted out. Two Blood Ginseng Pills. Good stuff!

Liu Yue didn’t have much to say, so she turned around and followed the youngster out. It seems like it’s going to be pretty hard to meet Fei Cheng Lie.

There was not even any chance for her to make a move.

Although Fei Cheng Lie thought that Liu Yue and Mu Rong Liu Yue were different people, he still felt uneasy. If he could avoid seeing him, he would. He did not want to take any chances at all.

Night time came along and another day was about to pass.

Liu Yue, who wore black-coloured clothes and had her face covered, hid

herself in the darkness, as she made her way to the West Cliff.

The big wedding celebration was almost here. She didn't have a lot of time to waste on him.

The moon was bright and the stars were sparse. Traces of black clouds drifted about in the sky, the moonlight penetrating the cloud layers and sprinkling down. The light haze added a form of mysterious beauty to the landscape.

"Brother, come out for some tea." Holding a cup, Yun Zhao raised his eyebrows as he looked at Du Yi, who stood by Liu Yue's door.

"Master is sleeping." Du Yi answered coldly.

"Sleeping?" Yun Zhao looked at the sky and then at Du Yi who was standing by the door.

Who sleeps this early? Did he think that I'm a kid?

Yun Zhao frowned slightly, but a tinge of helplessness crept onto his face, "Sleeping so early!" He walked towards the rear of the mansion in frustration.

Under the stars, a moment later, a black shadow flew out from the General Mansion's back door and quickly disappeared into the dark night.

Chapter 227: The Lost One Has Returned

(6)

The wind blew gently and elegantly at night.

Camouflaged by the darkness, Liu Yue quietly entered West Cliff and went straight to where Fei Cheng Lie resided.

The house was all black. Under the dark night sky, it was a natural protective screen for Liu Yue. It made it too easy for her to infiltrate West Cliff.

On the outside, West Cliff looked as if it was empty. However, in the darkness, Liu Yue could feel the presence of many people hiding around.

They were continuously moving, continuously exchanging positions and continuously surveilling the area.

These people were experts. Liu Yue couldn't even hear their breathing or feel their energy. She believes that if anyone besides her were to come here, they would definitely be discovered easily without being able to walk even ten meters.

However, these people couldn't stop her.

She was someone who belongs in the darkness.

She silently opened the hidden door in the fourth hall and quickly disappeared into the third hall. Her movements were as swift as wind.

Moving swiftly, she appeared in front of Fei Cheng Lie's residence in a blink of an eye.

The place looked ordinary. It sat in the large courtyard by itself, isolated in the middle of nowhere. The place was especially quiet as well.

There was no one here. Not a single soul.

Liu Yue closed her eyes to feel around. There was no one in the surroundings either.

Just before, there were countless amount of guards in the fourth hall.

Why was there no one here at all? Liu Yue frowned slightly.

Opening her eyes, she gently walked over. Each step was taken with the utmost caution as she constantly observe her surroundings.

Du Gu Ye had already tricked her once with a scheme like this. She didn't want to fall for something like this twice, so she was extra careful.

As she walked up slowly, she didn't notice anything out of the ordinary.

Lurking in the darkness and looking at the residence in front of her, a hint of coldness could be seen in Liu Yue's eyes.

No wonder why there was nobody guarding the place. The windows that she saw during the day had completely disappeared. The house in front of her was basically a rock.

There were no doors and no windows. It's a rock solid house. The house was basically a fortress.

Chapter 228: The Lost One Has Returned

(7)

As she walked one circle around the stone fort, a trace of contempt welled up in Liu Yue's eyes. To think that just one rock would ensure maximum safety? It was practically an idiotic idea.

With one step, she stood firmly behind the house. Liu Yue stretched her fingers and pressed the seemingly smooth surface of the rock.

There was a palmprint that was so shallow that it was practically impossible to feel.

As she pressed down with her fingers, the stone door immediately started to slowly open. It was so slight that it did not make any sound at all. Liu Yue ducked through the gap swiftly.

Behind her, the stone door descended lightly. Liu Yue did not use much strength, and had only opened a small crack.

There were no sounds of breathing. Fei Cheng Lie was not here.

In the span of darkness, Liu Yue acutely sensed that there was nobody in this room. She took out a Night Pearl from her torso that she had earlier prepared.

At that moment, in the room where it was so dark as to not be able to see one's five fingers, a dim light flickered, and illuminated upon the contents of the room.

Sure enough, there was nobody.

The room was very small, just containing one bed and one table. It was impossible to hide a person.

Holding up the Night Pearl in her hand, Liu Yue swept her gaze around her surroundings, and directly walked towards the bed in the middle of the room.

Pressing on the corner that jutted out from the headboard of the bed, a slight sound 'ka-cha' echoed in the room, and Liu Yue ducked out of the

way.

The simple wooden bed slowly shifted outwards, and revealed a dark passage narrow enough for one person to enter.

Liu Yue raised her eyebrows. Shining the Night Pearl at the bottom, a straight flight of steps directly descended to the bottom which was too dark to see.

Since she was already here, it was impossible to just go back like that.

Liu Yue leaped into the dark passage with one movements and descended from the steps.

It was a straight and direct flight of steps, with about a hundred steps. Angled at almost sixty degrees, it was quite precipitous.

As she held the Night Pearl in her hands and followed the steps, she turned at a corner at the end. Liu Yue felt a sudden brightness in front of her eyes, and her Night Pearl completely lost its luster.

In front of her was a square-shaped stone room, with up to twenty Night Pearls embedded on its four walls, lighting up this small stone room with a radiance akin to daytime.

Chapter 229: The Lost One Has Returned

(8)

Within the four sides of the stone room, there were different things placed.

On the eastern side of the stone steps, there were five rows of bottles and jars. Liu Yue swept her gaze across their labels. If these were not highly toxic substances, they must be extremely rare legendary potions, and it was more sumptuous than Tian Chen's collection.

At the northern side, there were rolls of scripts. A hurried glance at them proved unable to tell what exactly they were.

However, at the western side, there were many weapons placed. Their sizes ranged from those as small as one finger to some the size of a human being. The dark gleam of the blades radiated with coldness under the light of the Night Pearls.

Without even needing to try, one would know that these are legendary weapons that were powerful enough to slice a single strand of hair.

At the southern side which Liu Yue faced, there was a just a wooden box. The body of the box was sandalwood, and it did not look very valuable and unique, but it occupied the entire space at the southern side.

Liu Yue swept her gaze around her, scrutinising the entire room once again. There was were no uneven places, and it looked very safe.

Putting away the Night Pearl in her hand, Liu Yue held her dagger in one hand, and walked slowly towards the wooden box. The thing she wanted was probably here.

Advancing a few steps, Liu Yue lightly brandished her dagger and sliced across the surface of the wooden box. There was no thread.

She blew in the direction of the wooden box. There was no movement.

Upon seeing this, Liu Yue raised her dagger, and gently prised the cover of the wooden box open, looking into the box.

There were rolls of cloth in the box. Black ink showed through from the back of the cloth in undulating patterns. It was not calligraphy, but a painting.

Liu Yue's eyes immediately shone, this was a map.

In this abrupt moment, with Liu Yue yet to react, the slight sound of 'ka cha' suddenly reverberated within the stone room.

Liu Yue's internal alarms immediately sounded. She had bumped into the mechanism, at this moment, she swiftly reached out for the painting.

But even if she was fast, the painting was even faster. With a 'peng' sound, it immersed into the stone support below.

At the very same moment, the valuable items in the surrounding three sides also submerged under the stone surface below in the blink of an eye, entirely disappearing from sight.

A cold light flashed within Liu Yue's eyes when she saw this, turning and retreating behind her.

In that very moment where Liu Yue took a step behind her, a light sound 'chi' sounded near her ear, and a densely packed barrage of arrows immediately shot out from the four walls, crisscrossing as they flew towards her.

Chapter 230: The Lost One Has Returned

(9)

In the entire small stone room, there was no gap at all. The small hidden chamber was immediately filled with the light of arrows, there were probably numbered in the hundreds to thousands.

In sinister cold light, they shot towards Liu Yue in the middle, and it was impossible to avoid.

Her face darkening, Liu Yue's reactions were also fast, with one movement, the silk thread that she had always been wearing on her wrist shot out in a 'shua' sound, hooking onto the the summit of the stone room.

With a launch of her body, Liu Yue flew upwards, her feet tapping at certain points on the stone surface above her head, her entire person hanging on the ceiling of the room like a lizard.

There was no gap at all below her, and there was only a small space at the top.

As she grasped onto the ceiling, the cold light of arrows had already reached her, the sinister looking arrowheads almost cutting into her cheeks as they zoomed past.

Her hair fell lightly in the forest of sharp arrowheads.

In the blink of an eye, the thick intersecting torrent of arrowheads shot across, without any gap in the middle. If Liu Yue had been slower for even one second, she would have been a porcupine by now.

She could not stay long in this place. Liu Yue launched the silk thread in her hand and threw herself towards the entrance of the room.

In the moment when Liu Yue let go of the hand grasping onto the ceiling of the roof, and propelled herself towards the entrance of the stone room.

Black metal spears suddenly shot out from the ceiling and the four

walls with a 'shua' sound.

They were at least as thick as an infant's arm, with one side moving alongside the wall, and the tips thrusting out, the incisive tips was suffused with the cold colour of metal, and they were so sharp as to be able to cut open air.

The four walls and the stone ceiling seemed to have transformed at that instant into a porcupine that had unfolded its sharp thorns, brimming with ghastly murderous intent.

A cold look flashed across Liu Yue's eyes. She brandished the silk threads in her hands, and rushed outside as if she was flying.

"Hong." As she stepped onto the step outside the stone room, Liu Yue had yet to steady herself as a dull rumble sounded, and the surrounding walls and steps started to move.

In all four directions, they converged towards the step in the middle that was only large enough to support one person.

Her eyes flashing in the colour of metallic blood, Liu Yue swiftly rushed up the steps.

One round leading to the other, one step after another.

The four walls beside her closed on her rapidly, with the remaining space becoming smaller and smaller, tinier and tinier.

Chapter 231: The Lost One Has Returned

(10)

Liu Yue almost flew on the hundreds of steps, her figure flashing past, a black shadow as fast as lightning.

When she first started, the wall was still above her head. With a few steps, the wall was pressing down on Liu Yue such that she could only bow her body forward as she raced in front, with the space she had becoming smaller.

The hundred steps were originally a journey of short length, but currently it seemed unimaginably long.

Tossing the silk threads in front, hooking onto the ground surface outside the cave, Liu Yue exerted all her effort, hauling herself in one movement, her entire body shooting outside as if it was a sharp arrow.

Her body moving past with her shadow barely catching up with her, she was only able to escape the cave through tugging on her silk thread. With a “hong” sound being her, the entire cave closed in on itself, without leaving a single crack or gap.

If Liu Yue was slower by a single step, she would have become meat patty.

Everything happened in an instant.

Without having enough time to take a breather and to lament, Liu Yue, in one ferocious swoop, pounced to the side of the door. She turned her hand and pressed her palm on the stone wall.

A slight breeze blew by, and a small crack slowly opened. Liu Yue, in a flash, rapidly moved through the crack and out.

Murderous intent permeated all four sides. There was originally nobody outside, but in this moment, Liu Yue distinctly felt that there were numerous people rushing in her direction. That malevolent killing aura almost repressed the entire night sky.

With trembling hands, Liu Yue withdrew the silk threads on her wrist. She leaped and launched them towards the dark night.

With one foot down the ground, without Liu Yue even having time to advance another step, the scenery in front of her abruptly changed, entirely switching to another position.

The passageway that was originally in front of her was now behind her.

The stone house that was originally her was now standing directly in front of it.

Shit, battle disposition and mechanisms were in operation. What ridiculous battle disposition had started? Upon seeing this, Liu Yue in a split second became startingly coldly acute.

She knew everything, no matter how many people came tonight, she could still noiselessly break through, but she did not know how to destroy formations.

Her black irises darkening, Liu Yue did not care whatever scene was in front of her, advancing towards the stone house in front of her without any second thoughts.

She did not believe that the house would actually move. This must be something related to an optical illusion or trick.

Chapter 232: The Lost One Has Returned

(11)

Practically unafraid of dying, Liu Yue smashed her head in the direction of the unyielding and firm looking stone house.

With a ferocious charge forward, she shot past the stone house in front of her, and Liu Yue's head almost knocked into the corridor railing in front of her.

Sure enough, it was an optical illusion. The light in Liu Yue's both eyes flashed. Tightening her fist, she unfolded her body and dashed towards the corridor in front of her.

She remembered, no matter how much the scenery in front of her changed, as long as she followed the route in her memory, there would not be any problem.

Her black figure flew quickly in the darkness of the night.

In her surroundings, countless dark shadows were also hurtling towards her at rapid speed. That sinister aura, that malevolent murderous intent, violently converged on her.

If it became a situation where she was surrounded by all four sides, with the West Cliff's numerous martial art experts, if she was surrounded, it was as difficult as scaling the sky to escape.

All plans would immediately fail at the last hurdle.

Her figure flashing continuously, with a few movements, Liu Yue suddenly brandished her arm wildly. Shit, she had returned to her original position again.

Sweeping a quick glance across her surroundings, the scenery was entirely the same as when she had dashed out of the stone house. Currently, the stone house was yet again standing in front of her.

What was different was that the surrounding aura was getting closer, and she could almost hear the sound of clothing splitting across the skies

in their approach.

The people from the West Cliff arrived so quickly.

With the situation on a tightrope, and the surrounding advances almost imminent, Liu Yue, at this moment however, became surprisingly more calm.

Simply closing her eyes, she rushed towards the stone house in front of her. She would not look, looking would affect her judgment. She would just trust her instincts.

Her figure dashed out hurriedly, with all her strength concentrated in her movement.

“You idiot.” A shadow as fast as electricity bolted out. Without having reached the shadow of a stone, an irritated voice suddenly sounded in a low tone. Subsequently, her waist tightened, and an arm had already encircled her waist.

Liu Yue immediately opened her eyes with a ‘shua’, and without thinking, the dagger in her hand reflexively stabbed in the direction of the person behind her.

Somebody had come so near to her already, and yet she did not discover it.

The dagger slashed across the air, and was about to pierce into the body of the person behind her. Liu Yue’s body suddenly jerked, and the dagger held in her hand abruptly came to a stop in midair.

Chapter 233: The Lost One Has Returned

(12)

The person behind her, the person behind her

That strong body, that wide chest, that familiar scent, the embrace that could let her relax entirely, and trust in completely

He This person

Her eyes suddenly reddened, without any reason.

The arm embracing her waist tightened, and the person behind her flipped his body and leaped up as if he was flying, turning and plunging towards another direction.

Liu Yue only thought that the overlapping and repetitive scenes in front of her were continuously changing. They were all routes she was familiar with.

Originally looking as if it was the wrong way, the person behind her went around a curve, and it became the right way.

Originally looking as if it was the right way, but the person behind her moved quickly past it, without any heed to it.

However, all these were currently not within her scope of consideration. Liu Yue held tightly onto the dagger with one hand, and the other hand felt the hand that was tightly fastened onto her waist.

She held onto it, held onto it tightly, never letting go.

The darkness of the night weaved, and the sounds of the winds fluttered.

Wind whipped past her ear, messing up her hair, making her clothing fly.

As fast as lightning, Liu Yue only felt the sounds of the wind blow past her ears. The scenery was as if she was riding a train, rapidly falling back past her eyes.

She lightly closed her eyes, this feeling felt so good.

“Who is there? Stop!” There was a sudden loud shout, and from diagonally in front of them, four shadows flew towards them, advancing fiercely with murderous spirit.

The person behind suddenly hugged her waist, and Liu Yue only heard a soft voice. “Go.” Her waist immediately felt an immense amount of force, and her body hurtled towards the night sky in front of her.

Her body in midair, Liu Yue rapidly turned her head, only to see the person clad in dark red jerking in the air, ferociously meeting the attacks behind her.

A silver light flashed, and under the moonlight, blood spurted out in all directions. The four people who were charging towards them had been incapacitated at the waist.

It was a violent and firm attack, taking their lives with just one blow.

The corners of her mouth lifting up into a bright smile, Liu Yue’s eyes were as radiant as coloured glass, sparkling with a luster more brilliant than the light of the stars.

As her body swung upwards and having yet to descend, the person behind her had already swiftly arrived beside her. With a single wave of his sleeve, his arm had once again encircled her waist, as if it were a huge roc spreading its wings, drowning itself in the dark night in an instant.

The murderous intent behind them launched towards them.

Chapter 234: I'm Back (1)

Darting away, she was moving as fast as lightning.

Under the dark skies, a shadow was seen moving quickly. It was fast that it looked like as if it was the remnants of a ghost.

In a flash, she was already out of West Cliff.

It was as if no one knew she was there.

However, in the other direction, a silhouette had seen everything.

Their face was covered with black cloth so it was impossible to tell who it was.

It continued to observe until a number of West Cliff's people showed up.

It then took a step back and disappeared into the darkness.

"Pop. Pop." In the darkness, a few red flares soared into the sky. The flares exploded into a bright light, lighting up the the whole area.

A countless amount of shadows dashed out of West Cliff with killing intent. Each and every one of them were experts among experts.

Their murderous auras flowed along with the night breeze. Soon the whole Hou Jin Empire was engulfed with killing intent.

Countless silhouettes in every corner of the Hou Jin Empire began to move out.

In the sky, dark clouds covered the moon, leaving the place in total darkness.

Liu Yue moved as she was lightning, dashing away very quickly.

She felt the breeze blow against her face. In her point of view, the scenery changed very quickly. She was moving at an abnormally fast speed!

She knew that the martial arts of this world was good, however, she didn't think that it was THIS good.

The night breeze was cold, but she felt her chest burning.

She was unable to suppress the feeling in her heart.

After crossing the alley in a flash, Liu Yue could already see the General Mansion.

She leaped into the back yard. Before she landed, a silhouette suddenly appeared in the air holding a sword. He began to attack the two intruders.

The silhouette belonged to Du Yi who was guarding the place.

With his attack being evaded, Du Yi looked at the clothed Liu Yue and realized that it was her.

He immediately retracted the sword, flew over and frowned at the same time. Liu Yue left by herself. Why was there two people? Who was the other person?

Chapter 235: I'm Back (2)

Slowly landing on the ground, Liu Yue didn't say anything. The person behind her said in a soft voice, "Someone's coming."

While saying that, the person used their strength to send Liu Yue away while disappearing into the night sky.

At the same time, Du Yi coincidentally turned around and saw the scene. His eyes widened. This figure... This figure is.....

When the hand had let go of Liu Yue's waist, Liu Yue immediately tried to grab the person but missed. Standing there, she reached her hand out towards the sky and looked deeply into the direction where the crimson silhouette had disappeared.

Gritting her teeth, she held back the thought of chasing the the person. She quickly turned around and returned to her room.

Du Yi had already saw the signal from the imperial city. Seeing what Liu Yue had done, he quickly returned as well to do what he was suppose to do.

Liu Yue entered her room, changed, destroyed the evidence, made her bed and went to sleep.

The series of action was done instantly.

Right when Liu Yue lied down, a strong gust of wind could be heard from the yard. Someone had already entered the premises quietly.

The amount of people that came was surprising. They had already surrounded her general mansion.

Liu Yue acted as if she was awoken by the sudden appearance of these people and quickly got up. She quickly grabbed her zither, kicked off her blanket and rushed out.

"There has been movement in the capital and West Cliff was ordered to protect the general." A cold voice said right when Liu Yue rushed out.

When she heard this, she stopped and moved her fingers away from her

zither.

She frowned and sized up the clothed person in front of her. He was dressed in all black, just like those from West Cliff. Looking at all the people around, she slowly began to relax.

However, she immediately frowned and “confusingly” asked, “What happened?”

“I don’t know. West Cliff only knows that once the signals were launched, we are to protect all the high ranking officials and generals in the area.” The clothed person coldly said.

His two eyes quickly took a glance at Liu Yue. Noticing that there was nothing out of the ordinary, he calmed down a bit.

Chapter 236: I'm Back (3)

Protect her? Humph, it's more like she was a newcomer to the place, even if her family background was cleaner than the cleanest, the old man in Hou Jin still did not dare to let his guard down.

Hence, he dispatched manpower to secretly monitor her.

Today, if she came back even one step later, she would perhaps have been caught red-handed.

As she was thinking this in her heart, Liu Yue sharply heard that in the room behind her, there was a light 'si' sound, somebody had entered her house.

It seems that they had come to inspect all her things.

Not even batting an eyelid, Liu Yue pretended that she did not feel anything, and only frowned. "Do you need help?"

"No need, it is okay for General Liu Yue to stay here." The black clothed person answered in a deep voice.

"Reporting, all the people of the West Cliff have already taken their position." The black clothed person's words were just spoken when on his side, a similarly black-clothed intermediary of the West Cliff, but with the edges of his clothing sown with golden ridges, swiftly arrived in the darkness, and quickly reported.

Upon hearing this, the black clothed person did not even reveal any other expression, but only nodded his head. "Good."

The person who came immediately moved into the darkness at high speed.

It looked as if they were adequately positioned and amply prepared to protect Liu Yue.

But how could Liu Yue not understand these secret signals, it was likely that the people from the West Cliff had already thoroughly searched her mansion once, and were reporting that they did not discover any

abnormality.

She was practically an expert in these tricks and destruction of evidence.

It was definitely impossible to find even a little fault or negligence with her.

But where had he run to? The search in this general's official residence had already been completed, and they certainly would not miss or omit even an ant, so where did he go?

"General, please rest, we will be responsible for your safety here." The black clothed guy now turned his head towards Liu Yue and told her this, then turning his back and disappearing into the night.

Upon seeing this, Liu Yue gripped her zither, and raised her eyebrows while standing at the doorway.

In the surrounding darkness, there were the people from the West Cliff everywhere. It looked like they were really monitoring her.

"Master, what happened?" Du Yi at this moment rapidly came forward while carrying his longsword. When he saw Liu Yue standing at the doorway, he immediately lifted his sword and stood beside Liu Yue.

"Nothing." Liu Yue waved her hand, turned and walked into the interior of the house.

Chapter 237: I'm Back (4)

"His highness the crowned prince has arrived." A voice yelled from afar right as Liu Yue began to enter the room.

Liu Yue raised her eyebrows slowly. He's come so fast.

"What happened?" Chen Fei came very quickly. When Liu Yue turned around, Chen Fei had already approached them.

"Nothing." Liu Yue calmly replied. "There's movement in the capital so your highness should be careful."

Chen Fei saw that Liu Yue was still wearing her sleepwear so he believed that she was awoken by the sudden intrusion. He turned around and looked at the clothed man.

He both looked at each other and with minimal movement, they had conveyed their message already.

Chen Fei still had some suspicions but after conversing with the clothed man in secret, it began to dissipate.

He quickly walked up and patted Liu Yue's shoulders and nodded. "I was just at third brother's residence so I came over to see if everything's fine. West Cliff hasn't used the signal in many years. It looks like someone had infiltrated West Cliff."

While calmly saying that, his eyes flashed with coldness.

Hearing this, Liu Yue replied with "Mhm." and nothing more.

"With West Cliff's protection, there shouldn't be any problems. You should...."

"Bang" Before Chen Fei could finish his sentence, another signal appeared in the sky. It was in a yellow-red-ish color. It was very dazzling.

Seeing this, Chen Fei's brows immediately raised and began to smile.

Also seeing the sight, the people from West Cliff quickly bowed to Chen Fei and immediately disappeared into the direction of the signal.

In a blink of an eye, they had all left.

“Never before has someone infiltrated West Cliff and got away.” Chen Fei laughed while all his suspicions on Liu Yue had completely disappeared.

“Alright. West Cliff has already caught the culprit so I won’t chat with you anymore. You should rest.” saying that, Chen Fei slowly walked out of the mansion.

They’ve already caught the culprit?

Liu Yue was startled. Don’t tell me that he’s been caught.

Chapter 238: I'm Back (5)

Liu Yue clenched her hands into a fist. Did he turn himself in so they won't suspect her?

No. That can't be. Her heart jumped and she looked towards the direction of the signal.

That should be from the capital of the Hou Jin Empire. No matter how fast he is or how good his martial art is, he shouldn't be able to reach there in such a short time.

It shouldn't be him. Then who's the one that got caught?

She was feeling a bit nervous.

Suddenly, Chen Fei who had already left the estate came back and looked at Liu Yue.

Liu Yue was startled but her expression didn't change. Did Chen Fei figure something out?

Unexpectedly, Chen Fei laughed and shook his head. He was in a good mood and said, "I say Liu Yue, your general mansion doesn't look like a general mansion at all. There isn't a single person here. I'll send you some guards tomorrow to decorate your front door a bit."

Liu Yue was finally able to relax and took a glance at Du Yi. Du Yi understood what she meant and personally escorted Chen Fei out.

Seeing that Chen Fei had left and that no one was in the premise, she threw her zither down, turned around and went to the place where the crimson silhouette had disappeared.

She rushed over into the back garden. It was empty. There was no one here. Not a single soul.

No one. No one was here.

Liu Yue turned around and left. She went around and searched everywhere.

No one in the main hall. No one in the central room. No one in the yard.

No one on the roof. No one was in the premise.

Her heart tightened. It felt like a bowstring being pull to its full extent, on the verge of snapping.

Her palms became sweaty. Even in a dangerous place like West Cliff, she did not produce a single drop of sweat. But right now, her palms were full of cold sweat.

Clenching her fist, she began to shudder.

There's no way I can't find him. There's no way he's not here.

Where did he run off there? How come he isn't here anymore?

She frantically walked around. In the early spring night, Liu Yue began to sweat even more. Her facial complexion became heavier and heavier.

Nothing. There was nothing at all. She's even searched the bathroom in the backyard. There was no one at all. Not a single person.

Chapter 239: I'm Back (6)

Don't tell me that he actually went and turned himself in, in order clear her suspicion.

No. No way. Her heart began to tighten up again and she could feel herself suffocating.

It was a unclear feeling that she felt in her heart. She felt like it was almost impossible to breath.

She began to take deep breaths. She wasn't tired but she felt like a fish out of water.

Grasping her chest, Liu Yue fiercely gritted her teeth until her gums turned bright red. With her hair flying behind her, he quickly turned around and ran.

There was still a place that she did not search yet. If she couldn't find him there, then even if she has to cross a mountain of blades and a sea of fire, she will find him.

All of her plans.... She would abandon all of them just to find him.

Compare to him, nothing else was important. She can't lose him.

She's already lost him once, she can't lose him again. She can't afford to lose him.

Swiftly moving, the white robe she was wearing created a bright blur under the dark sky.

The full moon while being partially covered by the clouds shone brightly.

Slamming open her own gates, Liu Yue stood by the entrance, trying to catch her breath. She quickly looked up at the shadow standing by her house, not moving at all.

Under the windows stood a person in a long crimson robe. Coincidentally, at this time, the moonlight shone onto the window which reflected onto the man.

He was like flowers during springtime and the moon during autumn. He was as high as a mountain and as deep as the sea. He was indescribable.

An evil and murderous aura in an alluring body with a devious mind. When he was around sixteen or seventeen, he was already like this.

Now, the person in front of her eyes was someone who's become matchless under the heavens. He was someone who climbed back from the depths of hell. Someone who breaths and bathes in blood.

A demon. An actual devious demon.

At this time, Liu Yue angrily yet warmly looked at him.

Chapter 240: I'm Back (7)

With her body leaning on the door, Liu Yue stared at the person in front of her. It was the person that she's been waiting for for three years. It was Xuan Yuan Che. Her husband, Xuan Yuan Che.

After three years, he's finally returned. He finally came back.

She was breathing heavily. Her Yuan Che has finally returned.

"You dumbass. Why did you have to do something so dangerous. Infiltrating West Cliff by yourself. Are you out of your mind?!" Xuan Yuan Che yelled while angrily looking at her.

If he had been a step late, would the person in front of him still be standing there?

What did she want to do? She obviously didn't know the layouts of the traps and yet she infiltrated by herself. She's insane!

Feeling his anger, Xuan Yuan Che walked up a few steps and grabbed Liu Yue's shoulders, "Now listen....."

"You're back." Liu Yue didn't let him finish and gently whispered in his ears.

The softness of her voice sank into his heart.

Looking into her eyes, the flames that fueled Xuan Yuan Che's anger were put out. Instead it was replaced with feelings of love and joy.

He caressed her face with both his hands. It was the same as the little princess consort that he loved three years ago. This was his Liu Yue. No matter how much she's changed, Xuan Yuan Che would be able to recognize her with one look.

Liu Yue was really in front of him. It wasn't a dream. For the past three years, he'd only been able to see her in his dreams.

He was able to touch her. The real Liu Yue was in front of him.

Caressing her face with his fingers, he looked gently at Liu Yue and softly said, "Yeah. I'm back."

“You’re back.”

“I’m Back.”

Chapter 241: I'm Back (8)

There were no sweet murmurings of mutual feelings to each other, no wailing and bawling with cheeks streaming with tears, just gentle words spoken lowly.

It was as if a wife bid farewell to a husband at the break of dawn, and the husband returning at sunset, with one gentle sentence of 'you are back'. It was as peaceful as wine in a glass, but with its aroma overflowing in all directions.

When love runs deep, a silent understanding could beat spoken words.

Opening both arms, Xuan Yuan Che gathered Liu Yue into his arms, tightly, tightly embracing her.

As if he wanted to knead Liu Yue into his body, knead into his flesh and blood, and fuse together with her in one single body.

He buried his head into Liu Yue's neck deeply, and silent, hot tears spilled along Liu Yue's lapels and seeped outwards, scalding her where it flowed.

His wife, his Liu Yue.

He did not forget the petite Liu Yue who rushed into that boundless sea of fire without any second thoughts on the day he left. He did not forget the Liu Yue who had bloodstains all over her face, but still remained obstinate in the sea of flames that filled the whole sky.

The Liu Yue, who advanced and retreated with him no matter life or death, and never leaving him.

One farewell for three years, one thousand days and nights, their longing had already pooled into a sea.

But now, he was back, he was finally back, he had come back to protect his wife, protect his only one in this life.

Holding out her hands and holding Xuan Yuan Che close to her equally tightly, Liu Yue opened her mouth and resolutely bit into Xuan Yuan

Che's shoulder, ruthlessly.

In his mouth she had already tasted blood, but he was still unwilling to let go.

Not letting go, she was never letting go again.

Outside the house, a smile slowly crept up Mu Rong Wu Di's face. He thought three years would have changed something, but in the end, nothing had changed.

It was just richer, and more fragrant.

A relieved smile blossomed at the corner of his mouth, just that in the deepest corners of his eyes, there was a trace of darkness that was mournful and yet not mournful, a helplessness that was yet not helplessness.

It was unreadable, and nobody could make sense of it.

Slowly turning back, he looked eye to eye with Du Yi. Let's just leave this place to the two who finally met again after a long period of separation.

The night winds were rising, and spring already had some tint of the sizzling hot weather of the impending summer.

His big hands cradling Liu Yue's cheeks and tilting them upwards, Xuan Yuan Che lowered his head and kissed her with all his strength.

Liu Yue joined her hands, and tightly embraced Xuan Yuan Che's neck, and kissed back equally fiercely.

Chapter 242: I'm Back (9)

The feelings that had been suppressed for three years had entirely erupted.

Lips and teeth close to each other, deeply sucking and nipping.

Fingers wrapped around each other, clothing sliding off.

In the heat that had exploded around them, the house was a sea of passion and fervour.

Lifting Liu Yue up whose clothing had slid off halfway, Xuan Yuan Che turned his body and pushed Liu Yue down onto the bed. His dark red irises were now blazing, and the deep love inside those eyes had come to ebullition.

Liu Yue kissed Xuan Yuan Che back fiercely, both of them completely losing control of their emotions.

Three years, they had suppressed these feelings for three years, after waiting for three years, they initially thought they could regard each other calmly, but they were wrong. Once there was a gap, the flow of running water which had been suppressed for three years had the disposition and force of overflowing torrents of waves.

These feelings could not be suppressed any longer.

Fingers moving all about in a room of spring colours.

“Brother, brother, I heard that there would be something big happening tonight. The people at the West Cliff have been completely dispatched. Brother, are you busy right now?” With the spring scenery still infused in the atmosphere of the room, Yun Zhao’s voice suddenly sounded outside the door. His voice came so fast that when he had finished his sentence, he was just but a few steps from the door of the room.

Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che both froze, and immediately sobered.

With his facial expression instantly twisting, Xuan Yuan Che pulled the clothing that was still hanging from Liu Yue’s arm to him, and wrapped

Liu Yue entirely in it swiftly. Luckily, both of them were still not in a situation that had become out of hand.

At the same time, he grabbed his outer clothing, and rapidly jumped out of the window half-dressed.

Shit, he was the King Yi of Tian Chen Empire, too many people knew this face, if he was now identified, it would put Liu Yue in a spot.

Pulling her upper outer garment to herself, Liu Yue face was black, where did Du Yi run off to?

“Peng.” Liu Yue had just dressed when Yue Zhao barged in rather impolitely. In any case it was not his first or second time coming into Liu Yue’s room. Etiquette such as knocking before entering was not needed between two brothers.

“Say, brother, do you have” Yue Zhao who had barged in full of joy and expectation, stopped in his steps. His expression rapidly transformed into a careful one as he looked at Liu Yue.

What was wrong, with Liu Yue sporting a face full of murderous intent?

Could it be that he had meddled in something good?

Rapidly studying the interior of the house, there was no woman here, there is no good occasion to meddle in, so why is this Liu Yue still directing so much murderous intent towards him?

Chapter 243: I'm Back (10)

Last time, he had never seen a Liu Yue who was so angered that he wanted to kill him when his sleep was disrupted.

“Brother, you”

“If you say one more word, I am going to kill you today.” Ice-cold and extremely harsh words emerged through Liu Yue’s tightly clenched teeth.

Liu Yue sat on the bed not moving. If she even moved one step, she could not guarantee whether in the next instant, Yun Zhao was still alive or not.

On hearing this, Yun Zhao instantly turned his head and slipped out of the room. His reaction was quite fast. It seemed that he was very familiar with Liu Yue’s temperament; when he could push the matter with Liu Yue, and when slipping away in stealth was the best course of action.

Closing the door from the outside, Yun Zhao’s muttering voice travelled from the distance. “What’s the matter, why did he look like his desires were not quenched, it’s not like there was a woman”

“Peng.” A loud bang sounded from inside the house. Yun Zhao’s voice immediately vanished without a trace, and nothing could be heard anymore.

Fiercely glaring at the closed room door, Liu Yue turned her head to look at the window.

There was a flash of a shadow, and Xuan Yuan Che jumped in from the window. He was already dressed and groomed neatly from head to toe, though his facial expression was a little twisted.

Liu Yue stared at Xuan Yuan Che. Xuan Yuan Che looked at Liu Yue. Both of them stared at each other longingly.

After quite a while, Xuan Yuan Che walked towards Liu Yue and gathered her into his arms. He was too emotional. They hadn’t had their big wedding yet. He wanted to give his wife his utmost respect, he definitely couldn’t take her as his here so simply.

Gently kissing Liu Yue's cheek, Xuan Yuan Che said in a husky voice. "I really missed you."

Thousands of words came together in one single sentence, I really missed you.

Tightly squeezing back Xuan Yue Che's hand which held hers, Liu Yue could feel the emotions rising in him. She tilted her head and smiled. "Me too."

Her eyes with black opal-like irises were curved into the shape of crescent moons. If in this moment Yun Zhao saw such an expression on Liu Yue's face, he would probably be dumbstruck.

That frigid lady who was as cold as ice could actually form such a brilliant expression that was warm with life. It was like an ice mountain had suddenly come alive.

"So much, so much." With his cheek lightly grazing Liu Yue's cheek, Xuan Yuan Che closed his eyes slightly, looking as if he was spellbound.

Chapter 244: I'm Back (11)

On seeing this, Liu Yue beamed as she leaned on Xuan Yuan Che. As she was about to say something, she suddenly thought of something. Leaping up, she rushed to the adjourning room, holding up a sandalwood box with both hands and swiftly walked out.

“Here, this is for you.” Forcing it into Xuan Yuan Che’s hands, Liu Yue, as if minding her own business only, crawled into Xuan Yuan Che’s lap. She’s liked being in this position.

On seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che raised his eyebrows and opened the box. He was slightly surprised. “Blood Toad.”

“Its for you as a health supplement, eating this would definitely be good for your body.” Liu Yue held out her hand to pinch Xuan Yuan Che’s arms, lifting her head and looking at him.

Lowering his head to meet her gaze, Xuan Yuan Che could not find anything to say at this moment. He only knew that his heart was already filled with happiness. It was warm, and it could not contain anything else.

“You little idiot.” His finger swept across Liu Yue’s nose. Xuan Yuan Che smiled tenderly, what virtue and capability did he have to deserve such a wife who wholeheartedly loved him?

“I am now recovered, if I eat this thing now, it will be a waste. I ate lots of such stuff” He hadn’t finished his sentence.

Xuan Yue Che’s expression suddenly changed, he stared at Liu Yue. “Oh yes, Blood Toad, Hou Jin. Honestly explain to me what you want to do with those, if I was late by even one step today, what was going to happen to you?

Also, the big wedding, you actually dared to get married, and you actually married a woman. We haven’t even had our big wedding yet, you actually dared to marry somebody else, I won’t stand for it, even if it is a woman. Your big wedding can only be with me, I won’t stand for whoever else.”

He had almost forgotten that he had travelled day and night to rush over here, and just now his heart was so anxious that it had almost stopped beating. And all of that was because of this extremely reckless fellow with all sorts of ideas in front of him.

He had time to talk about the rest, he must first get his revenge for this first.

Liu Yue saw Xuan Yuan Che's expression had in this instant darkened. The two eyes glaring at her were filled with anger, but there was more of worry.

She couldn't help but smile slowly. Holding Xuan Yuan Che's hand, she said as if she careless about it. "Actually there's nothing much, if you not around, there must be somebody to protect Tian Chen empire. I can't fight wars, so I can only venture into the heart of the enemy territory to settle it with them. Don't worry, nothing will happen to me."

The way Liu Yue said it was as if it was a simple matter, but when Xue Yuan Che heard it, it did not seem that way to him.

Chapter 245: I'm Back (12)

In the few days that he returned from overseas, he had also heard a lot of news about Tian Chen Empire. It had really been tough for his Liu Yue, these fragile shoulders had been helping him assume so much responsibility.

Hugging Liu Yue tightly, Xuan Yuan Che took a deep breath.

“Don’t speak of all that trivial nonsense, what is yours is mine, what is mine is yours. If you are not around, I’ll protect it, it is the most normal thing to do.” Feeling Xuan Yuan Che’s emotions starting to stir, Liu Yue indifferently threw out a sentence at him.

This was not just mere superficiality, but it was what she really believed.

On hearing this, the corners of Xuan Yuan Che’s mouth slowly lifted into an extremely bewitching smile. “I didn’t intend to say anything to you, there no reason for us husband and wife to treat each other as outsiders.”

“That’s right.” Husband and wife, what a nice name, what a nice feeling.

“Now, tell me your plans, I am also quite interested in venturing into the heart of the enemy’s operations.” Both of them were clear about the current situation. In the enemy’s nest, one minor slip could cause a big problem. Their feelings could be slowly talked about, dealing with the situation at hand was the most important for now.

Xuan Yuan Che put his lower jaw on Liu Yue’s shoulders. A hint of a smile and murderous aura flashed across his eyes.

They actually dared to touch his little princess consort, he Xuan Yuan Che will personally take revenge on them. Don’t think that if he wasn’t around, they could bully her.

The colours of the night pervaded the sky, and the moon was slowly setting.

The night was gradually turning blue. The dark blue sky was as dark

and deep as the ocean. The night was about to be over, and dawn was about to arrive.

Standing up and nodding his head, Xuan Yuan Che told Liu Yue. “Good, so that’s decided, if he doesn’t come out, I will always have a way to call him out.” Finishing his words, he turned and walked towards the window.

“Where are you going?” On seeing this, Liu Yue’s eyes widened.

Xuan Yuan Che turned back his head and smiled at Liu Yue. “They let their people hide themselves in Tian Chen empire, but they don’t let us insert our people in their country’s territory. Liu Yue, don’t underestimate your husband, I have a place to live, when the time comes you will naturally see me. ”

Finishing his sentence, his lips curved, and he smiled brilliantly at Liu Yue. His dark red figure flashed, and disappeared out of the window.

On seeing this, Liu Yue slowly stretched her back. Three years ago, they were bullied so miserably. Now, it was time for them to get their revenge.

Chapter 246: Exposing the Criminal (1)

Winter was over and Springtime has come.

In the blink of an eye, a few days had passed. The movements in Hou Jin had died down. The place had become very peaceful. It felt as if the incident from a few nights ago never happened.

Liu Yue was walking with Chen Fei, talking about how the criminal immediately took his own life after being caught. There were no tricks involved. He died instantly.

They couldn't get any information out of him at all. Nothing about his backer either.

However, there was one thing that came out of the incident. Liu Yue's suspicions were cleared and Chen Fei became closer and closer to her. They were talking as if they were old friends.

This could be considered some sort of good luck.

Although her face looked calm, she was in deep thoughts.

The one who died. It wasn't her and it wasn't Xuan Yuan Che. So who was the scapegoat?

She firmly believes that she was the only one who entered the secret room. There was nobody else.

It seems like someone was following and helping her.

Help her? Who would help her? Could it be Yun Zhao?

When she had free time, she leisurely talked with Yun Zhao. But Yun Zhao seemed like he didn't know anything about it. She kept pestering him about it but she couldn't get anything.

Seeing this, she didn't bother asking anymore.

Time flowed like water and the day of the wedding was quickly approaching. Chen Fei sent many servants over to Liu Yue and the whole General Mansion was bustling.

Everybody in the mansion was excited.

Only Liu Yue had a cold look on her face. There were too many people in the mansion and Xuan Yuan Che had gone to who knows where for the past two days.

Because she always had a cold look on her face, no one thought that anything was wrong. They were all busy working and were all very excited.

The next day, the weather was perfect.

The blue sky resembled a perfectly made silk cloth. There were no clouds at all.

The warm sunlight illuminated the city. It was very comfortable.

“I say brother, I feel like you haven’t been yourself these few days.” Yun Zhao said as he looked at Liu Yue.

Chapter 247: Exposing the Criminal (2)

Yun Zhao didn't know what was wrong, but he felt that something was different.

When he looked at Liu Yue, he felt more comfortable. He didn't know what made looking at her more comfortable. It was an indescribable feeling.

Liu Yue was walking in front of Yun Zhao with her hands behind her back. When she heard this she turned back and gave him a glare. Different? How was she different? This guy must have some problems.

Today, she went to the third prince's mansion for some business and coincidentally met up with him.

Seeing that Liu Yue wasn't paying attention to him, Yun Zhao rubbed his eyes and continued to stare at her.

Liu Yue let him stare and didn't seem to care about it.

The streets were filled with people and it was very exciting.

"Liu Yue." Chen Fei called out as his carriage stopped in front of her.

"Let's go see something good."

Liu Yue didn't say much and stepped onto the carriage.

Yun Zhao who was standing behind Liu Yue tugged her sleeve and smiled, "Your friend? Bring me along. I wanna go too. I wanna see some good stuff!"

Chen Fei leaned to the side, looked at Yun Zhao and laughed. He's heard about Yun Zhao. He's the one who always followed Liu Yue like a bum beetle.

He's a troublemaker. If he wasn't drunk and asleep, he would be scuffling with someone.

If he won, he would act triumphantly and say that he was the General Liu Yue's brother. If the opponent didn't accept defeat, then they should go look for his brother.

He's provoked many nobles and made them all very irritated.

However, although they were all irritated, no one wanted to offend Liu Yue.

It seems like Liu Yue doesn't know what this "brother" of her's have been doing, but Chen Fei liked this kind of clueless people.

The people in the imperial courts are all trying to take advantage of each other. It's better if Liu Yue stood quietly by his side.

So under these circumstances, Chen Fei smiled and said, "Okay, sure!"

Chapter 248: Exposing the Criminal (3)

Yun Zhao didn't wait for Liu Yue to say anything and immediately went into the carriage. He patted Chen Fei's shoulders while laughing, "Haha, what a bro!"

Chen Fei leaned forward from the pat and laughed while shaking his head.

Liu Yue didn't mind that Yun Zhao followed them. If he wanted to come, and if Chen Fei allowed, then she didn't care.

"Wucheng Conglomerate". This was written in large letters in front of the house. It looked like a very magnificent and expensive place.

What is this place? Liu Yue thought that Chen Fei was gonna bring her to the palace of West Cliff. She would never have thought that he would bring her to an Auction House.

Chen Fei got off the carriage and walked towards hall.

"Please leave your weapons behind." A voice welcomed them as Liu Yue and Yun Zhao followed. It belonged to a wealthy looking fat middle age man.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows, spread out her hands and took her weapons out.

The fat man smiled, looked at Yun Zhao and hinted for him to put the zither down as well. He clearly knew who Liu Yue was.

"Liu Yue, you can't bring any weapons in here. Let's go." Chen Fei nodded at Liu Yue and continued to walk in.

Liu Yue didn't care and told Yun Zhao to put it down.

Yun Zhao immediately gave the zither to the fat man.

The two people followed Chen Fei into the auction house.

"Young Master." a middle aged man greeted Chen Fei right after they walked into the lounge.

Chen Fei nodded, "I heard there were some good stuff today."

"Yes. Top quality treasures." The middle aged man bowed and opened the door to the auction hall.

Liu Yue followed and took notice of everything within the hall.

The place was about three hundred square feet in size. And although it was elegantly decorated, these decorations had no style at all.

All the way in the front of the hall, there was a large stage. A white haired old man stood on top of the stage, holding a meter long old azure sword.

Chapter 249: Exposing the Criminal (4)

Right under the stage, there were three rows of golden seats.

They were all made from pure gold.

She had never seen golden seats aside from the ones that the emperors of Tianchen and Hou Jin sits on.

Today, there were three whole rows of golden chairs!

In just a while, most of the golden chairs were filled with people. Only four seats in the front row were left empty.

The people sitting in these chairs all looked like commoners. Heck, they look more common than commoners.

One of them even had a patches on his clothes.

Having these people sit on these golden elegant chairs, they don't match at all.

However, all these people looked very composed and professional. If one looked carefully, they all had a mysterious glow in their eyes. When they raised their hands, they all looked very scholarly.

It seems like they weren't commoners after all.

After seeing Chen Fei come in, they all stood up and bowed.

Chen Fei waved his hand and didn't say much. He went straight to his seat. The other people didn't say anything either. They all sat down and minded their own business without doing anything unnecessary.

She followed Chen Fei and sat in the first row. Liu Yue looked at the meter long azure sword. It was very sharp. Other than its sharpness, she couldn't see what was so special about the sword. Of course, this was because she didn't know much about old swords.

Slapping his fan on his palm, Yun Zhao whispered, "Wow. Good stuff."

Liu Yue looked at Yun Zhao.

Yun Zhao felt Liu Yue looking but didn't turn around. He got closer to

Liu Yue and whispered, “This is the treasured sword that the emperor of the old Liu Li empire used. A top quality sword.”

Three Hundred years ago? So it was an antique.....” Liu Yue thought to herself.

“One hundred and ten thousand taels of gold! Is anyone willing to go higher?” The old man quickly took a glance at Chen Fei while shouting.

Chapter 250: Exposing the Criminal (5)

Chen Fei looked at the item but didn't say anything.

"One Hundred and Ten Thousand taels of gold. Sold!" the old voice yelled. Immediately, someone from one of the gold seat moved towards the old man and received his item.

"Next item....."

"So it's an auction." Liu Yue finally understood.

This wasn't anything like the auctions in the black markets. She thought about the time when she bought some new weapons from the black market auctions in the other world. This time however, she wasn't interested in no old sword.

"Absolute Beauty Pearl. This thing makes sure that your skin never turns old! The starting price is twenty thousand taels of gold."

Right after the price was announced, the bidding war started.

"Absolute Beauty Pearl. Now this is some good stuff! One hundred forty thousand taels of gold!" Chen Fei shouted and smiled.

"One hundred fifty thousand taels." His bid was immediately beaten.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows. These people look like they know Chen Fei's identity and yet they didn't give him any face and continued to increase the bid. What's going on?"

"Wucheng Auction House. It's allied with the Ao Yun Empire, Snow Saint Empire, Hou Jin Empire, Tianchen Empire and the Nan Song Empire.

Seeing that Liu Yue was confused, Yun Zhao immediately told her about the auction house.

"The merchants here are from all five empires. They all have an immeasurable amount of wealth and all have connections within the royal family of their respective empires. They only respect the items being auctioned and not anyone who bids against them. It's impossible to make them give up the items they have taken fancy to unless you outbid

them.” Yun Zhao was laughing while fanning himself.

Hearing this, Liu Yue nodded. So that’s how it was.

She gave Yun Zhao a glance. Since he knows that Chen Fei is the crowned prince, why did he have to act foolishly and pretend to be a bro?

It seems like there’s more to this Yun Zhao.

Seeing how Liu Yue was glancing at him, Yun Zhao started laughing continued to fan himself.

Wucheng Conglomerate. The five empires. Tianchen Empire. Xuan Yuan Che.....

Liu Yue’s eyes flashed. Then there should be people connected to Xuan Yuan Che here....

Chapter 251: Exposing the Criminal (6)

“The next item is our last item of the day. It is a priceless treasure. A treasure amongst treasures. Don’t let this chance to obtain this item slip by!” The middle aged man who greeted Chen Fei at the door went up to the stage and exclaimed.

The people who can attend an auction by the Wucheng Conglomerate are all people of high status. High quality treasures for commoners are nothing but common playthings in their eyes.

The items displayed before didn’t mean much to these people. However, the speech by the middle age man suddenly sparked many people’s interests.

It looks like that an absolute priceless treasure was about to be shown.

Everyone was focused on the stage. The middle age man nodded and left the stage.

Then a black clothed young man appeared, holding a small white jade box and slowly walked up the stage.

His face was covered. None of his facial features could be seen. This was very common in auctions.

The man walked up the stage and slowly surveyed all the guests before him/

When his eyes met with Liu Yue’s, she felt her heart beat faster. She smiled. Xuan Yuan Che. This guy is Xuan Yuan Che.

He can change his appearance but he can’t change those eyes of his.

He man glanced over Liu Yue and continued to survey the guests. No connections could be made between them. It was as if they were strangers.

Only Liu Yue saw him smile from that one glance.

After looking through all the people, he didn’t say much. He placed the box on the table and slowly opened it up.

When the guests saw what was in the box, the looks on their face instantly changed.

A few of them shuddered and stood up immediately.

Everyone had a greedy look in their eyes while looking at the item inside the box. They all wanted to take the item in the box for themselves.

Liu Yue felt excitement of the people around her. She couldn't help but raise her eyebrows and look at the item in the box.

It was a flower. A seven colored flower. All seven petals were opened up, each with a different color; Red, Orange, Yellow, Green, Azure, Blue, Purple. It was very beautiful.

A seven color flower. It was the first time that Liu Yue had seen such thing. However it was only a flower, what's there to be excited about?

Chapter 252: Exposing the Criminal (7)

“Buddha Flower. The Buddha Flower!” Chen Fei who was reclining on his chair suddenly leaned forward and stared at the item. His hand clenched into a fist and his face was filled with excitement.

“Buddha Flower. It’s actually the Buddha Flower.” Yun Zhao stopped fanning himself and looked very surprised.

“What is it?” Liu Yue elbowed Yun Zhao.

Yun Zhao came back to his senses and the amazed look in his eye quickly disappeared.

He whispered, “The Buddha Flower is a legendary treasure amongst medicines. If you weren’t sick, it could increase your lifespan by sixty years. It could eradicate any sickness. A martial artist who takes this medicine could increase their skills by thirty years of training. If someone who was poisoned ate this, then they would be cured. It is also said that it could revive people!”

Hearing this, Liu Yue raised her brows. Isn’t this too much?

“Of course, you can’t believe the legends completely. The Buddha Flower is something is rarely seen. You’re lucky if you can see one every ten thousand years. It buds every hundred years. It takes a thousand years for it to have three colors and ten thousand years for it to have all seven colors. This is a ten thousand year old treasure. It is thousands of times better and more effective than thousand year old ganodermas and ten thousand year old ginsengs.

Hearing this, Liu Yue’s was shocked as well. Thousand year old ganodermas and ten thousand year old ginsengs. She’s heard about them before but has never seen them. There were no such things in the modern world. Could it be that they had these things in this world?

If that was true, then they must all be priceless treasures.

She looked at the emotionless Xuan Yuan Che. How did he get something like this?

Not long after she looked at him, Xuan Yuan Che hatefully glared at her.

Liu Yue shuddered. What's wrong with him?

Thinking about it, Liu Yue finally figured it out.

Yun Zhao was very close to her and her actions with him were very intimate. Xuan Yuan Che must be jealous.

She was laughing inside her heart. She didn't show it, but you can see the mocking laugh in her eyes.

"What do you want for it?" In the quiet room, a voice suddenly called out.

Chapter 253: Exposing the Criminal (8)

“Right. What do you want for it? We need some time to get whatever you want.” Another voice called out.

Something as priceless as this. If he wants to trade, then they’d need time to prepare the items for a trade. After all, they had only brought money.

Standing on the stage, Xuan Yuan Che looked at the people who spoke and said, “Getting the Buddha Flower wasn’t easy. I want to trade it for a Vulture Rudra Fruit.”

Those words caused some of the people below the stage to gasp and some to raise their brows.

The Vulture Rudra Fruit is also very precious. The Buddha Flower can bring people back from death’s grasp, while the Vulture Rudra Fruit can regrow any body part.

One cures the internal, one cures the external.

The Buddha Flower can help replenish life, but it can’t cure broken limbs and meridians.

“It’s said that the Buddha Flower grows in a very high place and is guarded by a garuda. It seems like the people who picked the flower met with some accident.” Yun Zhao whispered.

“Brother. This deal is very fair.” However I don’t have the Vulture Rudra Fruit right now. Twenty days.... No. Give me fifteen days. Give me fifteen days and I’ll have the Vulture Rudra Fruit for you!

A blue clothed man stood up, staring at Xuan Yuan Che

The Vulture Rudra Fruit is very precious, but exchanging it for the Buddha Flower, it is very worth it.

“Brother, Ten days. Give me ten days for it.”

The man next to the blue clothed man also stood up, looked at Xuan Yuan Che with a serious face and said, “I’ll definitely get you the Vulture

Rudra Fruit within ten days. Also, I'll be responsible for your safety in these ten days.

Only those two people spoke up. The other people thought about it, but didn't say anything.

Vulture Rudra Fruit. They all have it. However, their homes were too far away. Even if the Emperor sent someone out, they won't be able to return with it within ten days.

Xuan Yuan Che looked at the people then said, "Then....."

"I need to verify its authenticity." Before Xuan Yuan Che could finish speaking, Chen Fei who was staring at the flower suddenly spoke up.

Chapter 254: Exposing the Criminal (9)

Verify its authenticity? How will he verify it?

No one has ever seen the real Buddha Flower. It's only recorded in history books. Everyone turned and looked at Chen Fei with a confused look.

"Why?" Xuan Yuan Che looked at Chen Fei.

Chen Fei stared back right into his eyes and said, "If it's real, they'll immediately bring the Vulture Rudra Fruit over."

After hearing this, everyone turned silent. They had forgotten. He was the crowned prince of the Hou Jin Empire. How could the palace not have a Vulture Rudra Fruit.

Xuan Yuan Che looked calm like usual and immediately said, "Okay."

Chen Fei immediately ordered a middle age man to come over and ordered him to do something.

He took something out from his sleeve and gave it to him. Liu Yue didn't see what was handed over and only heard what he said, "I need him to come personally."

The middle age man nodded and left immediately.

Liu Yue was confused, him? Who's this him?"

If she's not wrong, then this person must be Fei Chen Lie.

Lightly tapping her fingers on the table, Liu Yue looked at Xuan Yuan Che.

His face was expressionless. It was very calm. She couldn't see through him at all.

Seeing that nothing was going on, Liu Yue just sat there and waited. Xuan Yuan Che definitely won't beat around the bush. If he does something, he'll do it straight and see it finish.

Other than martial arts, Fei Cheng Lie is actually very insightful in

medicines. Within the whole Hou Jin Empire, other than Fei Cheng Lie, no one else can dare confirm the authenticity of the Buddha Flower. Liu Yue doesn't know this, but Xuan Yuan Che does.

“Close the doors.” Chen Fei commanded the middle aged man as walked out.

Everyone in the room looked around but didn't say anything. This was to prevent them from going out and spreading the news of the Buddha Flower.

Time passed very slowly and the room was very empty.

There were only heavy breathing sounds within the room.

Chapter 255: Exposing the Criminal (10)

Everyone in the hall was anxiously waiting. Only Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che remained calm.

“Bang!” After waiting for a long time, the door suddenly opened up. Several people came in one after another.

Before even looking at the people who came in, a slight smile had already appeared on Liu Yue’s face. She can already tell who it was by the sound of the footsteps. It was exactly who she was waiting for. Fei Cheng Lie.

Fei Cheng Lie who was in the front had a very serious look on his face. Behind him were three middle aged men, two of which followed him very closely.

The third person who was all the way in the back was the Fourth Hall’s master.

The fourth hall master held a very high position and yet he was standing in the back. That means that the two people next to Fei Cheng Lie held even higher positions than the fourth hall master. If Liu Yue had to guess, they probably came from one of the first three halls.

“Brother, we’ll be identifying the Buddha Flower.” Fei Cheng Lie stepped forward and looked at Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che casually looked at Fei Cheng Lie, lightly nodded and took out the jade box. He then lit up a match and placed it right next to the flower.

The Buddha Flower normally grew on glaciers. That means that if it came to close contact with fire, it would immediately be destroyed.

Xuan Yuan Che was making a statement. If these people were to try and rob him, he would immediately destroy the flower. No matter how fast these people were, he would be able to destroy the flower with a single move.

Fei Cheng Lie didn’t say anything and only nodded. The fourth hall

master immediately stood up and walked besides him.

The two carefully examined the flower and smelled the fragrance coming out from the flower.

After a while, Fei Cheng Lie turned around and looked at the fourth hall master. The two nodded at the same time.

“It’s real.” Fei Cheng Lie smiled.

Being able to obtain a treasure like this is a joyous event for the entire Hou Jin Empire. The happiest one of them is Fei Cheng Lie. His son Fei Yan was suffering every day due to the poison. Now that they have the Buddha Flower, they could use a little piece of it to cure his son.

His son was the reason why he left West Cliff and came over here in a hurry.

Hearing that, Chen Fei’s eyes grew with excitement. He looked over at Xuan Yuan Che and nodded, “Deal!”

Chapter 256: Exposing the Criminal (11)

Seeing that both sides had agreed to the deal, Fei Cheng Lie immediately reached into his sleeves, took out a red heart shaped fruit and placed it in a box on the stage. That was the vulture rudra fruit!

Right after, he immediately stepped away to show that he would not interfere with the transaction at all.

Xuan Yuan Che carefully examined the vulture rudra fruit and nodded. He then firmly placed the white jade box on the stage as well.

Extinguishing the flames of his match. He grabbed the vulture rudra fruit and left the stage.

Seeing him leave the stage, Fei Cheng Lie immediately moved towards the stage to retrieve the buddha flower.

Right before he could grab the box, the roof suddenly exploded and a large hole appeared.

A mysterious person appeared from the hole and went flew straight towards the white jade box.

He was very fast, almost as fast as lightning itself.

Seeing this, Fei Cheng Lie's face sank and panicked. He quickly tried to grab the box before him.

However, he realized that he would not make it before the other party and thus with a wave of his sleeves, he sent the white jade box flying through the air towards Chen Fei.

Only a split second after the box was sent flying, the mysterious person's sword had already split the table in half.

Chen Fei reacted pretty quickly and jumped out to retrieve the box.

In a flash, the mysterious man changed his target to Fei Cheng Lie who was caught off guard.

On the other side, one of the two middle aged men who followed Fei Cheng Lie saw this and immediately attacked the mysterious person.

His palms turned black and emitted a foul smell.

Hou Jin's Poisonous Sand Strike!

Liu Yue who was still sitting down stared at the attack.

This was the attack that harmed Xuan Yuan Che amidst the sea of flames. This was the attack that caused her to be separated from Xuan Yuan Che for all these years.

Chapter 257: Exposing the Criminal (12)

Liu Yue clenched her fists, "So it was them..... Good.... Good....."

Chen Fei who jumped over to catch the box had not reached it yet.

At that moment, mysterious people dressed in white appeared one after another.

Their movements were at least two times faster than Chen Fei's.

As the crowned prince, Chen Fei's martial arts abilities were somewhat limited. From the time when he jumped out until now, he's only made it halfway to the box.

Seeing that one of the white clothed men were coming at him with a sword, Chen Fei's face paled and immediately retreated.

The man pursued quickly and his sword had already reached Chen Fei's chest.

Chen Fei's complexions could not get any worse when he felt the strong force of the sword. He quickly dodged to the side and narrowly escaped the killing blow.

Staggering, Chen Fei threw himself at Liu Yue. Without even catching his breath he yelled, "Liu Yue! The jade box!"

Hearing his voice, Liu Yue immediately flew out. She does a flip in mid air and kicked the jade box.

The trajectory of the jade box changed and it flew towards the bunch of wealthy merchants.

Yun Zhao who was idling saw the scene and moved towards the box. However he tripped and fell with his hands out, but the box miraculously landed on his hands.

The masked men continued to attack Fei Cheng Lie. Although Fei Cheng Lie knew martial arts, his skills were only average. The two other hall masters came over and protected him.

At this time, he saw that the jade box was amongst the merchants. His

face ashen because he thought that there was a hidden expert among the merchants.

He didn't want to take any risks so he immediately turned around and went towards the box.

At that time, Liu Yue had already done a backflip in the air and returned to her original position.

Her complexion turned cold and it looked as if her hands were trying to reach for Fei Cheng Lie's neck.

Chapter 258: The Calm Before The Storm

(1)

Like a gust of wind she flew towards Fei Cheng Lie and scratched his neck with her nails.

She had done it so fast that no one had noticed anything. Not even Fei Cheng Lie himself felt the attack.

It was done perfectly.

Retracting her hand, she landed softly on the ground.

Seeing Liu Yue land on the ground, Fei Cheng Lie didn't pay any mind to her and went straight for the box.

A cold smile appeared on Liu Yue's face as she looked over at Xuan Yuan Che who was still on the stage.

Even without her saying anything, Xuan Yuan Che understood Liu Yue's hidden message. His face remained calm and he slowly moved away from the stage.

Behind Liu Yue, a few people had already started running towards the box to try and steal the Buddha Flower. If she didn't act now, then when would she do so?

Yun Zhao on the other hand was being attacked by the cloth men and surprisingly, he was able to dodge their attacks. To the observers, it looked as if he accidentally fell on the ground and dodged the attacks. But from what Liu Yue could see, everything was calculated. The timing, the position and the fall, the whole act was perfectly executed.

Yun Zhao drops the box in front of him and he frantically moved forward to retrieve the box.

Taking the whole flower with so many people looking was basically impossible. However, plucking a piece or two of the petals were not as hard. That was precisely what Yun Zhao wanted to do.

He was the closest to the box and had almost gotten his hands on it.

And when he did, an arm appeared above Yun Zhao with a sword and ferociously chopped down. This cause Yun Zhao's eyes to flash with fear.

Fei Cheng Lie took this chance and came up from behind to try and snatch the box.

"Bang." Yun Zhao dodged but hit the deck hard. The box flew into the air once again.

Yun Zhao watched as the box traveled in the air. He didn't want anyone else to have the box either.

Suddenly he felt something hit him and he quickly turned around and looked towards the stage. There was no one there.

Chapter 259: The Calm Before The Storm

(2)

Furrowing his brows, Yun Zhao tried to move his arms. However, he couldn't. His arms had become numb. He realized that his nerves had been damaged.

Looking down, he noticed a small button rapidly spinning on the ground.

Yun Zhao looked around and a serious look appeared on his face. An Expert. It was an expert who attacked him. His nerves were damaged before he even realized anything was wrong.

He exerted his strength and reached out to pick up the still spinning button. He carefully examined the button and then looked towards the stage once again.

On the other side, after Fei Cheng Lie finally retrieved the jade box. He quickly retreated backwards and yelled, "Protect the his highness the crowned prince!"

At that moment, the fourth hall's hall master rushed forward.

Hearing Fei Cheng Lie's command, the guard from West Cliff who was stationed outside knocked down the door and immediately entered the room. Seeing the situation, he quickly flew towards the white clothed man.

The two fought ferociously.

Their blades struck with murderous intent and blood spurted out in all directions.

The entire hall was filled with a murderous aura.

Liu Yue took a glance at the sixth and seventh hall master who were fighting another white clothed man and her eyes shone with intent to kill. However, she didn't make any moves.

Instead she retreated. She grabbed Chen Fei and retreated towards

Cheng Fei Lie.

After seeing that the elites from West Cliff had surrounded the whole area, the merchants who still had ill intents quickly abandoned their thoughts of stealing the flower. They all turned around and exited the hall.

On the other hand, seeing that their ambush had failed, all of the white clothed men scattered and escaped. They were very organized.

The people from West Cliff would never let them escape after causing such a scene. They quickly gathered together and started their pursuit.

In an instant, the white clothed men and the people from West Cliff all disappeared from the hall.

The ambushers. They came quickly and they left quickly.

If it weren't for the mess all over the place and the blood stains all around, no one would believe that such a scene had occurred in just a few minutes.

In just a few breath of time, the hall was completely empty asides from Liu Yue, Chen Fei and a few others. There were two corpses on the floor as well.

Chapter 260: The Calm Before The Storm

(3)

“Your highness. Are you alright?” Fei Cheng Lie asked after looking around to make sure that there is no danger. He then handed the jade box to Chen Fei.

The prince wasn't feeling vexed at all. He had already calmed himself down a while ago.

Chen Fei reached out and received the jade box. He opened it up and saw that the flower was still perfectly intact. A smile appeared on his face.

He slapped Liu Yue's shoulders and said, “Good job.”

He didn't say much. All he said was a simple good job. However, everyone in the hall could tell that he spoke with praise and happiness.

Before Liu Yue could say anything, Chen Fei started walking out of the hall.

Next to him, Fei Cheng Lie and the three hall masters followed him out.

Liu Yue did not follow them. Instead, she took a glance at Fei Cheng Lie and let out a cold laugh.

“Aiya. It hurts so much!” After everyone else had left, Yun Zhao got up while holding his waist.

Liu Yue raised his eyebrows at the scene. She didn't get to see what happened to him before.

She could tell that he was putting on an act.

“Serves you right.” Liu Yue sneered. She then walked out of the hall as well. She was feeling really happy today.

“Hey bro, aren't you a bit too heartless? How can you say that to me. I say.....” The sound of his endless chirping faded away as Liu Yue walked further and further away. The weather was really nice today, she thought.

A day passed and Liu Yue was summoned to the palace for a meal.

The palace lights shone splendidly under the dark night sky. The place was completely different than it was during the day. It gave off a much more royal feeling to it.

However, Liu Yue and the others were not in the royal palace. They were dining in the eastern palace.

The eastern palace was made of white jade and was filled with vermillion air. The crowned prince's eastern palace was very refined.

"Ah. Son in law, come, come, have another glass of wine." The emperor of Hou Jin smiled as he toasted to Liu Yue.

Liu Yue didn't decline and raised her cup.

"Good. Excellent! As expected from the prince consort. Come. I, Li Shi, will drink in your respect! If it wasn't for the prince consort yesterday, the crowned prince would have been in grave danger!"

Chapter 261: The Calm Before The Storm

(4)

The man's face was full of smiles. This Li Shi, he is the ministry of war and held a very high position in the empire. He was also the crowned prince's grandfather, the empress' father.

Liu Yue gave him a toast as well. She was being very straightforward.

"Good Good." Chen Fei who was sitting in the front saw that Liu Yue was receiving praise from many of the high ranking officials and started laughing.

Not all of the officials in the palace were invited to the eastern palace. Only the ones with very high rankings like the three great generals, the ministry of war, and ministry of appointment were able to attend the feast.

The only insignificant figures here were all close friends of the crowned prince. They were all important people in Chen Fei's future administrations.

This feast was basically a family styled gathering. Only a few people were able to attend. And now, by being here Liu Yue had become a part of the higher echelon in the empire.

After hearing the compliments from everyone, Liu Yue replied, "Haha. Protecting the prince something that I should do."

Hearing all these praises, the emperor was more and more satisfied with Liu Yue.

He started to smile, "Haha. You have done a great service for the empire by saving the crowned prince's life. However, since you're a newcomer and don't really have any merit, I can't increase your nobility rank right now. Plus, you're the prince consort so if I were to increase your nobility even more, people might criticize me. It won't do you any good either. In the future, I'll definitely not forget about this.

Hearing this, Liu Yue immediately stood up, “This....”

“General Liu, no need to be polite. We’re all like a family. If you perform, then it’s normal that you get rewarded for it. The Hou Jin Empire is very straightforward. If you do something good, you get rewarded. If you do something bad, you get punished.” Chen Fei said smiling, after cutting Liu Yue off.

“Right. It’s exactly like this.” One of the senior ministers smiled at Liu Yue and nodded.

A humble young man. Not bad. Not bad at all.

Hearing this, Liu Yue bowed and respectfully said, “Then this one thanks the emperor for his kindness.”

“Haha. Now this is more like it. You should be more like this.” The emperor laughed.

Taciturn with a cold arrogance. This is what Liu Yue should be like. The world’s strongest expert.

But being humble and honest isn’t bad either.

Seeing this, Chen Fei laughed and clapped his hands. A girl in a purple skirt appeared from the back carrying a jug of wine. Her head was down and her face was flustered as she walked towards Liu Yue.

Chapter 262: The Calm Before The Storm

(5)

“General. Please drink.” the girl said softly and gently. Her sweet voice caused many people to fall for her immediately.

Of course, this didn't include Liu Yue.

Liu Yue felt a shiver. Looking at the elegantly dressed girl in front of her, she could see that this was not a servant maid. Her cheeks began to twitch.

Liu Yue complied and held her cup out towards the girl.

Seeing the scene, Chen Fei began to laugh very loudly. Liu Yue must've been attracted to the beautiful girl.

He looked at Liu Yue with ridicule and said, “Ah Liu Yue, this is the wife that I have selected for you. I am good at this right? Take a look. This is my seventeenth sister. She should be a good match for you right?”

All the other guest heard this and started laughing.

During the times of war, etiquette was something that is rarely seen. The tradition of not seeing the spouse before marriage? That didn't mean anything to them.

Hearing this, the seventeenth princess looked down even more in embarrassment. Her face was glowing bright red. She quickly moved and sat down next to Liu Yue and gently helped Liu Yue fill up her plate with food.

A light and delicate fragrant passed by Liu Yue's nose causing her to flinch a bit. She hated the smell of perfume. She hated the fact that it disrupts her sense of smell.

However, she kept a calm and tranquil expression. She casually took a glance at the seventeenth prince and nodded.

All the ministers around laughed even louder.

Hearing Liu Yue's approval, the seventeenth princess' face turned even redder.

Her future husband was such an outstanding person. She's really lucky to have someone like Liu Yue.

Under the royal lights, Liu Yue kept her calm look throughout the banquet.

Her handsome face was unparalleled under the lights. She looked more and more refined as the night went on. No one in the banquet could compare to Liu Yue.

Calm, noble, and peerless. Her looks were unrivaled.

Du Yi who had followed Liu Yue into the eastern palace watched the whole scene and shook his head.

It seems like he needs to report such an event to his previous master, Xuan Yuan Che.

Chapter 263: The Calm Before The Storm

(6)

When disguised as a man, Liu Yue is able to attract many beautiful flower and butterflies. She is able to captivate the heart of young maidens. If she goes back to being a girl, who knows how many noble men will fall head over heels for her.

As a man, she attracts women; As a woman, she attracts men.

How was Xuan Yuan Che able to resist such alluring beauty. Just how strong is his mental capability.

Looking up at the sky, Du Yi shed a single drop of tear for Xuan Yuan Che's future.

"Come come. Drink another cup. Ahh Liu Yue, your marriage to the seventeenth princess is in seven days. When the time comes, you better drink a lot," the ministry of war laughed.

"Of course." Liu Yue nodded. She then suddenly turned to the emperor and said, "Will the emperor be coming to the wedding as well?"

After she said that, everyone stopped talking and looked at Liu Yue.

Having the emperor personally attend the wedding.... That would be a great honor to the couple. Even if Liu Yue has done a great deed by rescuing the crowned prince, she's asking for too much.

Hearing this, the emperor gave Liu Yue a glance.

Seeing that Liu Yue was acting indifferently, the emperor suddenly laughed.

Coming from the outside world, Liu Yue really has a lot of experience in life. To be so arrogant and yet humble at the same time. It wouldn't do him any harm if he attended the wedding. Besides it's very festive as well.

After laughing he replied, "Okay. When the time comes, I will personally come and host your wedding!"

When he said that, the ministers around all looked at the emperor and didn't say anything.

Liu Yue nodded, "Great. Then this one will personally welcome the emperor when the time comes."

Hearing this, Chen Fei laughed and intervened, "Then as the matchmaker, I should be there as well."

Liu Yue gave a slight chuckle, acting as if she was happy.

The happiest one was the seventeenth princess. She was so happy that her face turned red again.

However, none of the people there saw through the coldness behind Liu Yue's smile.

The stars shone brightly and the night breeze was blowing lightly.

Everyone at the banquet had become tired. Liu Yue who was drunk was brought back by Du Yi after the banquet had ended.

That night, the spies from West Cliff that were hiding around her mansion had all disappeared without Liu Yue noticing.

Chapter 264: The Calm Before The Storm

(7)

Liu Yue had earned the Hou Jin empire's complete trust.

The journey back to the the mansion was a chaotic one. When they had finally returned, Du Yi immediately dismissed everyone else and let the drunk Liu Yue sleep peacefully.

It was getting late at night and everything gradually quieted down.

After everyone left, Liu Yue quickly flipped over in her bed. The Liu Yue who was suppose to be unconscious and drunk suddenly opened her eyes. The look in her eyes did not show any signs of intoxication. In fact, she couldn't be more sober than she is now.

She opened her windows and without making a noise, she slipped out of the general's mansion.

Liu Yue was probably the only general in the world that had to be sneaky when leaving her own mansion.

She jumped over the walls and left the mansion. In the corner of the street, a crimson man was waiting for her.

Seeing that he had already arrived, Liu Yue smiled and extend her hand.

Walking a few steps forward, she held his hands. The two smiled and disappeared into the night.

Outside the Wucheng Conglomerate's yard.

The two had just entered the house and they felt a strong wind from the outside. It seems like an uninvited guest had come.

Liu Yue's face sank and immediately jerked her hand back.

However, Xuan Yuan Che pulled her hand towards him led to to the back.

Seeing this, she knew that Xuan Yuan Che already had something planned out. She immediately went and hid in the back room.

At this time, Xuan Yuan Che still had his disguise on. He slowly sat down at the table, lifted up the teapot and poured himself a cup of tea.

“Bang.” The uninvited guest didn’t want to hide anymore and struck down Xuan Yuan Che’s door. He rushed forward with murderous intent.

“It’s you.” the man man shouted in surprise. It seems like he was really surprised.

In the backroom, Liu Yue had heard the voice. It was Fei Cheng Lie. The person who came was actually Fei Cheng Lie.

Looking at the shocked and speechless Fei Cheng Lie, Xuan Yuan Che slowly held up his teacup and calmly said, “Hall master Fei.”

Such calmness. Is this the same anxious and inexperienced kid during the auction?

Fei Cheng Lie regained his composure and with quick movements, his sword had already reached Xuan Yuan Che’s neck.

His breath was filled with murderous intents as well. It seemed as if the whole room became dimmer and dimmer.

Chapter 265: The Calm Before The Storm

(8)

However, Xuan Yuan Che was very calm and firmly held onto his teacup. He wasn't even bothered by the sword and continued to drink from the teacup.

"Give me the antidote or I'll kill you." Fei Cheng Lie yelled. His voice filled with rage.

"With the Buddha Flower, what kind of poison can't you cure?" Xuan Yuan Che replied as he slowly put his teacup down.

However, Fei Cheng Lie's face ashen from those words. It was better if Xuan Yuan Che didn't say that."

Fei Cheng Lie's eyes looked as if it was about to spit fire. He was so angry that his veins started to pop out.

"Give it." Fei Cheng Lie's eyes turned red. His tightened his grip on the sword and moved it closer to Xuan Yuan Che's neck.

Buddha Flower? This kid still dare talk about the Buddha Flower? That flower was a poisonous flower. A poisonous flower that poisoned his son even more.

This kid. It's him. It's was all him. This was all a part of his plan.

He gritted his teeth and his eyes became even more bloodshot. This kid had been scheming since the beginning.

"Hall master Fei. Your hands should be steadier. No one would care if I died, but your son is a different story. Seven days from now, his skin will rot and all of his meridians will explode. He will suffer for forty nine days before he die. I wonder how that'll feel. Hehe....."

Xuan Yuan Che slowly shook his head and even laughed.

Hearing this, Fei Cheng Lie was about to explode. His hands began to shake even more.

He only had one son left. It was his most beloved son. The only son that he brought out of Tianchen empire.

Today, the emperor had allowed him to take a tiny piece of the Buddha Flower for his son. He thought that his son would be fine after a while but instead, he immediately fainted.

He thought that this was part of the Buddha Flower's effect. Who would've known that it was all planned by this kid.

With one finger, Xuan Yuan Che lowered the sword and reclined in his seat. He slowly turned and looked at Fei Cheng Lie, "The Buddha Flower. It's a treasure that appears once in ten thousand years. Did you think that it would just appear so easily?"

Chapter 266: The Calm Before The Storm

(9)

Fei Cheng Lie grit his teeth and clenched his fists. In the midst of the silence, only the sound of his bones grinding against each other could be heard.

Taking a deep breath, Fei Cheng Lie suddenly slammed his hand onto the table. His expression became calm again and he coldly looked at Xuan Yuan Che, "Okay. What do you want?"

Just a while ago, when he didn't know what to do with Fei Yan anymore, he found a mysterious letter in his stone fort.

The letter explained what had happened to Fei Yan after he ate a piece of the Buddha Flower.

Buddha Flower? Bullshit. It was a fake. A fake!

"Wow." Xuan Yuan Che coldly laughed. "Now this is how the West Cliff's plant master should act."

"Just cut to the chase. What do you want? tell me."

Being in the imperial court for so long, he must have some enemies. Fei Cheng Lie didn't even know the kid and yet the kid was plotting against him. The mastermind must be someone else.

However, what he didn't know was that, the person in front of them was Xuan Yuan Che, someone with a vendetta against him.

Standing up, Xuan Yuan Che leisurely poured himself another cup of tea. He took a sip and relaxingly said, "You should be like this from the beginning. Okay. I won't waste our time. Give me the landscape of the three countries drawing. Only then will I help Fei Yan out."

"What?" Hearing what he wanted, Fei Cheng Lie's face became twisted.

"Who are you? Tianchen? Chen Empire? Zhao empire? What country are you from?"

The matter had escalated to a whole new level. It wasn't about personal grudges anymore. The kid was asking him to sell his country out. He wanted him to become a spy."

Xuan Yuan Che glanced at Fei Cheng Lie and chuckled, "It seems like the plant master's brain had rusted from hiding in West Cliff for so long."

Being mocked by Xuan Yuan Che, he could only grit his teeth and calm himself down.

Chapter 267: The Calm Before The Storm

(10)

Who in their right mind would tell Fei Cheng Lie what country they were from when asking for the landscape of the three countries drawing? Even if they named a country, anyone could tell that it's a lie.

"No. Change it to something else."

"Sure. Then you should go home and prepare for your son's funeral."

Holding his teacup, Xuan Yuan Che replied nonchalantly.

Fei Cheng Lie's facial expression became more and more unsightly. He fiercely stared at Xuan Yuan Che. If his glare could kill people, then Xuan Yuan Che would already have his heart pierced by tens of thousands of arrows.

Lightly blowing the tea leaves in his teacup and without looking at Fei Cheng Lie, he coolly said, "The Hou Jin empire doesn't have Fei as their family name. When you're useful, you're the plant master. But when you lose your value, you'll be nothing. You only have one son. Think about it."

His short speech didn't sound serious at all. He didn't try to pressure Fei Cheng Lie at all.

That's right. He only had one son.

If it weren't for the sake of his son, why would he meet this mysterious person alone.

His son. He only had one son left.

The room was filled with silence.

After a while, Fei Cheng Lie let out a deep sigh. He looks like he's aged a few years while thinking about the consequences in his head.

He wiped the sweat off his head and lightly said, "I don't have the landscape drawing with me. Someone broke into the secret chamber a few days ago and the Emperor took it back to the royal palace."

“I know.” Xuan Yuan Che said surely.

It was precisely because he couldn't find the drawing that he had to invite Fei Cheng Lie over.

Fei Cheng Lie looked at Xuan Yuan Che shockingly. The stone fort in West Cliff was created and reinforced by many of the previous plant masters. To be able to enter without anyone noticing..... This.....

He should've known. After seeing the letter on his bed, he should've known that this person was an expert of some sort.....

Chapter 268: The Calm Before The Storm

(11)

“I’ve already told you. I only want the drawing. I don’t care what you do to get it. I only want the outcome.” Xuan Yuan Che said while playing with the teacup in his hand.

It didn’t matter if he had to steal it or kill to get it. The result was all that mattered.

Saying that, Xuan Yuan Che release his aura to fill the room, causing Fei Cheng Lie to suffocate a bit.

Feeling the aura, Fei Cheng Lie shivered and glared at Xuan Yuan Che.

After deliberating for a bit, he clenched his teeth and stood up. It seems like he had finally decided, “Okay. I’ll get it for you. However, if anything happens to my son, don’t blame me if I bring you down with him.”

“If you get me what I want, I’ll get you what you want. As long as you can get me the drawing, I’ll give you the antidote.” Xuan Yuan Che glared at him.

“Remember. Seven days. You only have seven days to get the drawing. You’ll know what happens if you don’t get me the drawing or if the drawing is fake. I don’t need to say much. Hall master Fei, you’re a smart person right? I’m sure you’ll do the right thing.” Xuan Yuan Che reminded him.

Xuan Yuan Che then waved his hand towards the exit, “I’ll be waiting.”

Fei Cheng Lie couldn’t turn back anymore. He had made his decision already. He face remained calm and he left immediately without saying anything more.

Hou Jin was important. World domination was important too. However, his son was the most important compared to everything else.

Seven days. In seven days it will be Liu Yue’s “wedding”.

Seeing Fei Cheng Lie disappear into the night sky, Xuan Yuan Che let

out a cold laugh. This is the laugh of a predator toying with its prey instead of killing them immediately.

Tianchen's King of Yi was ruthless and coldblooded against his enemies. This was a known fact amongst the people.

Liu Yue came out of hiding when Fei Cheng Lie left. She saw the cold smile on Xuan Yuan Che's face and looked up towards the sky.

She can already imagine the moment when the face Fei Cheng Lie will make when he realizes who this person is. He will definitely regret everything that he has done.

She is looking forward to when that happens.

Chapter 269: The Calm Before The Storm

(12)

“You fox.” Liu Yue laughed as she leaned by the door and looked at him.

Hearing these words made Xuan Yuan Che shiver all over. He laughed and walked towards Liu Yue, “It won’t be fun if we kill him immediately. We can save our time and effort if we let him do the dirty work.”

Liu Yue smiled and leaned on his chest. This cunning bastard. This was the guy that she had fallen in love with.

She didn’t ask if he was going to really give the antidote. However, it didn’t matter to her. Even if Yuan Che gave them the antidote and spared them, she’s still there. She didn’t say anything about sparing them.

“Oh yeah. How did you get your hands on the Buddha Flower?” She asked. She was quite interested in how he got such a thing.

Xuan Yuan Che immediately started laughing very loudly. He sat Liu Yue down on the bed and said, “Buddha Flower? What Buddha flower? What I gave them was the Clear Qian Flower. It looks exactly like the Buddha Flower but it’s only a medium grade medicine. It is also very poisonous.

At first, even I couldn’t tell the difference. When I first saw this overseas, I got very excited. It was only later on that I found out it was a poisonous flower.

When I came back, I brought this thing back with me. I didn’t expect that I would have such a good chance to use it.”

The Buddha Flower can live for thousands of years. Even if the Hou Jin empire got their hands on it, they won’t start experimenting on it immediately. If something went wrong, it could potentially destroy the rare flower. Therefore, they had to study it before they could make any moves.

As a result, they fell right into my trap. Fei Cheng Lie will definitely ask

for a tiny piece of it to use on Fei Yan.

To Fei Cheng Lie, he didn't care if people got poisoned. However, if it's his son, then that's a different story. Since his son was infected by two types of poison, Fei Cheng Lie had no choice but to come by himself and that allowed us to take advantage of him.

Hearing the explanation, Xuan Yuan Che was like a real fox in Liu Yue's eyes. No. Not a fox, but a wolf. A very cold blooded wolf.

However, she liked him like this.

"Oh yeah." Xuan Yuan Che looked at Liu Yue's face and carefully stared at it. He had suddenly remembered something.

Liu Yue raised her brows, "What happened?"

Chapter 270: The Calm Before The Storm

(13)

Xuan Yuan Che stared at Liu Yue some more and raised his brow, "I feel like..... I feel like you look like somebody I know."

That night when he came back, he didn't get to see Liu Yue's face very clearly. Maybe it was because he was too excited that he overlooked her face.

It was two days ago at the auction where he had noticed it.

"Look like somebody? Why don't you say that they look like me?" Liu Yue glared at Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che immediately laughed to spite himself, "She...uhhh... she's older than you?"

"Who?" Liu Yue glared at him again.

Xuan Yuan Che was thinking. After he saw her death glare, he replied, "I don't know. I only saw a glimpse of her face. We were pretty far away from each other too. However, I felt that you two looked very similar."

Liu Yue saw that he didn't have any impure intentions and was just saying this out of curiosity. She waved her arms in discontent and said, "Whatever. There are a lot of people who look similar in the world."

She pointed at Xuan Yuan Che's chest and poked it a few times, "Remember this. You're mine."

If she saw that he had some other intentions, who knows what she would've done with him.

Such overbearing words caused Xuan Yuan Che to laugh. So possessive. But, he liked this. It's been three years since he's felt like this.

This was his little princess.

She also poked Liu Yue and said, "and you're mine."

Liu Yue grabbed his finger and Xuan Yuan Che grabbed his hand. They

both saw through each other's intentions.

The room was filled with the scent of love.

That other girl they were talking about? They had already forgotten about it.

Seven days. It wasn't too long away.

The entire Hou jin empire was preparing for the wedding.

Once the many ministers in the empire heard that the emperor and the crowned prince will make an appearance to personally host the wedding, they all sent people to Liu Yue's general mansion.

They had sent many precious and rare treasures as a congratulatory gift. Gifts were pouring into the mansion like water.

The scene was very familiar. It was exactly like the time when the three princes of Tianchen sent Liu Yue her winnings from their gamble.

This was a very grand occasion in the empire.

Even the surrounding empires like the Chen Empire and the Zhao Empire heard about it.

As the entire empire was busily preparing for the celebration, Xuan Yuan Che was preparing for his plan in the shadows.

Seven days passed very quickly.

The spring wind was blowing and it was finally Liu Yue's wedding day.

Chapter 271: A Tooth for a Tooth (1)

The spring gale swept across the entire empire.

Decorations filled the streets as everyone prepared for the joyous event.

Only the road from the palace to Liu Yue's general mansion was decorated with golden red silk. Under the bright sun, the decorations dazzled brilliantly.

Along the way to the palace, countless civilians left their homes and filled up the streets.

They had long heard about the new general Liu Yue, but they had never seen her before. Today was the only chance that they had to feast their eyes upon her.

Suddenly, every single person in the empire turned and looked towards the palace with faces full of excitement.

Paying respects to the emperor, entering the inner palace and then coming back out.

Liu Yue had finally brought the seventeenth princess out of the palace in a carriage, and was returning to his general mansion.

The sound of drums pierced the skies as the bride escorting group* walk through the streets.

(*In ancient china the groom's family sends a group of people to escort the bride in a carriage) The bride could not be seen and instead, everyone focused their attention towards Liu Yue. Liu Yue was in the front dressed in all pink. She was wearing a ribbon sash across her chest and her hair was covered by a luxuriously decorated hat. With this getup, the handsome Liu Yue looked even more handsome. It was as if she was someone who had descended from the heavens. She was simply matchless.

Everyone was so dazzled by his looks that no one questioned why he wore pink instead of red during this joyous occasion.

As she passed each road, only the sound of heavy breathing could be heard and the sight of widened eyes could be seen.

Handsome. How can someone be so handsome under the heavens.

Liu Yue was riding her silky white steed steadily and did not show any expressions on her face. She looked at the gazes of the onlookers.

She was used to this kind of gaze.

Pulling the bridle, Liu Yue suddenly smiled. It looked as if she had thought about something.

Chapter 272: A Tooth for a Tooth (2)

Yesterday, no matter what Liu Yue said, Xuan Yuan Che would not let her wear the crimson robe. Even tho she was acting as the groom, he forbid her from wearing it.

Liu Yue is not allowed to even dream about wearing a the crimson robe until their wedding.

Thinking about how serious Yuan Che was, Liu Yue was feeling amused.

She didn't mind it anyways. She'll save the crimson robe for when she marries Yuan Che. Pink is a shade of red anyways and she didn't care much about it.

She could care less about the color of the robe. She'd be perfectly fine with a white robe. However, she was afraid that the emperor would be mad about it.

As she passed each street, she would give a warm smile and nod to the crowd.

The colors of spring dazzled brilliantly under the sun.

At this time, the whole general mansion was bustling with noise.

The red lanterns shone luminously. The red silks were dancing in the wind. The entire general mansion was like a ball of fire, full of joy.

Many of the ministers and officials came to celebrate.

Even those who were not ministers but held status came without being invited and congratulated Liu Yue.

Liu Yue's general mansion was packed with people in just a while.

Outside, Yun Zhao was wearing a light blue robe and was holding a fan. His face looked purple but it was also beaming with happiness as well as he greeted the guests. He looked as if he was really Liu Yue's brother.

"Aiya. You're finally here. Come in, come in....."

"Ah. Haha. Come sit over here. over here....."

“Ahhhh. You’re late. You have to be punished.....”

Seeing how much fun Yun Zhao was having entertaining the guests, Liu Yue knew that she chose the right man for the job.

The only other person Liu Yue could rely on was Du Yi. Du Yi was a cold person, and didn’t talk much. It would be bad if she asked him to entertain guests.

Chapter 273: A Tooth for a Tooth (3)

“You know them?” Du Yi came over to him holding a jug of wine.

Yun Zhao grabbed and drank from the Du Yi’s jug. His mouth had gone dry after greeting all these people. After drinking, he replied, “Nope.”

What a joke. He wasn’t from Hou Jin either. How can he know all these people? Even if one is from Hou Jin, they would not know everyone here.

Hearing this, Du Yi raised his brows and left him.

If he didn’t know them, then why is he being so familiar with them?

“Haha. Come in, come in....” Yun Zhao was once again welcoming guests.

“His highness the emperor has arrived.” Right as Du Yi stepped out for some air, a loud sharp sound entered his ears.

Hou Jin’s emperor had arrived.

A sharp look appeared on his face for a split second and he turned back to normal.

Without looking back, he took his plate and left.

The whole place was filled with high ranking ministers from the empire. After hearing that the emperor had come, they all stood up and went towards the door.

Dressed in his gold dragon robe, the emperor was standing by the door with the crowned prince.

“This one greets your highness.”

Everyone in the mansion kneeled down and greeted the emperor.

Only Du Yi was standing around looking distracted. It looked as if he didn’t care about the emperor at all.

Seeing all his ministers greet him, the emperor laughed, “We’re not in the palace today. There’s no need to greet me in such manner. I only came for Liu Yue’s wedding feast.”

“Yes. Your highness.” Everyone replied and stood up. The bowed and cleared a path for the emperor and the crowned prince.

Chapter 274: A Tooth for a Tooth (4)

Chen Fei who had been standing behind the emperor saw that Yun Zhao was looking distracted. He waved his hands and called for Yun Zhao, "Hey Brother. What's up!"

Two days ago, this kid was calling him brother. It was Chen Fei's turn today.

Hearing Chen Fei, Yun Zhao came back to his sense.

His eyes began to fill up with excitement once again and laughed, "Hey! Come on in. Hehe....."

Seeing this, the emperor and Chen Fei started laughing. The mood in the mansion was great.

The emperor and the crowned prince followed Yun Zhao to their seats.

Behind them, West Cliff's sixth and seventh hall's hall masters followed.

Laughing around cheerfully, Yun Zhao made the mood in the mansion even livelier.

Everyone was so cheerful that no one had noticed that when the emperor came, only Du Yi did not kneel down.

The spring breeze whistled and red silk fluttered all around.

The whole general's mansion was bustling with activities.

There were countless amount of actors, dancers, and comedians all preparing to give the spectators a show.

The place could not get livelier.

Unlike the general mansion that was filled with excitement, the royal palace was completely quiet.

A princess being married was not a small matter. However, it wasn't that big of a deal to the people in the palace either. The emperor and the crowned prince went to give Liu Yue face but most of the other royal

family members were not present.

At the rear side of the palace, only a few lights were lit. It was very quiet.

In this area, a carriage stopped in a secluded alley outside the palace.

From the palace, a group of people appeared and approached the carriage.

Inside the carriage, there was Xuan Yuan Che who was still in his disguise.

Chapter 275: A Tooth for a Tooth (5)

Fei Cheng Lie was standing outside of the carriage wearing a eunuch uniform. Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che's mouth curved up and smiled.

"It suits you very well." He joked.

Fei Cheng Lie shot him a glare and didn't say anything.

Today, both the emperor and the crowned prince had left the palace for Liu Yue's wedding. They also invited the sixth and seventh hall master to attend as their guards.

Since the other two hall masters were not with him, it was easy for him to enter the royal palace and steal the item.

He didn't have much time. He had to return to West Cliff immediately. This was because he one of the only people who knew where the drawing was. If the drawing disappeared while he was missing, he would be the one to take the blame.

"Give me the antidote." Fei Cheng Lie took out a scroll from his sleeves and looked angrily at Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che extended his hands and coldly looked at Fei Cheng Lie, "I want to confirm it."

Fei Cheng Lie hesitated for a bit. If he gave this drawing to the kid and didn't get the antidote in return then.....

He couldn't back out anymore. He gritted his teeth and handed the drawing of the map over.

He stole the item from the palace already. If he didn't hand it over, he'll lose his son and his position in the empire.

Xuan Yuan Che opens the scroll and carefully examined the drawing.

The mountains and rivers were in the right places. The landscape was very well drawn. The three kingdoms were also drawn in detail.

Scanning the drawing, he saw that there were markings around the territories of Tian Chen. It seems like this was the real deal.

Clapping his hands, he quickly rolled up the scroll.

Feeling good, he looked at Fei Cheng Lie, "As expected, Master Fei is a trustworthy person. Okay. Here's what you want. Catch."

With quick movements, he retrieved a small bottle and threw it over to Fei Cheng Lie.

Fei Cheng Lie quickly grabs the bottle and took a whiff.

He fiercely looked at Xuan Yuan Che, "If I find out that this is fake, I will find out who you are no matter what. Then we'll see what happens!"

Chapter 276: A Tooth for a Tooth (6)

Hearing the threat, Xuan Yuan Che glared coldly at him and said, "Don't worry. What I want isn't his life."

Feeling the deepness of the glare, Fei Cheng Lie trembled in fear.

That glare..... it had caused Fei Cheng Lie to shudder and look away.

When he looked back, Xuan Yuan Che had already disappeared.

Seeing what had just happened, he thought about his son, Fei Yan. He can't be thinking about other things right now. He had go back and save his son. With quick movements, Fei Cheng Lie disappeared from the area as well.

After Fei Cheng Lie left, Xuan Yuan Che showed a cold smile, returned to his carriage and left the palace.

On the other hand, Liu Yue's general mansion shook as feast continued. Firecrackers were exploding all over the place, drums were beating very loudly and the cheers from the people were deafening.

"The bride has arrived."

A loud clear voice echoed through the halls.

Liu Yue immediately escorted the seventeenth princess into the general mansion.

"Haha. They're finally here." The emperor laughed as he put down his wine.

"They're here! The bride is here." the prime minister yelled, his face full of smiles.

All the other guest and ministers stopped chatting and looked towards the gates.

Yun Zhao, who was already waiting at the gate, was dazzled by Liu Yue's handsomeness and her pink attire.

He knew that his brother Liu Yue was handsome. However, he looked

even more gallant today after dressing up.

Seeing how Liu Yue was escorting the seventeenth princess in, Yun Zhao felt a bit uncomfortable inside. To let such a fine man marry the unknown seventeenth princess.... He couldn't bear to watch this.

Even while feeling regret for his brother, his face showed a bright smile. With a wave of his hand, he pushed the gates open and welcomed the couple.

Chapter 277: A Tooth for a Tooth (7)

Behind the gate were servants preparing to light up firecrackers. When Liu Yue and the princess arrived, they lit up the firecrackers and the explosions created a sound that pierced through the heavens.

White smoke started the billow and everyone was extremely happy for the couple.

Everyone was prepared to sing and dance. The entire place was filled with a festive mood.

In front of the mansion, many commoners crowded to watch the celebration. Each and every one of them had an excited look on their faces. It looked as if they were the ones marrying.

The seventeenth princess' carriage stopped right next to Liu Yue after entering the mansion.

"The groom will now escort the bride out of her carriage!" A voice yelled.

Liu Yue walked to the front of the carriage and kicked the door. Once she did that, everybody cheered.

This act of kicking the door was to show one's might.

After kicking the door, she lifted the curtains and stared at the princess for a bit.

Showing one's might by kicking the door? What kind of dumb rule was that? If those dumb ministers didn't give her a lecture about marriage last night, she wouldn't have known about it.

However, she was the one kicking today so it didn't matter to her.

If she returns to Tianchen and Xuan Yuan Che dares to do something like this during their wedding, she'll be the one showing him her might.

Liu Yue received the princess' pure white hands and escorted her out of the carriage.

The princess was wearing a crimson red gown and veil along with a red

cape. She looked extremely happy.

“The newly-wed shall enter the mansion!” The voice called out again.

Walking through the smoke, Liu Yue held the princess' hand and let her into the general's mansion.

The firecrackers continued to explode and the festivity was getting stronger and stronger.

The general mansion on the eastern side of Hou Jin was filled with festivity while the West Cliff on the western side was deathly silent. It was as if the two places were on the opposite sides of the earth.

A shadow quickly flew into West Cliff.

After returning, the first thing that Fei Cheng Lie did was give his son the antidote.

In a while, the Fei Yan who had been unconscious awoken.

Chapter 278: A Tooth for a Tooth (8)

“Father.” Fei Yan rubbed his head. His face was still very pale.

Watching his son wake up, Fei Cheng Lie was feeling very happy. It seems like the antidote that the kid gave him was the real deal.

He grabbed Fei Yan’s hands and sat by his side, “You’re finally awake. Thank god....”

Hearing his father’s cry, he propped himself up and said, “I..... I was poisoned....?”

That day, his body suddenly bursted out in pain and he couldn’t control himself at all. However, he was still mentally stable and knew what happened.

Fei Cheng Lie nodded, “I’ve already found out who poisoned you. Don’t worry about this anymore.”

The one who poisoned Fei Yan definitely have ties with that kid. Now that he has conspired with him, Fei Cheng Lie can’t pursue him anymore. Or else, Chen Fei will start to become suspicious.

It was better if they didn’t talk about this matter anymore.

Fei Yan knew that with the power that his father has in the Hou Jin Empire, he’s probably taken care of the person who poisoned him. Heh. How dare they poison him without knowing who his father is.

Fei Yan nodded weakly and coldly said, “General Liu Yue. You dare poison me? It seems like you won’t be let off that easily.....”

“Liu Yue?” Fei Cheng Lie suddenly interrupted before Fei Yan could finish talking. How was Liu Yue connected to his?

Seeing how shocked his father was, he was shocked as well, “Didn’t father take care of Liu Yue already? He should be the one who poisoned me....”

Furrowing his brows, Fei Yan started to think about the events, “I remember that I didn’t touch anything suspicious that day. The only

foreign thing I touched was Liu Yue's hands. He must have poisoned me then. If not, then how could I have been poisoned?"

Hearing this, Fei Cheng Lie felt chills and shuddered.

Liu Yue.... Liu Yue.... How can it be him? Unless.....

He suddenly shivered. He recollected the time when he first saw Liu Yue's face. It had almost caused his heart to stop. That face.....

Chapter 279: A Tooth for a Tooth (9)

It was similar. Too similar. It looked exactly like that bloody Murong Liu Yue from three years ago.

No. That's not possible. Murong Liu Yue is at the borders of Tianchen. How could she be in Hou Jin? It was not possible.

Furthermore, Murong Liu Yue is a girl and Liu Yue is a man. How could this be?

Murong Liu Yue..... Liu Yue..... The names are basically the same.

His heart tensed up and his hair stood on its ends. No. It's not possible. They can't be the same person.

Yeah. They can't be the same person. It must all be a coincidence. A coincidence.....

In his heart, he wanted it to be a coincidence. However, in his head, he began to think otherwise. Fei Cheng Lie started to shake uncontrollably.

"Father. What happened?" Fei Yan saw the change in his father's expression and worryingly asked, "Father, what's going on? The expression in your eyes don't look so well.... you..."

The expression in the eyes..... the eyes.....

Fei Cheng Lie suddenly remembered something. He couldn't hear what Fei Yan had said after that phrase.

It was the eyes. That look in that kid's eyes before he disappeared....

It was a dark look, filled with cruelty and coldness

Those eyes.....

Bang! Fei Cheng Lie jumped up and his expression became very serious. His face looked as if all of his blood was drained and he could not stop shaking.

Those eyes.... He remembered. He remembered where he had seen that glare before.

Having served in Tianchen for twenty years, he was one of the closest people to the owner of those eyes. He watched that man grow up from a small child to the peerless genius that he is today. He had seen the steps that man took to become one of Tianchen's pillars of support. He watched as that man became one of the most wanted people in the Hou Jin Empire, someone who must be eliminated.

He was Tianchen's King of Yi, Xuan Yuan Che.

It was him. That Xuan Yuan Che who he trapped in the sea of flame. The undying Xuan Yuan Che from three years ago. He's coming knocking.

Fei Cheng Lie's body felt weak and shivered. He felt like his heart was about to jump out from his chest. It was Xuan Yuan Che. Xuan Yuan Che.

"Father. What happened to you? What could have made you feel afraid? Father!"

Seeing how his father was acting, Fei Yan who had just awoken immediately jumped down from his bed and asked in fear.

Chapter 280: A Tooth for a Tooth (10)

Fei Cheng Lie was afraid. Very afraid. How could he not be? Those two people have come to get their revenge.

Xuan Yuan Che came..... and that Liu Yue.... He must be Murong Liu Yue. There was no way that they could look so similar.

Liu Yue.... Murong Liu Yue... They even had the same name!

His was so scared that he could feel himself throwing his heart up. His whole body felt cold. He felt as if his whole body had frozen over and was unable to breathe.

It has to be her. The cold blooded killer from hell, Murong Liu Yue.

He wasn't some random person from overseas. He was THE Liu Yue.

The Hou Jin empire had made a mistake..... a big mistake.

The empire had placed their faith in him and had bestowed a high position to him. They had put their faith into the god of death. That asura from hell, Murong Liu Yue.

Xuan Yuan Che and Murong Liu Yue..... They have come to get their revenge together.

They had come for him and the entire Hou Jin empire.

Having seen how powerful Liu Yue is, he felt his heart beat faster and faster. Other people didn't know how strong she actually is, but he knew. He had seen the death god go on a killing spree.

After he ran away, he had received news about Tianchen.

The left minister's faction which included the minister of appointments, the minister of rites, Empress Liu, the crowned prince and everyone that plotted against Xuan Yuan Che were all killed. None of them lived.

]

It was a massacre. A bloody massacre.

"No.....I can't.....I can't let..... them...." Fei Cheng Lie couldn't even talk

properly.

“Father. What are you saying?”

“I can’t let them flip the entire Hou Jin Empire. I can’t let them succeed.”

He can’t let Murong Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che turn Hou Jin upside down. He can’t let them.... or else empire will fall.

Fei Cheng Lie was afraid of Liu Yue and had already betrayed Hou Jin for his son. However, this was the country that he loved. He had sacrificed so much for the country already. He was still on Hou Jin’s side.”

“Guards! Release the flares. Quick!”

Chapter 281: A Tooth for a Tooth (11)

Both of Fei Cheng Lie's eyes turned bloodshot as he yelled out.

"The flares? What happened? Father. Did something big happen?" Fei Yan's expression changed after seeing the flares being released.

The flare signals. These were only used during the most urgent emergencies. Once they were used, the entire Hou Jin empire had to prepare for the emergency. What exactly had happened?

However, after the flares were used everything remained silent. There was no sound of fast-approaching footsteps. There weren't any fast moving shadows. Nothing. It was completely silent.

Fei Cheng Lie's eyes turned cold. What happened? Could it be that there's no one in West Cliff?

No. That's not possible. He had only sent the sixth and seventh hall to protect the emperor. There was still the people from the fifth hall who are in charge of the imperial palace's safety. Also, the other four halls should be present as well. How come there wasn't a single soul in sight?

It was silent. The entire place was silent.

Feeling uneasy, Fei Yan and Fei Cheng Lie both rushed out of their quarter.

There was nobody. No one on the roads either. Where did everyone from West Cliff go?

They quickly searched the place and entered the fourth hall. There was only one other person in there. The fourth hall's hall master. He was struggling on the floor, trying to crawl his way out of the hall to seek help. His face was deathly pale.

He was poisoned. The number one poison expert in West Cliff was actually poisoned!

"Master Fei..... The water..... there's poison in the water....." Seeing that Fei Cheng Lie had come, the fourth hall's hall master used the remainder

of his energy to relay the message. Immediately afterwards, he dropped dead.

The water was poisoned? Could it be that all of the water in West Cliff was poisoned?

He felt the shivers once again. The only one who can enter West Cliff without anyone noticing was Xuan Yuan Che. He was the only one..... He..... Does he want to destroy the entire West Cliff?

Fei Cheng Lie's hands turned into a fist. While thinking about what to do, he could hear the sound of firecrackers.

Firecrackers..... Murong Liu Yue was marrying the seventeenth princess. The emperor and the crowned prince are both in attendance!

Not good. The emperor was in danger!

Fei Cheng Lie immediately grabbed Fei Yan and sped towards the direction of Liu Yue's general Mansion. They couldn't let them harm the emperor, or else Hou Jin is finished.

Chapter 282: A Tooth for a Tooth (12)

While West Cliff was dead silent, Liu Yue's general mansion was jubilating "The first bow is for the heaven and the earth." The prime minister yelled.

Liu Yue held onto the bundled ribbon turned with the seventeenth princess and bowed.

"The second bow is for the parents."

They both turned around again and smiled. Liu Yue looked up at the smiling emperor and grinned. She then bowed towards the emperor.

She had supposedly came from overseas and Du Yi was the only one by her side. Thus, the seventeenth princess's parent was basically her parent too.

The emperor looked down at Liu Yue and the seventeenth princess with a face filled with happiness.

Chen Fei's face was filled with happiness as well. Behind him, the sixth and seventh hall's hall master stood there.

In the hall filled with guests, every single person looked very happy.

Now it was time for the couple to face each other and bow. However, before they even had the chance to turn towards each other, a flash alerted everyone. Countless amount of swords flew in from outside the mansion towards the emperor and Chen Fei.

However, the swords were not able to hit anything.

"Die!" a cold deathly aura bursted out from afar. The actors who were performing suddenly turned into cold blooded assassins who flew towards the emperor.

"Assassins!"

"The emperor is in danger!"

"Help!"

An unexpected event had occurred. Everyone in the hall got into a frenzy.

Holding his sword, an assassin flew quickly towards the emperor.

The emperor's expression changed. It was as expected of the emperor. During the frenzy, he stayed calm and silently retreated backwards.

At the same time, the seventh hall master charged towards the assassin and struck the sword with his palm.

At this time, Liu Yue took the chance and got herself closer to the emperor while yelling, “ Watch out your highness!”

Chapter 283: An Eye for An Eye (1)

With this, the seventh hall master and Liu Yue who were both in the air went separated. The seventh hall master went to intercept one of the assassins whereas Liu Yue flew towards the emperor.

In mid air, the seventh hall master struck the assassin with his Poisonous Sand Palm.

Behind him, Liu Yue landed softly besides the emperor and quickly helped the very afraid emperor up.

The royal guards quickly surrounded the two in order to protect them.

Their movements were very quick and precise. There were no room for error.

After surrounding the two, they unsheathed their swords and held them up high. Inside the encirclement, only Liu Yue and the emperor were present.

Suddenly, in the blink of an eye, assassins flooded into the hall from every direction.

Miserable cries and calls for help filled the entire room.

The ministers, high ranking officials and noblemen lumped together in a panic.

Most of the officials and noblemen did not know martial arts at all, so when something like this happened, they all lost their minds. All they can do now is crawl and beg for help like a dog.

The ministers who knew martial arts kept calm. They drew their swords and defended themselves.

This wasn't that surprising actually. The emperor had shown himself out in the open. There are many people who are willing to take this chance to assassinate him. The emperor had experienced something like this back when he was younger.

What they didn't expect was that this group of people dared to attack

even though there were so many people present.

Did they think that the Hou Jin Empire, Liu Yue and West Cliff were herbivores?

In an instant, the hall that was filled with happiness turned very bloody.

The seventeenth princess had already fainted from the shock.

“Liu Yue! Protect my father.”

Standing on the side, the crowned prince Chen Fei’s face sank. Being protected by the sixth hall master, he turned towards Liu Yue and yelled.

Although, with Liu Yue, a great martial artist, by his father’s side, he didn’t have to worry about anything. But he still could not keep his cool.

Seeing that Liu Yue and the emperor were both protected by the royal guards, he calmed down a bit.

At the same time, the sixth hall master began to whistle.

In the span of a few seconds, dozens of West Cliff’s hidden guards came rushing in.

Chapter 284: An Eye for An Eye (2)

Swords were flying around and the entire hall was in chaos.

“You guys dare to try and assassinate I, the emperor? Kill them!” Once the hidden guards came rushing in, the emperor stood up and yelled.

“Your highness, please leave this to us. Please return to the palace with the prince consort.” The seventh hall master replied while struggling against his opponent.

“Father, Let’s return to the palace.”

Hearing what the seventh hall master had said, Chen Fei quickly nodded and looked at the emperor.

The sixth hall master who had been protecting Chen Fei quickly moved towards the emperor and Liu Yue who were on the stage.

The royal guards around them emitted a very strong murderous aura.

The emperor looked down at the chaotic scene with a stern face.

Next to the emperor, Liu Yue’s mouth curved upwards. She started to smile. It was a cold but brilliant smile with a trace of scariness.

How can Liu Yue smile in this situation?

When was Liu Yue able to smile like this? He had never smiled during any situation before.

Chen Fei saw the look on Liu Yue’s face and became shocked. The smile was very beautiful. It looked very brilliant.

It was like an iceberg that was glistening under the spring sunlight. In a normal situation, one would feel warm while looking at Liu Yue’s smile.

However, to Chen Fei, the smile caused him to become horrified.

He didn’t know why but he felt that something bad was going to happen. That smile.....

“Liu Yue, what are you waiting for? Let’s go!” Chen Fei started to panic a bit. There were countless amount of assassins going towards Liu Yue and

the emperor.

“Liu Yue. Come with me.....” The emperor did not see that Liu Yue had started laughing. By the time he turned to look at Liu Yue, he had only finished half of his sentence. He suddenly stopped talking and stared at Liu Yue. That look on her face.....

“Then this servant will send your highness off.” Liu Yue’s mouth curved upwards and stared right into the emperor’s eyes.

The glare that she gave was as cold as ice.

Chapter 285: An Eye for An Eye (3)

With quick movements, Liu Yue retrieved a dagger from her sleeves.

“You.....” The Emperor was shocked. “What is the meaning of this?”

“Your Highness.....” At this moment, a frightening sound yelled out, causing almost everyone to become surprised.

Fei Cheng Lie burst through the entrance with Fei Yan. His face was flushed red and he was breathing heavily. It seems like he rushed here very quickly.

Hearing the yell, The Emperor and Chen Fei both looked in his direction.

The sixth and seventh hall masters were shocked as well. Why was the master here? From the looks of it, this must be some urgent matter. What had happened?

“Your highness. It’s dangerous. Run away..... She’s..... She’s..... Ah!.....”

Pointing at Liu Yue, Fei Cheng Lie’s eyes looked as if they were about to pop out. No matter how hard he tried he couldn’t get the words out of his mouth.

He had only said a few words before the colors of his face changed. He reached for his neck and cough..... His voice..... His voice was gone....”

“Ah.... Ahhhh....” That was the only sound that came out every time he opened his mouth. It was as if there was something stuck in his throat.

What happened? What had happened?

Where did his voice go?

He looked frighteningly at Liu Yue’s eyes. Those eyes were cold and they looked as if they could kill.....

The gaze allowed Fei Cheng Lie to understand what had happened. She was the mastermind behind everything that had happened.

However, there was one thing that he didn’t understand. When and how

did Liu Yue poison him? It didn't matter now anyways. Liu Yue was in control of everything.

His face was filled with despair. All he could do was open his mouth and point at Liu Yue.

No one knew what kind of message he was trying to convey. No one but Liu Yue.

Liu Yue's mouth curved upwards and showed a devious smile. She was going to make them pay back their debt in blood.

After a few seconds, the Emperor and Chen Fei both finally noticed the frightened expression that Fei Cheng Lie had while pointing at Liu Yue. Seeing this, both of their faces changed.

"Father! Fall back!" Chen Fei was frightened and immediately went towards his father.

Chapter 286: An Eye for An Eye (4)

Just by looking at Fei Cheng Lie's expression, anyone could tell that he was afraid of Liu Yue for some reason.

At the same time, the Emperor retreated away from Liu Yue very quickly.

However, no matter how fast he was, he couldn't be faster than Liu Yue.

Liu Yue quickly glanced at Fei Cheng Lie, and with a soft movement, the dagger in her hand quickly pierced through the emperor's chest.

A patch of red blood immediately appeared on the yellow gown that the emperor was wearing.

"Father..." Chen Fei who could not get to the emperor in time, cried loudly.

Everyone in the hall heard his cry and turned around towards the stage.

On the stage, while being protected by the royal guards, the emperor's face looked very gloomy while holding onto his chest.

Blood continuously flowed out and as he tumbled onto the floor while pointing at Liu Yue.

The main character of today's wedding, a general of the empire was holding a bloody dagger with a cold smile on her face.

How could this be? What had just happened?

All of the ministers in attendance were all confused. They didn't know how to react to something like this.

The sixth hall master was the fastest one to react. When he saw that Liu Yue had suddenly attacked the emperor, he flew towards Chen Fei to protect him if something happened.

Liu Yue was now the enemy. With Chen Fei's weak martial art abilities, he would be killed very easily.

The empire had lost its emperor already. It can't afford to lose the

crowned prince either.

The emperor who was on the floor looked at the cold Liu Yue with an ugly face and asked, “You..... Who are you.....”

With a flip of her hands, she threw the dagger out again. This time with a slight laugh. She then walked towards the emperor, who was still in disbelief, and said, “You want to know who I am? Fine. You should know the name of your assassin anyways.”

Chapter 287: An Eye for An Eye (5)

Followed by a cold chuckle, she whispered something into the emperor's ears.

"You.....It's you....."The emperor's face changed dramatically after hearing what Liu Yue had just said.

"My son.... Be careful.... Be....."

His fingers trembled as he pointed at Liu Yue. The emperor had wanted to use his last breath to tell Chen Fei everything. However, how could Liu Yue let something like this happen?

"Heh. The emperor of Hou Jin. Serves you right!" Liu Yue exclaimed coldly.

"No....." Chen Fei who was held back by the sixth hall master yelled. His eyes became bloodshot and he tried to free himself frantically.

"Your highness....." The ministers who were shocked finally came to their senses. The whole place had gone wild.

Their emperor had been assassinated....

"Liu Yue!! I'll kill you!" The seventh hall master roared as his eyes became bloodshot as well and flew towards Liu Yue.

"Hahahahahahaha" Liu Yue laughed savagely. She grabbed her pink gown and teared it apart, revealing a long white gown underneath.

"I've been waiting for you." Liu Yue was going to attack him next anyways. If he didn't come, she would've gone to him.

It wasn't like she couldn't kill them a few days ago. She could've done it easily. However, she wanted to kill them in front of everyone else. She wanted to kill the two people who had gravely injured Xuan Yuan Che in front of all these people.

She wasn't afraid of him.

"Master, catch!" a cold voice suddenly yelled out as a zither flew towards Liu Yue. It was Du Yi. He had everything prepared for Liu Yue

already.

Liu Yue did a flip in mid air and catch the zither. With soft movements of her fingers, numerous amount of invisible wind blades shot forward.

Chapter 288: An Eye for An Eye (6)

An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. Liu Yue's sleek black hair flew in the air as she tore off the emblem of the Hou Jin empire off herself.

The entire room was filled with the sound of music from her zither.

A murderous aura followed the music.

Liu Yue had began her massacre.

Standing by the door, Fei Cheng Lie was still grabbing his throat, his face had turned red and his eyes filled with despair.

He was late. In the end, he couldn't do anything.

His emperor, the Hou Jin emperor was dead in front of him.

He stumbled as he couldn't keep himself up anymore and knelt on the ground.

It was his fault. He was the master of West Cliff. He was suppose to be the head of the intelligence network. However, he still couldn't find out Liu Yue's identity.

It was his fault. In order to protect his son, he was distracted by Xuan Yuan Che. He couldn't concentrate on other matters at all.

He had failed to do his job. It was him. It was all him. He knew that they were going to get revenge some day..... He shouldn't have done anything to them three years ago. He shouldn't have.....

Memories of the event from three years ago replayed in his mind that instant. In front of him was the demoness from three years ago. They were the same person..... Killing without blinking. She was emitting a cold murderous aura.

In just a bit, he had ran out of air. Fei Cheng Lie's body shuddered as his face turned green.

"Father.... Father. What happened to you? Father."

Fei Yan who was besides him was startled and began yelling.

He was unable to breathe at all.....

He opened his mouth but he couldn't do anything. He was like a fish out of water. He felt that god of death approaching him quickly.

"Leave....." That was what he wanted to tell his son, but he couldn't. Instead, he used the remainder of his strength to write it out for Fei Yan.

He was afraid of them three years ago. Today, he was finally done in. However, he needed to keep his son safe.

"Father. I won't leave... you.. beh....." without finishing his sentence, a dagger struck Fei Yan in the back. A cold face looked down on him from behind.

Chapter 289: An Eye for An Eye (7)

His eyes suddenly opened wide and his face turned twisted. Fei Cheng Lie reached out to try and grab the person before him but couldn't do so.

His arm turned stiff in mid air and slowly dropped down.

Fei Cheng Lie then collapsed onto the ground.

Liu Yue sneered and didn't look back. She had calculated everything down to the second that the poison would take effect. She wouldn't let anyone that had hurt Xuan Yuan Che get away.

The debt of blood must be paid in blood.

The zither sounded as she began her slaughter once again..

The assassins that came were all hand picked by Xuan Yuan Che. Asides from the sixth and seventh hall master, no one else posed a real threat to them.

"Summon the guards from West Cliff! Quick!" Chen Fei who was behind the sixth hall master yelled out.

A whistling sound could be heard. It was very soft but it was sharp.

The sixth hall master yelled until his throat became dry. However, no one from West Cliff arrived. What happened? Where did everyone from West Cliff go? They should have arrived by now!

His heart felt heavy and his expression turned extremely ugly.

"You don't need to yell anymore. No one is going to come." Liu Yue laughed as she flew into the air and attacked with the zither.

Hearing this, all the ministers in the hall were shocked. The people from West Cliff aren't coming? Could it be.....?"

At this time, the eerie West Cliff was even more gloomy than normal.

The four front halls and the three back halls were filled with corpses. There was poison being spread throughout the entire West Cliff.

For the ones that didn't fall, they chased the ones who released the

poison and were battling outside of West Cliff.

In the entire history since the establish of West Cliff, nothing this disastrous had ever happened. They were out for blood. They wanted to kill every single person who had released the poison.

In the forest outside, everyone was engaged in battle.

No one was able to hear the sixth hall master's call.

None of them realized that something was wrong.

Chapter 290: An Eye for An Eye (8)

While the two sides were outside fighting against each other, the West Cliff that was built up by several generations of Hou Jin emperors started to go up in flames.

Under the golden spring sunlight, the black smoke and red flames created a dazzling gleam.

The sector that has the most authority in Hou Jin....

The base of the greatest unit in the seven countries....

The great West Cliff was up in flames.

Back in the general's mansion, Yun Zhao had been standing on the side, silently watching the entire scene. Amidst the chaos, a mysterious person flew towards Yun Zhao and quickly whispered a few words into his ear.

Hearing what the man had said, Yun Zhao's eyes lit up and a brilliant smile appeared on his face.

He turned around and watched Liu Yue continue her massacre. His smile grew bigger and bigger.

Yun Zhao waved his hands, motioning for the mysterious person to come closer, and then instructed him with a few words. Then he opened up his fan and rushed into chaotic scene by himself.

While passing through the experts from West Cliff, he waved his fan and struck their necks. In an instant, blood spurted out from their necks and they fell immediately.

His attack was so fast that his pure white fan didn't even get stained.

His blue robe fluttered as he smiled and continued walking towards Liu Yue. He waved his fan and killed all of those who blocked his way, not sparing anyone at all.

This kind of clean killing technique... Although it wasn't as strong as Liu Yue's attack, it wasn't far from it.

These experts from West Cliff would have never thought that they

would be beaten so easily by someone like Yun Zhao.

Meanwhile, Liu Yue locked onto the seventh hall master and flew towards him.

Holding her zither, a hint of anger flash in Liu Yue's eyes. With quick movements, she started to attack the seventh hall master.

The seventh hall master didn't know how Liu Yue got in front of him and panicked. In that moment, he struck both of his palm out and tried to attack Liu Yue.

Blood splattered everywhere as a pair of black hands fell on the floor. The seventh hall master's eyes widened at the scene.

He had struck out using his Poisonous Sand Palm without realizing that there were wires around his wrist. The moment he struck out, his hand was severed.

Chapter 291: An Eye for An Eye (9)

Before the seventh hall master could even recover from the shock of having his hands severed, he suddenly felt a sharp pain around his neck.

Liu Yue was already standing behind him and she held onto a wire. With a slight tug, it severed seventh hall master's head.

His eyes widened as both his head and body fell onto the ground.

Liu Yue smiled coldly and tossed the bloody wire away and continued her slaughter.

"Beautiful. I knew this bro of mine wasn't simple at all." Seeing that she had begun to slaughter again, he quickly retreated away from her while smiling. While falling back, he continuously attacked with his fan. The experts from West Cliff were unable to get close to him at all.

Hearing what Yun Zhao had said, Liu Yue turned and looked at him, "Not really."

"Poisoning the entire West Cliff and Assassinating the Emperor of Hou Jin, as expected from my bro. You really are capable." He deflected an attack and continued to smile at Liu Yue.

"West Cliff is on fire!" A horrified voice cried.

In the direction of the cry, the entire West Cliff could be seen from one of the windows. Smoke was rising very quickly and it looked quite dazzling under the golden sunlight.

No wonder why the West Cliff didn't send reinforcements. It seems like the people of West Cliff can barely save themselves.

Who could have set the entire West Cliff on fire? Who could be so strong and fierce? Who could it be?

"Your highness the crowned prince, run away!" Seeing the entire scene, the sixth hall master knew that the situation wasn't good anymore and immediately told the prince to flee. Hearing this, all of the best experts present flew towards Chen Fei to escort him out.

Meanwhile, the sixth hall master turned around and rushed forward, towards Liu Yue.

Chen Fei was a smart man. He saw that the sixth hall master was buying time for him using his own life and felt his heart ache. However, he immediately turned around and left with the people from West Cliff.

Chapter 292: An Eye for An Eye (10)

From inside the hall, Liu Yue looked at the burning West Cliff.

“I’m just here to watch the fun.” Yun Zhao looked out the window. The red burning flames looked dazzling.

After had killed almost everyone in West Cliff. Her subordinates were able to finish the job and burn West Cliff to the grounds.

Hearing this, Liu Yue looked over at Yun Zhao with a mysterious expression and smiled.

She didn’t waste any time talking to Yun Zhao and attacked the approaching sixth hall master instead. With a flick of her finger, a hidden blade flew towards the sixth hall master.

While Liu Yue finished off the sixth hall master, Yun Zhao surveyed the area and whispered to Liu Yue, “Since I helped brother out today, I wonder how brother thank me in the future?”

Saying that, he flew towards Chen Fei.

If the crowned prince is also killed, Hou Jin will fall into a state where the higher echelons will fight for power. When that happens, Hou Jin is bound to collapse.

Liu Yue had heard what Yun Zhao said but didn’t reply to him. She only revealed a slight smile.

‘How i’ll thank you? Well of course I would thank him nicely.’

The sound of Liu Yue’s zither filled the room. Liu Yue didn’t want to waste anymore time and thus she instantly killed the sixth hall master. Her time was almost up.

At West Cliff, the flames soared into the heavens.

“Not good. We were tricked.” In the outskirts of West Cliff, the people of West Cliff suddenly saw the flames and were shocked.

“Return quickly! The emperor was assassinated.” Someone called out as he approached on a horse. Hearing the news, the people of West Cliff

were shaken up. It was their duty to protect the country and the emperor.

The first and second hall master's expressions changed and quickly yelled out, "Retreat!"

They quickly retreated and rushed towards Liu Yue's general mansion.

The hundreds of people from West Cliff abandoned their fights and retreated towards the general's mansion.

The people who they were fighting with however, didn't follow. They only watched as the people from West Cliff disappeared.

Chapter 293: An Eye for An Eye (11)

“Bang!” In one strike, Liu Yue had finished off the sixth hall master.

His clothes exploded and fresh blood seeped out of his body.

Coldly smiling, she turned away from the sixth hall master. She turned towards the other assassins and signaled something to them.

“Brothers, Let’s go. The entire army is coming.” Yun Zhao who went to chase Chen Fei suddenly retreated and whispered to Liu Yue.

Yun Zhao had almost caught up to Chen Fei, but he didn’t think that the ministers who escaped would bring the entire army to deal with them.

Even if he caught up to Chen Fei and killed them, he wouldn’t be able to escape the thirty thousand strong imperial army. He would be killed immediately. Chen Fei’s life was not worth his own.

Hearing this, Liu Yue yelled out, “Retreat!”

Carrying her zither, she killed a path of retreat for them.

When the zither sounded, the people in front of her fell immediately.

The sixth and seventh hall masters were dead, the people who were left were not even able to stop Liu Yue for a single second.

The assassins who were pretending to be actors gathered behind Liu Yue and rushed out with her.

Liu Yue and Yun Zhao left the general mansion, got on their horses and left the vicinity very quickly while the assassins integrated themselves with the commoners, erasing all traces of their existence.

“Chase them!” With the protection of the army, Chen Fei was not scared anymore. He commanded the army to attack the mansion can caught sight of Liu Yue leaving with Yun Zhao.

The imperial army immediately chased after them.

Chen Fei’s eyes were bloodshot, “Liu Yue... If I don’t kill you today, my hatred will not dissipate.”

Chen Fei gritted his teeth and he cursed Liu Yue.

On horse, Liu Yue sped towards the outskirts of the city with Yun Zhao quickly following behind him.

The army did not give up and continued to pursue. The galloping of horses sounded throughout the empire and shook everything that it passed.

Chapter 294: An Eye for An Eye (12)

Behind the ten thousand horses that pursued them, twenty thousand more fiercely followed. The army split up and surrounded the entire outskirts of the silver mountain, where Liu Yue and Yun Zhao were fleeing towards.

Moving very swiftly, Liu Yue and Yun Zhao were like shooting stars, rapidly moving across the roads.

They could feel the killing intent of the entire army right behind them.

In the quiet forest, the birds scattered as they felt the intense killing intent.

Whipping their horses urgently, Liu Yue and Yun Zhao sped their way to the top of silver mountain. On the top on the mountain, the field of flowers was very beautiful and the soothing sound of the river bought a calm sensation.

“Brother, there’s a dead end up ahead. Why did you choose this path?” Yun Zhao who was following Liu Yue confusingly asked.

On the top of silver mountain, there was a cliff. Under the cliff was the largest river in the entire Hou Jin empire. The waves of the river splashed violently against the steep cliff. It was very dangerous, and yet Liu Yue chose this path.

At the cliff, Liu Yue jumped off her horse. The horse then immediately turned around and ran.

“Brother, what are you doing?” Yun Zhao was even more confused. He raised his brows and stared at Liu Yue.

Behind them, they could hear the thousands of horses approaching. Chen Fei’s army were catching up quickly.

Chen Fei was almost there. All this time, the only thing he could think about was skinning Liu Yue alive and eating her flesh. He wanted revenge for his father.

When Liu Yue saw Chen Fei approaching, she let out a smirk.

Yun Zhao turned around and saw the sly smirk on Liu Yue's face and was even more confused.

Suddenly, Liu Yue patted her clothes and knelt down towards Yun Zhao.

Yun Zhao was surprised by her action. He suddenly felt that something ominous.

“Your highness the crowned prince, your servant I, have completed my mission. I have eradicated Hou Jin's West Cliff and assassinated their emperor. Your servant I, want to show my complete loyalty to the Snow Saint Empire. Since I have shown my face to the enemy already, I might bring trouble to the empire. And thus, I will die as a hero to our country. All I ask for is for the snow saint empire to control the world and unite the seven other countries!”

Her voice was very resounding, and was carried by the wind straight towards Chen Fei.

Chen Fei who was still coming up the mountain suddenly heard the speech. He immediately stopped and stared at Yun Zhao.

Both of Yun Zhao's eyes widened. How did Liu Yue know that he was the crowned prince of the snow saint empire? How did she.....

“Liu Yue.... You....”

Once he started talking, Liu Yue suddenly got up and ran towards the edge of the cliff. Without anything blocking her way. It seems like she had made her decision to die today.

Yun Zhao was shocked. Did Liu Yue really want to die?

He wasn't able to react quick enough. After Liu Yue had jumped, he ran towards the edge of the cliff and watched. He didn't want Liu Yue to die. He really didn't.

Chapter 295: An Eye for An Eye (13)

As Yun Zhao watched, Liu Yue was already falling towards the rocks on the side of the cliff. The waves were moving violently as well. She was as good as dead.

“Liu Yue....” Both of Yun Zhao’s eyes turned red as he screamed. He continued to look down. He wanted to watch how Liu Yue was going to die but his expression changed after a while.

Her silhouette was in the air and floated downwards.

Under Liu Yue, a large ship appeared from under the cliff. There was a man standing on the bow of the ship. The breeze brushed past his crimson robe and he emitted a cold murderous aura.

The man held both of his hands up high as the silhouette descended.

The man standing on the bow of the ship caught Liu Yue who jumped down. The ship did not stop moving at all. They had timed everything perfectly.

Liu Yue’s hair flew in the air, her dark sleek hair scattered across her back as she nestled herself against the man’s chest.

She was beautiful. Liu Yue was actually a woman!

Yun Zhao was shocked. He shockingly watched as the ship sailed away.

From the bow of the ship, the crimson robed man turned around at looked at Yun Zhao. His eyes were crimson red and they looked as cold as ice.

Those eyes.... Those eyes.... Yun Zhao clenched his fists. He recognize those eyes. He had seen those eyes before. Those charismatic cold eyes.

Tianchen’s King Yi, Xuan Yuan Che.

The ship continued to sail forwards. Getting further and further away.

Until it disappeared from his view.

It’s him. It’s actually him. Xuan Yuan Che. Then who was that Liu Yue?

Who is that woman....To have such skills and be able to get close to Xuan Yuan Che.

Yun Zhao lifted his head and stared at the blue sky.

It was King Yi's princess consort, Murong Liu Yue. That person who shocked the seven empires three years ago. Liu Yue.... Murong Liu Yue....She didn't even conceal her face..... However, Yun Zhao realized that the less she concealed her face, the harder it was to recognize her.

Yun Zhao stood there and bitterly laughed. Murong Liu Yue... ahhh Murong Liu Yue. So it was actually her.

Behind him, the army had finally made their move and moved towards him.

The crowned prince of the snow saint empire, Helian Yun Zhao. He thought that he had fooled everyone. But Liu Yue was able to recognize him easily. In the end, he played right into her hands like an idiot.

He bitterly smiled and shook his head. He didn't forget. Three years ago, when Xuan Yuan Che was gravely injured, his snow saint empire a part in it too. Without doing anything, Liu Yue was able to get revenge on him.

Assassinating the Hou Jin emperor.... This kind of hatred from the Hou Jin empire was completely directed towards his Snow Saint Empire.

This time, it was his turn to suffer.

In the river, the spring wind blew gently at the ship. The spring this year feels so damn good.

Chapter 296: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (1)

The water rippled heavily and mist covered the ship.

Between the mountains, in the river, crystal clear water vapor filled the air.

The scene was mesmerizing and very calming.

Under the bright blue sky and above the jade colored river, a small boat sailed into the beautiful scenery.

“Ha Ha Ha.....” A loud rippling hearty laugh pierced through the water, breaking the calming and spring-like scenic sensation.

“What a sly idea!” Standing at the front of the ship, Xuan Yuan Che moved closer to Liu Yue who was laughing wildly.

With a smiling face, he went up to Liu Yue and pinched her nose.

When Liu Yue was younger, he loved teasing her like this. Now that Liu Yue had grown up, he loved teasing her like this even more. The Liu Yue in his arms, no matter how much older she got, he would always pamper and love her.

While pinching her nose, Xuan Yuan Che couldn't help but chuckle. Liu Yue had gotten revenge for him for what happened three years ago. The Hou Jin empire had chased and beat up a wild goose and now the wild goose returned and pecked Hou Jin in the eye.

Seeing how Yun Zhao, the crowned prince of the snow saint empire, had an indescribable constant changing expression on his face that day, Xuan Yuan Che felt a lot better about what happened.

Liu Yue turned towards Xuan Yuan Che and crossed her arms, “No one can get away after hurting us. I will hunt them down and take them all down.”

Her words were filled with arrogance and confidence.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che bursted out in laughter. His little princess consort had grown up. She really deserved to be loved.

“Right. A noble revenge is never too late. If they want to harm us, they have to pay to cost of doing so.” A fierce look appeared in Xuan Yuan Che’s eyes.

The two lovebirds looked at each other and started laughing again. Their laughter pierced the heavens and echoed throughout the surroundings.

By now, they were far far away from the cliff on silver mountain. Hou Jin’s Chen Fei and Snow Saint’s Yun Zhao, they were too far to be seen already.

A pure blue sky above them and a crystal clear river under them. The scenery around the two was perfect and relaxing.

The small boat continued to sail quietly through the river and eventually stopped by the coast.

On the coast, the grass was waving smoothly and hawks were flying up high. The sound of a carriage approaching could barely be heard. On the carriage sat Murong Wu Di, Liu Yue’s grandfather who had been missing.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che carried Liu Yue in his arms. With a soft jump, he leapt into the air like a large bird and gently ran across the river.

His movements were gentle and light, like a swallow gliding across water.

In the ancient times, Dharmas monks were able to run across water, and today, Xuan Yuan Che was able to do the same thing so gracefully.

Chapter 297: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (2)

“You got stronger again!” Being carried by Xuan Yuan Che, both of Liu Yue’s eyes lit up.

Running across water..... This is something that she’ll never be able to do.

“If I want to protect my little wife, I’m going to have to work hard and get stronger.” Xuan Yuan Che looked down at Liu Yue and smiled.

His look was filled with affection and Liu Yue looked at him with admiration. It looked as if the two were able to exchange words with just their glances.

In a quick move, both Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che entered the carriage. Murong Wu Di immediately raised his horsewhip and the carriage sped away immediately.

With quick movements, the carriage disappeared into the misty mountain path.

The ship they came in started to sink and disintegrated into the water. It left no traces at all.

The remains of the ship flowed in the glamorous mountain stream and disappeared.

Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che had planned everything out perfectly and had left Hou Jin and Snow Saint to fight against each other.

Borrowing a knife to kill someone, putting the blame on Snow Saint. Tianchen was left alone, watching the two other countries fight it out.

Everything went according to plan.

The fragrance of spring was in the air and time passed very quickly. In an instant, ten days had passed since the incident.

In Xiewu City, a city in between the Zhao and Hou Jin empire.

Xiewu city belonged to the Zhao empire but due to the fact that people from Hou Jin go through the city a lot for trades and other matters, it

became a neutral market city between the two empires.

Sakura petals filled the air and the leaves of willow trees danced in the wind.

In the midst of spring, Xiewu city was bustling and the environment was very comfortable.

Inside the Yinglai restaurant, the most luxurious restaurant in Xiewu city, there were many merchants gathering and eating. The entire place was filled.

“Bring us a jug of wine.”

“Okay. please wait a bit.”

“Waiter. Where’s our food....”

“Coming, Coming.....”

Many different accents could be heard here and many people were talking loudly and arrogantly. The waiters were working nonstop to please their guests. The entire restaurant became busier and busier as time went on.

“Hey. Did you hear about it? Hou Jin and Snow Saint are going against each other.” A loud voice could be heard from across the room.

“How could I not know? Snow Saint’s crowned prince assassinated the Hou Jin’s emperor. How could they not fight?” A muscular ruffian yelled out as well, not controlling his voice at all.

Chapter 298: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (3)

Hearing these words, a middle aged merchant looking person turned around and said, “Who said the Snow Saint prince killed the emperor. When the incident happened, I happened to be in Hou Jin and saw everything with my own eyes. Let me tell you guys what happened....”

“What? It wasn’t the Snow Saint Prince? Tell us about it!”

At that time, everyone in the restaurant quieted down and listened.

By the windows, four people sat at a table. Three men and one woman. Hearing this, they put down their chopsticks as well and started to listen.

“You guys know about that Number one martial artist Liu Yue?” The middle aged man looked at everyone and mysteriously said.

“How could we not know? He won the martial arts competition! It is said that he’s very handsome and is very strong.....”

“Come on. Yell us about what happened. Don’t beat around the bush.”

“Yeah.... Come on.”

People started to yell at the man.

“Alright. Since you guys know about him, then I’ll tell you what happened. It was actually Liu Yue who assassinated Hou Jin’s emperor.

On his wedding day, Hou Jin’s emperor personally hosted and attended the wedding. But who would’ve thought that, in the middle of the wedding, Liu Yue had actually killed the emperor in one move.

Think about it. Liu Yue is super strong and it was his wedding. No one would think that he would attack the emperor. So when everyone had their guard down, Liu Yue made his move. Hou Jin’s emperor basically stepped into his own grave.

When that happened, Hou Jin deployed their entire army! That’s tens of thousands of soldiers!

Heh. They went and searched everyone’s house and arrested anyone who was even a little bit suspicious. It was absurd. I was so scared that I

didn't leave my house for three days!"

The middle aged man still felt some fear and rubbed his chest. His face became pale from thinking what happened.

The woman who sat by the window heard this and couldn't help but furrow her brows. She looked over at the middle aged merchant.

Another youngster chimed into the story as well, "You only know part of the story. Let me tell you guys about the other half."

"You're about half right. It's true that Liu Yue had assassinated Hou Jin's emperor, but the mastermind behind everything was Snow Saint's crowned prince. My uncle has some relationships with the ministry of justice in Hou Jin and told me everything."

Chapter 299: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (4)

“You guys probably don’t know this, but during the martial arts tournament, there was some guy that always followed Liu Yue around. That guy was Snow Saint’s crowned prince. They had planned everything out since the beginning.

After Liu Yue killed Hou Jin’s emperor, he told the prince of his deeds and then suicided by jumping off a cliff so he does not cause problems for the empire.

In the end, by fate, Hou Jin’s crowned prince overheard their conversation.

Liu Yue was a puppet while the Snow Saint empire was the mastermind behind everything.”

The youngster waved his chopsticks and spat all over the place as he talked.

“Yeah. That’s right. That’s what I heard too. My father and the leader of the guards are brothers. It really did happen.” Someone else followed.

“Yeah. It seems like that’s what happened. I heard about it in the Chen empire too.” One of the Chen empire merchants nodded and ate his food.

“Yeah. Yeah. It’s exactly like that....”

“I’ve heard about it too...”

Everyone in the restaurant was talking over each other. The entire restaurant was buzzing with activity once again. Everyone in the restaurant chimed into the talk.

Everyone except the three men and woman who was sitting by the window.

Hearing all this, a smile appeared on all their faces. They started to eat their food. They were dressed like rich merchants, full of nobility.

“Did they catch Snow Saint’s crowned prince?”

“He ran.”

“No. I think he jumped off the cliff as well..”

“Anyways, no one found his corpse. From what I can see, he probably survived and ran away.”

Everyone was talking bullsh*t at the same time. The conversations were heating up.

“Ran? Heh. A monk can run away but his temple can’t run. His snow saint empire was still there. After what had happened, Hou Jin and Snow Saint will not exist at the same time anymore.

A Hou Jin merchant slammed his fist on the table angrily.

“Right! That’s right! One of them will go down!”

At that time, many of Hou Jin’s people started to chant.

Hearing all these chant, the silver haired exuberant old man by the window drank his wine and sighed, “It seems like everyone in the world knows already.”

Chapter 300: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (5)

“Hou Jin and Snow Saint fighting against each other. Isn’t that great?” The girl in front of the old man laughed. The laugh sounded as she took joy in their misfortune.

This kind of attitude, who else could it be besides Liu Yue.

Du Yi, Xuan Yuan Che and Murong Wu Di were sitting there laughing as well.

“It’s too bad that the kid ran.” Murong Wu Di sighed.

Under that kind of situation, Chen Fei actually let Yun Zhao escape while his twenty thousand strong army surrounded the mountain. Chen Fei was useless to the max.

If Yun Zhao was actually caught then the two empires won’t have any choice but to go to war.

“It doesn’t matter. There’s still some use for him if he ran away.” Xuan Yuan Che shook his head and then helped Liu Yue fill up her plate.

If Snow Saint doesn’t retaliate after something like this happens, then the Snow Saint empire would be seen as weak.

“You guys. Do you guys think that the two empires will actually fight? If they do, what kind of items should we stock up?” One of the merchants suddenly yelled out.

With this one phrase, the bustling atmosphere of the restaurant immediately died down. All the merchants started to think about the future. They were very interested in what was going to happen. If war actually breaks out, they could actually make a lot of money!

Liu Yue’s lips curled up. Fight. Of course they should fight. It will be more interesting then. How could the two empires waste the opportunity that Liu Yue gave to them. If they don’t make moves, Liu Yue would feel sorry for herself.

On the side, Xuan Yuan Che looked at how much fun Liu Yue was

having and shook his head. He then continued to fill up her plate with food. After messing with the two empires, they quietly disappeared and ran away.

“Masters.” An exciting voice suddenly called out while they were having fun.

Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue both heard the voice at the same time. This voice..... They both turned around immediately.

Behind them were Qiu Hen and Yan Hu who were dressed like normal people. Their faces looked calm but Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che could see the excitement within their eyes.

They haven't seen each other in three years. When they saw their master healthily sitting there, they got all excited.

After three years of worrying, they can finally feel relieved.

Xuan Yuan Che looked at Qiu Hen and Yan Hu and smiled. He waved for them to come and sit with them, “Why'd you guys come?”

Chapter 301: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (6)

Xuan Yuan Che's voice was soft but it was filled with warmth,

Just by looking at his smile, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu felt the warmth. They can feel that their young master was happy to see them again.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu quickly moved towards them and sat down quietly by Du Yi.

"The master and mistress told us to come and deliver a message." Qiu Hen quickly reached into his robe, took out a letter and handed it to Xuan Yuan Che.

Originally, they weren't the ones who were suppose to come. However, once they heard that their young master had returned, they couldn't wait to see him and wanted to personally hand him this letter.

Xuan Yuan Che received the letter and quickly read it. As he was reading it, his aura became gentler and a happy expression appeared on his face.

"How are my parents doing?"

While saying that, he handed the letter to Liu Yue.

"The master and mistress are doing fine. They've been thinking about the young master and mistress. They've been wanting to see you guys." Yan Hu quickly replied.

"Yeah. The mistress said that she hasn't seen the young mistress in three years. She's been dying to know how the young mistress looks like now." Qiu Hen looked over at Liu Yue.

Hearing this, Liu Yue slightly smiled but didn't say anything.

Three years ago, after she crossed the borders, she had never returned to Tianchen. She didn't think that Tianchen was worth returning to.

Xuan Yuan Che knew what she was thinking about and shook his head. He held her hands and stared at her with a caring look.

His Liu Yue. He knew what she had gone through. He understood her

actions.

“Go back and tell my parents that I’ll go back after a while.” While still holding Liu Yue’s hands, he turned and smiled at the two.

Hearing this, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu were shocked and stared at Xuan Yuan Che.

After a while? How long is that going to be?

Liu Yue was shocked as well. They haven’t been back in three years. For someone like Xuan Yuan Che who cared a lot about his family, why didn’t he want to return immediately?

Chapter 302: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (7)

Xuan Yuan Che saw the looks on the three people's faces and laughed, "There's something that I have to do. I owe someone a favor and I'm going to have to return it first."

Once he said this, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu was still confused but Liu Yue on the other hand, knew what he meant.

"They must've worked really hard to help you right?" Liu Yue put her chopsticks down and asked Xuan Yuan Che.

When Xuan Yuan Che came back from overseas, neither of them had much time to explain anything so she was never able to ask Xuan Yuan Che about what happened overseas.

It seems like the mysterious place overseas went through quite a bit of trouble to help Xuan Yuan Che recover. In the world there was no such thing as free lunch. It seems like the favor they owed Murong Wu Di was not worth the help. They still had to give something in return.

Xuan Yuan Che saw that Liu Yue had seen through everything and nodded.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu had followed Xuan Yuan Che for many years and were smart people. They realized what happened and asked, "Then what do you need to do for them?"

On the side, Murong Wu Di heard the conversation and looked over at Liu Yue.

He then explained everything, "That day, Xuan Yuan Che's injuries were too fatal. Normal medicines could not help him at all. They had to use many different types of rare medicines to help save him. One of those things included the island's precious Nine Soul Returning Pill.

After hearing this, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu gasped loudly. Even the emotionless Du Yi became surprised.

The Nine Soul Returning Pill..... That was the best life saving immortal pill in the world. In the seven countries, not even one could be found.

Liu Yue obviously did not know what this pill was but after looking at the expressions of the other three, she knew that it was something extremely precious.

She clenched Xuan Yuan Che's hands tighter. That day, Xuan Yuan Che must be in some extreme danger for the island to use such a precious item on him.

She didn't follow them to the island but she felt extremely frightened and worried back then. Now she understands why she was feeling that way three years ago.

Moreover, when Xuan Yuan Che came back, she felt that he got a lot stronger even though he didn't do much. She can feel that his sudden increase in strength was due to the pill.

Chapter 303: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (8)

It probably wasn't only the medicine that made him stronger. Xuan Yuan Che must've learned some new things overseas.

"Talk about the results. That pill must be really good." Liu Yue rested her Xuan Yuan Che's arms and looked calmly at Murong Wu Di.

As long as Xuan Yuan Che was fine.... Those people overseas were his saviors so even if they want her to go on an impossible mission, she would go and try her best.

And besides, if you received something from someone, you would have to pay it back. It was the right thing to do.

Murong Wu Di looked deeply at Liu Yue and then lowly said, "After using the island's treasure to save the prince's life. The people of the island requested that the prince retrieve two items for them as a gift."

After pausing for a while, Murong Wu Di softly continued, "They want the Dragon King Pill and the Deep Quench Gallbladder.

What's that? Liu Yue raised her brows. She had never heard of these things.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu's face suddenly became twisted.

Seeing this, Liu Yue turned and looked at Xuan Yuan Che with a confused look.

"I don't really know about the specifics but I know that these things are not common. No one has ever gotten these things before. It's no big deal..." Xuan Yuan Che smiled. Hearing his words, the four other people besides Liu Yue simultaneously spat blood.

Liu Yue looked at Murong Wu Di and the others and knew that Xuan Yuan Che was downplaying the whole thing. She knew that these items were a big deal. After all, this was something that the mysterious island didn't have, and they have a lot of rare things.

Xuan Yuan Che saw that Liu Yue was staring at him with a face filled

with disbelief. He laughed and then sincerely said, "It really isn't a big deal. It's only because that they don't have these things overseas and that they're too lazy to come and look for them so they asked me to find it.

Liu Yue looked angrily at Xuan Yuan Che and then looked over at Du Yi.

Du Yi didn't say anything but he put his chopsticks down on the table in a slanted position.

Seeing this, Liu Yue understood what this meant. These two items were located in very dangerous places. The task was more dangerous than dangerous.

After she understood the situation, instead of being stressed, she was became calmer. In any case, she'll follow Xuan Yuan Che wherever he goes. She only wanted to know how dangerous it was. She didn't care about anything else.

However, she didn't even need to ask about it. If that mysterious island overseas didn't have something and need Xuan Yuan Che to find it, it must be some sort of super ultra rare item.

Chapter 304: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (9)

High risk means high reward. Doing this task was worth Xuan Yuan Che's life.

She understood this clearly.

While Liu Yue was thinking about the matter, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly smiled and pulled Liu Yue's hand, "Yue-er, I'm going to visit Nan Song empire for a bit, you should go....."

Before he could finish talking, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly shut up after looking at Liu Yue's expression.

Liu Yue didn't need to say anything. She only looked at Xuan Yuan Che. With this glare, even before Xuan Yuan Che finished talking, Liu Yue had shoved all his words back down his throat already.

"Continue talking...." Seeing that Xuan Yuan Che had paused, Liu Yue coldly said these two words softly.

She wasn't angry. She really wasn't angry. However, if Xuan Yuan Che continued to talk, she won't promise that she won't become angry. She can't promise that at all.

Xuan Yuan Che looked at Liu Yue's eyes.... Her gaze sent chills down his spine, and instilled fear in his heart.

He was silent and shook his head. He caressed Liu Yue's hair and smiled, "You should go with me and not go back. No. I definitely wouldn't have asked you to go back..... So how about it?"

After seeing how Xuan Yuan Che's intentions had a 180 degrees turn, she smirked, "That's better."

How dare Xuan Yuan Che try to tell her to go back to Tianchen first and go out by himself. If he dare say something like that who knows how Liu Yue would've taken care of him.

They've already lost three years together already. She doesn't want to separate from him anymore. As long as they're together, it didn't matter

if they have to cross a mountain of blades, a sea of flames, or even hell itself, they would go together.

She held his hands tightly. Xuan Yuan Che then turned to Qiu Hen and Yan Hu, "How about you guys?"

"We won't go back either." Qiu Hen and Yan Hu immediately replied.

After three years, this was the first time they had seen their young master. They want to stay by his side and not go back home. Even if it kills them, they won't go back.

Xuan Yuan Che looked at them unhappily and then said, "General's Orders."

"We cannot accept the general's orders."

They were able to say that in unison. It was as if they had practiced this thousands of times.

Xuan Yuan Che raised his brows. After three years, they actually dared to talk back to him. He doesn't remember his subordinates ever talking back to him.

Chapter 305: For Gifts Blinds the Wise

(10)

Xuan Yuan Che had an expression that looked like he was about to get angry. However, Liu Yue suddenly pulled his arms and said, "Don't bother."

Hearing what Liu Yue said, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu turned towards Liu Yue, "Young miss, please. We want to go as well."

She lightly shook her head and looked towards Xuan Yuan Che. Xuan Yuan Che didn't look back at her but she knew what he was thinking. He wasn't a cold blooded and ruthless person.

Those two swore to follow their young master. Resolution and determination filled their eyes. They would not return without their young master.

They knew that it was going to be dangerous and yet they disobeyed Xuan Yuan Che's orders and wanted to follow him. This kind of underling.....

In the midst of the silence, Xuan Yuan Che sighed, "You guys talk about it. One of you guys have to go back."

One of them has to go back. The drawing of the landscape of the three countries. He needed one of them to bring it back to Tianchen. He didn't trust other people such an important mission.

Seeing this, Murong Wu Di softly muttered a few words to Qiu Hen and Yan Hu.

The two didn't know why one of them had to return. However, after hearing that Murong Wu Di had said, their eyes lit up and a happy expression appeared on their faces.

They looked at each other and then turned to look at the quiet Du Yi.

Du Yi had a grim feeling and looked up.

Liu Yue knew what these two were planning and laughed, "You guys

decide by yourselves. I'll give you half an hour.

After that, she left the restaurant with Xuan Yuan Che and Murong Wu Di.

Since Xuan Yuan Che suggested that he didn't want to go back to Tianchen first, that means that they didn't have much time. They need to quickly finish the mission.

In the outskirts of Xiewu City, four black horses were pulling a carriage, speeding through the plains.

"We're going to the Nan Song Empire?" Liu Yue looked at Xuan Yuan Che

Xuan Yuan Che nodded, "The southern side of the Nan Song empire to be precise. It is scorching hot in that area throughout the year. I think that the items that we need can be found there on the Thousand Stone Mountain.

Thousand Stone Mountain. After hearing this name, she knew why the mission was so dangerous.

Chapter 306: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (11)

In all these years, Liu Yue had read about all the special and dangerous places of the seven countries.

Thousand Stone Mountain. Fuck. Can it even be called a mountain?

From what she knows, the Thousand Stone Mountain was actually a tropical rain forest. It was near the borders of the Nan Song Empire. In all these years, no one had dared to enter. It was actually a forest with trees as tall mountains.

She didn't have to think about the other dangers. Tropical rainforest. These two words can already describe how dangerous this place was and scare people away.

If ten people were to enter this place, at least ten people will die.

Now she knows why Qiu Hen and the others were so surprised when they heard about the two items. They were ready to give up their lives and follow their young master.

A tropical rainforests. Great. This mysterious island really knows its stuff. It wasn't too much of a challenge. Not really.

"Yue-er, are you afraid?" Seeing how Liu Yue's expression changed after hearing that they were going to the Thousand Stone Mountains, Xuan Yuan Che laughed and patted Liu Yue's hands.

Hearing this, Liu Yue looked over at Xuan Yuan Che, "Do you think there are a lot of fierce beasts there?"

Xuan Yuan Che didn't think that Liu Yue would say something like this. He nodded and answered, "Well it's normal for fierce beasts to appear in a forest, but they shouldn't be a problem.

Liu Yue rubbed her chin and pondered. As expected. They know that it is a dangerous place but they don't know how dangerous it is. Xuan Yuan Che probably doesn't know the true dangers in a tropical rainforest.

"Good thing I came along. If not, I'll have to go and retrieve your corpse.

No. Your corpse probably won't even remain in there."

"Are you underestimating me?" Xuan Yuan Che extended his hand and flicked Liu Yue's forehead.

Being cared for by Liu Yue, that was a good feeling. However, when did he become so useless in Liu Yue's eyes. She was just complimenting about how strong he got a while ago.

Seeing Xuan Yuan Che's expression, she smiled. She moved towards him and kissed him. With the two of them, they can run through hell together. A tropical rainforest won't be able to stop them.

Seeing this, Murong Wu Di who was sitting there quietly immediately turned around.

His granddaughter. When did she become so liberal. No this can't be called liberal. This is being too straightforward! How could she kiss Xuan Yuan Che without saying anything.

Chapter 307: For Gifts Blinds the Wise (12)

Seeing how Murong Wu Di reacted, Xuan Yuan Che laughed loudly. His Liu Yue was always like this. This was one of the reasons why he loved her so much.

After a half an hour, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu came back with bruises all over their faces while Du Yi was nowhere to be seen.

Two against one, even if Du Yi is an expert amongst experts, he can't possibly beat two people who's almost at the same level as him.

The spring breeze blew gentler and the carriage sped towards the Nan Song empire.

Nan Song Empire. It was the most southern empire on the continent. It was sunny all day around with a lot of rain. Although their military force wasn't that impressive, it was the most populous and affluent empire out of the seven countries.

It was a friendly country and they made many alliances instead of enemies.

Amiability makes your rich, alliances make you strong. The Nan Song Empire was modeled by these eight words. The Snow Saint Empire to the west, the Ao Yun Empire in the north and the Hou Jin Empire to the east. They had a good relationship with all of them.

In the imperial chambers of the royal palace, there were princesses married into the royal family from all three empires.

They've also married out many of their daughters to other countries as well. The Nan Song Empire had an imperial concubine in Snow Saint, Hou Jin, Tianchen, and even the Chen and Zhao empire.

As long as there's a imperial chamber in a country, there would be someone from the Nan Song Empire in there.

Thus, even though their military strength wasn't strong, they were the most populous and affluent country. They never had to fight a war in their country before.

Because of this, the empire was stable and would not collapse easily.

After traveling for days from the west to the south, Liu Yue had crossed half of the empire.

Spring had passed and the scorching hot summer had come.

During the summer, there were no more cool breezes flowing around. The sun was high up in the sky casting rays of golden light towards the ground.

The golden rays of the sun covered the entire Nan Song Empire, boiling the ground and creating heat waves.

After travel for days, only the colors of nature could be seen in the distance.

Thousand Stone Mountain. It was the largest wilderness in the Nan Song Empire. A place where no man dares to enter. It was gloomy and sinister all year around. The entire forest was like a ferocious beast waiting to swallow its prey.

Chapter 308: The Secret Jungle (1)

Following along the water channel, five people were on a small boat preparing to enter the Thousand Stone Mountains.

There were many small hills, verdant trees and bushes by the entrance of the forest. As the party ventured deeper into the forest, the trees grew higher and higher until they couldn't see the top anymore.

"The trees are so tall." Yan Hu who was rowing the boat exclaimed. He looked around and was speechless.

"It's very beautiful." Murong Wu Di said as he looked around as well.

Some golden rays of sunlight barely penetrated the trees. There were traces of sunlight all around and along with the emerald leaves that were dancing in the air, it created a very beautiful scene.

"This is a very rare sight." Xuan Yuan Che nodded.

"There are still many more rare sights in here. I'm afraid that you guys will be too scared to see them." Liu Yue crossed her arms in front of her chest and had a very serious look on her face.

She was wearing a skin tight armor. Her wrists, legs and waist was all covered in armor. There was no gap or opening at all. On her legs and the back of her waist were hostels with sharp daggers in them. She stood at the front of the ship coldly looking at the scenery.

When they reached the bank of the river, they found many wild trees growing around. Numerous amount of vines tangled around the trees. There was a strong rotting smell. This rain forest was even deeper and more mysterious than the ones in the modern world.

"Yue, Don't be too....."

"Tell me. What do you need to find." Without looking back, Liu Yue interrupted him and coldly replied.

She needs to know what their target was so she can assess how far they needed to go and how dangerous it would be. She wasn't afraid of the

rainforest but she still had to be cautious.

Hearing the coldness in her voice, Xuan Yuan Che stood up and walked besides her, “Dragon King Pill, something that’s found inside of the Thousand Year Dragon Snake and Deep Quench Gall, the gall bladder of the Exquisite Fish.

Thousand Year Dragon Snake? Exquisite Fish? What are those strange things.

Chapter 309: The Secret Jungle (2)

Linlong Fish -> Exquisite Fish

Liu Yue furrowed her brow. Suddenly she had an enlightenment. She understood what this Thousand Year Dragon Snake and Exquisite fish was.

Shit. They actually had to kill the overlord of the rain forest.

(TL: They actually had Shit in english in the raws :o. And idk what this divine light is. o-o) No wonder why these two items have not appeared in so long. Both of these items are inside the overlords of the rain forest.

Liu Yue gritted her teeth. Back in the modern world, she was fully equipped with modern weapon and she still found it hard to fight the two overlords. Now she had to fight them in the ancient times...

She shook her head and turned towards Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen, and Yan Hu, "I'm just going to say this once. You guys can stay back and keep your lives. Otherwise, once we go in.... There's no going back."

Her words were filled with coldness.

Hearing these words, the three men's expression all changed.

However, in an instant, a resolute expression appeared on their faces. They knew it was going to be dangerous but they won't back down.

"Yue..." Xuan Yuan Che frowned slightly and looked at Liu Yue.

After entering the rain forest, a cold and grim aura surrounded Liu Yue.

This was an absolute self centered coldness. It was something that only a few people possessed. Xuan Yuan Che could feel a familiar dark feeling coming from her as well.

It was a lot like the feeling he got from Ao Yun's crowned prince, Du Gu Ye. Back then, Liu Yue's aura wasn't that strong. However after three years, it feels like she's become more and more like Du Gu Ye.

He didn't like it. He didn't like it at all.

Liu Yue looked over at Xuan Yuan Che and didn't say anything. Then she turned towards the three others and sighed, "Fine. Then when the time comes, don't blame me for not saving you guys."

After saying that, she turned around and jumped onto the river bank.

She had to warn them first. They were the ones who wanted to come.

Chapter 310: The Secret Jungle (3)

There were so many leaves on the floor that it stopped the river from flowing. There were no roads to be seen. The party was already deep in the rainforest.

Xuan Yuan Che knitted his brows and jumped ashore without ordering Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu to return. He knew what they were like and how stubborn they were.

Liu Yue tied the boat to one of the trees and the five people ventured into the depths of the forest.

Everyone was fully equipped. They were all wearing special armor and had many weapons. They only had a little bit of rations so it does not affect their travel speed and attacking abilities.

No matter how much sunlight there was, it was only barely able to penetrate the tall trees in the forest. The entire area was very dim.

Every wrong step taken in the Thousand Stone Mountain could cause one's death.

The party of five were silent. They surveyed their surroundings carefully before moving.

When they finally left the rotten area, the rotten smell behind them mixed with the fresh smell of the forest. It was an indescribably sick sensation.

The ground continued to move forward.

There were no leopards, no tigers or wolves. In such a big forest, how come there wasn't a single ferocious beast?

The ground was devoid of footprints aside from their own. There were no manure or scent of wild animals either. Could there be no animals living here?

"This is such a weird forest." Qiu Hen knitted his brow and felt relieved.

Since there were no ferocious beasts attacking them, this forest isn't

scary at all.

“It is a bit weird.” Wurong Wu Di would have never thought that the forest would have no beasts. Without wild beasts, could this forest even be called a forest?

However, this beastless forest was a place that no one dared to enter. Those who entered have never returned to tell the tale. The dangers in this forest can not be underestimated.

“Be careful.” Xuan Yuan Che gave the three people behind him a signal and quickly followed Liu Yue.

Liu Yue moved very quickly through the forest. Without hesitating, she moved deeper and deeper into the forest.

She didn't even look back once. The aura around her body became colder and colder.

As they moved further into the forest, the trees became taller and thicker.

The deeper they ventured, the more similar everything looked. The tree and the shrubs around looked the same. Everything was in a straight line. It was as if the party had entered an inescapable maze.

Chapter 311: The Secret Jungle (4)

There were many flowers blossoming everywhere. The entire jungle was filled with vibrant colors.

The entire area was becoming more moist and the rotten smell was getting stronger and stronger.

(TL: Whoops. The rotting smell wasn't behind them ...)

"You guys need to be careful from now on. Follow me and don't touch anything randomly." Standing in the middle of the forest, Liu Yue stared at the ground full of dried leaves in front of her.

Xuan Yuan Che raised his eyebrow and asked Liu Yue, "Yue... How come I feel like you're familiar with this place..."

"I have the same feeling too." Murong Wu Di added.

Liu Yue had been moving at high speed without any hesitation at all. This kind of feeling..... It feels like Liu Yue was moving around in her backyard. She couldn't be anymore familiar with this place.

"You guys don't read enough books." Liu Yue sighed.

Xuan Yuan Che and Muron Wu Di both blushed with shame.... However, after thinking about it, was there even a book on the Thousand Stone Mountain?

The group continued to move without stopping at all. However, this time, Liu Yue was moving slowly. She wasn't moving at high speed like she was before.

In front of the group were many flowers of different colors. It was very beautiful.

There were red flowers, yellow flowers, blue flowers, and even white flowers all over the place.

With a quick move, Murong Wu Di suddenly threw a dagger at one of the yellow flowers, splitting it in half.

Hidden behind the flower was a venomous snake. Murong Wu Di's

dagger instantly cut it in half Looking at the snake, its fangs were covered in thick creamy venom. It looked to be very poisonous.

Muron Wu Di didn't even give the snake a second look and immediately moved on.

Hearing that something was wrong, Liu Yue furrowed her brows. Without even turning around, she waved her hands and cold light flew towards Murong Wu Di.

It was very fast and sudden.

Murong Wu Di was startled and before he could react, the streak of cold light flew past his ear and landed on the floor behind him.

Xuan Yuan Che, Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu all turned around and looked.

Chapter 312: The Secret Jungle (5)

All they saw was that the black arrow that Liu Yue sent out was stuck on the ground piercing the snake that Murong Wu Di had killed already “This.....”The snake was killed by Murong Wu Di already. Why did she have to do that?

Before he continued to talk, Qiu Hen looked at the snake again and shut himself up.

The snake that was supposedly killed was wiggling around, trying to bite something. The venom in its mouth seeped into the ground.

Murong Wu Di was shocked. If Liu Yue hadn't done anything, the snake would have bitten him.

He saw that the organisms around the snake were deteriorating. Very quickly they all began to rot and turned into a pile of mush. Seeing this, Murong Wu Di was shocked.

In just a moment, there was no sign of life around the snake.

“Such potent poison.” Yan Hu furrowed his brow. They had never seen such a venomous snake before.

If one of them were to be bitten, it would be over for them immediately. Yan Hu looked at Murong Wu Di who was shivering.

Murong Wu Di looked at Liu Yue, who didn't even bother looking back, with gratefulness. He didn't say anything and continued to follow her.

“Be Careful.” Xuan Yuan Che said with a solemn expression.

The entire group became more attentive of their surroundings and raised their guard.

“ShaShaShaSha.” There was a slight rustling sound. It was very weak and faint. Normally, no one would be able to detect the sound.

However, this group of five were not normal people. Once they heard the sound, they immediately stopped moving.

There was a slight amount of wind. The leaves started to fly all over the

place. However there was nothing abnormal about the place. The group could feel that there was nothing approaching them.

Liu Yue quickly surveyed the surroundings. There was nothing at all. The only thing that could be seen or heard was this rustling sound.

Suddenly, she thought of something and looked upwards immediately. She looked at the vines that were covering the tall trees.

She can see that between the trees, a large amount of palm sized multicolored spiders was moving towards them.

Chapter 313: The Secret Jungle (6)

There were many transparent spider webs on top of the trees. They were easily overlooked if one did not look carefully.

“Spider? These are spiders?” Yan Hu raised his brow.

These things were as big as an adult’s palm and were very colorful. They looked exactly like fresh flowers. How can these things be spiders?

“Let’s go!” Liu Yue yelled out and started to run.

Behind her, Xuan Yuan Che and the others followed quickly.

These spiders were venomous. Just by looking at them, even an idiot can tell that it was dangerous. This was because most exotic creatures that have vibrant colors were usually very venomous. There were also a many ferocious spider in front of them. It was very dangerous to stay around. They had to leave the area quickly.

Very quickly the entire area was filled entirely with spiders. It looks like Liu Yue and her crew had entered their territory so they all came running out. There were many spiders coming down from the trees and crawling on the ground.

With their hairy legs and their colorful bodies, they started chasing Liu Yue and her crew. At that moment, one of the spiders saw a butterfly flying around carelessly and immediately attacked it. The butterfly tried to struggle but was instantly killed by the spider’s venoms.

Seeing this scene, Xuan Yuan Che’s face sank. He quickly caught up with Liu Yue with his sword in his hand. With their backs against each other, they charged towards the spiders that were blocking their path.

Liu Yue had a serious expression as she took out her daggers without wasting any time.

Behind them, Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen, and Yan Hu all took out their swords and prepared for battle.

The numerous amount of spiders fell from the sky. When they saw the

rays of light reflected by the silver weapons, they immediately began to attack.

The swords danced wildly, cutting many spiders down.

The five people quickly ran out of the spiders territory while trying to defend themselves.

On the way, they provoked many venomous snakes as well.

With their weapons, the five people cut through the venomous creatures, running for their lives.

All that was left behind them was a mountain of colorful and venomous corpses. Thick venom were leaking from these corpses which withered the entire area behind them.

As the group continued to move forward as they left black trail behind them.

Xuan Yuan Che and the others were not weak at all. Once they started to attack, they wouldn't rest until they killed everything in their way.

The spiders and snakes fell one after the other causing the entire to be filled with a poisonous scent.

Chapter 314: The Secret Jungle (7)

The group ran very quickly. After enduring for about half an hour, they finally left the spiders' territory.

Once they stopped, Xuan Yuan Che let go of Liu Yue's hand. His expression was different from when they were trying to escape.

Liu Yue quickly turned around and checked if any of the venom splattered on Xuan Yuan Che.

"What the hell was that." Yan Hu quickly ran up and leaned against something. He wiped the venom off his sword on the ground and cursed.

"In a place like this, there is bound to be a lot of venomous creatures." Murong Wu Di wiped the venom off his sword as well and replied.

In a hot tropical area like the rainforest, it was normal for a lot of venomous creatures to be seen.

"Damn. Even though they can't really hurt us, there were too many of them." Qiu Hen sighed.

"Don't worry. The creatures that can easily kill us will appear later on." After checking that there was nothing on Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue turned around and coldly replied.

Xuan Yuan Che chuckled, "Later on huh..... Hold on, what's that big flower?"

While laughing, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly noticed the huge flower behind Yan Hu. He was flabbergasted. He had never seen such a big flower in his life.

Hearing how shocked Xuan Yuan Che was, Murong Wu Di and the others looked over as well.

They saw the large elegant flower that was right behind Yan Hu. The flower gave off a sweet fragrance. It was brilliantly blooming.

There were five petals in total. Each petal was very thick and were as long as a person's arm.

At that time, Yan Hu was moved back and leaned against one of the petals.

Murong Wu Di and Qiu Hen were both shocked. They have traveled to many places in their lives but they have never seen a flower this big. It was a lot bigger than a person!

Seeing how everyone was looking at him, Yan Hu raised his brows and turned around, "Let's see how big this thing is....."

Chapter 315: The Secret Jungle (8)

At that time, Liu Yue also looked over. Her expression became even more serious and coldly yelled out, "Get the hell away from that!"

Before Yan Hu could finish his sentence, he immediately jumped away when he heard Liu Yue yell out.

In a split second right after Yan Hu jumped away, the petals trembled and quickly snapped closed.

"What?" Xuan Yuan Che looked over at Liu Yue. "Get the hell away." Isn't something that Liu Yue would say.

After saying that, Liu Yue's hands moved quickly and a net shot out of her sleeves. It caught a snake and binded it. She then pulled the net towards herself and threw it at the flower.

When the flower sensed the snake being thrown at it, it opened up and closed again in a split second.

When it finally opened up again, the venomous snake had disappeared. Only pieces of its crushed bones could be seen falling out of the flower.

The entire group was bewildered at the scene. Even the calm Xuan Yuan Che was shocked at scene in front of them.

On the side, Yan Hu was the most shocked out of all of them and was trembling.

Liu Yue looked at the gigantic flower and coldly snorted.

A man eating flower. Liu Yue didn't think that such a thing would appear there. Back in her world, she had explored the entire amazon and did not find such flower.

"Don't move or touch things randomly. The next time you do, you'll be greeting king yama(hades). Liu Yue warned the group with a serious look.

The shocked Xuan Yuan Che came back to his senses and looked at the serious and cold Liu Yue.

She was emotionless. She looked very grim.

She had an unapproachable and aura of solitude around her. It was very dark. Xuan Yuan Che didn't like this at all. It made him feel very uncomfortable.

Chapter 316: The Secret Jungle (9)

If the other three could not catch up to her, she would ruthlessly abandon them. She wasn't willing to hold their hand all the way through the ordeal.

She won't let anyone else drag her down.

Batting his eyes a few times, Xuan Yuan Che extended his arm and grabbed Liu Yue's hands.

He didn't like this feeling. It was the feeling of solitude and darkness.

Liu Yue was a normally a slick and sly person, but every time she had something hidden deep inside her heart, Xuan Yuan Che would be able to tell what it was. This time it was solitude. She was even more lonely than he was.

Originally, she became less solitude after meeting him and spending time with him. However, after coming into the forest, she started to revert back to her old self.

In this kind of dark and dangerous environment, Liu Yue became colder and colder.

He pulled Liu Yue towards him and hugged her. With an alluring smile, he blew on Liu Yue's nose, "Don't be like that Yue. Just give them a warning next time. We're all family here so you don't have to be so strict with them. They know what's good for them."

His voice sounded very warm, like a gentle spring breeze blowing by her ear. It was very refreshing.

Hearing his voice, Liu Yue raised her brow and looked deeply at Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che was the one who understands her the best. He was the one who cared for her the most.

A worried look appeared in his eyes. He was genuinely worried for her.

Liu Yue knew that. Ever since they entered the forest, she had a dark

aura around her. It was the aura of solitude. She knew that Xuan Yuan Che felt it as well.

She was trying to her best to control it. However, she was unable to suppress all of it.

The tropical rainforest did not give her a good feeling. It was exactly like the time when she was in the amazon rainforest. She didn't like this place at all.

She clearly remembered how she was able to escape the amazon rainforest. She had to kill. She had to unconditionally kill everything in her way to escape.

This event left a dark feeling in her heart. After entering, she kept thinking about the events from that time. The two places were too similar. If she can't clear her mind right now, it will definitely affect not only herself but the people with her as well.

Chapter 317: The Secret Jungle (10)

To kill everything in her path. In the jungle, it is all about the survival of the fittest.

Liu Yue felt pats on her back and Xuan Yuan Che grasping her hand tightly. It felt very warm. They were silently supporting her.

Her brows trembled. Her family, her companions, and Xuan Yuan Che were telling her that she was not alone any more.

She wasn't that 15 year old who was running in the forest by herself anymore. She wasn't that young girl who didn't have any family member or companions anymore. She didn't have to run anymore.

Now, the people with her weren't her enemies and people who she couldn't trust. They were her family. They were companions who would die for her. They were people who she could trust with her life.

She wasn't alone anymore.

Liu Yue took a deep breath and looked at Qiu Hen and the others, "I'll try my best."

She had to suppress the traumatic event that she felt when she was younger. It wasn't easy but she'll try to change for Xuan Yuan Che. For her companions.

"It won't happen again. It won't happen again." Yan Hu came back to his senses and shook his head. He got down on his knees and apologized while guaranteeing that it won't happen again.

In this place, even the plants can kill you easily. Next time, she'll follow whatever Liu Yue does. If the princess is sitting, he won't dare to stand. If the princess is standing, he won't dare to sit. He'll follow everything that she does.

Liu Yue looked at how Yan Hu was like worshiping her and didn't say anything. She pulled Xuan Yuan Che's hand and turned around, "Let's go."

"However, this flower could be useful. We can get some seeds from

these flowers for later uses. If anyone wants to come and attack us, they will be surprised and won't be able to guard against these flowers." Qiu Hen pondered as he followed Liu Yue and rubbed his chin.

Killing the enemy without doing anything? This was good stuff.

After hearing this, a supercilious look appeared on Liu Yue's face as she coldly replied, " Okay. The Man eating flower needs to eat at least ten people in order to fully bloom."

Ten lives for a flower. That means that in order to receive a seedling, you would need to feed the flower ten lives.

Chapter 318: The Secret Jungle (11)

Only after a hundred years will the flower grow into a full flower.

At that time, you can just leave it around and it will kill people for you.

After saying that, Qiu Hen's face turned twisted. Murong Wu Di rubbed his nose and Yan Hu sympathetically looked at Qiu Hen.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che laughed out loud and grabbed Liu Yue's hands tightly. It seems like Liu Yue didn't have that dark aura around her anymore.

Seeing how happy Xuan Yuan Che was, Liu Yue shook her head and wanted to say something. However a buzzing sound appeared and was getting closer to them.

The sound was getting closer and closer to them.

Liu Yue raised her brows and she quickly looked around.

When the man eating flower opens up, it will release a special pollen and attract bugs from all around. She wanted to see what kind of bug was approaching them.

She continued to look around as the sound got closer and closer.

The others all heard the sound as well.

"Bumblebees!" Xuan Yuan Che's face changed when he saw the bees approaching.

They all turned and look at the tall trees behind them. In between the trees, a swarm of bumble bees were flying closer and closers The amount of bees covered the entire forest.

"This way!" Liu Yue's expression sank. She grabbed Xuan Yuan Che's arms and turned immediately.

The stings from the bumble bees weren't that poisonous at all. It's fine if you got stung once or twice. However, if you are swarmed by an entire group of them, you will definitely die.

The group continued to move. While moving, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly grabbed Liu Yue by the waist and held her in his arms.

Liu Yue was suddenly being carried by a child. She could feel the wind blowing by her. Xuan Yuan Che was moving very quickly.

“Let me go!” Liu Yue pouted. However with her face in his chest, her words came out as mumbles.

She didn’t need his help. She could handle herself.

Chapter 319: The Secret Jungle (12)

‘Don’t move.’ Xuan Yuan Che replied. He started to hold her tighter and buried her entire face into his chest.

The sound of the bees moving became clearer and clearer. It was so clear that one could hear the flapping of the wings.

The group was moving very quickly but these flying creatures were moving even more quickly.

With her face right in Xuan Yuan Che’s chest, it was very hard for Liu Yue to breathe and she didn’t feel very comfortable.

His chest was very hard. It didn’t feel good at all.

However, his chest was warm. It helped warm up her heart and made her feel better.

She could feel Xuan Yuan Che’s love for her. She suddenly stopped struggling and allowed Xuan Yuan Che to protect her. She wasn’t alone anymore.

His chest was hard but it was something that she could rely on. It wasn’t comfortable but it could support her.

So this was how being protected feels like.

Ever since she was born, she had never been protected by someone in her life. She had to do the protecting.

That was because everyone knows that, Liu Yue, the world’s greatest mercenary, didn’t need anyone to protect her. She was the strongest. No one could protect her. If anyone talked about protecting her at all, they would be disrespecting her abilities.

But in reality, she wanted someone to protect her. It’s not like she didn’t want anyone to help her but instead, no one could protect her. Thus, after going on so many missions, she became very lonely. She only relied on herself and didn’t need or want anyone else to help her.

However, this feeling that she was feeling right now was great. To be

protected by her loved one, it was the greatest feeling in the world for her.

She had a slight smile on her face. This Xuan Yuan Che... Liu Yue loved him more and more.

“Come on stupid. Let me go. I’ll guide you guys.” While smiling, Liu Yue called out.

These people didn’t know the rainforest very well. They’re just aimlessly running around.

She was really happy after tasting the feeling of protection. However this wasn’t the time to be all sweet. They had a problem in front of them.

Chapter 320: The Secret Jungle (13)

“No. I’ve found the way out.” A muffled voice sounded. Xuan Yuan Che, while carrying Liu Yue, looked as if he was flying in the air. Next to them, a swarm of bumblebees buzzed loudly.

If the bees want to harm someone, they can harm Xuan Yuan Che. No matter what, he will not let them touch Liu Yue at all.

Xuan Yuan Che moved like lightning. He jumped from tree to tree, trying to escape from the bees.

Behind them, the swarm furiously chased.

Under the golden orange sunlight, the group of five gracefully and elegantly drifted through the secret forest as a swarm of black bumblebees chased.

The sound of river water could be heard as they traversed across the forest.

Water... Liu Yue’s ears perked up. If there was water, that means that there was a way out of this. Although the bumblebees were overlords of the sky, they could not enter water.

Liu Yue immediately calmed down. It seems like Xuan Yuan Che wasn’t as stupid as she thought he was. To be able to smell the scent of a nearby river, that was impressive.

While thinking about that, Liu Yue suddenly felt a wave of coldness. Xuan Yuan Che had carried her into the river.

The sound of water flowing and the smell of mud and fish entered through her ears and nose. Once they entered the water, Xuan Yuan Che slowly let go of Liu Yue and made a few hand gestures. He pulled her forward and caught up with Murong Wu Di and the others.

With the wave of water pushing against her and the smell of mud rushing into her nose, Liu Yue finally poked her head out of the water to get some fresh air and looked around. The sun was starting to set and the night was approaching. The swarm of bumblebees were flying away.

Liu Yue smiled and went back under water. She was in a very good mood.

Liu Yue decided to let them fly away and spare their life. Xuan Yuan Che's plan wasn't the only way to get rid of them. Liu Yue had a plan of her own.

The water began to move quicker and quicker. The waves began to move on top of one another.

Liu Yue felt that something was wrong. The wave was pushing against her without stopping.

It was pushing very heavily. It was out of the norms.

Something's not right. The river has an overlord too. There's something under them.

When the party looked down, numerous amount of waves shot towards them from all directions.

The water began to roll around. Air bubbles appeared as if the water was boiling. A murderous aura appeared from under the river.

Chapter 321: Meeting an Old Rival (1)

Xuan Yuan Che noticed the change as well and grabbed onto Liu Yue's hand

Liu Yue silently shook her head. Without knowing the terrain of the rainforest, Xuan Yuan Che dared to jump into the river....

She let go of Xuan Yuan Che's hands and quickly wrote a few words on Xuan Yuan Che's chest. With her dagger, she cut through the debris that were flying towards them.

From under the water, a black shadow moved quickly towards them.

"Boom!" Water splashed everywhere. A large head appeared from the water. It's mouth was wide open, showing off its numerous sharp white teeth. It got closer and closer to Liu Yue and tried to bite her down.

Once the iron colored body appeared from the depths of the river, the bumblebees began to scatter. It seemed as if the bees knew that it was very dangerous.

An alligator. One of the strongest and fiercest beasts in the rainforest.

Liu Yue turned around quickly and a cold smile appeared on her face. She jumped forward and was right under the alligator. With her dagger, she quickly struck the alligator's lower jaw.

Once the dagger struck, she twisted her arms and flesh blood gushed out. This was one of the alligator's only weak spots.

She knew about all these things from her previous life.

She retrieved her dagger and didn't even look at the dying alligator as she moved away. She then turned and ran towards another alligator.

At the same time, Xuan Yuan Che who was behind her kicked one of the alligators in its abdominals. The gator flew out of the water into the air.

It flew towards the bees and dispersed them until they disappeared.

Liu Yue's arm moved as fast as lightning as she thrust her dagger into

the other gator's jaws. The gator's jaw that have the force of a few thousand pounds.... It was easily stopped and pierced through by liu Yue and her dagger.

A divine weapon. This was something that Liu Yue had specially crafted.

Chapter 322: Meeting an Old Rival (2)

Using the back of the falling alligator as support, Liu Yue jumped out of the water.

She looked around. The water was moving faster and faster. There were many alligators coming towards them.

The iron colored armor skin on their skin glistened. The gators all looked very sinister.

“Damn it. What the hell are these things?” Xuan Yuan Che quickly jumped out of the water as well.

“Holy shit!” At the same time, Murong Wu Di yelled out as he jumped out of the water with Qiu Hen and Yan Hu with their sword in their hands. They were being surrounded by a numerous amount of gators.

The four of them were astonished. How could something be so fierce? What the hell is this? How come they’ve never seen this before.

The gators all opened their mouths and looked towards the sky.

They all started to throw themselves at Liu Yue and the others. A red glow appeared in their eyes, emitting a feeling of joy as they hunt their prey.

Liu Yue’s arm swept through the air. Against Liu Yue’s dagger, the tough skin on the gator’s body was as soft as tofu. Once the dagger moved, blood immediately followed.

With both his hands, Xuan Yuan Che clamped one of the gator’s mouth close and fiercely ripped its bottom jaw.

Xuan Yuan Che had actually ripped a live alligator in half with his bare hands....

Before he could even throw the corpse of the first alligator away, two more jumped towards him. Their white teeth showed as they were ready to chomp down on Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che furrowed his brow and unsheathed his sword by his

waist. With a thrust, he struck the gator coming from his right. With his free hand, he used his qi and struck the gator on his left.

With a 'Bang' sound, the gators dropped dead and floated on top of the water.

As he was fighting against the two gators that jumped towards him, there was a hidden gator under the water rushing towards him. It was ready to chomp of Xuan Yuan Che's legs.

Xuan Yuan Che felt the movement and cursed inwards.

Before he could react, the gator that was ready to chomp down on his leg suddenly dropped dead.

Chapter 323: Meeting an Old Rival (3)

From under that alligator, Liu Yue appeared from the water.

“Be careful.” Liu Yue warned as she emerged.

Before Xuan Yuan Che could react, Liu Yue was on the move already. Her dagger appeared in her hands as she rushed forward and killed an alligator that was fighting Qiu Hen.

At the same time, three large gators appeared behind Qiu Hen and was about to take him down.

Liu Yue immediately threw three daggers towards them. Each dagger accurately struck the gators' heads, killing them immediately.

“Miss.” Qiu Hen struggled and got rid of the dead gator that was on his arm. He looked over at Liu Yue and called out to her.

A grateful expression appeared in his eyes.

Liu Yue saw that Qiu Hen's arm was injured with blood gushing out. She couldn't help but frown and yelled out, “Quick. Jump onto the cliff.”

Although the gators don't have a great sense of smell, if they do smell your blood, it will be very hard to get away from them.

The river was not that big. They can easily cross over it without a problem using their martial arts. It might take a while with the gators in the way but when the entire hoard comes, it will be very hard to get away.

Right after telling Qiu Hen to run, she went over to Xuan Yuan Che and grabbed onto him. She wrapped her legs around his waist and hugged his body. “Jump!” she yelled out.

As Xuan Yuan Che jumped, Liu Yue maneuvered her body easily and killed the gators that jumped at them.

When Xuan Yuan Che saw each alligator fall, he took advantage of this and stepped onto them to get onto the small cliff above them.

With her head upside down, Liu Yue's leg held onto Xuan Yuan Che's waist tightly as she fought the gators who were jumping up at them.

With this, Xuan Yuan Che was able to climb the small cliff without any worries.

In just a few moments, Xuan Yuan Che had already reached the cliff.

Once they got on, Liu Yue got off Xuan Yuan Che and landed on the ground.

Chapter 324: Meeting an Old Rival (4)

After getting onto the small cliff, Xuan Yuan Che didn't stop moving at all. His sword streaked across a tree and cut it into many pieces.

He continuously cut down trees and made many logs. He then threw the logs into the river.

"Quick. Step onto them." He yelled out in a commanding tone.

Once the logs dropped into the water, Qiu Hen, Murong Wu Di and Yan Hu all stepped onto them.

Xuan Yuan Che continuously threw logs at them to use as stepping stones until all three of them reached the cliff.

Every time a log fell into the river, the three people were getting higher and higher.

The gators under them can only look up and gaze at them. They could not touch them at all.

Xuan Yuan Che knew the abilities of his subordinates and quickly devised the plan for them to escape. He knew how high to throw the logs so Qiu Hen and the others can step onto them.

After a while, the three of them had finally reached the cliff.

"Oh my god!" Right when the three of them got onto the cliff, Qiu Hen turned around and looked at the river with a shocked expression.

The hoard of gators had finally arrived and the entire river turned black from the swarm of these gators.

If they were even a step too late, they would have probably become gator food already.

The next scene was something that surprised them the most. The gators that arrived looked around and started to chase the injured gators.

They opened their mouths and revealed their sharp teeth as they fiercely hit each other.

Blood splattered everywhere. The entire river was filled with blood in just a while.

The scent of blood covered the entire area.

From faraway, more and more gators started to move due to the stench of blood.

Murond Wu Di's face twitched as he watched the scene unfold in front of him. After living so many years, he had never seen something so ruthless.

Chapter 325: Meeting an Old Rival (5)

“Let’s go. They can get onto the shore.” Liu Yue stood by the grass and looked down at the scene. She turned around and began to run away.

Alligators are amphibians. While in water or on dry land, their attacking strength won’t change at all. One cannot be lazy and fall behind when dealing with beasts in the rainforest. The best way to survive is to keep on moving.

Without Liu Yue saying anything more, Xuan Yuan Che and the others watched as the gators walked onto the shore. They immediately began to follow Liu Yue.

The cliff was pretty high up. From there they can see their surroundings easily.

Liu Yue looked around and scouted the area. This place was safe. There was minimal to no danger.

After confirming, she turned around and looked at Xuan Yuan Che. She carefully examined him, trying to see if the bumblebees had stung him.

“I’m fine.” Xuan Yuan Che smiled as he reached out and brushed Liu Yue’s hair.

The bumblebees were fast but Xuan Yuan Che was faster. Once he noticed that there was a river, he dove into it, allowing him to avoid the bees.

After making sure that he was uninjured, Liu Yue nodded, “You should rest for a bit.” She then turned around and stood there facing the wind.

While standing there, she was able to detect if any danger comes and notify the party easily.

Xuan Yuan Che suddenly grabbed Liu Yue’s hands and smiled, “Come on, let’s sit.”

Hearing how Xuan Yuan Che was laughing, she couldn’t help but turn around. What was so funny?

When she looked back, she realized that the three others were standing behind her as well.

Murong Wu Di and Qiu Hen was expressionless but Yan Hu looked very pitiful. He was extremely tired and had to sit down.

The three of them were stung many times by the bumblebees and their faces had become swollen. These stings weren't fatal at all, just a bit ugly. The three of them stared at her. Looking at them, she couldn't help but pity them.

Liu Yue finally understood what Xuan Yuan Che meant. She smiled and sat next to Xuan Yuan Che, "Alright then."

Chapter 326: Meeting an Old Rival (6)

Yan Hu, Qiu Hen and Murong Wu Di all moved over and sat with them.

Since Liu Yue sat down, it meant that there wasn't any danger around.

Seeing how the three of them moved at the same time, Liu Yue found it amusing.

Xuan Yuan Che moved behind Liu Yue and tied her hair up, "My subordinate's life is in your hands now."

Xuan Yuan Che pretended to be angry but was smiling.

Liu Yue comfortably lied on Xuan Yuan Che's chest and returned a smile.

"I'm very happy." While holding onto Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Che whispered into her ears.

He saw how Liu Yue rescued Qiu Hen.

Liu Yue had changed. She's beginning to value the people around her more. Xuan Yuan Che was really happy about this.

Being cradled by Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue looked like a small cat.

On the side, Murong Wu Di looked at Liu Yue and sighed. How could this grandfather not even match up to his own granddaughter.

However, how did his granddaughter become so strong? Could she have inherited the better genes of her other family?

He shook his head. Whatever. As long as she's a part of his Murong family. If she's strong, then the Murong clan will be strong too. The stronger she is, the stronger the Murong clan will be.

"Our food supply is ruined." Right when Murong Wu Di was pondering about Liu Yue, Yan Hu checked their provisions.

Everything is soaked. They also lost half of it in the water as well.

"It doesn't matter. We won't starve in the forest." Murong Wu Di replied.

Qiu Hen who was treating himself didn't say anything. All he did was look up at Liu Yue.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che wanted to laugh but was a little angry. After following him for so many years, when did his trusty and confident subordinates turn into such cowards.

Right when he was about to scold his subordinates, Liu Yue suddenly dug up the roots of a tree and threw it over to Murong Wu Di.

Chapter 327: Meeting an Old Rival (7)

The root was big and round. It looked like Ginseng. However it wasn't as fat as a regular ginseng.

Murong Wu Di caught the roots and examined it. He didn't know what it was but it looked nice and edible. From all the experience that he had garnered in the outside world, he can tell that this was not poisonous. It didn't look that bad.

He wiped the dirt off of it, "Let me try this." and put it near his mouth.

"Eat it if you want to die." Before he bit down on it, Liu Yue suddenly called out, making Murong Wu Di stop immediately.

Yan Hu heard this as well and turned to Murong Wu Di. He then signaled him to give the roots over.

Murong Wu Di coughed and threw the roots over to Yan Hu.

Yan Hu took out a small bottle from his robe. He put some white powder and wine on the roots to test for poison.

In just a few seconds, the white powder immediately turned pitch black.

Seeing this, Murong Wu Di, Yan Hu, and Qiu Hen were all astonished.

"Wow." Xuan Yuan Che turned around and was shocked as well. He grabbed Liu Yue's hands and tightly grasped it.

"You need to know these things if you want to survive." Liu Yue called out and looked at the three others.

Liu Yue had to go through many trials and tribulations in order to have all this knowledge.

She kept this knowledge to herself. However, if it was really dangerous, she would save her comrades.

Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu all looked at her with respect.

She had seen this kind of expression before and didn't feeling anything from it.

“I’ll go find something for you guys to eat.” Liu Yue said and then got up.

“Same.” Xuan Yuan Che also got up. He couldn’t let Liu Yue venture out alone in such a dangerous place. Even though Liu Yue was very strong, he was still worried.

“I’ll come too.” Both Qiu Hen and Yan Hu followed.

“I’ll join as well.” Murong Wu Di got up too.

The three of them answered at the same time with an expression that showed that they were eager to learn from her.

This was an opportunity to gain valuable knowledge. The three of them will not let this opportunity go.

Chapter 328: Meeting an Old Rival (8)

Liu Yue stood there and watched them as they got up. She gave the three of them a look of approval. It seems like these guys were worthy to be taught by her.

“Then.....”

“What’s that?” Before she could say anything, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly looked up into the distant land.

Hearing this, Liu Yue turned around and looked over as well.

Far away, on a grassy plain, there were a few small dots moving.

It was too far for them to make out what was moving.

“It looks like people.” Murong Wu Di said.

The small dots were moving closer and closer. At first, they could barely see the dots moving but as time passed, it got bigger and bigger. They were moving very quickly.

“It’s people.” Liu Yue looked clearly and concluded. She turned and looked at Xuan Yuan Che.

For there to be other people in such a dangerous place... they didn’t expect this at all.

Xuan Yuan Che furrowed his brows and continued to look. They were in the deeper parts of the forest. To be able to get here.... It seems like this group of people was very strong.

“They’re moving very quickly.” Yan Hu turned around and looked as well.

The closer they got, the bigger and clearer they became.

“One, Two, Three..... Six people.” Yan Hu counted.

“How can they be so fast?” Murong Wu Di grabbed his sword. This group of people was very strong. Liu Yue and the others had to be careful.

Looking closely, Liu Yue suddenly raised her brow.

“No. They’re running away from something.”

“They’re running fast because something is chasing them.”

Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che both called out at the same time and looked at each other.

“There’s nothing there....” Yan Hu stretched his neck and tried to look carefully.

There was nothing behind the 6 people. There weren’t any fierce tigers, lions, or hyenas. There were no poisonous spiders on the trees either. What could be chasing them?

Liu Yue’s party of five all started to look carefully.

Chapter 329: Meeting an Old Rival (9)

The six people were getting closer and closer. They moved as swiftly as the wind. In just a while, Liu Yue and the group could start to see who these people were.

The leader's white robes fluttered as he flew over.

"Du Gu Ye?" Xuan Yuan Che looked carefully and was flabbergasted.

"How can it be them?" Murong Wu Di was shocked as well.

Liu Yue crossed her arms and a cold expression appeared on her face. What was the prince of Ao Yun doing here in the secret forest?

In Hou Jin, he said that the martial arts competition was not his true destination....Could it be that this was his true destination?

What could be so precious that forced him to cross the entire continent to get here from the northern side? One should know that the forest was located in the southern most location of the continent.

Liu Yue and the others looked at each other.

"Let's go. Don't let them see us." Murong Wu Di broke the silence and called out.

It was clear that Du Gu Ye was running from something. It wasn't worth it to attract this thing to them. Du Gu Ye can handle this himself and go do their own thing. Liu Yue and the others didn't want anything to do with them.

If Ao Yun's crowned prince died here, it would be the best.

"Too late." Liu Yue said as she looked over.

"They saw us already." Xuan Yuan Che said as he watched Du Gu Ye suddenly change directions and fly towards them.

There was nothing that they can do anymore. They were standing on a cliff and was discovered by Du Gu Ye.

Du Gu Ye and his group was approaching very quickly.

As they got closer, they could see that Du Gu Ye was carrying a girl. He had a cold and ugly expression on his face.

Behind him were four guards who also had an unsightly expression on their faces.

“Qing Shui, Wu Ya, Liu Cheng, Li Mu.” Qiu Hen noticed the other four people that followed Du Gu Ye.

They were all experts in the Ao Yun Empire. These four people were commanders who each led 100,000 soldiers. Why would they be here?

Chapter 330: Meeting an Old Rival (10)

“What is it that’s chasing them?” Yan Hu squinted his eyes to get a closer look at what’s behind Du Gu Ye.

These people that were running with Du Gu Ye were experts among experts. To have such a look on their face and running so fiercely. What could be behind them?

After looking at Du Gu Ye, Liu Yue looked at the area behind them. Du Gu Yue was a graceful and elegant person. Even in dangerous situations, he would be calm. However, he was looking very wild right now.

She kept her gaze at the area behind Du Gu Ye.

It was all green. All she saw was the blue sky and the green forest. However, between the sky and the forest, a black streak appeared.

It was very very very far away. It wasn’t very clear.

Black? Liu Yue raised her brows and dragged Xuan Yuan Che over to her. She jumped and stood on top of Xuan Yuan Che’s shoulders and looked.

“What is it?” Xuan Yuan Che held Liu Yue’s legs to give her balance.

To make Du Gu Ye run so wildly, this thing is not simple at all.

It was black. It was a streak of black coming closer and closer. However, its speed wasn’t that fast.

However this streak extended across the horizon. It divided the blue sky from the green forest.

This black thing moved closer very slowly.

This black was darker than black. It took the color out of everything that it passed.

Everything died as it moved over it.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows and pondered. This kind of blackness.

Suddenly, she began to shiver. It’s those things. It’s those things. Shit.

Du Gu Ye actually lured those motherfucking things here. Fuck.

Liu Yue's face ashen and yelled out, "Fucking bastard." as she jumped down from Xuan Yuan Che.

"Run!" She grabbed onto Xuan Yuan Che's hand and jumped.

For the calm Liu Yue to become so scared. Xuan Yuan Che had a bad premonition.

He turned around and follow, "What is it?"

To make Liu Yue so scared. It must be something very dangerous.

Chapter 331: Meeting an Old Rival (11)

“They eat people.” After saying these words, she quickly rushed forwards.

Behind her, Murong Wu Di and the others followed without saying a word.

To run away before Du Gu Ye got to them. They were being disrespectful. However, since Liu Yue was scared, they didn’t care about it anymore.

“They eat people?” Xuan Yuan Che knitted his brows together and ran while looking back.

The streak of blackness turned into a sheet of blackness. They couldn’t see the sky behind them anymore. It was all black. It looked as if it was a giant mountain flying about.

This large group of things can eat people?

They don’t know what it is but with so much of it, Xuan Yuan Che and the others started to get scared.

Du Gu Ye who was moving towards Xuan Yuan Che suddenly saw Xuan Yuan Che run away. He couldn’t help but furrow his brows.

He also saw how the woman beside Xuan Yuan Che had suddenly changed her expression and cursed. He saw this with his own eyes and heard this with his own ears.

That look.... Looking at Liu Yue’s face Du Gu Ye understood everything. She was that Murong Liu Yue who killed Hou Jin’s emperor and blamed it on Yun Zhao. She can trick other people but she can’t trick him.

The hatred between the two countries... it was all fueled by Liu Yue’s actions. It really was her. It was the girl that he’s been thinking about.

Xuan Yuan Che, Murong Liu Yue... To meet here after three years.

Du Gu Ye suddenly sped up and continued to fly towards Xuan Yuan Che like a bullet.

“Get on. I’ll carry you.” Xuan Yuan Che grabbed Liu Yue’s hands and wanted her to get on. This was because he was faster than her.

“No need. Don’t waste your energy. You can’t get rid of those things easily.” Liu Yue gritted her teeth and watched as Du Gu Ye catch up.

That bastard!

“We’ve been chased by it for 10 days.” Du Gu Ye spoke after catching up with Liu Yue and her group.

“What are those things?” Murong Wu Di’s face twitched after hearing this.

Chapter 332: Meeting an Old Rival (12)

Du Gu Ye is a very capable person. To be chased for ten days and nights, what the hell are those things?

“I don’t know. But I do know that all life forms will be killed as they pass through.” Thus Du Gu Ye could not avoid them and was chased for ten days.

“Lions, Pythons, Frogs, Poisonous Bugs, if it is alive, it will not let it go. Anything alive will turn into a pile of white bones in a matter of seconds.” Qing Shui, one of the experts following Du Gu Ye was trying to catch his breath and chimed into the conversation.

Hearing this, Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu’s expressions all changed.

Xuan Yuan Che turned around and looked at those mysterious creatures.

At this time, the group was moving higher and higher. The group turned around and saw a pitch black blanket of creatures that covered the heavens and the earth.

Xuan Yuan Che looked closely at the creatures. There were countless amounts of fierce beasts running away from it. When the darkness engulf these beats, only their bones would be remain.

It happened very quickly. The fierce beasts died within seconds.

Xuan Yuan Che was startled. He didn’t think it was that bad when he heard about it but when he actually watched the scene unfold before his eyes, he was very shocked.

“What the hell are those things?” Yan Hu saw this scene as well and his face paled.

Du Gu Ye shook his head and didn’t answer. When they saw these things coming, they immediately started running for their lives. They didn’t have a clear look at what these things were.

“Ants. Man-eating Ants. It will extinguish any lifeforms as it goes through it.” Liu Yue replied.

“Ants?” Xuan Yuan Che yelled out. Hearing this, everyone was shocked, including the cold Du Gu Ye.

“They track down your scent and won’t give up. If you provoke them, they will continuously chase you. There isn’t anyone who can keep up with their pace and not rest at all. You bastards. Do you guys have nothing better to do and have to go and provoke these motherfuckers?” Saying that, Liu Yue was getting extremely mad and fiercely stared at Du Gu Ye.

Continuously chase you? Never give up? The group of people look at the man eating ants with a twisted look on their face.

Chapter 333: Blue Sensations (1)

Everyone silently looked forward again. Without saying anything, they all sped up and quickly advanced forward.

They were all shocked by what had happened.

The glided along the path of the wind. It looked as if they were flying in the air.

The went past mountains after mountains. They went past rivers after rivers.

The group of people were frantically trying to escape their fate.

Soon the stars twinkled brightly as the moon replaced blazing sun.

In the blink of an eye, the moon was immediately replaced by the rising sun.

“No way. We can’t do this. We need to rest.” After crossing another river, Du Gu Ye’s subordinates Li Mu and Liu Cheng threw themselves onto the floor and couldn’t stand anymore.

They’ve been running for a long time. It was too much for them.

Seeing this scene, Liu Yue who was leading the group stopped as well. Qiu Hen and the others all looked tired as well.

“We can rest for fifteen minutes...” Liu Yue sat down and coldly said to the group.

Hearing this, Du Gu Yue didn’t say anything back to her. He knew that she was their leader now and he had to listen to her.

On this journey, everyone else was running alone but he was carrying something. It was very hard for him.

Xuan Yuan Che wasn’t tired at all. When he looked at Du Gu Ye, he saw that he was profusely sweating and his face looked very pale. Xuan Yuan Che secretly praised him for his efforts and sat down next to Liu Yue.

After Murong Wu Di and the others saw Liu Yue sit down and quickly

sat down to recover themselves.

Their faces were a little pale. They've been running non-stop for an entire day and night and were feeling very tired. They looked at Du Gu Ye who had been running for ten days and ten nights and praised him in their minds.

"My god! They won't catch up now will they? We've already crossed three rivers!" Sitting there, one of Du Gu Ye's subordinates Wu Ya asked the emotionless Liu Yue.

While running, the other members of the group didn't know where they were running to.

However, they saw that they were crossing rivers. At first, they thought that it was just a coincidence but after seeing how the ants were being slowed down by the water, they understood what was happening.

Chapter 334: Blue Sensations (2)

The river was the bane of the man-eating ant's existence.

This was why Liu Yue chose to run in this direction.

While they were running, they didn't have time to notice their surroundings. Only when they stopped to rest did they notice.

They all looked towards the river.

This Murong Liu Yue..... How did she know where the rivers were. How was she so familiar with the terrain here?

The group of people noticed that their crowned prince was aware of this already. Since their prince was following Liu Yue, they all shut their mouths and followed as well.

"The river is too small. It won't stop them at all." Liu Yue spoke out. Suddenly she stood up and walked to a nearby tree. With her dagger, she cut down some bamboo-like plant and threw it to Xuan Yuan Che and the others.

After running for a day and night, they haven't eaten anything. If it goes on like this, before they get eaten by those ants, they would die of fatigue anyways.

Seeing that Liu Yue had tossed them something, Xuan Yuan Che, Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen, and Yan Hu all howled and dug into the plant without even checking for poison. They were very hungry.

Looking at how the four guys howled at Liu Yue, the four commanders of Ao Yun were speechless. However, they didn't even have the energy to howl or catch these plants. They didn't trust it and just laid there on the floor.

They were all thinking about how they ended up in such a sorry state.

"Kacha, Kacha." Qiu Hen and the others were ferociously eating this plant, breaking it and snapping it apart.

Liu Cheng and the others were lying on the floor. They all swallowed

their salivas. They haven't eaten anything in a few days and they didn't dare eat anything in this forest.

After a while, Xuan Yuan Che looked at them with disdain. Xuan Yuan Che didn't look like he was poisoned at all.

Seeing how Xuan Yuan Che was fine, the four commanders of Ao yun crawled towards the plants and picked it up.

They sat themselves up and started to eat ferociously.

"Crowned Prince." Qing Shui handed Du Gu Ye a few plants and started to eat as well.

"It's sweet."

"It's not bad. Not bad at all."

Chapter 335: Blue Sensations (3)

In an instant, all that could be heard was the sound of chewing. This kind of crazy expression that they had on.... No one would be able to tell that they were the four great commanders of the strongest Ao Yun Empire. The four people who were above millions looked like beggars who had not eaten in days.

Qiu Hen and the others in Liu Yue's group looked at them with disdain.

Compared to these beggar-like people, they were a million times more refined.

Qing Shui and the four other commanders saw this and didn't say anything. Who cares if they were being looked down on. They can also regain their reputation. Right now, they need to fill up their stomachs.

This place...They were very unlucky. The few hundred close troops that they brought in had all died here. A group of these soldiers that they brought in were killed by the poison in their food. When the rest of the troops saw that their comrades had died to the food in the forest, they became afraid of eating in the forest. They didn't dare eat anything casually and died to starvation.

They were like hungry wolves who devoured their food ravenously.

Only Du Gu Ye was eating slowly and unhurriedly. It wasn't too slow or too fast. He was looking very calm and elegant.

Liu Yue looked at these people and immediately disregarded them. She slowly started to eat as well while surveying their surroundings.

"After three years, it seems like the crowned prince is much more elegant than before." While eating, Xuan Yuan Che suddenly looked at Du Gu Ye and started to talk.

Hearing this, Yan Hu started to laugh lightly. Du Gu Ye's white robe had already turned black. His face looked withered and he was in a sorry state. Elegant? Which part of him looked elegant? It seems like Xuan Yuan Che was deliberately trying to annoy Du Gu Ye.

“Same to you, King of Ye.” Du Gu Ye calmly replied as he ate his food.

After coming out of the muddy river, Xuan Yuan Che was not much better than he was.

There was basically no difference between the two.

Neither one of them was in better shape than the other right now.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che didn't get angry at all and replied, “Coming to such a desolate place from Ao Yun, what is the crowned prince looking for?”

Xuan Yuan Che was being very direct with his question.

However, who would've thought that that Du Gu Ye would be so direct with his reply as well, “I want whatever you want.”

Chapter 336: Blue Sensations (4)

There were many treasures in the forest. But to make the both of them to move out, there was nothing else besides those two items.

Xuan Yuan Che knew that he guessed correctly and stood up, "So that's how it is. Then we should go our own ways. You can walk your own path and I'll cross my own bridge."

He didn't want this Du Gu Ye with him at all. If they travel together, Du Gu Ye would be freeloading off them. Xuan Yuan Che wasn't that stupid to let Du Gu Ye follow them.

If he can get Du Gu Ye to leave, Liu Yue could probably help them escape from these ants. He believes that his Liu Yue had the ability to lead them.

Hearing this, Murong Wu Di and the others all stood up. They had been waiting for this moment. They were already very angry that Du Gu Ye lured those damnable things towards them and now Du Gu Ye still had the nerves to follow them. Inconceivable!

This guy was very despicable.

Hearing this, Qing Shui and the three other commanders all stopped what they were doing and furrowed their brows.

"The paths of this world, I...."

"En." When Du Gu Ye opened his mouth, a light moan suddenly cut him off. The girl who had been sleeping in Du Gu Ye's arms had finally awoken.

She lifted her head and looked around. Her movements were simple yet elegant. She was very beautiful. Even with the sorry state that she was in, she was still very beautiful.

"Princess Qing Lian!" Murong Wu Di called out with a shocked expression.

Princess Qing Lian. The fifth princess of the Ao Yun Empire. Rumors

have it that she was an expert in Astronomy and Geography. She was the mystical girl of the era. Why would she be here with Du Gu Ye?

They had never noticed the girl that Du Gu Ye was holding and would have never thought that it would be her.

“You’re awake.” Du Gu Ye turned around and looked at Qing Lian.

She rubbed her head and sat up. With a pale face she nodded, “Yeah.. That monster was too.....Ah, Tianchen’s King of Yi!”

She was astonished when she looked at Xuan Yuan Che. She looked into his eyes and was shocked. However, after a while, she calmed down and stood up. She nodded towards Xuan Yuan Che and curtsied, “Qing Lian pays her respect to the King of Yi.”

Chapter 337: Blue Sensations (5)

Her gestures were very elegant and scholarly. It was neither servile nor overbearing.

The name King of Yi was one that was renowned throughout the world. It was worthy of the princess's respect. However, he was still the prince of Tianchen. As a princess of the Ao Yun Empire, she couldn't respect him too much.

Xuan Yuan Che waved his hand and replied, "No need."

He turned around and looked towards Liu Yue, "Let's go."

Before Liu Yue could reply, that Qing Lian stepped forward and said something, "Hold on. King of Yi, let's not talk about whether it was fate or not that we were able to meet. We are being chased by a dangerous creature. I'm sure that the King of Yi has seen how fierce this creature already. We are in the same boat and should work together.

It is all Qing Lian's fault. I should have known sooner. I had just realized what the creatures were. I remembered that in the [Topics of Heaven], there was a section about ants who grouped together and killed anything that was in their path.

The jungle is very big. Fate must have brought us together. I hope that the King of Yi will carefully consider his decisions."

She was trying to persuade Xuan Yuan Che to stay but all he did was nodded as he listened.

After she finished talking, Xuan Yuan Che furrowed his brows. These words seemed like she was giving him advice but in reality, she was calling him narrow minded.

"Many thanks for princess Qing Lian's advice. My prince and princess can handle themselves." Qiu Hen bowed towards Qing Lian with his hands cupped.

Hearing this, Princess Qing Lian was startled. She looked over at the silent girl that was standing by Xuan Yuan Che. This was the little

princess consort that shook the entire Tianchen?

Before she could see through Liu Yue, Liu Yue suddenly yelled out, “They’re here.”

After she said these words, everyone was startled. Even Du Gu Ye who was calmly sitting there jumped up. Everyone turned around immediately.

A sheet of darkness was getting closer to them. The ants that they thought they had shaken off had come for them again.

“Let’s go.” Liu Yue turned around and jumped forward.

She didn’t even look at that Princess Qing Lian. In the face of danger, her life was the most important. She didn’t care about the princess at all.

Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye both stepped forward at the same time and followed Liu Yue.

Chapter 338: Blue Sensations (6)

What was that about walking one's own path and crossing one's own bridge. In front of these dangerous things, it's complete nonsense.

His family's Qing Lian was very knowledgeable but this Liu Yue in front of him was not only knowledgeable but also experienced. Following her would be the wisest thing to do.

Xuan Yuan Che suddenly glared at Du Gu Ye.

Du Gu Ye pretended that he didn't see it and disregarded it.

The two people were sizing each other up and continued to run forward.

The rainforest was the best place to get rid of an opponent. It is basically the perfect place to do such a thing. No one would know about it.

However, the man power on both sides were around the same. If they can't completely beat the other group, they won't make a move or else they won't be able to handle the consequences.

Thus, both Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye didn't make any moves.

Instead, they both moved together.

"Princess, quick. Follow them." Qing Shui took out the edible plant, gave it to Qing Lian and dashed forward.

Qing Lian saw how Du Gu Ye, Xuan Yuan Che, Murong Wu Di and the other arrogant men were following Liu Yue and couldn't help but blink a few times.

What was happening? What happened when she was unconscious?

While pondering about it, she quickly moved up as well and followed the group.

Even though Princess Qing Lian didn't know martial arts, she was well versed in Qing Gong (Ancient times movement techniques). This was one of the reasons why Du Gu Ye dared to bring her.

The entire group were moving forwards very quickly.

“Yue. Do you have any way to get rid of them? Running is not a solution.” Xuan Yuan Che moved next to Liu Yue and asked.

If they ran like this, they will get tired out very soon. In the rainforest, every misstep will lead to their demise.

Running was not a solution. They had to get rid of the danger behind them.

Liu Yue replied without even looking back, “There is. We have to burn them down.”

Hearing this, both Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye became silent.

Chapter 339: Blue Sensations (7)

It was very easy to make a fire. However, they were in the rainforest filled with trees, and dried leaves. If they made a fire and the wind suddenly blows, the fire will spread. Even if they grew wings, they probably won't be able to escape the fire.

"We can't use fire. How about water. We can use a big river." Du Gu Ye suggested.

A small river won't kill them. But a big river with its torrential waves might do the job. Even if it doesn't kill the ants, it should be able to wash their scents away. Without scent, those things probably won't be following them anymore/

"There isn't a big river around. It'll take us three days to get to one."

Liu Yue was spitting hard cold facts without hesitating.

Du Gu Ye and Xuan Yuan Che both raised their brows. How did Liu Yue know that it would take them three days to get to a big river.

What they didn't know was that Liu Yue was very familiar with the rainforest. She can smell the air and the scent from the earth. She can tell where they were going and what the terrain was like from the softness of the ground and the growth of the trees in an area. She can easily deduce where the rivers were from these things. This was something that couldn't be learned in books. It came from experienced.

"There is a miasma in five kilometers. Watch out." Liu Yue yelled out and then took a deep breath.

"Yes Ma'm." Qiu Hen, Yan Hu and the others quickly answered. Even Murong Wu Di answered. In his mind, strength came first and seniority came second. Since Liu Yue was leading them, he would follow her orders.

Qing Lian heard this and was astonished. She sped up and moved next to Liu Yue. She looked at Liu Yue and asked, "How do you know?"

Liu Yue took a glance at Qing Lian and then disregarded her.

“Smell.” Behind her, Du Gu Ye explained.

Miasma.... Miasma is a smell in the air. It was easily recognizable.

“I know. But we’re five kilometers away.....” Qing Lian looked over at Du Gu Ye.

Five kilometers..... How can she smell something from five kilometers away. It was beyond her comprehension.

Du Gu Ye heard this and was curious as to how Liu Yue knew as well.

“Yue.” Xuan Yuan Che softly called out. He wanted to know how as well.

Chapter 340: Blue Sensations (8)

“The environment, tree species, tree age, soil, and air.” After hearing Xuan Yuan Che ask her, Liu Yue said these few words.

Miasma don't only appear when there's rotting trees. There are many types of miasma. It all depends on the environment.

There are many types of miasma. Some are hallucinogenic, some are sensual while some can be life threatening. Different kind of environments can produce a different kind of miasma.

In this forest, there was only one kind of miasma. It comes from the trees that had been rotting for over a hundred years. It was a very rare occurrence.

The soil here was very moist and there was no water source around. There was only one reason why the soil was moist.

However, normal people wouldn't understand something like this.

Behind her, Xuan Yuan Che, Du Gu Ye, and Qing Lian all turned silent after hearing this.

And behind them, Qiu Hen and the others were so shocked that they couldn't even make a noise.

There was no doubt that Liu Yue was talking from experience. This was something that could be learned from experience.

The group quickly moved 5 kilometers.

In front of them was a light blue fog. It looked clear and misty.

The scent that came from the fog smelled very good, it looked very elegant.

“It could have an aphrodisiac effect.” Liu Yue smelled the scent and said.

Liu Yue's party grabbed a few medicament from their robe and ate it. They then proceeded into the fog without caring at all.

Du Gu Ye and his party wasn't unprepared either. They each took a pill out of their robe and ate it.

As they entered, Liu Yue was leading in the front while Du Gu Ye and Qing Lian followed right behind her. Xuan Yuan Che was behind the two of them. The four of them formed a rhombus sort of formation.

Chapter 341: Blue Sensations (9)

The light blue fog covered the entire area. It seems like there was nothing blocking them from entering.

The group quickly entered the fog. After a moment, Liu Yue suddenly felt that something had changed. The clear weak fog suddenly thickened.

In an instant, the fog became dark blue and surrounded everyone.

Their vision started to become fuzzy. In an instant, they couldn't even see their own hands besides them. All one can see is the blue fog in front of them. Nothing else.

Liu Yue furrowed her brow. It seems that this miasma is much stronger than she had imagined.

However, Liu Yue didn't stop. She grabbed the arm of the person behind her and pulled her forward. She didn't care about anyone else but Xuan Yuan Che. She couldn't let him go.

This wasn't so serious anyways. Murong Wu Di and the others had prepared an antidote already. It will only be a matter of time before they got out.

The fog got thicker and thicker. It became so concentrated that nothing else could be seen.

This kind of heavy feeling. It wasn't good.

Liu Yue tightly grabbed Xuan Yuan Che's hand and interlocked their fingers.

Once their fingers interlocked, Liu Yue suddenly felt startled.

This feeling.... This feeling isn't right.

She suddenly stopped. She then quickly felt the hand once again. That's not right. This isn't Xuan Yuan Che's hand.

She was very familiar with Xuan Yuan Che. Just by touching this person's hand, she can tell that she got the wrong person.

“Xuan Yuan....” She opened her mouth and called out.

Right when she started to call out, a hand suddenly covered her mouth and stopped her. At the same time she felt a bit dizzy. She had breathed in some of the miasma.

She furrowed her brows and pushed the hand away.

Damn it. Why is it Du Gu Ye. This icy cold hand and the fast reaction....she couldn't think of anyone else besides Du Gu Ye.

She threw Du Gu Ye's hands away and suddenly squatted to feel the floor.

She couldn't make any sounds. However, she didn't need to make sounds to indicate where she was to Xuan Yuan Che.

She touched the ground.... It was filled with rotten leaves and decayed juices. There were no rocks at all. The entire floor was soft.....

Chapter 342: Blue Sensations (10)

Liu Yue's brows furrowed together and she stood up. She touched the dead leaves with her feet and left her prints on the ground.

The leaves started to make a rustling sound. The sounds rang throughout the forest one by one as if she was typing a morse code.

The wind was blowing hard as it carried the rustling sound around.

Ten seconds, fifty seconds, a hundred seconds...

There was no answer. Where did this Xuan Yuan Che go?

He was right behind them. They weren't even a few steps apart. How far could he have gotten?

Liu Yue frowned.

While she was frowning, the silent and still Du Gu Ye suddenly patted Liu Yue's shoulders and said a few words, "Let's get out of here first before thinking about it."

Liu Yue wasn't feeling too good about this but Du Gu Ye was right. They should leave this place before doing anything else. The miasma is strong. It's not good to be in here for long. With Xuan Yuan Che's abilities, he'll probably get out sooner or later.

In a bad mood, Liu Yue got up and flew forwards with Du Gu Ye following besides her.

When Liu Yue reached behind her to grab Xuan Yuan Che's arm, Xuan Yuan Che sensed her intentions and flew towards her to grab her hands. However, the hand that he grabbed wasn't Liu Yue's.

These fingers were slim and delicate. How can it be Liu Yue's hand. Liu Yue's hands were tough and strong.

He immediately let go of the hand and moved forward. There was nobody else around. Liu Yue was only a few steps ahead of himself. Where did she disappear to?

His heart fluttered. He started to move faster and faster. However, other

than Qing Lian who was following him, there was nobody else around.

Xuan Yuan Che knew that he had separated from Liu Yue. However, they were still going in the same general direction so they would both be out sooner or later.

“She won’t have any problems.” Qing Lian wrote these words out with her finger on Xuan Yuan Che’s back and then patted his back.

Xuan Yuan Che knows that Liu Yue was capable and nothing would happen to her. However, he was in a bad mood that he couldn’t be with her.

However, he had to hold back his emotions and get out of her. He continued moving forward with the princess behind him.

Chapter 343: Blue Sensations (11)

After escaping from the epicenter of the miasma, the mist gradually became lighter and lighter until things could be seen again.

However, the fragrance was getting stronger and stronger. It smelled like a good wine. It was able to intoxicate people just with its smell.

The fragrance brought out one's inner desires. It was able to make one confused.

The smell slowly entered one's brain. Even though Liu Yue ate an antidote, she felt her brain numbing over.

She looked at Du Gu Ye and was filled with anger. Shit. Why did I grab him instead of Xuan Yuan Che.

She looked fiercely at the calm Du Gu Ye. Why was this person directly behind her? Where did Xuan Yuan Che go?

While looking at Du Gu Ye, she noticed that his face had suddenly become a shade of red. It was the color that appeared when one was affected by the miasma.

When Du Gu Ye's cold expression was paired up with this color, it looked very beautiful and charming.

It looked as if a red lotus bloomed on a glacier. It was devastatingly beautiful.

This man didn't look so bad. Liu Yue suddenly had this thought.

When the idea came into her head, Liu Yue immediately furrowed her brows. She shook her head. This was all nonsense. It was all due to the effects of the miasma.

She tried to stop thinking about it and moved forward.

The miasma was everywhere. Combined with the natural breeze of the rainforest, it created a soft sweet scent that was able to melt people's hearts.

It was a scent that penetrated deeply into the heart. A scent that you

breathe in unconsciously without even noticing that you breathed it in.

Your face will become redder and redder. Your body will get hotter and hotter. This happens very slowly so your body won't recognize a sudden change.

Du Gu Ye looked very beautiful like this. Especially in this dark area filled with blue miasma. Du Gu Ye was a bright red spot in the middle of darkness.

However, Liu Yue still liked Xuan Yuan Che. Du Gu Ye being beautiful was another thing.

She suddenly heard footsteps behind her and turned around. In the corner of her eyes, she saw Xuan Yuan Che approaching.

Chapter 344: Blue Sensations (12)

Liu Yue stared blankly at the person behind her. She blinked a few times. How can the person behind her be Xuan Yuan Che? Didn't they take different paths? How did he end up here?

She rubbed her eyes and blinked a few times again. Du Gu Ye was nowhere to be seen. It was Xuan Yuan Che behind her.

Liu Yue stared at the person behind her. The person really was Xuan Yuan Che.....That person's shadow was wavering a bit, he looked a bit hazy and illusionary but it looked exactly like Xuan Yuan Che.

Hot. It was getting very hot. Liu Yue felt as if her heart was being bitten by ants. She was itching to throw herself at the person in front of her.

It seems like after the miasma cleared out a bit, Xuan Yuan Che had found her.

Liu Yue kept thinking the same thing over and over to herself. This was Xuan Yuan Che. She couldn't control herself. So what if she was bewildered.

"Che." She softly called out. She went over to him and was ready to kiss him.

It was Xuan Yuan Che. What did she have to care about?

At that time, Du Gu Ye who was right behind made a supreme effort to hold himself back and kept his mind clear.

Suddenly, Liu Yue turned around and reached over to him.

Liu Yue smelled very good. It smelled very comfortable. The strong fragrance of a girl, it smelled very good to Du Gu Ye.

It was simply bewitching.

Du Gu Ye's heart started to pound. He tightened his fists.

This was the person that he had been thinking about for the past three years.

He had kept this feeling for her, the alluring woman who can cause him to smile, deep down in his heart.

He lost his focus. The urge that he tried so hard to suppress had taken over him.

He wanted her.

He stepped forward as well. Du Gu Ye held Liu Yue by her waist. He bent over to receive the kiss.

As the lips got closer and closer, his hands wrapped around Liu Yue's waist. The unique coldness of Du Gu Ye slowly moved onto Liu Yue's waist.

Chapter 345: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (1)

The insipid coldness was slowly felt by Liu Yue.

Under the effects of the miasma, not many people would have noticed this.

However, this feeling startled Liu Yue.

Such coldness..... It didn't belong to Xuan Yuan Che.

She broke out of the illusion and opened her eyes. The face that was so close to her's wasn't Xuan Yuan Che's. It was Du Gu Ye's!

Oh God. It wasn't Xuan Yuan Che.

The look in her eyes cleared up and without even thinking she took a dagger out and struck towards Du Gu Ye while escaping from his embrace.

A strong murderous aura followed the sword and struck towards Du Gu Ye's face.

Suddenly feeling such a strong murderous aura, Du Gu Ye was startled.

His keen instincts took over his body and his mind started to clear up. The instant before the dagger would hit him, Du Gu Ye quickly moved backwards and avoided the attack.

Strands of black hair dropped from his head and fell between the two people.

The two people who were embracing each other were now far apart.

The illusion they were in shattered.

When Du Gu Ye cooled down, he looked at Liu Yue who was staring at him coldly. When he finally came to his sense he furrowed his brows. He touched his hair and frowned. If he was a bit slower, his head would've been on the floor instead.

Du Gu Ye was very shocked. He quickly moved his fingers and massaged

a few of his meridians to suppress the feelings he had for Liu Yue.

After unsheathing the sword, Liu Yue had taken a few steps back and was giving Du Gu Ye the death glare.

Shit. She was almost taken advantage of.

Unexpectedly, this miasma actually had two different effects: to seduce and create illusions. She almost lost her reputation and betrayed herself. She wanted to vomit.

While thinking about this, she wanted to try and experience the illusion again while her head was clear. She looked at Du Gu Ye. In an instant, Du Gu Ye transformed into Xuan Yuan Che.

It seems like you'll only start to see the illusion after inhaling the miasma twice.....

Chapter 346: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (2)

In her heart, she knew that this was all an illusion.

It felt as if she knew she was awake while she was in a dream realm. She can feel everything but in reality, she was still in deep sleep. (Lucid dreaming?)

No. She can't continue like this.....

She gritted her teeth and cut herself with her dagger. The sense of pain allow her to clear her mind once again.

Without saying anything, she quickly rushed forwards.

Blood slowly dripped down from her arm onto the ground as she cut through the miasma covered forest.

Du Gu Ye who was standing across from Liu Yue saw everything and furrowed his brows.

So she didn't want to be touched. She'd rather hurt herself than be touched..... Is she saving herself for Xuan Yuan Che?

He looked deeply at her. He didn't like this feeling.

This woman.... If only this woman's husband was himself.....

He looked at Liu Yue who was moving quickly and started to follow.

In a while, the two people started exited the miasma covered area.

At this time, Xuan Yuan Che and Qing Lian also entered the zone where the effect of the miasma was at its strongest.

"It's very hot." Princess Qing Lian only knew Qing Gong and didn't have any inner strength to defend herself against the miasma. If Liu Yue and Du Gu Ye couldn't even defend themselves against the miasma with the antidote, then Qing Lian will definitely fall.

She forgot that she couldn't open her mouth and breathed in some of the miasma. In front of the princess, all she saw was a giant back.

Tianchen's King of Yi. This was someone who was on the same level as her eldest brother. One of the two kings that we renowned throughout the world.

When they first met, that handsome face that causes even the heavens to be angry had melted her heart.

She quickly caught up to Xuan Yuan Che and pulled his sleeves while her face was bright red.

Xuan Yuan Che knew that this miasma was strong and prepared himself against it. When he heard the princess talk behind him, he furrowed his brows.

Did Du Gu Ye have nothing better to do? To bring such a weak woman into this dangerous forest.... She was being very troublesome.

Without even looking back, he grabbed her arm and continued to move forward.

Chapter 347: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (3)

Going against the Ao Yun empire was something between the two empires. Hating Du Gu Ye was a problem between two men. He wouldn't bring a girl into this.

Xuan Yuan Che wasn't so petty that he would leave her here to die. He'll treat it as returning a favor even though she didn't do anything useful.

When Xuan Yuan Che grabbed her arms, the heat that belonged to a man transferred over to her body.

Princess Qing Lian felt as if her body was melting as Xuan Yuan Che pulled her along.

"Che." Princess Qing Lian softly and sexily called out Xuan Yuan Che's name.

While calling him, she started to undress slowly. It was very hot.

"Who allowed you to call this king's name." Xuan Yuan Che yelled out and turned around. He had a very serious look on his face.

Only Liu Yue was allowed to kill his name. He will kill anyone else that does.

When he turned around, Princess Qing Lian lifted her head and looked directly into Xuan Yuan Che's eyes.

Both of her cheeks were red. She looked very elegant. This kind of attitude and appearance..... It belonged to Liu Yue.

Liu Yue?

Xuan Yuan Che rubbed his eyes. How can it be Liu Yue?

His heart was pounding and as he slowed down. The burning and wild feeling that he was suppressing had completely taken over him.

This was his Liu Yue.

“Che.” Princess Qing Lian continued to undress as she fell into Xuan Yuan Che’s embrace.

The blue mist was everywhere. It floated all around, bringing the miasma all over the place.

The sun shined brilliantly as the blue mist glistened under the sunlight.

Du Gu Ye was following Liu Yue as they continued to move forward. There were no difficulties along the way except for the fact that Liu Yue was bleeding.

They could hear the flow of water and wind passing between mountains.

When the two exited the miasma, they looked at the brightly glowing sun. In front of them was a spacious area with a mountain stream in the middle.

Chapter 348: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (4)

There was a bridge made out of rocks above the stream that connected two cliffs. The cliff was very high up and no one could see the bottom of it.

The area above the cliff however, was very beautiful and clear as the mountain breeze blew by.

Liu Yue stepped on the edge of the cliff and continuously took deep breaths.

The mountain breeze was very clear and cool. It had a strong refreshing feel to it allow people to regain their composure.

Du Gu Ye who followed Liu Yue out was also standing by the edge and breathed the mountain air slowly. He was still acting refined and elegant.

After a while, Liu Yue finally recovered. She looked at the wound that she inflicted onto herself.

The blood was still dripping as it died the grass around her red.

Her face was still expressionless as she treated her wound and washed her dagger on the grass.

She looked around. There was no one else. Xuan Yuan Che and the others were not out yet.

She furrowed her brows at look at the miasma. This miasma is very strong, could they be.....

Liu Yue didn't have a good feeling about this.

Du Gu Ye opened his eyes and watched Liu Yue. He moved towards her and tapped a acupuncture point on Liu Yue's arm.

The blood on her arm immediately clotted and stopped flowing out.

Liu Yue looked over at Du Gu Ye. That red hot face that he had inside the miasma had completely disappeared. Now it was like a clear cold

glacier.

Liu Yue saw that Du Gu Ye nodded at her and didn't say anything.

What happened in there was an accident. Since it was an accident, there was no need to fight over it. Liu Yue didn't want to think about it either.

Liu Yue wasn't so petty go be angry at such a thing after it happened.

She nodded and stood up. She then continued to look around.

Du Gu Ye had his hands behind his back and looked at Liu Yue, "My little sister is together with him."

Du Gu Ye had said something that he shouldn't have and caused Liu Yue to become angry again.

She slowly turned around with a murderous look in her eyes.

Chapter 349: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (5)

Du Gu Ye looked calm as if nothing had happened. He didn't mind the dangerous look in Liu Yue's eyes and looked up at the miasma covered area, "You pulled me and Xuan Yuan Che pulled Qing Lian."

Truth to be told, Du Gu Ye was a bit shocked when Liu Yue grabbed him before. When he thought about it, he saw Qing Lian following Xuan Yuan Che and leaving together. They must be together right now.

"What do you mean by that?" Liu Yue lifted her dagger and coldly yelled out.

He looked back at Liu Yue who was now extruding a cold aura and calmly said, "You know what I mean."

He knew that Liu Yue knew what he meant.

The two of them were top experts and even they were affected by the miasma. Xuan Yuan Che was together with Qing Lian in there. Did he need to say anymore?

He knows that Qing Lian doesn't know any martial arts and doesn't have any inner strength. She won't be able to hold out against this miasma.

Liu Yue suddenly started to smile, "I believe in my Che."

She trusts him. She knew how much he loved her. If she can clear her head, then he should be able to too.

Du Gu Ye looked at how confident Liu Yue was and furrowed his brows.

"Trust?" Du Gu Ye repeated the word over and over again. His mouth curved up and revealed a ridiculing smile.

If it wasn't for Liu Yue, he wouldn't have been able to control himself. If Xuan Yuan Che saw Qing Lian as Liu Yue..... Du Gu Ye knew more about a man's desires than Liu Yue herself.

The word 'trust' made Du Gu Ye sneer at her. After seeing that Du Gu Ye was making fun of her, she furrowed her brows and tightened the grasp of her dagger.

Seeing how Liu Yue was tightly grasping her dagger Du Gu Ye called out to her, "There's no need to be angry. Xuan Yuan Che will become the king of Tianchen sooner or later anyways. By that time, he'll probably have around seventy two concubines. This is something that you'll have to accept. However, those concubines probably won't be able to do anything to you anyways."

Saying that, Du Gu Ye was basically adding oil to the fire. It made Liu Yue even angrier.

Snapping sounds could be heard as if the handle of the dagger was breaking. Seventy two concubines huh?

Chapter 350: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (6)

Liu Yue had never thought about this before. In her eyes, Xuan Yuan Che was her's alone. It's suppose to be a monogamy. That was right and proper thing.

However, she forgot that she wasn't in the 21st century anymore. She was in a time where it was normal for a man to have multiple wives. A time where a King will have many concubines.

She was in an era where a man doesn't know restraint; where a man doesn't know about loyalty and devotion; where a man doesn't know about living happily together forever with one partner.

In their eyes, it was right for them to marry many women to show their power.

Especially people in the royal family. They loved to do whatever they want and would get whatever they want.

Liu Yue slowly turned around and stared at the area with miasma.

Xuan Yuan Che. I trust you. Don't disappoint me.

Xuan Yuan Che. I trust you. Don't betray me. You can't afford to betray me.....

Liu Yue was getting angry. She stood there and watched silently.

She stared at the exit without caring about anything else.

She had never experienced romance in her previous life. She didn't know what it was like to be loved.

Now, this love from Xuan Yuan Che was very valuable to her.

The love from Xuan Yuan Che allowed her to love someone and value someone. He gave her a deep feeling where she wouldn't regret dying for him.

This feeling can't easily be destroyed. Her love for Xuan Yuan Che will

never disappear.

She won't go back in to rescue him. She won't go look for him either. She'll stand outside and wait.

If he can't even pass this hurdle, and shatter her hopes and dreams, then even if she stopped him today, he will have second thoughts in the future.

Love. It was something between two people. No one person can handle it themselves.

However, if her heart is shattered today, as for what she would do, not even she knows herself.

The sunlight was gleaming and the mountain wind whistled.

Under the cliff, the sound of river water flowed smoothly. It was very quiet.

Liu Yue stood there, not moving at all.

Du Gu Ye stood next to Liu Yue and looked at her expressionless face with a deep stare. He didn't say anything and put his hands behind his back as he watched with her.

They stood shoulder to shoulder with the same icy look on their faces.

Chapter 351: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (7)

“Shit. This miasma is so strong.” A shadow appeared from the light blue miasma. Qing Shui’s face was completely red as he rushed out.

“I almost couldn’t control myself....” A few meters away from Qing Shui, Li Mu rushed out as well, his head filled with sweat.

When the two people finally left the miasma, they continuously took deep breaths as if it was their first time breathing in years.

Liu Yue casually glanced at the people that came out and looked back at the miasma.

“Your highness, are you alright?” After breathing a few breaths of clean air in, Qing Shui walked towards Du Gu Ye.

Du Gu Ye shook his head and didn’t say anything else.

Qin Shui knew what Du Gu Ye’s personality was like and didn’t ask anymore. He looked around and asked, “Where did princess Qing Lian go?”

After saying that, Murong Wu Di suddenly appeared from the miasma. Two other people appeared besides him, Yan Hu and one of Du Gu Ye’s men, Tian Ya.

“Peh Peh. What kind of miasma is this? It nearly humiliated me.” Yan Hu rushed towards the cliff and immediately breathed in some fresh air while massaging his own face.

“Hypnotism and Illusions. We were up against something tough.” Tian Ya wiped his sweat away and walked towards Du Gu Ye.

To a old man like Murong Wu Di, this kind of sensation was nothing to him. He was feeling very calm and looked at Liu Yue. He started to move towards her.

They definitely entered the miasma at the same time. Why did everyone come out at different times?

Liu Yue looked at Murong Wu Di, Yan Hu and Tian Ya. She looked at where they came out from.... Xuan Yuan Che wasn't there.

She clenched fist. Even Yan Hu came out already.. Why isn't Xuan Yuan Che and Qing Lian out yet?

"Yue-er. How come you're injured?" Murong Wu Di got closer and saw Liu Yue's injury.

The miasma was poisonous but there was nothing dangerous inside. How could she have gotten injured? Could it be that Du Gu Ye tried to do something?

Chapter 352: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (8)

Murong Wu Di furrowed his brows and looked over at Du Gu Ye who was standing next to Liu Yue.

The effects of this miasma.... Murong Wu Di knew what it did. Could it be.....?

He looked at Du Gu Ye and then back at Liu Yue. Could something have happened between them?

Murong Wu Di's heart started to pump very quickly.

There was no answer. Liu Yue didn't pay attention to Murong Wu Di at all. Her pitch black eyes were staring at the exit of the miasma.

"Ke.Ke. What the hell is this?" A few meters away, Qiu Hen's voice was heard. A shadow appeared out of the miasma.

At the same time, Du Gu Ye's subordinate, Liu Cheng's foul mouth could be heard. He came out while swearing and cursing at the miasma.

Everyone had come out already. Only Xuan Yuan Che and Qing Lian were still inside.

Without saying anything, Du Gu Ye looked over at Liu Yue.

He didn't say anything but his expression conveyed the words.

Xuan Yuan Che wasn't out yet.

Those eyes showed that a storm was slowly brewing and there was a show to watch. He relaxed himself as he continue to look at Liu Yue.

"Eh? Why isn't his highness out yet?" While breathing deeply, Qiu Hen rubbed his eyes and looked at everyone.

"Princess Qing Lian isn't here either." Liu Cheng rubbed the sweat off of his forehead and looked at everyone as well.

When Qiu Hen said those words, Murong Wu Di glanced fiercely at him. At the same time, the leader of the four great generals of Ao Yun,

Qing Shui glanced fiercely at Liu Cheng as well.

Qiu Hen shuddered. Why was general Murong glaring at him like that?

An thought flashed in his head and he finally understood. Shit.

Everyone knew what kind of effect the miasma had. It had some sort of seduction effect and can hypnotize people while creating illusions. Qiu Hen was alone in there so even if he was hypnotized, nothing will happen to him. What can he do if the only thing around him is air and mist?

However, the ones that didn't come out were Xuan Yuan Che and Qing Lian. When they entered the miasma, they were very close together.

Chapter 353: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (9)

The master's princess consort was here and yet the master wasn't here yet....Qiu Hen suddenly felt that he said something wrong.

On the other side, Liu Cheng saw Qing Shui's expression and looked over at the calm looking Liu Yue. This kind of calm expression is very scary. It feels as if a storm was brewing inside of her.

He realized what was wrong and quickly went behind Du Gu Ye and readied himself. Liu Yue's calmness was too horrifying.

If anything went wrong, then they would all be.....

The mountain breeze was blowing softly on the cliff. The people who came out of the miasma all stood there without saying anything. They all stared at the area around the miasma.

The sunlight was warm but the entire area felt cold.

"Sha Sha Sha Sha." In the dead silent, the sound of footsteps could be heard. It was very clear. Everyone turned around and looked at the approaching shadow.

From the miasma, Xuan Yuan Che slowly walked out with princess Qing Lian on his shoulders.

Everyone looked and saw that Princess Qing Lian's clothes were not in a good shape.

Everyone breathed in a mouthful of cold air. Qing Shui and the others put up their guards and stared straight at Liu Yue.

She didn't say anything. She didn't do anything.

Liu Yue stared at the approaching Xuan Yuan Che.

Her dagger was shining under the bright sunlight.

Xuan Yuan Che walked past Liu Yue and threw Princess Qing Lian at Du Gu Ye.

Du Gu Ye furrowed his brows and caught her.

He saw that Qing Lian's face was still very red. Her clothes were in a bad shape with her shoulders showing. On her shoulder was a bright red mark that resembled a fingerprint.

Liu Yue looked at the red mark on Qing Lian's shoulder and her eyes darkened.

"If you bring her here, you should take care of her. Don't think that I'll help you clean up next time." After saying that, he walked back towards Liu Yue.

His expression was very normal and carefree.

He didn't notice how dark Liu Yue's eyes were and grabbed Liu Yue's shoulders with both of his hands, "If you run off again without saying anything, watch how I'll deal with you."

Chapter 354: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (10)

Before he finished talking, Xuan Yuan Che raised his brows and looked at Liu Yue's injury. His face sank and was replaced with an angry expression, "How did you get injured?"

"It's nothing. How about you?" Liu Yue lifted her head and looked at Xuan Yuan Che and then at Princess Qing Lian.

"How could anything have happened to me? Xuan Yuan Che looked into Liu Yue's eyes. Dark. It looked very dark. It was like a deep abyss; the darkness was like a wave surging back and forth in the calm sea. He realized something and had a serious look on his face.

"Yue. Do you trust me?"

"I do." She answered without hesitating.

She was willing to trust him. That was the only that that she could do.

Seeing how Liu Yue answered so enthusiastically, Xuan Yuan Che revealed an evil smile and grabbed Liu Yue's nose while laughing, "Jealous?"

Liu Yue looked at Xuan Yuan Che and didn't reply. Instead, she grabbed tightly onto Xuan Yuan Che's arms.

Xuan Yuan Che grabbed her hands and softly said, "Stupid. Do you think that I don't know what you're thinking? I only want my little princess consort."

He was indeed hypnotized but when he got closer to Princess Qing Lian, he was able to tell that she was fake immediately. I mean, how can he mistaken someone that he loves for someone else?

The makeup on her face, the color of her skin, the blood in her body. Xuan Yuan Che would be able to recognize it wherever he was. It belonged to his little princess consort after all.

To be able to meet her in this life, he felt that he was very lucky.

“Even if there were thousands of other options, you are the only one for me in this multifarious world.” Xuan Yuan Che smiled warmly and rubbed Liu Yue’s injury.

His little princess consort. How can he not tell what she was thinking about? Her eyes gave her away immediately.

There were many women in this world, but having this one is enough for him already.

It’s not like he can control himself either. However, the only one in his eye was Liu Yue. Any other girl was like grass in his eyes, there was a vast amount of them but they didn’t do anything.

Chapter 355: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (11)

The injury on Liu Yue arm.... It was probably there so she can wake herself up. His Liu Yue.... Ah. That dumb girl. This is why he loved her so much.

The dark storm had dispersed, the coldness in the area started to dissipate.

It was as if spring had come.

A warm smile appeared on Liu Yue's face. The darkness disappeared in her eyes while it looked as if a flower was blooming.

She reached her hand out to grab Xuan Yuan Che's head and deeply kissed him.

Her Xuan Yuan Che. This was her man. How could she not love him?

They were furiously kissing and the entire place warmed up.

For life or for death, however separated,

With you I made an agreement:

I grasped your hand,

Together with you we will grow old.

Until death, do us part.

Their passionate action radiated all around as everyone watched.

To be so daring while everyone was watching.... This Liu Yue was simply... Simply.....

Qing Shui and the others quickly turned around in embarrassment. They were all shocked. 'Even if there were thousands of other options, you are the only one for me in this multifarious world' How can a future king say this?

Throughout the entire continent, no one had ever heard of something

like this.

On the other side, Murong Wu Di and the others let out a long sigh. Fortunate. Very fortunate. If something happened, they would either be killed by the beasts in the forest or by their own princess consort today.

Du Gu Ye looked at Qing Lian's neck. There was a hand print. It seems like Xuan Yuan Che knocked her out.

He looked up and looked at the couple. A deep look appeared in Du Gu Ye's eyes. This kind of relationship.... This kind of relationship....

The area on top of the cliff was like a sorching summer.

"Ahem. That. Uhh. Those ants...." In the midst of his masters' passionate kissing session, Yan Hu coughed twice. He didn't want to disturb his masters but those man-eating ants were catching up.....

"Let's go." Liu Yue tightly grabbed onto Xuan Yuan Che's hands.

Xuan Yuan Che grabbed her hands as well. Now he won't mistake someone else with her, "Let's go."

Chapter 356: You are the only one for me in this multifarious world (12)

“Let’s go. Let’s go.” Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen, Yan Hu all saw this and quickly followed.

Du Gu Ye was still standing on the cliff. He looked at how Liu Yue was holding Xuan Yuan Che’s hands and then at Qing Lian. He quickly followed them. He’s decided.....

Between the two cliffs was a bridge. It was very thin and long.

Under the bridge, the drop was very steep and it looked very eerie.

“They’re here.” Tian Ya who was all the way in the back yelled out. He watched as a pitch black curtain appeared from the blue miasma.

The man-eating ants have caught up.

“Destroy the bridge.” Without looking back, Xuan Yuan Che quickly decided.

“Then how will we get back?” Murong Wu Di was startled. If they destroy the bridge, they would have no way back.

“We probably won’t be able to get out even if we go back.” Liu Yue commented.

At the same time, Du Gu Ye made a hand gesture to Tian Ya. They had to destroy it. There was no turning back.

With just a look Tian Ya knew what his master meant.

Qing Shui saw the signal as well and immediately unsheathed his sword too as he rushed forward to the weak point of the bridge.

The two swords struck the bridge and it immediately collapsed.

The others quickly jumped to the other cliff.

They turned around and watched as more and more ants appeared.

But who cares if there were more ants? There was a gap in between

them. There was no way for the ants to get to the other side.

The black ants were not a threat anymore

With a smile, Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che both moved forward. They really had no way of dealing with those ants. This was considered the light at the end of the tunnel for them.

They were in a good mood as they continued to move forward. After they crossed the cliff, they ended up in a spacious area.

“Heavens. It’s that thing. It’s actually that thing....” Murong Wu Di looked at the marvel in the spacious area and pointed at it with his mouth wide open.

One of the overlords of the rainforest... It was wriggling around left and right....

Chapter 357: The Black-clothed Asura (1)

Under their feet, the blue waves rippled. The gorgeous river under them created a bedazzling scene under the sunlight's beams.

The gleaming reflection of the waves in the sunlight made the water look crystal clear. It was very splendid and magnificent.

From the clear waves, a long white figure wriggled itself out. The alluring figure recklessly weaved itself out of the waves.

"A River Dragon!" Princess Qing Lian woke up without remembering about anything that happened inside the miasma. When she woke up, she saw the scene in front of her and couldn't help but yell out.

"To be able to call forth the rain...Living in the large pond....A hundred meters long with a gleaming white skin....." Xuan Yuan Che tightened his grip on Liu Yue's hand.

"A Thousand Year Dragon Snake." Du Gu Ye let Qing Lian down and stared at the creature.

Liu Yue didn't say anything. What Thousand Year Dragon Snake? What's a River Dragon? To be able to call forth rain? Nonsense. This was one of the tyrants of the rain forest. This wasn't a dragon. It was an extremely large python.

Sharks were the rules on water. On land, there was almost nothing that can take down a giant python. When she heard that Xuan Yuan Che was looking for a Dragon Snake, this giant python was the first thing she thought about. There was nothing else that resembles a Dragon Snake more than a giant python.

"Let's go." Du Gu Ye looked at Liu Yue and then commanded his men. He flew towards the creature in front of them.

Behind him, Qing Lian, Qing Shui and the others followed.

While moving forward, Qing Lian continuously talked to Du Gu Ye about something. Since her voice was very soft, Liu Yue and the others couldn't hear what she said at all. It seems like shes talking about ways

to kill this giant python.

“Let’s go. If we don’t move, they’re gonna steal it from us.” Seeing what happened, Yan Hu yelled out and immediately tried to follow them.

It was their mistress that brought everyone here. Without the little princess consort, Du Gu Ye would have a very hard time getting here by himself. Now that they found the Thousand Year Dragon Snake, Du Gu Ye wants to make the first move and take advantage of Liu Yue’s efforts.

“There’s no need to panic.” Before Yan Hu finished talking, Liu Yue suddenly called out as she watched Du Gu Ye move forward and laughed.

Those people don’t know how to deal with the python but Liu Yue does. To want to take the python down in front of her.....that’s a very hard task.

Chapter 358: The Black-clothed Asura (2)

Holding Liu Yue's hand, Xuan Yuan Che's mouth curved up and revealed a smile as well, "Well. The scenery here isn't too bad."

"Let's go for a walk and enjoy the scenery then." Liu Yue turned towards Xuan Yuan Che and smiled.

"Good idea." Xuan Yuan Che laughed as they slowly walked around. They didn't look like they were in a hurry at all.

Murong Wu Di understood what they meant and smiled towards Qiu Hen and Yan Hu as he followed Liu Yue.

Du Gu Ye is very strong but the Thousand Year Dragon Snake isn't so easy to handle either. Liu Yue and her group will wait until the two wear each other out before they strike. This was a very good plan.

The mountain wind was calm and cool. The sweet scent of the fresh grass and flowers were scattered around by the breeze.

The entire place looked very scenic.

As they slowly walked around the mountain, the violent sound of water crashing against land could be heard. This battle was very intense.

Liu Yue looked at the ground below her and then surveyed the surroundings. The land was fertile and the plants were growing neatly. However, there were no living creatures around this place at all. There were no bugs, no snakes, and there wasn't even a single butterfly flying around. The place was very tranquil and serene. It was a haven within the dangerous rainforest.

All the creatures avoided this area and didn't dare to enter.

This place was owned by a lone tyrant.

It was very normal. The giant python didn't allow any living creatures in its territory. Nothing was willing to go up against this creature.

Liu Yue's expression suddenly turned serious, "We have to be careful. It might be stronger than we think."

She knew that the python was very strong. In her past life, she had accepted a mission that took place in the rainforest and had encountered a giant python before.

It was as thick as an adult and it's strength was even stronger than a cannon's. Any normal person would die in one strike. Even Liu Yue had to use a rocket launcher to blow it up. It almost revealed her trails in the rainforest.

However, in the place where she is right now, there were no AK47s, no M16s, no tanks and no rocket launchers. It was much harder for them to kill this python.

She was already holding her silver dagger in her hands. Even if Xuan Yuan Che had never faced a giant python before, he can still feel the danger and how powerful it is.

Chapter 359: The Black-clothed Asura (3)

With her weapon in her hand, Liu Yue and her group slowly moved back. The five of them were all became very cautious of surroundings.

They moved back to where they originally were and the five people stared at the river.

The river water was splashing everywhere. A white streak weaved around the sky.

A murderous aura covered the entire area.

Du Gu Ye and the four generals were all fiercely fighting the giant white python.

Liu Yue and the others could feel their sword qi all over the place. Qing Shui, Tian Ya, Liu Cheng, and Li Mu were facing the python in different directions. With a wave of their sword, they yelled and charged towards the Python's head in harmony.

At the same time, Du Gu Ye was at the Python's tail. He charged forward as well and slashed at the white Python's tail.

A two prong attack. It was short, quick and powerful.

The Python didn't stand there and let them attack him without doing anything. He erected his head upright and charged towards Qing Shui and the other generals.

The four swords attack from all different directions, striking the python right at its neck.

Qing Shui and the other generals were experts amongst experts. With their powers combined, they should be able to cut through any living creature even if its skin bones were made of steel.

However, when the four swords struck the python's neck, only a small wound was inflicted onto the python.

There were a bit of blood seeping out of the wound.

The four people were delighted at what happened. They haven't use all

their moves yet and they can still inflict a wound on the python.

After being struck, the python raged and threw itself at the four generals.

It slammed its head on the four of them.

“Pu.” Qing Shui, Li Mu, Liu Cheng, and Tian Ya all spat out a mouthful of blood and heavily landed on the ground. Blood seeped out from their mouth.

With one move, the python had injured the four of them.

While the python was dealing with Qing Shui and the others, Du Gu Ye fiercely struck the python’s tail.

The giant tail that was on the ground immediately shot up at Du Gu Ye.

“Si Si Si...” The giant python became even angrier. It moved its tail back and forth and got away from Du Gu Ye’s control. It then swung its tail straight at Du Gu Ye.

Chapter 360: The Black-clothed Asura (4)

The sound created by the python's tail as it struck through the air sounded very heavy.

Du Gu Ye saw that it was dangerous and immediately blocked the tail with his sword while jumping backwards to reduce the impact.

The python looked big, stupid and clumsy but it was not at all. Du Gu Ye was fast but the giant python was even faster. It quickly swept its tail up Du Gu Ye's back, trying to take him down in one move.

Du Gu Ye was off balance and quickly did two flips in the air to land far away.

His expression was ice cold while blood was dripping from his mouth. He was also injured.

In a quick moment, the five strongest people in the Ao Yun Empire were all injured.

Princess Qing Lian who didn't know any martial arts was standing there in shock.

Holding her dagger, Liu Yue looked at the defeated Du Gu Ye and furrowed her brows.

She looked at the white python. Its circumference was at least three meters. Suddenly, Liu Yue felt a headache. How long has this python lived for? Its body is way too majestic!

This thing.... Not even a rocket launcher would kill it.

The python squirmed and caused the river to overflow. It had been injured in two places. Its eyes turned red and an oppressive aura seeped out from its body.

As the tyrant of the rainforest, no one ever dared to challenge it. However, it was actually injured today.

The white giant python was extremely mad.

It lifted its head and roared. The giant python then left the river and

went directly onto the land.

“I thank the princess consort for her guidance here. However, to whom the deer falls to (idiom?) will depend on our own abilities.” Du Gu Ye helped himself up with his sword and looked towards the giant python.

At the same time, Qing Shui and the others all forced themselves up as well.

They know that fighting against the python first will put them at a disadvantage. However, they can't take advantage of the fact that Liu Yue had guided them here. They tried their best to injure the python to repay the favor. Du Gu Ye was not someone who like to take advantage of others.

Chapter 361: The Black-clothed Asura (5)

The python's red eyes stared at the dagger that Liu Yue was holding. It didn't care about who had attacked itself before and flew straight for Liu Yue.

Behind her, Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen, and Yan Hu all flew towards the python.

They were all very in sync. Their movements complemented each other's and didn't need any commands from Liu Yue.

They had seen how the python was fighting Du Gu Ye and his generals. The head of the thousand year snake is very strong. It's body and tail however, were not that strong.

If they let it curl up, then it's weakness will disappear. At that time, they can only stand there and take a beating.

They had to restrict the tail's movements and not give it a chance to curl itself up.

Xuan Yuan Che and Murong Wu Di went and attacked the head while Qiu Hen and Yan Hu attacked the tail.

At the same time, Du Gu Ye and his generals flew towards the python as well. Du Gu Ye attacked the head while Qing Shui and the three others attacked the tails. The two groups combined their strengths with the three strongest in the front and the six weaker attackers in the back.

In an instant, sword light flickered everywhere.

Liu Yue looked at the nine people and can only see swords flying around. They were so fast that she can barely tell what was going on. She can see the shadows of their movements but not the actual person themselves.

Their Qing Gong... It was too fast.

This was an advantage to Qing Gong.

Liu Yue was standing there, not moving at all.

She knows how to kill, how to massacre and how to use weaponry. But

this python look to be around a few hundred years old. If she wants to kill it in one blow, it won't be that easy. She doesn't have the ability to fight with Xuan Yuan Che and the others.

All she can do right now is watch.

She watched the fierce battle. The nine shadows were all moving quickly. Sword qi filled the entire area.

With its red eyes, the python that was surrounded by sword qi spat out a mouthful of blood. It's black teeth shined under the sunlight as it roared.

Chapter 362: The Black-clothed Asura (6)

The giant python's skin was very thick and rough. Normal attacks won't injure it at all. Qing Shui, Qiu Hen and the others all tried their best. In ten strikes, nine would only leave a white sword imprint on the skin. It couldn't cut through the skin at all.

Only Xuan Yuan Che and Du Gu Ye was able to cut through the giant python's skin.

However, the giant python is very deadly. It will deal serious damage if one reaches within seven inches of its body. Even the strong Du Gu Ye and Xuan Yuan Che don't dare get that close to it.

As the giant python received more and more injuries, its eyes became redder and redder. Although the injuries that it had received were not life threatening, it offended his pride and dignity as the tyrant of the rain forest.

As it raged, it lifted its long body and dealt a very strong attack to the nine people. No one dared to defend against the attack and tried to escape from it.

"Hong." Xuan Yuan Che used the python's momentum against itself and created a hole near the python's head. Xuan Yuan Che then jumped away as the python fell against a giant boulder.

"Bang." The giant boulder was smashed into pieces.

The giant python got up and shook its head. It then turned around with its mouth open and flew towards Du Gu Ye, trying to eat him.

When everyone saw this, their expression became very ugly.

Just how strong is this thing?

"Yue, don't get so close." Xuan Yuan Che held his sword as he warned Liu Yue.

Liu Yue doesn't know Qing Gong and doesn't have internal energy. Xuan Yuan Che knows that Liu Yue won't be able to block a single attack from

this python.

Liu Yue didn't move even after hearing Xuan Yuan Che's warnings. Her sharp eyes locked onto the injured area on the giant python.

A python's attack is usually in a circle. However, because the python was injured and had belittled humans, it showed its weakness while it attacked.

Chapter 363: The Black-clothed Asura (7)

It's weakness was its abdominal. The giant python finally revealed its weakness!

Liu Yue took out an unused dagger and also retrieved a small bottle from her robes. She poured the liquid from the bottle onto the glowing dagger.

When the clear liquid dripped onto the grassy floor, the grass immediately shriveled up and disappeared into the air.

She swung the dagger a few times to get the feel of it. She looked at the dagger and then at the giant python.

The abdominal.... It wasn't really the python's weakness but she plans to make it its weakness.

"Peng." After being hit by the giant python, Xuan Yuan Che flew backwards and spat out a mouthful of blood.

On the other side, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu were also forced back as well. Their clothes tattered as they spat out a mouthful of blood as well.

However, they still managed to land a few hits onto the python.

The python's blood splattered everywhere but the nine people had lost much more blood than the python.

The white python's defense was too incredible!

Liu Yue wasn't distracted by Xuan Yuan Che's injury at all. Right now, she was concentrating on the white python. She lifted her dagger and ran towards the python.

The nine people and the python engaged in a fierce battle. Three people attacked the head while six attacked the tail. The middle part was wide open.

This was the moment.

Liu Yue's eyes lit up. This was her chance.

Liu Yue moved faster. A silk thread shot out from his sleeves onto the python's abdominals. She jumped onto the thread and ran towards the python.

The silk thread was connected straight to the python. In a few moments, she had already reached the python's side. With her poisonous dagger, she fiercely stabbed it.

Her weapon was very sharp as it cut through the python's skin that was as hard as steel.

The wound wasn't deep but it was enough.

Her movements were as fast as lightning.

With the dagger stuck in the python's body, Liu Yue quickly grabbed onto it and ran around the python in a circle, cutting its entire body.

Chapter 364: The Black-clothed Asura (8)

Blood oozed out from the python. A black circle appeared around the python's body. The sizzling sound of sulfuric acid corroding something quickly appeared right after.

Liu Yue gritted her teeth. It was a shame... The python's skin was too thick and she couldn't cut through all of it. If it wasn't so thick, then she would have been able to cut the python in half.

She didn't dare think about anything else and was prepared to escape.

Another silk thread shot out from her sleeves onto a tree far away. She jumped off the python and went back to where she was before.

As expected of the number one assassin in the modern world. Her movements were so quick that none of the people who were fighting the python saw her move at all.

In mid-air, Xuan Yuan Che was about to defend against the python's strike again but suddenly, the python started to squirm and tremble. Its red eyes start to burn. Its expression became very sinister. It didn't care about the people that it was fighting anymore. It quickly turned around and flew towards Liu Yue.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che was shocked. He turned towards the direction where the python was going.

Liu Yue's black sleek hair was flying as she was moving back to her original location.

Behind her, the python that suddenly became mad had its mouth wide open as it flew towards Liu Yue without regards for anything. No one knew why this was happening....

This speed.... Everyone was stunned as they watched the scene.

"Yue! Dodge!" When Xuan Yuan Che saw what the python was going to do, he yelled out to Liu Yue. He didn't care about anything and flew towards the Python and Liu Yue.

Everyone else was startled. Why would the python suddenly start attacking Liu Yue?

Liu Yue felt the sudden killing intent behind and her face sank. The killing intent was swallowing her up alive.

It didn't give her any breathing room. The python flew straight towards Liu Yue.

Liu Yue trembled in fear.... She curled up into a ball and jumped to the side.

Her reaction was fast but the python behind her was even faster.

Chapter 365: The Black-clothed Asura (9)

Liu Yue tilted her body and tried to avoid the attack. However, the giant python was too fast and slammed its head onto Liu Yue's left shoulder.

Liu Yue was unable to maneuver her body that much in mid air and could not dodge the attack. After being struck, she was flew towards a large boulder.

"Yue." Xuan Yuan Che who was behind the python watched the scene unfold in front of his eyes. His eyes became bloodshot as he yelled out. His speed increased and accelerated as he moved towards Liu Yue like a shooting star.

Behind them, Qiu Hen and the others were staring blankly at what had happened.

A few of Liu Yue's bones were fractured and broken. She couldn't control herself as she flew towards the boulder.

She watched as she was about to slam into the boulder while she couldn't react at all.

With lightning movements, a shadow flashed by.

When Liu Yue was about to slam into the boulder, Xuan Yuan Che appeared right in front of Liu Yue.

Liu Yue was feeling a bit dizzy as she flew into Xuan Yuan Che's soft embrace. However, she uncontrollably spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Yue... Yue!" Xuan Yuan Che saw this and became very angry.

"I won't die so easily." Liu Yue lifted her head and smiled.

Blood was dripping from her mouth. Xuan Yuan Che had a very sinister expression in his eyes as a strong murderous aura emitted from his body.

When Xuan Yuan Che was embracing Liu Yue, the crazy white python flew forward again with its mouth open, trying to bite and eat Liu Yue.

Xuan Yuan Che unsheathed his sword once again and carried Liu Yue in his arms. He brought Liu Yue to Du Gu Ye and let her down.

At the same time, a strong killing intent emitted from his eyes. He will kill whoever that dares to harm his Liu Yue.

With his sword, he stood in mid air like an asura.

The wind was blowing hard.

Without using any unnecessary movements, Xuan Yuan Che charged towards the white python.

Chapter 366: The Black-clothed Asura

(10)

The silver sword in Xuan Yuan Che's hand did not look very sharp but with quick movements, Xuan Yuan Che stabbed into the python's mouth.

The python had its mouth hanging open right above Xuan Yuan Che's head. Liquid dripped from its mouth onto Xuan Yuan Che's clothes.

Under the large mouth, Xuan Yuan Che looked very small.

"Master!" Qiu Hen and the others felt as if their heart had stopped.

It was too dangerous.

Du Gu Ye who was holding onto Liu Yue looked over at Xuan Yuan Che and furrowed his brows.

With a fierce look on his face, Xuan Yuan Che yelled out and grabbed the sword that was stuck in the python's mouth. With all his strength, he moved the sword across the mouth into the python's back.

In a quick moment, the rigid part between the mouth and the head was cut in half.

Blood splattered all over Xuan Yuan Che's face.

Murong Wu Di was charging forward to help his prince stopped in his tracks and looked at the python in surprise. He knows how hard the head of the python was.... To be able to cut it up in one stroke.....

The giant python felt the pain and became even crazier.

Its head wiggled around as he lunged its tail at Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che covered in blood and had a very cold look in his eyes. Those were the eyes of someone who is ready to hunt. It was as dark as the night.

Xuan Yuan Che snorted and didn't dodge. Instead he charged forward with his sword and attacked the python's tail.

The sword moved very quickly, just like lightning.

The python and Xuan Yuan Che exchanged positions as they went past each other. The python squirmed as it's body split open.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu who were rushing forward widened their eyes and stopped moving. Their master had gone crazy.

The python's entire body became erect as it charged towards Xuan Yuan Che again.

Receiving the invitation to fight, Xuan Yuan Che turned around and charged towards the python again.

Chapter 367: The Black-clothed Asura (11)

A silver light streaked across the sky. The strike looked to be very sharp.

In an instant, the entire sky was covered in streaks of silver light. The light looked as if it was dancing around the giant python. It was filled with a cold murderous intent.

Every strike that landed on the giant python caused it to bleed. Its blood splattered everywhere as it struggled.

Liu Yue who was being held by Du Gu Ye tried to force herself out of his embrace. She didn't want to be hugged by Du Gu Ye.

Du Gu Ye held onto her and moved backwards.

"Let go." Liu Yue coldly commanded.

"He's gone mad." Du Gu Ye didn't say anything else. After moving backwards, he let Liu Yue down.

Hearing this from Du Gu Ye, she looked forward and saw Xuan Yuan Che fighting the giant python all by himself.

Xuan Yuan Che never showed his true strength in front of her. She didn't know that he was this strong.

Just before, nine people were fighting it at the same time and couldn't subdue it. Now, Xuan Yuan Che was fighting by himself and was restraining it.

Every silver streak was followed by a blood red streak.

Xuan Yuan Che was very angry at the moment. In his black robe, he was exerting the power of an Asura.

The sinister and eerie killing intent scattered everywhere.

Xuan Yuan Che charged forward towards the head of the giant python. A fierce and hateful expression appeared in his eyes. With quick movements, he was on top the giant python in a matter of seconds. The python felt as if a massive mountain had just landed on its head.

Xuan Yuan Che angrily stomped on the already weakened python's head and caused it to fall over.

"Splash." The giant python fell back into the river.

"Whatever that dares harm my Liu Yue, will die." Xuan Yuan Che stood on top of the python like an imposing and domineering asura.

At the time, the python's abdominal area started to melt down and revealed a large hole. It's blood squirted everywhere and covered the entire plain.

Chapter 368: The Black-clothed Asura (12)

The python was continuously wriggling, creating chaos within the river.

The river water splashed everywhere, making it seem like it was raining in the area.

On the other hand, Xuan Yuan Che was still standing imposingly on top of the python like the god of death, not moving at all.

A black-clothed asura, standing in mid-air, looking down on everything else.

Everyone else present, including Du Gu Ye, Qing Shui and the generals all stopped their movements and looked at Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che fiercely stepped on the python and restricted its movements. With his sword, he ruthlessly stabbed the area between the pythons eyes and picked something out of its head. An object appeared from the wound and flew out.

Nearby, princess Qing Lian who was the closest to the white pearl-like object flew towards it the moment she saw it. She extended her hands and tried to grab the Dragon Kill Pill.

To whom it falls to means that they have the ability to keep it. This was an agreement between her brother and the King of Yi. Whoever grabs this Dragon King Pill, the other party can't try to take it away.

A joyous expression appeared in her eyes. She felt that she was very lucky.

However, Liu Yue's face sank. With a slight movement in her hand, a strand of silk appeared from her sleeves and grabbed the Dragon Kill Pill.

That girl wants to take it? In her dreams!

This was something that Xuan Yuan Che got himself.

Princess Qing Lian's hands were ready to grab the Dragon King Pill that was in front of her eyes but suddenly, something appeared and grabbed the Dragon King Pill away from her.

She was startled at what happened and looked at where the Dragon King Pill went.

All she saw was Liu Yue holding onto the pill while staring at her with a cold expression in her eyes. That gaze was so cold that it could kill people.

Princess Qing Lian didn't want to fight this battle.

"How are you feeling?" Without caring about the Dragon King Pill, Xuan Yuan Che quickly leapt off the python's body and flew towards Liu Yue.

With an anxious look, Xuan Yuan Che immediately took Liu Yue's pulse. He was feeling very worried.

Chapter 369: The Black-clothed Asura (13)

"I won't die that easily." Liu Yue turned around. The cold expression that she had suddenly brightened up as she looked at the bloody Xuan Yuan Che.

Incredible. Her Xuan Yuan Che was incredible!

That attack from the python was very fierce. However, even though the attack looked strong, it actually barely hit Liu Yue. It wasn't that serious.

After checking Liu Yue's meridians, Xuan Yuan Che breathed a sigh of relief. Even though Liu Yue spat out a mouthful of blood, the damage wasn't that serious.

The pythons all out attack could turn a boulder into smithereens. If Liu Yue had been hit head-on, then Xuan Yuan Che would feel like he had lost his own life.

After getting rid of his worries, Xuan Yuan Che carried Liu Yue and hugged her. He had almost lost the love of his life.

After seeing how Xuan Yuan Che had been so worried, Liu Yue lightly patted his back, "It's alright. I know how to protect myself. Don't worry. Don't worry about it."

While saying that, she lifted her hand to show Xuan Yuan Che what she got in her hand, "Look. This is ours."

On the side, Du Gu Ye stood there with his hands behind his back. He didn't run up to steal the pill. He stood quietly on the side and watched.

If he didn't get it, then he didn't get it. He had lost it to them.

"You hold onto it. Just be careful next time. Don't run out randomly like what. What if you get hurt? Don't be so reckless alright? If you do it again, I'm going to punish you."

Xuan Yuan Che was angrily looking at Liu Yue while tightly hugging her. He was very worried. He was very scared.

Liu Yue gently wiped the blood away from Xuan Yuan Che and smiled at

him.

She wrapped her arms around Xuan Yuan Che's neck to kiss his face and then nodded, "Alright."

"Oh my god. Come look!" While the two of them were enjoying their time together, Qing Shui, Qiu Hen and the others suddenly yelled out. Their voices trembled with shock.

Chapter 370: Marriage of a Princess (1)

Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che who were facing the other way turned around immediately with a cautious expression. Could the python have some relatives hidden in the lake or something?

There was nothing behind them. Only the dead white python.

Following Qing Shui and the other's line of sight, their gaze landed onto the python. Xuan Yuan Che's brows suddenly raised up.

He saw that the python's neck was rotting. It was as if the area around its neck was melting away.

The rotting process continued to spread throughout even after the python had died. For such a strong beast to become like this.... It was not normal.

Rotting? Xuan Yuan Che finally realized why the python had stopped attacking everyone else and went straight towards Liu Yue.

So Liu Yue had done something.

"Such a potent poison." Tian Ya's face twitched.

The three other generals and princess Qing Lian were all shocked at this. If they were the ones that were hit by the poison then.....

As for Murong Wu Di, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu, they looked at Liu Yue with admiration and respect.

While tightly holding Liu Yue's hand, Xuan Yuan Che looked down at Liu Yue and was deeply moved by her actions. His silent look was able to convey thousands of words to Liu Yue.

"Let's go." In the midst of the silence, Du Gu Ye turned around and started to walk. He didn't want to look at Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che anymore.

Hearing this, Qing Lian and the generals all followed him and disappeared into the horizons.

Du GU Ye's actions were very direct.

After they left, Xuan Yuan Che looked over at his subordinates. Their body was filled with injuries but they looked like they were well rested and ready to go. He patted and fixed his robe, “We should also.....”

When Xuan Yuan Che opened his mouth, Liu Yue suddenly shook her head and stopped him. She had a sly smile on her face as she walked towards the dead python, “The Dragon King Pill isn’t the only good thing on the python’s body.”

Chapter 371: Marriage of a Princess (2)

With just a few hand gestures from Liu Yue, Qiu Hen and the others quickly complied to Liu Yue's wants.

The cold breeze swept past the area as it picked up the scent of blood, scattering it around the entire area.

Time passed very quickly. In the blink of an eye, ten days have passed.

"I say, where does this exquisite fish live?" Yan Hu sighed. This was the fifth river that they had checked within the past ten days.

"Who knows." Qiu Hen added.

In these past ten days, they have finally fully recovered but still haven't found any trails of a single exquisite fish. This was even harder than finding the thousand year dragon snake.

It seems like Du Gu Ye and his group was quite nimble. Liu Yue and her group haven't seen them in a while now.

After chatting for a bit, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu both looked at Liu Yue.

Liu Yue caught their gaze and shrugged. How would she know where the exquisite fish lived? She might know a bit about the giant python because she had encountered one before but all she knows about the fish is that it lives in water. She wasn't a biologist or zoologist or anything....

"If we don't find it soon, then these things will definitely go bad." Murong Wu Di held up two bundle and reminded the group.

Xuan Yuan Che, Qiu Hen and Yan Hu were all carrying the same thing. It was definitely starting to smell bad.

Xuan Yuan Che sighed. He didn't know why Liu Yue would skin the Thousand Year Dragon Snake and cut its meat off. They can't eat it and they can't use it. What are they going to do with it?

However, he knows that Liu Yue had her own plans and didn't ask. All he said was, "Let's pick up the pace then."

Liu Yue walked forward and said, "Let's go look for the next..."

Before Liu Yue could finish her sentence, she suddenly stopped talking and turned her head to listen to something.

Xuan Yuan Che and the others all perked their ears up.

The mountain wind was blowing from the direction of the mouth of the river. There were voices carried by the sound of the wind.

“Du Gu Ye!” Xuan Yuan Che’s brows furrowed.

“It seems like they found it.” Murong Wu Di said.

“Right. Just like this. We have to move quickly....”

“Ah, It’s not.....”

Chapter 372: Marriage of a Princess (3)

In the distant, the barely audible voice brought by the wind belonged to princess Qing Lian. It was a very sweet voice.

The five people looked at each other. They found it!

“Let’s go. This time it’s our turn.” Liu Yue and her group held the python skin and meat as they moved towards the voice. Last time, they led Du Gu Ye to the giant python. This time, Du Gu Ye helped them find the Exquisite fish.

After crossing the mountain cavity in front of them, a calm and clear river appeared in front of them. Du Gu Ye and his group was standing next to it.

They saw that Du Gu Ye and the others were all holding a half-dead poisonous snake. They were holding the snake in their hands while reaching into the river.

In the next moment, they all pulled their hands up very quickly. Under the golden gleam of the sun light, the clear splatter of the water could be seen as a small beautiful fish jumped out and bit the snake.

Princess Qing Lian who was holding onto a tree quickly moved up and checked the fish. After a while, she shook her head.

Liu Yue saw this and knew that she was right. This exquisite fish is basically the modern day piranha!

From Du Gu Ye’s movements, it seems like their group was familiar with piranha. With Qing Lian, a professor level scholar by their side, they ought to know what this is.

As Liu Yue and the others moved closer, Du Gu Ye noticed them and looked up for a moment. This moment was very quick as he looked back down to continue what he was doing.

“So the King of Yi is interested in this too?” Qing Lian looked over at Xuan Yuan Che as her face turned red.

Xuan Yuan Che didn't answer her and looked at Du Gu Ye.

"This kind of fish loves meat and is very ferocious. You should be careful." Seeing that Xuan Yuan Che didn't reply, she explained the situation to him. Xuan Yuan Che nodded and thanked her.

"Incredible!" Murong Wu Di looked at the snake that Li Mu put into the water. Only half of its body was remaining. This sent shivers down his spine.

In the [Topics of Heavens], it states that the exquisite fish loves meat. However, they didn't think that it would be so incredible. They were basically the same as the man-eating ants, except they live in water.

Chapter 373: Marriage of a Princess (4)

At this time, the river in front of Du Gu Ye and his group was billowing as the water flowed very quickly. The water was very clear and one can see that there were many exquisite fish under the river.

“Du Gu Ye, the ones with the ability will reap the rewards.” Liu Yue looked at the river and then smiled. She then looked over at Du Gu Ye and called out.

Du Gu Ye heard this and looked up. He saw the giant bundles that Xuan Yuan Che and his group was carrying and glared at it for a bit.

He can't underestimate this Liu Yue. If she's saying something like this, then she probably has a way to win.

Du Gu Ye slowly got up and waved his sleeves to dry it off. He knew what Liu Yue was thinking and yet he answered with a “yes.” He wanted to see what kind of abilities Liu Yue had.

Seeing this, she signaled Qiu Hen and Yan Hu while revealing a big smile.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu immediately moved and threw all of the python meat into the river.

The eight giant pieces of meat quickly filled the water.

The loud sound caused Tian Ya and the others to look over.

The python meat still had some blood on it as they threw it into the ocean. Immediately, it attracted countless amount of fishes towards it.

The water was violently moving with the piranhas flying towards the meat. The smell of blood from the python's meat was too rich and strong.

The piranhas were viciously biting the python meat.

Looking at how violent these things were and how turbulent the river flow had become, Xuan Yuan Che raised his brows. So there are things like this in the world huh?

Blood seeped out into the water, dying it red.

“What’s the use of this?” Princess Qing Lian saw this and raise her brows in confusion. All they had to do was lure these exquisite fish out of the water and then find their gall bladders. This maneuver by Liu Yue was making the fish crazy. It’s basically as if they were just feeding the fish.

Chapter 374: Marriage of a Princess (5)

No one answered her. Liu Yue was simply just ignoring her while bearing a smile on her face. Her arms were crossed in front of her chest as she watched the waves rolled around.

Xuan Yuan Che was standing by her side with a normal expression on his face.

“I don’t know.” Seeing this, Qing Shui followed up.

Princess Qing Lian watched as groups of exquisite fish swam towards the meat. Her raised her brows and began to ponder.

Liu Yue is just feeding them and yet her expression says that she won already. What does this mean? What exactly is she doing?

Qing Lian is a naturally smart person. She observed for a little while and her expression immediately changed, “Not good. She’s using poison!”

Liu Yue’s poison can kill a fierce thousand year old dragon snake without a problem, let alone some tiny exquisite fish. There must be something in that meat.

“You can’t use poison. If they die, the gallbladder’s color will change and it won’t be of any use.” Qing Lian anxiously yelled towards Liu Yue.

If they could use poison, they Du Gu Ye and his group would have done so a long time ago. If an exquisite fish is killed by poison, the gallbladder will become worthless.

“Stop her quickly!” Qing Lian yelled once again.

Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che stood here with a calm expression and ignored her. Qing Lian couldn’t help but turn towards Du Gu Ye and pulled his sleeves.

Du Gu Ye coldly stared at what they were doing and waved his hand, signal Qing Lian to not talk anymore. There was no way that they didn’t know that poison will render the gallbladder worthless Since the two of them looked so calm, they must have something else up their sleeves.

The wind blew gently and quietly as the stench of blood engulfed the entire area.

From the river, bones that were cleared of meat began to float up.

It didn't even take these fish a stick of incense worth of time to finish eating all the python meat.

These small exquisite fish were able to completely devour a giant white python the size of a mountain in such a short amount of time!

Chapter 375: Marriage of a Princess (6)

“Incredible!.” Yan Hu was speechless.

The river was scarlet red while silver linings were strutting back and forth in the water. It was very beautiful. It had a sinister and bloody kind of beauty to it.

“It really does move fast.” Liu Yue smiled and held her hand up. She slowly put each finger down and started a countdown, “Five. Four. Three. Two. One. Bang.”

After she counted down to one, her closed hand suddenly opened up like fireworks.

When her hand opened up, all of the piranhas swimming in the water flipped upside down as they all started to float upwards.

Ten. Hundred. Thousand. Ten thousand! In a split second, all of the piranhas that took a bite out of the meat floated up.

The scarlet color river was now filled with little silver fish. With the sunlight shining on them, the silver scales on the fish gleamed.

“They’re all dead?” Qing Lian stomped her feet in anger.

Du Gu Ye pondered a bit and then looked at Liu Yue. A dark look appeared in his eyes. He kind of understood where Liu Yue was going with this.

Qing Lian, Tian Ya and the others all furrowed their brows. However, when they saw the calm expression on Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che’s face, they began to frantically search the dead piranhas.

Only the Queen Exquisite Fish will have a hidden tempered gall bladder. It was one in ten thousand!

The entire river was filled with piranhas.

Liu Yue was carelessly playing with her dagger as she watched Xuan Yuan Che and the others search. She didn’t join because she didn’t know what the Queen Piranha looks like.

Du Gu Ye sighed. He was right about what she was doing. A good plan. It really was a good plan. He looked over at Liu Yue and then turned back around.

“Right here!” In the midst of the silence, Murong Wu Di suddenly yelled out. He quickly grabbed one of the piranhas in the middle of the river and returned ashore.

The beautiful silver fish was even smaller than the normal piranhas. There was a red scar line on its abdominal area. It looked very beautiful. At this time, it wasn't moving at all. It looked like everything but an alive fish.

Chapter 376: Marriage of a Princess (7)

When Xuan Yuan Che heard this, he quickly retrieved the exquisite fish from the river. With his finger, he slowly cut open its belly. A red gallbladder fell right into Xuan Yuan Che's hand.

Qiu Hen quickly came over with the Ice Jade Box that they had previously prepared and stored the gall bladder away.

When Princess Qing Lian saw this, her angry expression was quickly replaced by an astonished expression. Her eyes were glued to the red jewel-like gall bladder.

Liu Yue had definitely poisoned the exquisite fish and killed it. How come the gallbladder didn't turn grey? Why was it still fully red?

What was going on?

Meanwhile Liu Yue was standing there playing with her dagger while the boys did their thing. After she saw that Xuan Yuan Che got what she wanted, she picked up a rock and gently threw the rock into the river.

The rock created a small ripple as it sank into the river.

Suddenly, from the effects of the ripple, the piranhas that looked more dead than dead suddenly started to swim again.

"It moved?" Liu Cheng and the others saw this and were shocked.

Did these exquisite fish come back from the dead? How is that possible?

Each piranha slowly regained its vigor as it started to swim around just like before. In a few breaths of time, the river filled with dead fish was once again gleaming with silver streaks.

After a while, all of the piranhas in the river drifted away very quickly. The river was cleared up again without a single piranha in sight.

Except for the dead Queen Piranha beside Xuan Yuan Che's feet. If it wasn't for the body of the Queen Piranha, Qing Lian and the others might have thought that this was all an illusion.

How did this happen? No poison under the heavens have this kind of effect!

“It seems like you’ve let us win.” Liu Yue smiled as she looked towards Du Gu Ye who had a calm expression on his face.

Du Gu Ye looked deeply at the smiling Liu Yue. A smile suddenly appeared on his face. His eyes showed that he wanted to beat her.

Chapter 377: Marriage of a Princess (8)

“Great.” The Du Gu Ye who never praises anyone nodded at Liu Yue and smiled.

Standing next to Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Che nodded back at him. When he saw the smile appear on Du Gu Ye’s face, his brows furrowed. That smile....Xuan Yuan Che didn’t have a good feeling about it.

“We will meet again.” Du Gu Ye calmly look towards Liu Yue.

Easy come, easy go. If they lost then they lost. If they won then they won.

“Can you tell me how you did it?” Princess Qing Lian looked at Liu Yue. Her eyes were filled with question.

Liu Yue didn’t really like this Qing Lian. She looked over at her and replied, “You won’t understand.”

On the side, Yan Hu lifted his chest up in arrogance and respect, “My house’s princess consort can do things that normal people can’t. How can any normal person learn her techniques?”

His words were not polite at all.

Princess Qing Lian wasn’t mad. Instead, she turned around to look at Xuan Yuan Che and bowed. Right after, she turned around and left with Du Gu Ye.

Du Gu Ye and his group left very quickly.

Liu Yue was staring at Qing Lian as she left. There was a sinister look in her eyes. She really didn’t like this girl.

Liu Yue coldly snorted at Qing Lian who was disappearing into the forest. What she used against these piranhas was anesthetic. They didn’t have this during this this time. She used the wild plants in the forest to create a simple anesthetic and covered the meat with it. It was very simple.

“You’re still looking..” Xuan Yuan Che pulled Liu Yue’s cheeks and

angrily looked at her.

“I don’t like that girl.” Liu Yue replied.

Hearing this, the anger in Xuan Yuan Che’s expression subsided. So Liu Yue was looking at Qing Lian.

A smile appeared on his face as he held Liu Yue’s hand, “I don’t like her either.”

Xuan Yuan Che then laughed, “Alright. Let’s go. Let’s not think about unhappy things.”

“Right.” With both treasures in their hands, they can finally return the favor to the people on that island. They don’t owe anyone anything anymore. Qing Lian finally disappeared from Liu Yue’s sight. She looked at Xuan Yuan Che and grabbed onto his arm. Their group began to walk away as well.

Chapter 378: Marriage of a Princess (9)

Behind them, Murong Wu Di and the others all happily followed them.

The thick rainforest and the dangers that reside could not break their delighted mood at all.

Light shined through the forest and the river flowed calmly. It was a good day.

It was hard to enter the rainforest but it was easy to leave. Liu Yue and her group were well prepared already. In just ten days, they slaughtered a path out of the rainforest.

It was the middle of summer. The temperature was at its peak. Once they exited the rainforest, they felt like they were suddenly trapped in a steamer basket.

It wasn't noticeable in the rainforest due to the tall trees and the flowing river. Liu Yue and her group exited through the south side and ended up in the Nansong Empire. It was so hot that they couldn't handle it at all.

Xuan Yuan Che gave the two treasures to Murong Wu Di and had him send it back to the island overseas. Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che can finally have some free time together. However, the weather was so hot that they had to rest during the day and travel during the night. They went on a scenic tour on their way back to Tianchen.

On the peak of a mountain...

The deep blue sky in the horizons was just like water. The boundaries of the sky was limitless. It can make one stifle as if they were in a void.

Suddenly, in this endless void, countless amount of light rays pierced the sky. The golden light jumped out of the horizons and filled the entire area. It looked as if a ball of flames were shot into the sky.

Rays of light blossomed into every single direction.

It looked as if each ray of light contained an endless amount of power.

Surrounded by the rays of light, two people were standing on top of the mountain. The golden light engulfed their figures, causing them to shine in brilliance. They were standing there gracefully as if they were immortals.

“Beautiful.” Liu Yue breathed in the refreshing air. She looked towards the magnificent sunrise and complimented it.

She had never seen a sunrise before. She didn’t have a reason to and she didn’t have anyone to see it with.

She didn’t know that a sunrise would be so magnificent and elegant. It filled her heart with warmth.

“Such a vast and appealing sight. It was much more beautiful than the scenes depicted in paintings.” Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che stared at the range of mountains in front of them. The mountains had a divine green color. The view of the mountains continued into the horizons as if there was a never ending amount of them. This was the definition of something grand and majestic.

Xuan Yuan Che lifted his hand in front of him and watched as the golden light pierce through the space between his fingers. He was enjoying his view. The beauty of nature was simply indescribable.

Chapter 379: Marriage of a Princess (10)

Liu Yue turned around and looked at Xuan Yuan Che. That grand and majestic look on his face. The arrogance that he has. This was a man who looks to conquer the world.

She slowly moved her hand towards his and intertwined their fingers together. She held his hands tightly.

No matter what happens, she will also be by his side.

“Master, Mistress. The Dragon Riders brought news.” Qiu Hen held a letter sent by a flying pigeon and came running.

When they were in the rainforest, no one had a concrete location of their whereabouts so they couldn’t receive news from the outside world. When they finally left, news started to fly in.

Xuan Yuan Che received the letter and looked over it with Liu Yue.

“Snow Saint and Hou Jin fought like fire and water. Hou Jin has three hundred thousand troops stationed. Hou Jin’s minister escaped towards the Chen Empire.” The news was very short. With a single look, they were able to finish reading it. Xuan Yuan Che suddenly laughed loudly.

“For Hou Jin to fight the Snow Saint Empire, they need the help of the Chen Empire. This news about the minister escaping to the Chen Empire is just an excuse. It seems like this Chen Fei’s tactics are so-so.” After reading it, he released the flying pigeon back into the sky.

“If they really do battle, then Hou Jin’s destruction is imminent.” Qiu Hen revealed a smile.

Hearing this, Liu Yue looked over at Xuan Yuan Che. She was the one who stirred the tension between the two empires. However, the destruction of an empire isn’t really possible. Hou Jin is pretty strong themselves.

However, she didn’t care about what happened. She wanted Hou Jin to be destroyed in the first place.

Looking at how Liu Yue was thinking about things, Xuan Yuan Che smiled and flicked her nose, “It’s all because my Yue is incredible.”

The situation of the seven empires, the strategies for war, they can all change in matters of seconds. No one can be sure of what’s going to happen. Liu Yue doesn’t know any of the ancient stratagems so it was useless to tell her anything.

Liu Yue looked up at him with an arrogant look, “Of course!”

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che laughed loudly. The sound of the laughter resonated throughout the entire ravine.

“Mistress, there’s news from the Blood Shadow Guards.” In the midst of the laughter, Yan Hu quickly ran towards Liu Yue.

Chapter 380: Marriage of a Princess (11)

“Why is there so much news today?” Xuan Yuan Che didn’t bother receiving the letter. He was happily looking at Liu Yue. The Blood Shadow Guards belonged to Liu Yue, so she should be the one receiving the letter.

Liu Yue received the letter from Yan Hu. She saw that there were still some feathers stuck onto the letter and couldn’t help but raise her brow. People would attach chicken feathers to mails to show that it was a very urgent matter. Did they have something like this in the past? Was Du Yi trying to say that this was urgent matter?

(TLN: I think that there’s a something called Chicken Feather Mail (鸡毛信). One would attach some chicken feathers to express an urgent mail.) She opened up the letter and looked at it. When she read the contents of the letter, the happy expression that she had disappeared and was replaced with a dark expression. A murderous aura extruded from her body.

Seeing this, the smile on Xuan Yuan Che’s face disappeared as well, “What happened?” He reached over and retrieved the pigeon from Liu Yue’s hand.

“The Snow Saint emperor wants to be united with the master through matrimony. Snow Saint’s seventh princess and crowned prince have already made their move. The Emperor approved.”

It was a short message but it made Xuan Yuan Che frown as well. He crushed the paper in his hand.

“What’s going on? How can she marry the master? The master already has a princess consort....” Yan Hu furrowed his brows.

When they returned to Tianchen, they were going to plan and prepare for their marriage. Xuan Yuan Che had already sent news out already. How can something like this happen? Their master had finally reunited with the mistress.

The Snow Saint’s seven princess was the daughter of the queen. The

emperor really doted her. If Xuan Yuan Che really does marry her then the position of the principal wife.....

Their mistress' marriage was already bestowed by the emperor himself but it didn't happen it yet.

"That Yun Zhao... I will skin you alive!" Liu Yue was filled with killing intent. She gritted her teeth and grasped her hand into a fist.

If Yun Zhao was in front of her right now, she would have killed him a thousand times over.

She used his name to kill the Hou Jin's emperor and he returns the blow by marrying his sister to Xuan Yuan Che. He was trying to break Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che apart.

"Don't be mad. I'll take care of it. Don't be mad Yue." Xuan Yuan Che didn't have a good expression on his face either. Under the heavens, he decides who he marries.

Chapter 381: Marriage of a Princess (12)

“Master, the emperor have already given his word.” Qiu Hen tightly furrowed his brows. This was the most important part of the letter.

Having the emperor agree to this meant that the seventh princess was in the same situation as their little princess consort. They were both bestowed with royal order. The bestowment is one thing while Xuan Yuan Che’s willingness is another. The Snow Saint Empire is a lot stronger than Tianchen so if they break it off.....”

“Let’s go. We’re returning home.” Xuan Yuan Che grabbed Liu Yue by the waist and flew down the mountain quickly, “Send a message back. No matter the method, block Yun Zhao from entering the capital. Wait for me to return before doing anything. If anything goes wrong, all their heads will be on the line.”

The voice sounded as cold as ice.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu both looked at each other and followed up. They must take care of this Snow Saint Prince before he gets to Tianchen. If they enter the capital, then it’s not a matter of marrying or not marrying anymore. If something goes wrong, then a war will break out.

The blazing heat of the summer was surging from all directions.

Instead of sightseeing during the day, the four continuously flew towards Tianchen without stop.

At this moment, Yun Zhao and his seventh sister was getting closer and closer to Tianchen. They had all the dowry prepared already.

The entire Tianchen Empire was happily preparing to receive the bride.

The Snow Saint Empire was one of the strongest empires. If Tianchen allies with them through marriage there will be benefits without harm. This bride was the most doted seventh princess of their empire. Even the crowned prince had personally come to escort her. When Tianchen and Snow Saint becomes a family, the people’s mind can be at ease.

Everyone in the empire was joyful. Everyone except Xuan Yuan Che’s

Dragon Riders and Liu Yue's Blood Shadow Guards. They know what kind of personality their little princess has. They know that this isn't a good thing at all.

The entire imperial palace was filled with joy. All except for Xuan Yuan Che's newly built Glass Palace. It was very gloomy.

Towards the end of summer, there are many thunderstorms.

No one knows if this was going to be a good thing or not.....

Chapter 382: Convergence from all directions (1)

In the capital of Tianchen, everyone was excited for the arrival of the Snow Saint princess.

In the main hall of the imperial palace, all of the civil and military officials gathered for the morning assembly.

“Your highness, the roads in the east hasn’t been fixed yet. The Snow Saint princess is still stuck ten miles outside of the capital. They probably won’t be able to reach the capital any time soon.” The right minister frowned as he spoke.

Xuan Yuan Yi heard this and asked, “Why isn’t it fixed yet?”

A month ago, the road was suddenly destroyed and had stopped Yun Zhao in his tracks. The minister of transport had sent numerous amount of men to work on it already, but why isn’t it fixed yet?

“Right after it was fixed, it was destroyed again. Your subject, I, suspect that someone is behind all this.” The minister of transportation frowned and walked forward.

Xuan Yuan Yi isn’t stupid. There must be someone messing with the roads. However, what kind of people dare to make moves near the capital.....

Xuan Yuan Yi saw the solemn expression on the right minister’s face. To be able to mess with Tianchen without anyone knowing what was going on.....Only one person comes to mind.

Thus, Xuan Yuan Yi sighed, “Continue repairing.”

“Yes.” The minister of transportation heard this and immediately answered.

“Your highness, your subject, I, have researched the dates and the eighth of the next month is a very lucky and fine day. It is a very suitable date for weddings.....”

“Who told you that I wanted a wedding?” Before the minister could finish talking, a loud voice boomed into the hall, causing everyone to be shaken up.

At the same time, the servants yelled out loudly.

“The King of Yi has arrived!”

Xuan Yuan Yi who was on the dragon seat of the emperor immediately stood up. His face was filled with excitement. His son had finally returned. Xuan Yuan Che had finally returned after three whole years.

Xuan Yuan Che flew into the hall like a swift wind. He had a very cold expression on his face.

“My child. You’ve finally returned.” Xuan Yuan Yi was extremely happy and quickly walked down the towards him. Despite the presence of the ministers, he reached his hands out and tightly hugged Xuan Yuan Che.

Chapter 383: Convergence from all directions (2)

“Father.” Xuan Yuan Che felt a bit emotional after seeing his father for the first time in a long time. His expression softened as he hugged his father.

“You’re back. It’s good that you’re back.” The right minister was standing on the side and was very excited. He hasn’t seen Xuan Yuan Che for three years.

He had become even more handsome. His looks were more penetrating.

All of the ministers and officials present were all very happy to see him back and crowded around him. Their King of Yi had returned.

The entire hall was filled with joy.

Liu Yue was standing at the doors with her arms across her chest and watching everything. She had a very nonchalant look in her eyes. It looks very warm and gently but it didn’t show any joy or happiness.

She was happy for Xuan Yuan Che. Happy for the fact that he was able to reunite with his family. But her eyes didn’t show that at all.

“Princess.” In the midst of the celebration, Yan Hu saw Liu Yue standing by the door without moving and suddenly yelled out.

The word princess caused everyone to be shaken.

In the hall, everyone even the emperor all stopped moving. The excitement on their face had disappeared.

Princess.....Who else besides Liu Yue would Yan Hu call princess?

It was not good. Not good at all. They all know how powerful Liu Yue was. They all know the consequences of angering her. Right now, they were talking about Xuan Yuan Che’s marriage with the seventh princess in front of her. This was a good thing for Tianchen, but not a good thing for Liu Yue. They realize what they were doing.

Xuan Yuan Yi coughed and looked towards Liu Yue, “So Yue-er is back too.....” When he said that, he saw Liu Yue’s face and was shocked.

Those eyes. That face. Oh my god. It looks similar to how she looked three years ago but today.... It seems like.....

Xuan Yuan Yi choked.

All the ministers and officials present were all looking at the beautiful Liu Yue. Who is this? This couldn’t be that ugly, plainer than plain Murong Liu Yue right?

Chapter 384: Convergence from all directions (3)

They have all heard about how the little princess had some fake makeup on her face to make herself look like a plain girl. Rumors had it that her looks were capable of causing the downfall of an empire. However, they have never seen it for themselves. When they saw how she really looks like today, they couldn't help but stare.

Such beauty. It was simply too heavenly.

Liu Yue saw Xuan Yuan Yi's expression changed and couldn't help but furrow her brows and coldly snort.

All of the ministers and officials returned to their senses and started to laugh. They all greeted Liu Yue and didn't dare to look at her anymore. They all lined up once again.

"Father. When did I agree to have a big wedding?" When everyone lined up after seeing Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Che couldn't help but smile and turn towards his father.

Xuan Yuan Yi finally came back to his senses after hearing these words.

Xuan Yuan Yi's mouth twitched and looked at the asura standing by the door with her arms across her chest. Without saying anything, Liu Yue stared into Xuan Yuan Yi's soul.

This.... How should Xuan Yuan Yi deal with this?

The right minister immediately revealed a smile, "The emperor was just talking about the marriage between the prince and the little princess. He bestowed the wedding three years ago. Even if the prince isn't in a hurry, the emperor is already very antsy about this."

"Yeah. That's right. We were just talking about the King of Yi's wedding with the little princess consort."

"Right. Right. Right. The marriage between the prince and the little princess. We can't be skimpy about something like this."

All of the ministers knew what to do and all started to answer.

Liu Yue is their prince's little princess consort. Everyone including the other six empires know of this fact already. The marriage was bestowed by the emperor himself. Even if the Snow Saint Princess was here, she can't possibly marry Xuan Yuan Che before Liu Yue does.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Che coldly looked at the ministers and officials. He then looked over at Xuan Yuan Yi, "Huh?"

Xuan Yuan Yi saw that Xuan Yuan Che was clearly not buying it at all. Liu Yue was also staring them down like a tiger looking at its prey. This was something hard to deal with. Xuan Yuan Yi grabbed his son's hand and smiled, "Withdraw, withdraw. We'll talk about this matter tomorrow. We'll have to celebrate since Che-er has returned.

Chapter 385: Convergence from all directions (4)

When the emperor commanded the withdrawal, all of the ministers and officials answered loudly with “Yes your highness.” and quickly left the hall. They were all very fast as if they all had practice qing gong.

They all saw Liu Yue’s cold expression. They all know that they can’t afford to offend this asura.

“Let’s go. Let’s go. Che-er, Yue-er, follow father out.” While holding Xuan Yuan Che’s hand, Xuan Yuan Yi walked over to Liu Yue and grabbed her hand. His face was all smiles as he walked with them towards the Imperial Chambers.

Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue looked at each other without saying anything. It was their reunion today so they should be happy. It’s not too late to talk about some things later.....

During the reunion feast, the atmosphere was very cheerful.

Eunuchs and palace maids flowed into the hall without stopping. Food and drinks quickly filled the entire hall.

Under the starlit night sky, the musicians were singing without regret. Performers were enthusiastically performing. The beats of the drums pierced the heavens. It was a magnificent sight.

All of the important ministers and officials held their cups up high and were happily laughing.

They all walked towards Xuan Yuan Che and toasted to him. Their King of Yi had returned. Xuan Yuan Che was very happy as well and did not reject their toasts.

Liu Yue sat down next to Empress Chen and slowly ate her food. She was feeling happy. She doesn’t know why but when she sees that Xuan Yuan Che was happy, she felt happy too.

“Yue-er, you’re finally back. Mother has been feeling sad for these past

three years.” Empress Chen looked at Liu Yue with a smile.

Other people were scared of Liu Yue but she wasn't. She liked Liu Yue a lot.

“Did the emperor bully you?” Hearing this, Liu Yue turned around and looked at Empress Chen, “I'll help you vent your anger.” Liu Yue liked Xuan Yuan Che's mother. If Xuan Yuan Yi bullies her, then she will get Xuan Yuan Yi back.

Hearing this, Empress Chen laughed and held Liu Yue's hand, “You brat. Do you the the emperor dares to bully mother? I'm just feeling sad because I haven't seen you in a long time.”

Chapter 386: Convergence from all directions (5)

These words filled Liu Yue's heart with warmth. She smiled and looked at Empress Chen.

Seeing this, Empress Chen patted Liu Yue's hand, "Since you're back now, why don't you guys host your wedding? Look at my son, every time he comes back, the first thing he would do is go see you. If you guys still don't get your wedding, then Che-er will definitely blame me."

"Thank you mother."

Empress Chen and the other concubines all started to laugh. This Liu Yue is really direct!

"It will probably happen next month. After the King of Yi marries Yue-er, it probably won't take more than a few days until that seventh princess marries him as a concubine. Even if her Snow Saint Empire is strong, they still have to respect our Yue-er." One of the imperial concubines laughed.

"Right. Right. They have to respect our Yue-er." The other concubines all repeated with smiles on their faces.

When Liu Yue heard this, her expression sank.

Empress Chen saw this and lightly patted Liu Yue's back, "Yue-er, Che-er is going to be Tianchen's emperor sooner or later. He'll definitely have a few concubines. But, Yue-er, no one will be able to take you off of the Empress' seat.

Later on, mother will teach you some things. You need a big heart to become the mother of an empire. Our Yue-er will definitely not be inferior to any past empresses at all. Am I right?"

Empress Chen was trying to comfort Liu Yue.

When Liu Yue heard this, she felt torn and didn't say anything.

One of the commanders turned towards Xuan Yuan Che and smiled,

“The prince is really lucky. To have a princess as outstanding as Liu Yue and you also have the seventh princess of Snow Saint as your concubine. This kind of luck, I’m afraid only our King of Yi can have this kind of luck.”

“Haha. That’s right.” Many of the nearby ministers all yelled out in joy.

Hearing this, the joyful and warm expression that Xuan Yuan Che had suddenly turned cold. He coldly looked at that minister and released a cold aura. It sent shiver down people’s spines.

Chapter 387: Convergence from all directions (6)

All of the ministers and officials that were happily enjoying themselves immediately stopped talking and shivered when their eyes met with Xuan Yuan Che's cold gaze.

"Che-er" The happy emperor Xuan Yuan Yi put down his glass and furrowed his brows after seeing this.

Xuan Yuan Che didn't care about his father's call and stood up with a solemn expression.

He coldly looked at everyone present and made a statement in front of them, "You guys will prepare for my wedding in a month's time normally. I will marry my princess Liu Yue then. My ONLY princess.

The last three words were emphasized. Xuan Yuan Che made sure that every single person in the hall heard what he said.

The emperor and the ministers and officials were all startled.

His only princess? What does this mean?

Liu Yue lifted her head as she looked at the solemn Xuan Yuan Che. A smile appeared on her face.

Xuan Yuan Che waved his sleeves as he turned around and walked down the stage towards where Liu Yue was sitting. He held Liu Yue by her waist and kissed her face. He didn't look at anyone else. His gaze was focused on Liu Yue, "In my life, I will only marry Liu Yue."

The sound of his voice was followed by the early autumn wind. It further projected his voice throughout the entire area.

The singers on the stage, the actors, the busy eunuchs and maids, the joyful ministers and officials all quiet down.

The entire place was filled with silence.

At this moment, only the sound of wind echoed throughout the hall.

Everyone looked at each other and was dumbstruck.

“You scared them.” Liu Yue looked at everyone and giggled.

It’s just that he’s going to marry one person. What is there to be so surprised about?

She turned around and looked at Empress Chen who was still in a shocked state and firmly said, “I’m very stingy. My husband can only have one wife. Me!”

Xuan Yuan Che held Liu Yue’s hand tighter and looked at his shocked parents, “Father, Mother, your son is very tired from the long trip. I’ll take my leave first.” Saying that, he swaggeringly walked out with Liu Yue.

Chapter 388: Convergence from all directions (7)

“This, What.....”

“Heavens. What is going on.....”

“Only marry one.....”

Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue had both disappeared into the darkness before everyone else returned to their senses.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu who left with Liu Yue showed a face of pity. Those poor ministers were all shocked.

In the newly built Glass Palace.

Liu Yue sat on the bed and looked over at Xuan Yuan Che, “Do I need to make a move?”

“No need. I’ll take care of it.” Xuan Yuan Che pinched Liu Yue’s face and smiled with charisma and confidence. If he can’t even resolve this problem at hand, then he doesn’t deserve Liu Yue at all.

Liu Yue looked at how confident Xuan Yuan Che was and didn’t feel anxious or worried anymore. If he had allowed her to make her move, she will definitely be quick and direct. She will skin whoever that wants to take her Xuan Yuan Che away from her.

While thinking about this, Liu Yue stood up and yawned. As she took off her clothes, she looked over at Xuan Yuan Che, “Going to sleep. I’m tired. It’s been awhile since I’ve been able to get a good night sleep.

Since she rushed back from the rainforest, she was feeling very tired and wanted to sleep.

When she changed into her sleepwear, Liu Yue was about to get into bed when she saw Xuan Yuan Che staring at her.

When she saw those eyes, she felt a lot better.

Seeing the look in Xuan Yuan Che’s eyes, Liu Yue revealed a sinister

smile. She started to slowly undo her clothes.

The jade colored undergarment slowly opened up as Liu Yue ran her fingers through it. Her silky white skin slowly revealed itself. It looked as if her skin was glowing inside the room. The sight was very alluring.

The straps of her undergarment slowly slid down to her elbows as the undergarment half revealed her well rounded breasts.

Slowly turning around, she gently lifted her underwear as she raised her right leg. Her underwear loosened as she revealed her slender calves.

With her back facing Xuan Yuan Che, the straps of her undergarment slid down to her wrists.

Chapter 389: Convergence from all directions (8)

Liu Yue tried to turn her hands around but it seems like her hands were tied up by her undergarment. She couldn't undo it no matter how hard she tried. It felt as if she was tied up.

After struggling for a while, she looked up at Xuan Yuan Che.

The room suddenly became hotter and hotter.

Liu Yue's eyes smiled as she revealed a lustful expression.

This look that she had on her face..... It was able to instantly kill any man alive.

"It's stuck. Come help." Liu Yue let out a soft seductive voice.

"Oof." Two streams of blood shot out of Xuan Yuan Che's nose. His face was so hot that you can fry an egg on them.

He plugged his nose and then calmly replied, "It's too hot. My nose is feeling a bit dry...." While saying that, he quickly disappeared like the wind.

"Hahahaha....." Seeing this, Liu Yue laughed and rolled around on her bed.

Her Xuan Yuan Che was so pure. It was too cute.

Outside the palace, Yan Hu saw Xuan Yuan Che wildly flying towards the Imperial Icy Springs. He furrowed his brows and looked over at Qiu Hen, "Is the weather really that hot?"

Qiu Hen looked up at the sky and heard Liu Yue laughing in the palace. He calmly looked back at Yan Hu, "Well it's going to be hot for one more month. It won't be hot anymore after the wedding."

"No shit. Why would it still be hot in a month's time." Yan Hu glared at Qiu Hen. Of course it won't be hot in October. What was Qiu Hen trying to say.

Qiu Hen didn't bother with this inept Yan Hu. The weather wasn't hot at all. However, for Xuan Yuan Che who would only touch Liu Yue after their wedding, he will be feeling extra hot for the next month.

The autumn wind blew by, creating a rustling sound as the dried leaves started to fall.

The breeze felt very nice. In the blink of an eye, it was the next morning already.

"My son, what is the meaning of this? Only marrying Liu Yue?" In the Tianchen Palace, Xuan Yuan Yi furrowed his brows as he looked at the expressionless Xuan Yuan Che.

Xuan Yuan Che replied coldly, "Father, I should be asking you what your meaning is. Did father forget that I'll take care of my own businesses?"

His voice was cold and gloomy.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Yi was shocked. He didn't forget about this matter, but.....

Chapter 390: Convergence from all directions (9)

“Che-er. Father is thinking about you.....The Snow Saint Empire.....”

“Father. Don’t do anything more regarding this matter. I will deal with it. It’d be best if father doesn’t meddle with my affairs. You should know Yue-er’s personality.” Xuan Yuan Che had a cold look in his eyes.

After hearing Xuan Yuan Che bring up Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Yi couldn’t help but furrow his brows. He knew how dangerous and incredible Liu Yue was.

“Father knows how incredible she is. Even if the seventh princess arrives, she won’t be able to bully Liu Yue. You don’t have to be worried.”

He extended his hand to stop Xuan Yuan Che from replying, “Che-er, you have to remember that Tianchen will belong to you sooner or later. You have to think about this as the ruler of the empire.

Father doesn’t care about how much you dote Liu Yue. She deserves to be doted and loved. You can love her more than anyone else. Heck, you can love her only. It doesn’t matter. But in our situation, you have to connect with the Snow Saint Empire by marriage. Our Tianchen cannot afford to offend Snow Saint.

I know that Yue-er cares for you. After you marry the seventh princess, as long as Yue-er can keep it clean, I won’t say anything even if Yue-er kills her. Che-er you understand me right? I know how you are. You are destined to dominate the entire continent. You can’t fall at the starting point now can you?”

Looking at Xuan Yuan Che, Xuan Yuan Yi spoke slowly. One needs patient to dominate the world. World domination isn’t done in a single day. It needs to be done step by step.

Right now, Tianchen doesn’t have the power to fight against the Snow Saint Empire. To give up the entire empire for his own son’s interests.... This wasn’t something a good emperor would do.

“I won’t fall. Since I dare to refuse the marriage, I’m telling you that I have the ability to fight against the Snow Saint Empire. Father, Tianchen isn’t soft either. We can’t let others mess with us whenever they want.”

Xuan Yuan Che looked at his father with a decisive look. This look contained arrogant confidence.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Yi stared at Xuan Yuan Che and didn’t reply.

This was his son. He knows what kind of personality he has. Ah.... Maybe he’s getting old already. So old that he can’t think straight anymore....

Chapter 391: Convergence from all directions (10)

“Fine. Fine. Do what you want. As long as you can deal with it.” Xuan Yuan Yi threw his hands up as if he had given up. Maybe he should give Tianchen to Xuan Yuan Che already. It’s only a matter of time.

“Your son won’t put Tianchen in danger at all. Father can be at ease.” Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Che’s cold expression lightened up and replied.

Turning around, he walked out of the Tianchen Palace. ‘Yun Zhao...ah Yun Zhao.... Do you really think you can do whatever you want just because your Snow Saint Empire is a bit stronger?’

The autumn wind blew as it caused ripples through the water.

Scent of autumn cassias and flowers drifted along the wind.

In the Imperial Garden, the osmanthus flowers and lotuses bloomed brilliantly. In the lotus pond, many Koi fishes were swimming.

Within this beautiful scene, Liu Yue was sitting on the bridge, fishing.

The Koi fish in the pond were all raised to be observed by others. When Liu Yue remembered that these were one of the emperor’s favorite things, she immediately got a fishing rod and ran here to fish. Many eunuchs and maids passed by but none of them said anything.

“Master.” Du Yi slowly and quietly moved towards Liu Yue and whispered something into her ears.

Xuan Yuan Che made his move already.

“Oh.” while listening to Du Yi, Liu Yue smiled and raised her fishing rod. A big, fat, Koi fish was raised out of the water. It was jumping around in mid air.

“You can’t eat someone else’s food. You might die from it.” Liu Yue grabbed the Koi and smiled sinisterly.

She sent a few hand gestures towards Du Yi. After seeing this, Du Yi

bowed and left.

She doesn't blame Xuan Yuan Yi and Empress Chen at all. After all, they all have their own views.

In the ancients, powerful men had many concubines. In order to rope in other powers, families would connect with each other by marriage. This was very common. No one would think that it's weird. It's only one more woman in his bed, what's wrong with that? However, Liu Yue didn't like it. She had expressed her intentions clearly.

"Princess of Yi, the Empress invites you to discuss the matter of the wedding attire."

"Alright." She answered very directly and walked away with her fishing rod. This Koi fish that she caught doesn't look bad at all. It seems like she'll be cooking it with the empress.

Chapter 392: Convergence from all directions (11)

If you steal someone else's belongings, you will be stepped on.

The sweet fragrance of autumn cassias assailed the nostrils.

The news of Tianchen's King of Yi and his little princess consort returning spread throughout the lands. The entire Tianchen empire was feeling very joyous. Their King of Yi and that incredible little princess consort had returned to the empire.

At the same time, the Snow Saint group that was stuck outside of the empire heard the news as well. The roads were quickly fixed up for them to continue their journey.

"Reporting in. Urgent message from Jin City." All the the ministers were talking about the matters of the wedding during this assembly. This urgent message broke their trance of joy as they all turned around.

"What happened?" Xuan Yuan Che asked.

"Your highness, the Nansong empire has dispatched their prime minister along with their fourteenth princess to Tianchen to seek marriage with the king of Yi. They have already arrived in Jin City."

When everyone heard this, they all looked at each other in dismay. Why is there another one?

Xuan Yuan Che furrowed his brows and a cold expression appeared on his face.

"They have also deployed a hundred thousand soldiers to accompany the prime minister and princess. They are stationed in the southern borders of our empires, around ten miles away from Jin City."

"Accompanied by a hundred thousand troops? What is the meaning of this?"

"To threaten us...."

‘That damned Nansong Empire. They dare threaten my Tianchen?’

After the initial shocked reaction, all of the minister’s expression darkened. Tianchen can’t afford to offend Aoyun, Snow Saint or Hou Jin. The Nansong Empire on the other hand... Tianchen can definitely take care of them.

“Reporting in. Urgent message from Yi River Passage.” Before Xuan Yuan Che could say another word, another report came in.

Xuan Yuan Che furrowed his brows. The Yi River Passage..... He had a few hundred thousand of his Tiger Guards stationed there. An urgent message? What happened?

“Talk.”

“Your highness, the Aoyun Empire have sent a message.” Before Xuan Yuan Che could say anything, the reporter quickly spoke again.

Chapter 393: Convergence from all directions (12)

“This old King Wu have heard all about the King of Yi’s heroic deeds overseas and in the rainforest. This old one is very happy to see that the King of Yi is such a talented man. Talents like this must be appreciated. Even though Tianchen and Aoyun are separated by mountain passes and rivers, we are still good friends with good relationships. I hope to deepen the relationships of our two countries even more. I have sent the crowned prince Du Gu Ye and the fifth princess towards Tianchen for a marriage. I hope that we can forever maintain our good relationship.”

This quick message from Aoyun caused the entire hall to become silent. Not even the sound of breathing could be heard.

Du Gu Ye! Xuan Yuan Che clenched his fist.

“Urgent message? This is a good.....” Xuan Yuan Yi felt Xuan Yuan Che’s gaze and swallowed his words before he finished talking.

“The Aoyun Empire have also sent four hundred thousand troops to accompany the crowned prince and princess. They have already passed the borders of the Chen empire.”

“Whaat?” The right minister jumped in surprise. Four hundred thousand troops to accompany a marriage? What kind of marriage accompaniment is that? This is.....

“They’re stationed outside of the Chen Empire already? Shit.” Xuan Yuan Yi couldn’t sit still anymore. Nansong’s hundred thousand troops was nothing in his eyes. However, Aoyun’s four hundred thousand was a completely different matter.

“Che-er, this.....”

Xuan Yuan Che was expressionless as he waved his hands. He looked out of the palace at the blue sky and calmly said, “What are we fretting about?”

Everyone in the hall calmed down when they heard Xuan Yuan Che. They all looked at each other. Snow Saint was trying to force a marriage but why did two more empires appear out of nowhere as well? What does this mean?

“Reporting in. The Zhao Empire have opened their borders. Three hundred thousand Snow Saint troops have entered the Zhao Empire and coming towards us. They are saying that they will accompany the seventh princess in her marriage.

Xuan Yuan Yi shivered. The Snow Saint troops came as well?

“Excuse.... This is all an excuse!” The right minister’s expression turned green.

Why would you need to send so many troops for a simple marriage? The marriage is simply an excuse. They want to ally together to attack Tianchen. They’re basically declaring war on Tianchen!

“That’s right. It’s all an excuse! Nansong, Aoyun and Snow Saint. They’re all colluding!”

“Shit. If the Chen Empire and Zhao Empire are both allowing them to pass then they might be.....” Some of the generals present were shocked.

Three empires were colluding together to attack, two empires have opened up their borders. There’s only Hou Jin left....

“Reporting in. Aoyun’s crowned prince have personally written a letter for the King of Yi.”

Another urgent report came in.

“Bring it up.” Xuan Yuan Che’s eyes were filled with coldness. Du Gu Ye.... Who else besides Du Gu Ye could have planned all of this.

It seems like everything was prepared already and sent to Tianchen at the same time.

This..... This is going to be chaotic.

Chapter 394: The Peerless Beauty (1)

The letter was written on a golden paper and there were only a few words on it.

‘Selfishness is a part of human nature.’

Seven words. Seven dumb words. However, these seven words made Xuan Yuan Che crush the paper with his hands.

None of the officials and ministers dared to speak. They could only look at the cold Xuan Yuan Che with fear.

The entire hall was silent.

The messenger soldier gulped and didn't dare to meet Xuan Yuan Che's eyes, “The Crowned Prince of Aoyun have also left a message by mouth. The accompanying troops may advance or retreat. It all depends on the King of Yi.

Hearing that, Xuan Yuan Che's expression turned even colder. At this moment, all of the other people in the hall were thinking about the same thing. Are the marriages necessary?

“To pressure our prince into marriage without even sending the bride to meet him. They're playing games I say. But, there is a quick solution to this problem. If the King of Yi marries them, then our Tian.....” The right minister began to speak and suddenly felt Xuan Yuan Che's murderous gaze upon himself. He immediately shut his mouth out of fear.

“I have said this once already. I will only marry one person in this life.” Xuan Yuan Che spoke with a resolute tone.

When all the ministers and officials heard this again, they couldn't help but furrow their brows. To marry only one person, this.....

“Che-er. I'm afraid that.....” Xuan Yuan Yi coughed and started to speak.

Before Xuan Yuan Yi could finish, Xuan Yuan Che stuck his hand out, stopping Xuan Yuan Yi in his tracks.

Xuan Yuan Che coldly glared at every single person in the hall, “You guys are all scared because of some bluff? Can my Tianchen still count on you guys to take over the world?”

These words made everyone present swallow hard. They all remained silent.

“Hmph. The three empires have gathered a few hundred thousand troops to attack my Tianchen. They deployed their armies out of nowhere without any preparations. Tell me. How should we fight this war?”

The cold voice echoed throughout the hall.

When everyone heard this, they all looked at each other. Once they heard that the three empires were sending a few hundred thousand troops to attack Tianchen, they all began to panic. How can Tianchen be their opponent? It's one against three!

Chapter 395: The Peerless Beauty (2)

However, Xuan Yuan Che's words reminded them of something.

Snow Saint, Ao Yun and Nansong....

Only the Nansong Empire borders their Tianchen. If the other two wants to fight, they must cross the Zhao Empire and the Chen Empire.

To fight across borders..... This isn't something that can be done so suddenly. They needed sufficient funds for it.

Provisions, weapons, and soldiers didn't fall from the sky. They needed to gather everything together. The few hundred thousand troops and horses can't just fly over all of a sudden either.

They needed a refined plan for something like this to work. They can't fight just because they want to.

All of the people in the hall were high officials and ministers of the third rank or higher. They can't be stupid if they were able to reach this position.

They finally understood what Xuan Yuan Che mean by bluff.

"But what if....." Xuan Yuan Yi rubbed his head. He was still a bit worried. The three empires have started to move already. Could they really be bluffing?

This is all so they can marry one of their princesses to Xuan Yuan Che. Why is there a need to bluff? Maybe they really did want to fight and the marriage was just an excuse.

"There's no what ifs." Xuan Yuan Che turned around and looked at Xuan Yuan Yi.

He then turned back to face everyone else, "I will take care of this matter. Relay my orders to the four generals at the borders. Organize their armies and be on guard. Prepare for battle at any given moment.

Generals, come out to have a discussion with me. As for the rest of you, the assembly is adjourned."

Xuan Yuan Che spoke with authority. His subjects all listened and replied with a, “Yes, your highness.”

All of the ministers and officials bowed and left.

They were all captured by Xuan Yuan Che’s words and forgot that their king was still silently there.

After telling everyone else to leave, Xuan Yuan Che bowed to his father and brought the generals to the imperial study.

Xuan Yuan Yi sat on his throne and watched Xuan Yuan Che. His brows were still furrowed.

Outside of the Palace Hall, the sweet, warm autumn wind blew.

“What? Snow Saint, Ao Yun and Nansong all want to attack Tianchen?” Liu Yue was sitting there relaxing by herself. When she heard Du Yi’s message, she couldn’t help but furrow her brows.

Chapter 396: The Peerless Beauty (3)

“Can’t tell.” Du Yi did not give a definitive answer.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows, she lightly tapped her fingers on the files that Du Yi brought over.

“That Du Gu Ye is so despicable. Using the army to threaten our prince to marry their princess, all to break apart the prince and the little princess consort. Who in the right mind would do something like this?

Hmph. Do they think that our Tianchen can be easily bullied? Do they think that our prince is a coward? Bullshit!” Yan Hu was filled with murderous intent.

When Xuan Yuan Che openly stated that he was going to only marry Liu Yue, everyone was present. For Du Gu Ye to do something like this, it was obvious that he was trying to break the two apart.

With their little princess’ temper, if their prince really does marry some other princess, then the world may come to an end. That will also be when their prince loses the little princess forever.”

“This is not all.” Liu Yue shook her head.

Using a forced marriage to break up Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che? That’s wishful thinking!

If they really do come, she’ll just have to kill them all. What can they do? Ao Yun and Snow Saint were both far away. Nansong was nothing to be afraid of.

For Du Gu Ye to make such a move, he didn’t want to simply have Xuan Yuan Che marry their princesses. He was using an underhand method to break Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che apart.

The marriage proposal was just a facade. Du Gu Ye must have some other plans after deploying the army.

What exactly is he trying to do?

Could they really be trying to gang up on Tianchen? Liu Yue furrowed

her brows again.

“Little princess. Don’t worry. The prince said that he’ll only have you. He doesn’t care about anything else. As for all these troops, the prince said that he’ll take care of everything. Du Gu Ye is most likely bluffing. There’s nothing to worry about. The prince said that he wants you to sleep tight.”

Qiu Hen relayed Xuan Yuan Che’s words and then immediately turned around and left.

Yan Hu followed right behind him.

The house quiet down. Only Liu Yue and Du Yi were left.

Liu Yue tapped her fingers on the table and looked outside. The night was very dark. It was the darkest that she’s ever seen. There was not a single star in the sky.

\

This dark night gave her an anxious feeling.

What does Du Gu Ye want to do?

Chapter 397: The Peerless Beauty (4)

Days fly by.....

Liu Yue never went to ask Xuan Yuan Che if he needed any help. Right now, she can't help with anything anyways. Her Blood Shadow Corps were assassins, not fighters.

As long as they know where someone is, they will be able to assassinate them.

However, Du Gu Ye knew about the Blood Shadow Corps and have hid himself very well. Even if they want to kill him, they can't.

As for fighting a war, Liu Yue didn't know anything about it so sheh can't help out.

However, Du Gu Ye has to come out of hiding some day. She has all the time in the world. She can easily wait.

Every time Du Yi reports back to her, she feels more and more anxious.

Yun Zhao who was only ten miles away from Tianchen were moving very slowly. They walked for a bit and then stopped for a bit. This had gone on for many days already. It's been a month already and they still haven't finished the ten miles.

Being him, the few hundred thousand troops from Snow Saint were moving at an astonishing rate. It only took them a month to cross the Zhao Empire. They were getting closer and closer to Tianchen.

She sent someone to keep an eye on Yun Zhao but Yun Zhao didn't do anything at all. He was leisurely spending his time, doing nothing at all.

During this month, the few hundred thousand troops from Ao Yun, that they all thought was a bluff, really did cross the Chen Empire and was getting closer and closer to Tianchen.

However, Du Gu Ye was still nowhere to be seen.

There was very little news regarding Du Gu Ye and Qing Lian. Around ten days ago, it is said that they crossed the borders of Tianchen. They

were moving very slowly as well.

Their traces were very hard to track.

At the same time, the Nanson Empire's ten thousand army moved slowly towards the Tianchen empire.

The three empires were closing in.

When the three empires closed in, the Zhao empire and Chen empire began to move as well.

They weren't saying that they were going to marry their princesses. They didn't say that they wanted to go to war with Tianchen either.

All they said was that the two empire's emperors want to come to Tianchen to have a friendly chat. They had some troops to guard the king just in case.

By some troops, they meant two hundred thousand troops.

The troops from the two countries that were stationed at the borders began to move as well.

Chapter 398: The Peerless Beauty (5)

In Tianchen, troops were dispatched to the three border stations. The atmosphere was very stern. Everyone was ready for battle.

All the powers under the heaven were gathering towards Tianchen.

All except for the quiet Hou Jin Empire. However, Hou Jin made it clear that they were going to be bystanders. They hated the Snow Saint empire but didn't make a move at all.

Even Xuan Yuan Che who continuously called this a bluff started to dispatch troops towards the border stations.

Since he thought it was a bluff, then why would he dispatch troops? Could it mean that.....

Liu Yue doesn't know anything about the art of war. All she knew was that the other empires had allied with each other all of a sudden. Well, she didn't care about this at all. All she cares about is Xuan Yuan Che's safety.

But the chaotic news that she received for the past few days made her very anxious. It made her worry. She had a bad feeling about this.

"Yue-er, what's wrong?" Empress Chen knitted her brows and asked as she helped Liu Yue tighten her belt.

Liu Yue returned to her senses and simply replied, "Nothing."

Empress Chen looked deeply at Liu Yue and smiled, "This wedding attire is very beautiful. In ten days, my Liu Yue will definitely be the most beautiful princess!"

"Mother." Liu Yue felt Empress Chen's warmth and called out.

When Empress Chen heard this, she slowly stroked Liu Yue's head and softly replied, "Don't think about it too much. Che-er said he can handle it. He can do it if he says so. Our Tianchen isn't easily bullied you know."

Liu Yue looked up at Empress Chen.

When Xuan Yuan Che announced that he was only going to marry Liu

Yue in his life, Empress Chen didn't say anything or make any faces at the statement. Instead, she supported and accepted her son's decision."

She knew that there was almost a million troops on their way to Tianchen. The atmosphere in the palace was very heavy. When people saw her, they would take a detour and walk the other way.

This was all because Xuan Yuan Che said that he'll only marry Liu Yue. This was all because Liu Yue said that she was stingy and didn't want her husband to have another wife. Thus, a lot of people believed that it was Liu Yue that put Tianchen in this situation. She never heard them complain about anything but she knows that they do.

Chapter 399: The Peerless Beauty (6)

Empress Chen was the only one that didn't say anything.

Her clear eyes were filled with deep emotions. This was a mother's love.

"Why didn't you oppose it?" Even in the midst of the emotional moment, Liu Yue still had some doubts.

Empress Chen sat down next to Liu Yue and smiled, "This is because Che-er is my own flesh and blood. As long as he's happy and healthy, I'm happy too."

She rubbed Liu Yue's hands and sighed, "The customs are ruthless. A good wife like you is hard to come by. Also, it was rare for Che-er to have such sincere feelings towards someone. As a mother, I should be happy for you two.

Child. There are many imperial concubines in the imperial harem. It is a dog eat dog environment out here. Everyone is trying to scheme against each other.

Mother doesn't want this beautiful relationship that you guys have to be ruined in this kind of environment. Since Che-er is determined to have only one wife, I will definitely support him until the end. No matter how big the storm is, as long as you two are together, you will definitely be able to create a path."

These warm words from Empress Chen filled Liu Yue with emotions. She nodded and grabbed onto Empress Chen's hand.

This small nod from Liu Yue meant a thousand words.

Empress Chen smiled back and continued to rub Liu Yue's head.

At that moment, the two of them didn't say anything. They sat there in silent. A warm feeling could be felt in the room.

"Hey did you hear? Five of the empires will attack our Tianchen soon." In the midst of silence, one of the palace maid's voice could be heard.

"How can I not hear about it? I heard that some people near the borders

have ran away already. It's all that witch's fault!"

"Right?! If it wasn't for that witch, how can our Tianchen end up like this? With five empires all attacking, Tianchen will definitely be destroyed. At that time, we'll be subjugated slaves!"

"Yeah. Let me tell you this. I heard this from the second prince. On the surface, that Ao Yun crowned prince is trying to marry away his sister. However, in reality, he fell for that witch too. This time, he allied with the four other empires just to get his hands on that witch!"

Our prince is definitely seduced by that witch. How can someone be that heads over heels for her? He refused to give her up and announced that he won't marry anyone else. He angered the Ao Yun crowned prince so that's why....."

Chapter 400: The Peerless Beauty (7)

“What are you talking about? Without the little princess, how can our Tianchen be what it is today? Go back and do your work.” A old voice yelled out.”

Witch? She’s a witch?

Liu Yue couldn’t even be angry at what they were saying.

She rubbed her forehead to calm herself down.

If it wasn’t for the fact that she risked her life to save Xuan Yuan Che that day. If it wasn’t for the fact that she stayed at the borders for three years, not allowing the Chen and Zhao Empire to advance towards Tianchen.... How can Tianchen be what it is today? How can they be living in Tianchen today?

Now, they’re all calling her a witch. An ordinary palace maid was calling her a witch!

“Child. Don’t be angry. Don’t mind it. Mother will take care of this and will give you an explanation.” Empress Chen’s expression turned very ugly as well.

“I’ll go rest first.” Liu Yue calmed herself down. She took off her wedding dress and left very quickly.

If she didn’t leave, she’s afraid that she’ll kill that palace maid.

She was trying to leave so quickly that she almost bumped into the approaching Du Yi and Qiu Hen.

“Princess, what’s going on?” Qiu Hen saw that Liu Yue had an ugly expression on her face and asked.

She suppressed her anger and replied, “I’m leaving. Going to walk around.” While saying that, she ran towards the exit of the palace.

She’s been keeping an eye on Xuan Yuan Che and the movements of the other empires. She knew that there were people talking behind her back but she didn’t think that it would be so excessive.

There was a rumor amongst the people that Du Gu Ye started the war just because he wanted to take her away from Xuan Yuan Che. What the hell.....

Seeing how Liu Yue was going out to walk around with such a murderous intent, Du Yi didn't say anything and followed her. Qiu Hen saw this and abandoned all his plans to follow them.

Their princess had a murderous aura around her. There's a problem.

White Marsh House, the most famous restaurant in the capital.

The entire restaurant was filled with distinguished people. It was very noisy as well.

"The guards at the border is about to set off the flares. My God. Five empires will be attacking our Tianchen.... We're done for....."

"Shush. Don't speak nonsense."

"Nonsense? What nonsense? Everyone knows that our Tianchen will be destroyed soon."

Chapter 401: The Peerless Beauty (8)

“Isn’t all because of our King of Yi’s princess Murong Liu Yue? Why can’t she just sit still and be our King of Yi’s little princess. Why would she go and seduce that Ao Yun Empire’s crowned prince? Now look at what happened. The Ao Yun crowned prince is allying with three empires to attack our Tianchen in order to snatch her away.”

“Really?”

“The Ao Yun Prince Du Gu Ye said so himself. It can’t be fake. The entire world knows about it!

He also said that to complement our King of Yi, he specially picked out the princess from the other countries for him. But our King of Yi is stubborn and rejected him. The Ao Yun crowned prince got angry and got the other countries to attack.

“Goddamn! To abandon an entire empire for a beauty. Our King of Yi is muddled. Muddle minded I say!”

“Motherfucker. That shameless Murong Liu Yue. She entered the palace when she was thirteen. She’s probably loose by now. Our King of Yi is probably tired of her already but still doesn’t want to give her up to that Ao Yun crowned prince. He’s ruining all the citizen’s lives. This war.... We are going to suffer....”

“My son is still at the borders... This time.... My son.....”

“That damned source of calamity. Why don’t you go die.....”

Outside the restaurant, everyone was cursing her. All of their curses entered her ears.

She took a deep breath and leaned by on her chair. Then she closed her eyes.

She knows that this is what Du Gu Ye wants. He wants her to become the most hated person in all of Tianchen. He wants to put all the pressure on Xuan Yuan Che.

He gave a timely and perfect excuse for attacking Tianchen with five empires.

The rumor was spread at the perfect timing. It was very cunning.

Let's not say all five empires, Tianchen can't even fight Ao Yun by themselves. The smartest move would be to give her up.

However, Xuan Yuan Che didn't want to give her up and became a sinner in the eyes of the people of Tianchen. As for Liu Yue, she became the witch that brought the calamity to Tianchen.

Chapter 402: The Peerless Beauty (9)

The winner will always be the one with harder fists. Emotions meant nothing. Etiquette meant nothing as long as one's empire is strong.

Du Gu Ye.... Good one Du Gu Ye.

The knuckles on Liu Yue's fists cracked as she clenched her fist tightly. Good plan.... It really is a good plan. However, she won't necessarily go along with this plan of his.

"Princess, don't be like this. These commoners don't know the whole story. Don't even bother listening to them. Just don't anger yourself." Qiu Hen saw how Liu Yue was acting and quickly talked.

"Master." Du Yi was not a man of many words. All he did was call out for Liu Yue.

In this month, countless rumors arose. The spearhead wasn't pointed at Xuan Yuan Che, but Liu Yue instead.

No one blame Du Gu Ye for going to war for a beauty.

They can only blame the woman that caused him to be like this. They all placed the blame on Liu Yue.

No one remembers that without Liu Yue, their Tianchen would've been gone already.

No one remembers that without Liu Yue, their Emperor and their King of Yi would have died already. By then, who knows what would've happened to Tianchen.

No one remembers the deeds that she did for Tianchen.

All that they know right now is that she is bringing a calamity to Tianchen. Even though some of the rumors were baseless, they believed it anyways.

Everyone was being impulsive.

Humans are selfish.

Words are dreadful. This was the first time that Liu Yue had felt the pain. They were formless but they put wounds on her.

Du Gu Ye. Du Gu Ye. That damned Du Gu Ye.

“Brother, come with me.” Amongst the curses on the street, a relaxed voice called out.

Liu Yue raised her brows. This was Yun Zhao’s voice.

She slowly opened her eyes. She saw Du Yi holding a dagger right by the expressionless Yun Zhao’s neck.

Yun Zhao was looking into her eyes with a pitiful and mocking gaze. She didn’t understand what he was thinking?

“Are you satisfied?” Sitting on the chair, Liu Yue crossed her arms and looked at Yun Zhao.

Even though she was feeling down, no one can see the lonely and dejected look on her face. No one could see the discouraged, hopeless and anger in her expression.

Chapter 403: The Peerless Beauty (10)

Xuan Yuan Che was the only one who can see Liu Yue feel weak and feeble. In front of others, she will act tough no matter what.

Yun Zhao stared at Liu Yue with an arrogant look in his eyes.

He was still feeling angry on the inside. He was angry and could not get over the fact that she had framed him. However, he couldn't be angry at her.

His mouth curved up into a smile. He didn't care about the dagger on his neck and walked over to sit down, "Brother, come with me. Du Gu Ye is determined this time. Not even Xuan Yuan Che can stop him when he makes a move. He'll break your heart sooner or later."

Liu Yue narrowed her eyes. A murderous intent started to seep out.

Yun Zhao felt it and shook his head, "Ahh you. If they were put in equal situations then it will be hard to tell who the victor is.

However, right now, the Ao Yun empire is the strongest empire on the continent. Tianchen is far too weak. Du Gu Ye has also spent a lot of money to make the other empires send their troops over as well. It doesn't matter if they fight anymore. Xuan Yuan Che lost already. Well.. maybe he won't lose. But Tianchen has lost already. He'll lose sooner or later."

Yun Zhao used very vague and short sentences. It was a mess but Liu Yue understood what he meant.

"Bullshit." On the side, the angry Qiu Hen sent a fist towards Yun Zhao.

Yun Zhao dodged the fist and moved to sit next to Liu Yue.

"Words are harmful. The words of ten people can become a tiger. Brother, you're smart. You should understand. Come with me. My Snow Saint empire won't be like Tianchen. We'll be able to protect you.

Yun Zhao was very serious.

"You won't have a chance with this prince's princess." After Yun Zhao finished talking, the door to the room was kicked down. Xuan Yuan Che

angrily stormed in.

“Your highness.” Qiu Hen called out.

Liu Yue lifted her head to look at the angry Xuan Yuan Che and extended her hand towards him.

Xuan Yuan Che got closer and pulled her hand and sat next to her. He held Liu Yue by her waist and glared at Yun Zhao.

Chapter 404: The Peerless Beauty (11)

“You better scram before I change my mind. If not, this prince doesn’t mind going to war with Snow Saint.” Xuan Yuan Che’s expression was very cold.

Hearing this, Yun Zhao looked at Liu Yue and shook his head lightly. He then laughed, “Brother, it seems like my time here is up today. My offer will always be available. I’ll be waiting for you to come.”

Before he even finished his sentence, Yun Zhao turned around and jumped out, entering the sea of people.

“Yue-er.” Xuan Yuan Che didn’t care about Yun Zhao and tightly held Liu Yue.

“I didn’t tell you any of this.....”

He just started talking and Liu Yue immediately closed his mouth. She smiled and shook her head, “No need to explain. I understand. You go and do your thing. I can handle this. There’s no way something like this will make me run away and abandon everything.”

Her bright smile allowed Xuan Yuan Che feel much better.

His Liu Yue was strong. She is able to withstand this. He knows that she will.

Xuan Yuan Che smiled as well. This was his Liu Yue.

“Will you guys fight?” Liu Yue softly asked.

“No. I can almost guarantee that they’re just bluffing. The rumors are their main objective.”

If they fought, the other empires would probably lose eight hundred soldiers for every thousand they kill. If they want to destroy Tianchen, the five emperors will have to pay a heavy price. No one is that stupid.

It’s hard to join forces all of a sudden. There has to be agreements on all sides.

All Du Gu Ye wanted was something like this to happen. He wanted to

suppress them with an invisible pressure. When Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che can't handle it anymore, everything will end.

Du Gu Ye understands Liu Yue. If Xuan Yuan Che gives in and marries those princess, even if he never sees them again, it will count as Xuan Yuan Che's loss.

If he marries the princesses, Liu Yue will leave. If she leaves, then he loses.

Xuan Yuan Che tightly squeezed Liu Yue's hands and suddenly smiled. He whispered to Liu Yue, "Don't worry. Even if they really do attack, i've made preparations. I won't let them run wild in Tianchen. We're not afraid of them coming. We're afraid that they won't come!

Rest well. When the wedding comes, I want to be marrying the most beautiful princess in the world."

Saying that, he smiled brightly at Liu Yue.

Chapter 405: The Peerless Beauty (12)

Xuan Yuan Che was quite busy for the past few days. He wasn't busy thinking about how he should deal with this problem in front of him, but instead, he was something even deeper. Who said that an empire will have to fall if it is besieged? He wants to use this opportunity to rise abruptly in the seven empires.

Ao Yun is currently the strongest empire.... Hmph... We'll see who's the strongest in the end!

Liu Yue saw the sly smile on Xuan Yuan Che's face and knew that he had a plan so she laughed as well. All the unhappy thoughts that she had completely disappeared, "Alright!"

They grasped onto each other's hands. They were endure through this hardship together.

They walked out of the restaurant together.

"Mister, look." On the streets, a girl saw Liu Yue walking out of the restaurant into the carriage and immediately yelled out.

Besides her, a handsome and elegant white clothed male smiled and replied, "What's there to.....?"

Before he could even finish his sentence, his eyes fell on Liu Yue and his smile quickly turned into a shocked expression.

The carriage left quickly. Liu Yue and Xuan Yuan Che had both left.

"Mister, she.....she....." A young boy besides the white clothed male was pointing at the carriage with shock.

The white clothed male closed his folding fan and smiled.

After traveling across many countries on a long a difficult road to see what was going on with Tianchen, he didn't expect something like this waiting for him here.

This.... This will be fun.

The streets were bustling and was crowded with people.

The big wedding day was approaching.

The people in the palace were very busy. There were many people who were starting to go against the decision. Hundreds of ministers have sent countless amounts of petitions to the palace but were all yelled at by Xuan Yuan Che in the end.

On the borders, the few hundred thousand troops from the five empires were getting closer and closer.

A sinister mood flew alongside the wind straight towards Tianchen.

The entire Tianchen Empire was afraid.

On the borders, the troops from the five empires were getting closer and closer. Du Gu Ye and the people from the Nansong empire were very close to Tianchen as well.

The timing was perfect.

In the midst of this, Xuan Yuan Che was carefully planning out everything as well.

He didn't say anything to anyone. He didn't say anything at the assemblies. Even Xuan Yuan Yi doesn't know what he has planned.

Chapter 406: The Peerless Beauty (13)

He hasn't been in Tianchen for three years. Who knows what kind of spies had infiltrated his empire. If his plans get leaked out, then he would have wasted all of his hard work.

In the midst of this, Liu Yue was calm. She was calmly waiting for her marriage.

Du Yi had reported back to her once in awhile. From what she gathered, she can tell that Xuan Yuan Che wasn't afraid of them coming at all. He was afraid that they won't come.

Unlike Xuan Yuan Che and Liu Yue who were calm, the court officials and ministers were all very nervous. Five empires were attacking them at the same time. Their Tianchen is doomed.

Rumors were spreading like wildfire on the streets.

Everyone was going crazy.

The night fell. Liu Yue was riding in a small carriage towards the right minister's residence.

The right minister set up a small feast to entertain their daughter and granddaughter in law. Liu Yue didn't have a reason to not go.

The color of the night sky was bewitching. The autumn wind blew lightly. The breeze felt very relaxing.

Liu Yue leaned against the insides of the carriage and thought about the things that she had to be careful of during the wedding. There were too many things to look out for, it was giving her a headache.

The night was silent. It had become silent very early.

One by one, people disappeared off the streets into their homes. The night was becoming empty.

Liu Yue was still thinking of a plan until her eyes unconsciously looked around. There was not a single soul in sight.

She furrowed her brows immediately. Something's not right.

The sun had just set. There's no way that the streets can be this empty so quickly. Something's wrong.

"Master. Something is wrong." At the same time, Du Yi stopped the carriage.

Before he finished talking, a sweet fragrance appeared out of nowhere.

It was very weak and pure. The fragrance was nearly impossible to detect.

However, this was Liu Yue.

Liu Yue took a small whiff and her face sank.

Ruthless.... This was the strongest poison among the five deadly poisons. It can kill without anyone even knowing.

"Go!" Liu Yue opened up the curtains to her carriage and rushed out.

The moment she left the carriage, countless arrows flew towards her direction.

They were flying towards her from every single direction. There were no blind spots at all.

The arrows flew fiercely and swiftly.

The cold and eerie arrows pierced the night skies. A dark gloomy aura extruded from the arrow.

Fugu Poison. A poison that can kill immediately once it strikes....

Somebody wants her dead.

Chapter 407: Internal Conflicts (1)

A serious look appeared in Liu Yue's eyes as she let out a cold laugh. She quickly put on the silver gloves that she always had with her and grabbed the poisonous arrows coming at her.

At the same time, her figured flickered as she jumped off of the carriage.

The arrows hit nothing but air and scattered all around.

Liu Yue's silver white hands were able to endure the attacks of the arrows to open up a path for escape.

At the same time, Du Yi used his horsewhip like a sword and cut down the arrows that were flying towards him.

Liu Yue's hand tightened. She snapped the arrows in half and threw it onto the ground. If they thought they could kill her like this, then they must be dreaming!

She moved very quickly in the darkness while evading all the obstacles in front of her. She had the entire area covered.

She wants to see the daring person that dared to attack her.

The masked person was holding his steel bow in the darkness.

He felt a murderous intent coming towards him.

When he felt that Liu Yue was getting closer, he decided to retreat instead of attack. He flew right into the darkness.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows. This was the person they sent to kill me?

How come this guy is so useless? To run without even a fight?

When she was thinking about this, she felt a murderous intent coming in front of her. The sound of many swords could be heard by her.

Liu Yue immediately stopped. The area in front of her was the right minister's estate..... That masked person couldn't beat her so he ran immediately.... Could it be that killing her wasn't the plan? Did they want

to hinder her movements? But.....

“Let’s go.” Liu Yue ran towards the right minister’s estate. Du Yi followed up quickly behind her.

Was someone trying to attack the right minister tonight?

To try and attack Xuan Yuan Che’s grandpa.... That’s simply too daring!

Darkness filled the night sky. The autumn wind was blowing hard followed by a slight smell of rain.

As Liu Yue sped towards the right minister’s estate, in the palace, Xuan Yuan Che was going up against Xuan Yuan Yi.

Chapter 408: Internal Conflicts (2)

The two both have a solemn expression on their face. Xuan Yuan Yi furrowed his brows, "The empire or the beauty...Xuan Yuan Che, you should know what's more important. You don't need me to tell you right?"

Xuan Yuan Yi used Xuan Yuan Che's full name to address him. This shows that he was already very angry.

Xuan Yuan Che had a cold expression on his face as well, "I told you that I won't bring harm to Tianchen. Father, don't put the empire and Yue-er together. As for Tianchen..... It wouldn't even be here without Yue-er. Father, don't forget about that."

There was not a single trace of politeness in his voice. Xuan Yuan Che was not patient either.

Xuan Yuan Yi stared at Xuan Yuan Che, "Yes. She has done meritorious deeds for our empire. No one will deny that. But right now, she's more harm than good. Her crimes have already surpassed the deeds that she has done.

"What crime? I told you that this was all planned by Du Gu Ye. Stop...."

"This is the facts. You said that Du Gu Ye won't attack but now, the five empires already have their troops right outside Tianchen. Du Gu Ye said that if you marry her, then he will immediately attack. This is the truth. The iron truth.

Xuan Yuan Yi was extremely angry right now. He didn't even wait for Xuan Yuan Che to finish talking before yelling out.

"Even if Liu Yue didn't tempt him, even if it has nothing to do with her, she is still playing a big role in all of this. Don't marry her and send her away.

Che-er, there are many beauties under the heavens. You're only losing out on this one.

You love her. Father knows that. But Tianchen is much more important than she is. You're the future king of Tianchen, you can't act like this.

Don't say anything. Listen to me first. Even if you are prepared for everything, but as for Tianchen's strength, do you think that others don't know what we are capable of? Do you think that I don't know our military strength? What strength do we have to go against five empires? If we fight, we will definitely lose.

Che-er, it's not like I want to be cold blooded but I'm doing this for the country. I'm doing this for Tianchen. We have to put Tianchen as our priority and not ourselves. We have to stand by at the top and show our citizens that we are capable.

Chapter 409: Internal Conflicts (3)

Today, no matter what, you have to send her away.

When the day comes that my Tianchen becomes stronger, then you can bring her back, marry her and make her the empress. I won't object then. But right now, you have to send her away. This wedding is cancelled!"

Xuan Yuan Yi yelled very loudly in a panicky voice.

Both of Xuan Yuan Che's eyes became red. He wasn't made. He coldly looked at the the panicking Xuan Yuan Yi, "If Tianchen dares to hand over Liu Yue in order to survive, then I'd rather destroy Tianchen myself."

These words were cold and decisive. It made Xuan Yuan Yi break out into a cold sweat. All the hair on his back stood straight up.

Outside, the sharp sound of wind blew by.

The wind lightly rattled on the windows of the room. The night was very quiet. It was very dark.

As Xuan Yuan Che talked with Xuan Yuan Yi in the palace, Liu Yue had already reached the right minister's estate.

The sound of swords clashing against each other could be hear. There were killing intent hidden all over the place.

So someone really is trying to make a move on the right minister!

Shit. Did they want to kidnap the right minister and force Xuan Yuan Che to agree? Even though Xuan Yuan Che was raised in the palace, the closest person to him besides Liu Yue was his grandpa, the right minister!

Liu Yue retrieved a dagger from her sleeves and flew into the encirclement of dark clothed assassins. She quickly moved towards the right minister.

"Follow me." With her dagger, she attacked one of the assassins.

Behind her, Du Yi was flying over as well, moving towards the assassins who were attacking the right minister's family.

“Liu Yue.” When the right minister saw Liu Yue, he was extremely happy. He quickly ran from his bodyguard’s side towards her.

Every time her dagger moved, it killed someone.

Liu Yue looked at the numerous amounts of assassins in front of her and asked, “Who are they?”

“I don’t know.” The right minister shook his head and got closer to Liu Yue. It seems as if he was scared by the black clothed assassins.

Chapter 410: Internal Conflicts (4)

“Be careful. They have poison on their weapons.” The right minister showed a cold and sharp look on his face, an expression completely different from the fearful look that he had on his face just a while ago.

It was just for a quick moment. So quick that no one saw it.

“I know. Just stand behind me.” Liui Yue didn’t even look back. She grabbed the right minister’s arm and moved away with him. Her other hand, weilding her dagger, paved the path for escape. Nobody could block her at all.

Liu Yue could easily kill these normal assassins.

The right minister who was being pulled by Liu Yue quickly followed up as well.

He was a old man already and was somewhat injured. His body was swaying and could not catch up with Liu Yue at all. The right minister tripped and flew towards a blade.

Liu Yue saw his and immediately blocked the blade from striking the right minister. At the same time, she pulled the right minister towards herself.

At this moment, her chest was left wide opened.

She exerted her strength and pulled the right minister right into herself.

At the same time, a sharp and poisonous dagger slipped out from the right minister’s sleeve.

The right minister moved quickly and grabbed the dagger. He stabbed towards Liu Yue’s chest with lightning fast movements. He was nothing like the feeble and weak old man like he was before.

Liu Yue was pulling the right minister with one hand and resisting the long blade with the other. Her hands were being used and could not resist the attack at all. She didn’t think that the person that she was trying to save would make a move against her.

The dagger pierced through the air and was approaching Liu Yue quickly. If the black dagger reaches her skin, she will be finished!

Everyone stopped moving and looked towards Liu Yue's direction.

They saw that as the dagger was about to pierce Liu Yue's chest, Liu Yue suddenly moved. In less than a second, her entire body bent ninety degrees backwards.

Chapter 411: Internal Conflicts (5)

When the right minister saw this, he quickly changed the angle of his attack and stabbed downwards. He was acting very fierce. He looked nothing like a scholarly court official at all.

Liu Yue kicked upwards with one leg and did a 360 degree flip in mid air.

Her movements were so quick that people could barely follow her with their eyes.

In such a short amount of time, Liu Yue was able to avoid all the attacks and land properly. She moved very quickly and held her poisonous dagger up against the right minister's neck.

The night was quiet. A murderous intent filled the entire place.

She looked down at her robe. There was a large cut on the robe. If she was even a step too slow, she might be seeing King Yama* already.

*King of Hell

"Master." Du Yi quickly ran over as quick as possible. He almost.....

"Kill her quickly. Quick!" The right minister who had a dagger held up against his neck suddenly called out.

He wasn't afraid of death. He was determined to kill Liu Yue.

From the shadows, countless amount of archers appeared in every single direction, aiming their bows at Liu Yue.

The black clothed men who were fighting with the bodyguards quickly moved into their positions within the guards.

Liu Yue and the right minister were both standing there as the target of a thousand archers. Du Yi was moving closer very quickly.

"Quick! Shoot! Shoot....." The right minister continued to yell with resolute.

While tightly holding the dagger, Liu Yue's expression turned very cold.

So they were together..... It's not that someone wants to make a move on the right minister. It was the right minister who wants to make a move on her. He used himself as bait in order to kill her.

Haha. How funny. She actually tried to save the person who tried to kill her.

Xuan Yuan Che's grandpa wants to kill her. He wants to kill his own granddaughter in law.

Chapter 412: Internal Conflicts (6)

And he tried to do it so fiercely, without hesitating at all.

Laughable. It's too laughable.

She had a calm look on her face but her eyes started to turn red already. What did she do wrong?

"How have I offended you?" Her cold voice yelled out. It was an extremely cold and desolate sound.

No one can tell how Liu Yue was feeling from her voice. It had never sounded so cold before.

The right minister's face was filled with emotions. The light shone on his face, clearly revealing his thoughts. His eyes were bloodshot. He had a fierce and horrifying look on his face. It looked nothing like the face he put on when Liu Yue first returned. He didn't have the loving look on his face. It was a look that showed hate and detest.

Looking at the right minister's face, Liu Yue understood everything clearly.

Maybe it was wrong for her to ask that. She shouldn't have asked.

She knew the answer already. Yes. The answer was very clear.

Shaking his head, the right minister stared at her, "It's all because of you. If it wasn't for you, my Tianchen won't end up like this. My King of Yi wouldn't try to abandon the empire. You witch! You should die! I...."

He was extremely angry. His loud words filled the entire area.

This made Liu Yue's heart sink.

The other countries didn't even attack yet and Tianchen is already like this?

"Murong Liu Yue, today, this minister will die with you! I will drag you down to hell with me. If Che-er doesn't make a move, then I will. For Tianchen, my death will not be in vain!"

He was resolute to kill Liu Yue. His resounding words shook everyone's hearts.

The right minister did not regret doing this. As long as his Tianchen survives, then his death will be honored and glorified.

Murong Liu Yue is the witch who will destroy the empire. By dying with her, he will die a glorified death and prevent the destruction of Tianchen. He will have done a meticulous deed for Tianchen.

Liu Yue's heart tightened.

Liu Yue wanted to laugh and wanted to ridicule him. However, she stood there and looked at the person in front of her with pain.

In the end, she couldn't do it.

Is this grief or is this pity? She doesn't even know anymore.

Chapter 413: Internal Conflicts (7)

“Kill her! Release the arrows.....” The right minister’s loud voice pierced the heavens. He was ready to punish his own family for justice.

Tens of thousands archers readied their bows and arrows.

“Senior right minister, good luck.”

All of the archers yelled out in unison. This was respect. It was as if the right minister was a hero sacrificing himself to get rid of a great demon.

All of the archers were ready to fire.

“Hahaha.....” Liu Yue had been holding her laughter back. Her loud and clear laugh was heard by every single person.

The way she acted.... It looked as if she was a real witch.

Her mouth curved upwards and looked at everyone, “You want to kill me? Fine. I’m waiting.

But, I heard that Ao Yun’s crowned prince Du Gu Ye wants me. If I die here, then he won’t get me. I don’t know if he’ll get mad and destroy Tianchen immediately.

Aiya. How is this going to turn out for the right minister? He’ll turn from Tianchen’s savior to Tianchen’s biggest sinner.”

Liu Yue continuously laughed and looked around. Her bewitching looks caught the attention of everyone.

When she finished talking, everyone was startled.

This.....

That’s right.... Ao Yun’s crowned prince is here to steal Liu Yue away.... If Liu Yue dies, then.....

All of a sudden, everyone hesitated. Even the righteous right minister was startled by these words.

He was thinking that as long as he takes care of Liu Yue, Xuan Yuan Che will return to normal, however, he forgot that.....

Liu Yue was standing there shaking her head. She retracted the dagger away from the right minister's neck, "This time, I'll just you go because I'm giving face to Xuan Yuan Che. If there's a next time, even if god himself comes, you'll die."

Chapter 414: Internal Conflicts (8)

After saying that, she grabbed the right minister by his beard and threw him towards the group of guards.

The guards immediately rushed over to catch the right minister.

At the same time, Liu Yue flew towards the right minister's building instead of retreating away.

Her figure dashed through the empty air. She was moving as fast as lightning.

At the same time, Du Yi who went to hide quickly appeared from the back and set fire to the building.

The gorgeous flames immediately lit up the darkness. The archers who were hidden in the building immediately revealed themselves.

Just like that, Liu Yue entered the formation of these archers with ease.

If they want to harm her now, it would be harder than ascending to heaven.

The dagger in her hand danced. All her anger were being poured out at the moment. She used all her to strike down the archers.

She was enraged. The person who was going to become her grandfather in law wants to kill her. How can they try to look at Xuan Yuan Che after this? How?

They were all saying that it was for the good of Tianchen, that it was all for Xuan Yuan Che's good.

They themselves should know what it was actually good for.

"Not good. The witch is escaping!"

"Shoot! Shoot...."

"Aiya....."

The scene turned chaotic very quickly. Miserable shrieks could be heard from afar.

There was no one able to shoot down Liu Yue after she had entered their formations. There was no one that can stop her from escaping.

Her sleek black hair floated in air. That beautiful face of her's was cold and emotionless.

She was filled with anger and slaughtered a path out.

The flames continued to dance higher and higher into the building.

"Master." Di Yi flew towards Liu Yue. He was worried for her.

"Let's go." Liu Yue turned around to take one last look at the flames and the right minister behind her.

The autumn wind was strong. The alluring flames were spreading very quickly.

The black clothed men's sleeves suddenly flew upwards.

Chapter 415: Internal Conflicts (9)

From the corner of her eyes, Liu Yue who was ready to leave saw something and suddenly stopped. She quickly turned back around.

Under the bright lights of the flame, the black clothed men's sleeves were blown upward by the wind and revealed the cloth under it.

A metallic black color embroidered with some red.

Bang. When Liu Yue saw this, her mind exploded.

This kind of clothing..... It's....It's the clothing of the imperial guards!

Liu Yue clenched her fist. The right minister wasn't the only one trying to kill her, there was also.....

"Master." Du Yi furrowed his brows.

The imperial guards were separated into two factions. One faction was controlled by Xuan Yuan Che, while the other small faction was controlled by the emperor, Xuan Yuan Yi....Not even Xuan Yuan Che could challenge his father's authority in commanding the imperial guards.

The guards who have a red embroidered pattern.... They belonged to Xuan Yuan Yi.

No wonder why the right minister has so many experts by his side. So someone was backing him up, giving him support.

She grabbed her dagger harder and harder. Xuan Yuan Yi, Xuan Yuan Yi.

The flames on the building could not compare to the flames in Liu Yue's bloodshot eyes.

She's not blaming them. She's not blaming them. Fucking hell. How can she not blame them. When did she offend Xuan Yuan Yi? When has she ever let Tianchen down?

She's been silent the whole time and had Xuan Yuan Che deal with everything. It seems like Xuan Yuan Che isn't enough. Everyone thinks that she's a pushover.

She turned around and without saying anything, she charged towards the imperial palace. She couldn't hold it in anymore.

The night was getting darker and darker.

In the imperial palace of Tianchen.

"Xuan Yuan Che. How can you say such a thing?" Xuan Yuan Yi stood up and was filled with disbelief and anger.

Xuan Yuan Che stood up as well, "I'm saying this one more time. I will take care of everything. Tianchen is mine. Liu Yue is also mine. These two things, I will not let either of them go. I have my own plans!"

Chapter 416: Internal Conflicts (10)

Father, just sit there and be a good king. With me here, Tianchen will not be destroyed.

Don't try to do anything behind my back either. I didn't do anything and Yue-er didn't say anything. However, don't think that I don't know what's going on. Father, don't force me."

Xuan Yuan Che was fighting a cold war with Xuan Yuan Yi.

"Let's just drop this matter and listen to me. Father...."

"Master." Before Xuan Yuan Che could finish talking, Yan Hu suddenly appeared. He rushed forward and spoke a few words to Xuan Yuan Che.

"Peng." Xuan Yuan Che became furious. He slammed his palm on the table causing it to break into many pieces.

'Good. Good. What a good father. What a good grandfather."

He looked at Xuan Yuan Yi with extreme coldness and turned around to leave. Xuan Yuan Che was filled with rage.

Xuan Yuan Che sat down on his throne. Those eyes.... They were filled with rage. They were filled his sorrow.... His child.....

'Aii.... Che-er, father is doing this for your own good." He held his head with his hand and deeply sighed.

"Rather than losing her when the relationship deepens even more, why not just lose her now. That way, it'll be better for you."

Xuan Yuan Yi spoke very softly.

After sighing for a bit, a gold commanding medallion slipped out of his sleeves and landed on the floor. In the empty palace, it made a loud sound.

Xuan Yuan Yi looked at the medallion by his feet.

It was a fine medallion. It was a bit old and had quite a history attached to it.

It was only a mere medallion but it gave off an unmatched imposing aura. It wasn't something from Tianchen..... It wasn't something from the seven empires.

This is.....

Xuan Yuan Yi knelt down to pick up the medallion and tightly grasped it in his hands.

Chapter 417: Internal Conflicts (11)

When he saw Liu Yue's real face, he knew that this day would come. However, he didn't think that it was going to come so quickly.

He wanted Liu Yue to leave a kid for Xuan Yuan Che and let them live in peace for a few years.

He didn't think that they would come so quickly.

They've come....

"Your majesty. You should rest. It's already very late." The head eunuch lightly walked over.

Xuan Yuan Yi looked at the night sky outside the palace. The sky.... It's already very dark.

There was a thick moisture in the air. It seems like it's going to rain tonight.

"You go back first. I'm waiting for someone." Xuan Yuan Yi sat back down on the throne.

When the head eunuch heard this, he quickly left.

Tonight.... It will be a restless night.

The night sky was very romantic. Darkness filled the sky. The starry autumn sky was covered by a large black curtain.

Two shadows were moving very quickly under this dark night sky. One on the left, one on the right. They were separated by a single street. One was rushing towards the imperial palace, the other, towards the right minister's estate.

They brushed past each other.

Under the dark curtains, the two got further and further away from each other.

Moisture was filling up in the air.

Liu Yue who was filled with murderous intent reached the imperial

palace.

“Bang” She kicked the door open. She had a furious look on her face.

Xuan Yuan Yi was sitting on his throne as if he had been waiting for her to come.

“You’ve come.” Xuan Yuan Yi looked at the raging Liu Yue.

Tightly holding her dagger, Liu Yue forced her way into the palace. Her bloodshot eyes looked at the calm Xuan Yuan Yi, “When did I offend your Tianchen? When did I offend you, Xuan Yuan Yi. The other empires didn’t even come yet and yet you want to kill me?”

“I can disregard all those rumors spread by Du Gu Ye. Those are nothing to my ears. I can act like I didn’t hear them. I know that you’re doing this for the empire. I know what you’re thinking.

Chapter 418: Internal Conflicts (12)

I won't argue with you guys nor will I try to fight with you. I'll sit there and wait. I'll wait until Xuan Yuan Che wins. I'll wait until all the threat is gone. I'll wait until all of you calm down.

Grievance and curses. I can accept them. I believe that I will be able to tread across the land with my Xuan Yuan Che in the future.

But I didn't think that you guys would be the ones that tried to kill me. You are Xuan Yuan Che's father. Do you think he can endure this? How can he endure something like this?"

These cold words sounded throughout the palace.

Du Yi was standing by Liu Yue's side and guarded the entrance. If his master was going to go crazy, he will follow her.

"Don't be stirred up...."

"Don't be stirred up? Motherfucker. I'm here to kill you today. Let's see if I'm stirred up or not." Liu Yue gritted her teeth.

Seeing this, Xuan Yuan Yi stood up and looked at Liu Yue, "Follow me. This emperor wants to show you something. You'll understand after seeing it."

Saying this, he didn't wait for Liu Yue's response and pressed the armrest of the throne. A "kacha" sound could be heard as a door appeared from behind the stage.

Xuan Yuan Yi turned around and walked towards it.

Liu Yue suppressed her anger and followed Xuan Yuan Yi.

Xuan Yuan Yi wasn't afraid of entering this place. Why would she be afraid?

She wanted to see what this thing is that made them try to kill her no matter what. What will she learn from seeing this thing?

After walking down a flight of stairs, light shined into the secret passage.

There was a very small hidden room.

It wasn't anything exuberant. There wasn't any treasures here either. This place was incomparably simple.

After entering the secret room, Liu Yue didn't notice anything either. However, her eyes were attracted to the painting in the room.

It was a painting of a peerless beauty sitting under a pine tree. There was a small river by her side and she was surrounded by grass and flowers. The painting was extremely beautiful.

She furrowed her brows and looked at the painting. Liu Yue was sure that the person in the painting looked very much like herself.

This painting.....

Chapter 419: Sorrow Night (1)

“That’s your mother.” Xuan Yuan Yi warmly replied while looking at the picture.

Liu Yue’s eyelid twitched. It’d be unbelievable if this person wasn’t her mother. But what did her mother have to do with her right now?

She looked at Xuan Yuan Yi, “And what about it?”

Saying that, she looked at the Xuan Yuan Yi who was immersed in the painting. An absurd idea suddenly flashed in Liu Yue’s mind.

The painting was hidden in such a place. Xuan Yuan Yi was looking at the painting with such a loving look.....

Her heart shuddered. Three years ago, the then crowned prince, Xuan Yuan Cheng’s dying words suddenly sounded besides Liu Yue’s ears again. ‘It’s impossible for you two to be together.’

She clenched her fists. Could it be.....

“If you say that I’m your daughter, I’ll kill you.” A cold and desolate voice sounded.

The emperor was fickle in love, it’s hard to say.....

Hearing this, Liu Yue suddenly laughed, “If you were my daughter, then why would I allow you to marry Che-er in the first place? I’m not that senile.”

Hearing this, Liu Yue calmed down a bit. That’s right. Even if no one else knew, Xuan Yuan Yi himself would know about it. How can he marry his son and daughter? She was being silly.

Xuan Yuan Yi didn’t wait for Liu Yue to say anything, “Your mother came from a very mysterious place. If it wasn’t for the fact that Murong Wu Di accidentally saved her life, she would not have married your father Murong Yi.

She didn’t take the position of the main wife. She didn’t enter the ancestral temple. All she did was become a concubine with no status. It

was unbelievable.”

After hearing what Xuan Yuan Yi said, Liu Yue frowned. Why is he talking about this? Could everything that happened have something to do with her mother?

Softly touching the painting, Xuan Yuan Yi softly said, “It was only later did I find out why she did something like this. Ahh. She wasted all of our intentions.”

Chapter 420: Sorrow Night (2)

Xuan Yuan Yi then slowly turned towards Liu Yue, “She did this because it made it easier for her to leave. After she repaid her debt of gratitude, she left without anyone noticing.

General Murong announced that she died but I know that she left. She left to return home.

Liu Yue, did you know that when you were little, you were doted by your father. This was because he loved your mother.

However, when she left suddenly, Murong Yi’s love turned into hatred. All those things that they did, I know everything about it.”

Hearing this Liu Yue frowned, “What are you trying to say.”

Why is Xuan Yuan Yi telling her this? This past is in the past. She is Murong Liu Yue but she is not Murong Liu Yue. She didn’t know much about her mother’s business.

But if they do meet by chance, she would definitely show respect to her mother. After all, she was in Murong Liu Yue’s body.

But right now, she was not interested in her mother’s story.

Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Yi shook his head, “If I don’t say this, you won’t know why we’re doing all these things today.

When she left, General Murong and I both searched for her.

The Murong clan wants to find her back and I want her for myself.

We sent a lot of men to search through the entire seven kingdoms. In the end, we received some news from overseas. It was because of this news that we gave up. We didn’t dare to look for her anymore.”

When he talked about this, a look of fear appeared in his eyes.

“That place is a place that we cannot go to. Her identity.....She is someone that we cannot taint.”

An identity that even the king of Tianchen cannot taint? Liu Yue was a

bit confused.

Liu Yue unconsciously released her fist. The dense aura in the room began to fade away.

Chapter 421: Sorrow Night (3)

“Liu Yue.” Xuan Yan Yi looked straight into her eyes, “That year, you looked weak and feeble. I thought that you took Murong Yi’s genes so I bestowed the marriage to you. I didn’t think that anything would happen.”

However, I didn’t think that you were hiding your true face. With that face of yours, it seems like you have more of your mother’s genes.

You’re something that can’t be kept in the seven empires.”

When Liu Yue heard the last sentence, she frowned.

Xuan Yuan Yi then moved towards a book that laid besides the painting, “Originally, I thought that if you weren’t exposed, then the people in that place wouldn’t know about it.

You could’ve been together with Che-er. You could’ve gotten married and lived peacefully together.

Who would’ve thought that Du Gu Ye would come out of nowhere and bring five other empires to attack us just for you. The news about you have probably been sent to overseas. Even if Murong Wu Di and I want to suppress the news, we can’t.”

After saying that, he picked the book up and threw it towards Liu Yue.

Liu Yue caught the book easily. After flipping through the pages, her expression changed immediately.

Xuan Yuan Yi saw the change in her expression and sighed, “Yue-er, I know my son’s abilities.

If he says he can handle the five empires, then he can handle it. Other people are scared, but I’m not. I know my son can do it.

But, if those people find out about you and come, then our Tianchen will definitely be destroyed.

Against those people, our Tianchen cannot defend at all. We can’t even try to fight back.

Yue-er, don't blame me for being selfish. I don't want Tianchen to be destroyed. I don't want Che-er to be hurt as well. I only have one outstanding son left. Tianchen needs him. I don't want our few hundred years of history to be destroyed just like that."

Liu Yue can tell that Xuan Yuan Yi was filled with fear. He was filled with grief.

Chapter 422: Sorrow Night (4)

Liu Yue continuously flipped through the book and read the contents. She felt a shiver go down her spine as she read the book.

The book looked ordinary but it was filled with many secrets.

Her hands started to shake. Liu Yue didn't know if it was excitement or fear.

Xuan Yuan Yi saw Liu Yue's expression and sighed, "Yue-er, I know that you love Che-er. If you love him, then please don't bring destruction to him. Don't let him die.

Du Gu Ye and them can't even compare to those people. Ao Yun, Snow Saint, we can still fight them. We can defend against them. But if they came, Tianchen will be destroyed immediately. Che-er will definitely die.

If you love someone, could you bear watching him die? Would you bring him down? Yue-er, you're not that selfish right?

Yue-er, our Tianchen can have anyone in here. Anyone can be a princess or an empress. However, we cannot have an empress that will bring destruction to Tianchen.

Yue-er, give us a break and let us go. Please leave."

With each word, tears flowed down Xuan Yuan Yi's cheeks. He was feeling very emotional.

Liu Yue who was holding the book felt shaken.

A cold feeling entered her bones, making her feel very cold.

It was still early into autumn. How can it feel so cold....

If she loves him, then don't bring him destruction? Don't bring his entire empire down?

If she loves him, then would she bring him down? Would she watch him die?

No. No, she will not. How could she? She was going to wait for Xuan

Yuan Che to conquer the world. Why would she destroy him?

But.... But....

Her hands grasped onto the book.

Her heart tightened. She felt pain. All she wanted was to stay next to Xuan Yuan Che and watch him conquer the world. She wanted to stand by his side and laugh with him.

Chapter 423: Sorrow Night (5)

All she wanted was their happiness. That's it. She only wants to be happy with Xuan Yuan Che.

But why did a powerful mysterious clan want to interfere with them? Who did she offend?

She slowly took the golden medallion and held it tightly. Why is it like this? Why?

What kind of person is Murong Liu Yue's mother? Why did it turn out like this? Shit. Shit!

She looked at the golden medallion. The words on it looked exactly like the one of the book, "Tianchen will be destroyed on the day of marriage."

These words were simple but fierce.

She tightly clenched her fist. The medallion started to twist from the strength of Liu Yue's hands. The twist on the medallion made the design look even more strange.

Her cold looking face was expressionless. Liu Yue suddenly turned around and walked out.

Xuan Yuan Yi watched as she left and called out, "You won't be selfish right? You have to do it for Che....."

"Wrong. I am selfish. If we're going to die, then we'll die together." After saying that, she left the secret room. Xuan Yuan Yi slumped onto the floor and was filled with despair.

The night was getting darker and darker. The moisture in the air was getting heavier and heavier.

Wind was slowly blowing, carrying the scent of rain along with it.

"No. Even if the empire is destroyed, I won't leave. Nothing can make me leave Xuan Yuan Che. Nothing." She grasped the book. She didn't want to leave because of something written in a book. She will not give Xuan Yuan Che up.

A super strong mysterious clan that can easily destroy everything?

Who cares? Who the hell cares? Who cares if the entire world is destroyed? She's selfish. She only cares about her own life along with Xuan Yuan Che. She doesn't care if everyone else dies."

Chapter 424: Sorrow Night (6)

She reached out to touch the back of her neck. There was a small red spot. It was very small.

The birthmark that she always had.....Who would've thought that this was not a birthmark at all. It was something that her mother left her. It's something from the mysterious place. It's something that doesn't benefit her at all.

It's something that the mysterious place use to control their people.

It was written clearly in the book. Very clearly.

"Master." Du Yi who had been following Liu Yue saw that Liu Yue came out with a cold look and couldn't help but call out.

Liu Yue didn't react at all and continued to walk.

"Yue-er, Yue-er." At the same time, Empress Chen frantically walked towards Liu Yue.

"Yue-er, please don't keep what my father did in mind. Mother will give you a fair explanation for it. Yue-er, don't be sad. They're just muddled right now. Don't mind it."

Empress Chen suddenly received the news that her father tried to kill Liu Yue. It was simply unbelievable. He must have gone senile.

Even though she heard Empress Chen talking, she didn't stop moving. The affairs regarding the right minister was just a small matter. It was nothing much.

After seeing how Liu Yue was still so expressionless, Empress Chen turned pale. She didn't know if Liu Yue had hatred in her heart and became even more frantic.

"Yue-er don't be like this. Mother will be sad. Yue-er....."

Liu Yue completely ignored it and continued to walk. Her mind was focused on the book and its content.

On the other end, Xuan Yuan Che was moving quickly towards the

palace. He knew that his Yue-er would definitely go and look for his father. He knows her too well.

His body move as fast as lightning and sped towards the palace.

“Stop. Why are you not talking. Do you want mother to die for the sins that have been done for you?” Seeing how Liu Yue was ignoring her, she quickly escalated the situation and grabbed Liu Yue’s hand.

Chapter 425: Sorrow Night (7)

The loud voice of Empress Chen was carried by the wind towards Xuan Yuan Che. Hearing the word 'die', his heart shook. What's going on with mother and Liu Yue? He started to move even faster.

Liu Yue stopped and frowned. What is Empress Chen talking about? She didn't mind about this small matter at all.

She stopped and turned around.

Seeing that Liu Yue have stopped, Empress Chen let out a sigh of relief. With a happy look, she walked up to Liu Yue, "Yue-er."

Right as she called out, a mysterious force struck her back, pushing Empress Chen towards Liu Yue.

Liu Yue had stopped moving. She was holding onto the book with one hand and her dagger with the other.

Seeing that Empress Chen was falling towards her she unconsciously reached out to hold onto her. The dagger in her hands accidentally went towards the Empress as well.

The two of them were very close. The dagger had pierced the Empress' dress.

Both of their faces paled immediately.

At the same time, if one was looking from far away, one would think that Liu Yue had stabbed the empress.

Liu Yue's heart shook. She quickly pulled back her hand.

From far away, Xuan Yuan Che saw everything as he flew over.

"Mother." Xuan Yuan Che's expression changed, not believing what he was seeing.

His Liu Yue wants to kill his mother?

The bloody dagger was inserted in the Empress' chest. Empress Chen's face was filled with shock.

With Liu Yue's back facing him, Xuan Yuan Che wasn't able to see what kind of expression she had on. He can only feel the cold aura extruding from her body.

Chapter 426: Sorrow Night (8)

“Mother!” Xuan Yuan Che’s voice pierced through the darkness. He couldn’t hold back anymore.

He fiercely rushed forward. He grabbed Liu Yue by her shoulders and pushed her aside. He then went and hugged his mother.

“Mother, how are you feeling? How are you feeling?” Looking at the blood on her chest, Xuan Yuan Che’s eyes turned red.

Liu Yue who was pushed away took two steps back and stared at the uncontrollably sorrow Xuan Yuan Che. She was stunned.

Qiu Hen and Yan Hu were both behind Xuan Yuan Che with their mouths wide opened. They had an expression filled with disbelief on their faces.

“Kill the witch.....”

“She’s trying to assassinate the Empress.....”

“Kill.....!”

From the shadows, countless amounts of imperial guards appeared. It was as if they appeared out of nowhere.

They were all armed, and filled with murderous intent.

All of them were angry. All of them wanted to kill the witch that tried to assassinate the empress.

This empire destroying witch must be killed. She must be killed no matter what.

It was getting darker and darker.

The moisture in the air was getting heavier and heavier as if it was about to rain.

The cold autumn breeze sent chills down people’s spines.

So there were more traps waiting for her. Liu Yue came back to her sense and smiled.

While staring at the back of the extremely sad and angry Xuan Yuan Che, Liu Yue took a deep breath and loudly said, “I won’t explain anything. I’m going to find someone to pay back some debt.... Come find me yourself.”

The cold voice echoed through the hall as Liu Yue continued to walk out. She was calm and didn’t hesitate at all.

Behind her, Du Yi yelled out, “It wasn’t master.” as he followed her out.

“Stop right there.” Xuan Yuan Che who was hugging the empress immediately turned around and yelled out.

However, Liu Yue who is filled with anger moved faster and faster. In the blink of an eye, she escaped the imperial guard’s encirclement and ran towards the darkness.

Chapter 427: Sorrow Night (9)

“Shit.” Xuan Yuan Che’s expression became extremely ugly.

“Che-er, it’s not Yue-er, quick....” After receiving a blow to her back, “I know.” Xuan Yuan Che moved the cloth away. There was basically no injury to the chest at all.

He was shocked at moment because he cared for his mother. However, after a bit, he came back to his senses. He trusts his Liu Yue. He knows that she wouldn’t do something like this at all.

She gave him face and didn’t kill his grandfather, the right minister, who tried to murder her. She would even let someone who tried to kill her go, let alone Empress Chen who had always been on her side.

There was one thing that Xuan Yuan Che didn’t understand.

This was planned by someone.... But who?

He didn’t think that they would use his own mother to frame his beloved Yue for killing the Empress. They dare use the person closest to him as a sacrifice?

How can he not feel sorrow? How can he not be angry?

At that moment, he couldn’t think of anything else. He couldn’t say anything.

But this silly girl. She’s usually smart. Why was she so stupid today. Why did she run? She brought more problems to herself by running.

That stupid girl.... She made herself the scapegoat.

“Go quickly.....”

“Men. Come protect mother and bring her home. Qiu Hen, Yan Hu, if anyone dare move the troops in the capital, make sure that they don’t ever see the sunlight again.”

He quickly stood up. His eyes were filled with coldness. It looks like a storm was brewing again. His words were filled with coldness.

“Yes.” Qiu Hen and Yan Hu quickly answered.

Xuan Yuan Che was filled with a murderous aura. The imperial guards who appeared out of nowhere looked at each other and didn't dare to move. They wanted to kill Liu Yue but something told them that they would back off if they want to live....

People are selfish.

After Xuan Yuan Che laid down his commands, he quickly turned around and flew out the palace. He flew towards the direction that Liu Yue left in and quickly followed in pursuit.

This Liu Yue, why is she acting so impetuous today? What had happened?

Chapter 428: Sorrow Night (10)

The wind blew strongly as rain started to fall.

In the dark night, Liu Yue's yellow body flashed like lightning across the black sky. She was moving extremely fast.

The droplets of rain landed on her face and body, but it wasn't enough to cool down her anger.

If it wasn't for Yun Zhao starting everything, if it wasn't for Du Gu Ye assembling the powers.... If it weren't for them, it would not be like this today.

She would not have been found out by those people.

She would still be Tianchen's little princess.

Everything would be fine. Helian Yun Zhao, Du Gu Ye, she's going to skin them alive!

She will definitely make things harder for those who make things hard for her.

She was filled with murderous intent as she madly moved forward.

At the outskirts of Tianchen, the area where the royal family hunted three years ago was all filled with blackness.

The fire from three years ago had burned through the entire area. Even the dirt had turned black.

There was a group of horses blocking the road. There were many shadows behind the horses.

Wearing a purple golden robe while sitting on a white horse, Du Gu Ye was waiting at the mountain pass. He watched as the yellow flash appeared. The person he had been waiting for has finally come.

Liu Yue stood there and coldly looked at Du Gu Ye.

The two stared each other down. Their coldness clashed in the darkness and created an enormous aura.

Du Gu Ye faced Liu Yue and extended his hand out, "I've waited for you for a long time. Come with me." He was sure that Liu Yue was going to leave with her too.

Liu Yue looked at Du Gu Ye with a murderous expression, "You're not fit."

Du Gu Ye frowned but didn't retract his hand.

'A man who can't even protect his own woman. He's even less of a fit.' His voice was weak but imposing.

Du Gu Ye was still enveloped in coldness. It was a coldness that looked down on everyone.

Hearing this, Liu Yue became extremely angry.

Chapter 429: Sorrow Night (11)

“Brother, leave with me.” After Du Gu Ye finished talking, another voice sounded. It was Helian Yun Zhao.

“Brother, come to my Snow Saint. You can do whatever you want there. No one will do anything to you.”

Helian Yun Zhao stared at Liu Yue whose hair was moistened by the drizzle. She looked very weak and yet she has a sharp gaze. It was as if she was an injured lion.

In the icy cold sky, sparks flew in all directions.

Du Gu Ye and Helian Yun Zhao looked at each other. The sparks became more and more apparent.

Their auras collided.

The people behind them stepped up as well. The air around them was getting thicker and thicker.

They're all here huh? Good. Good.

The people that Liu Yue hated and resented both appeared in front of her. The flames of her rage grew even bigger. She rushed past the guards with her dagger in her hand straight towards Du Gu Ye, “Don’t even try to leave.”

With her flames of rage, she struck out at Du Gu Ye with her dagger.

Du Gu Ye evaded by using his hands and stepped forward.

He raised his hand, signaling for his guards to step moving.

Liu Yue’s anger. He can feel it. Since it’s like this, then he’ll let her cool down for a bit before she gets out of hand.

Her face was very cold. Her hands danced in the air. However, Du Gu Ye blocked all of her advances.

After Liu Yue saw what Du Gu Ye was made her, she lost her desire already. Du Gu Ye was far too strong.

All of the attacks from the dagger struck air. The two of them move as fast as lightning.

A barrage of attacks were sent out from one side, while the one on the other side continuously dodged.

In the darkness of the night, it was very hard to see their movements. Only a streak of purple-gold light could be seen moving around.

The rain got heavier and heavier. Compared to the soft drizzle that floated around before, the raindrops pierced through the air.

The sad autumn wind blew heavily on the road towards the Rusi Mountains. It sent chills down people's backs.

Chapter 430: Sorrow Night (12)

Helian Yun Zhao stood on the side and watched as Liu Yue sent barrage of relentless attacks towards Du Gu Ye. A complicated feeling arose in his heart. However, this was good too. Liu Yue hated Du Gu Ye..... He was in a better position.

The rain fell onto the earth like arrows but it was unable to penetrate the area where the purple-gold streaks appeared. The murderous aura was so intense that the rain slowed down immediately upon touching the air around the two.

Before the rain could even touch the two, it was evaporated by the sword qi and palm strikes sent out by the two.

Yun Zhao who was watching everything was shocked.

Du Gu Ye had to use all his strength to evade her attacks with his palm strikes.

Even though Liu Yue didn't have any internal energy she was still able to pierce through his defense with her dagger. If Du Gu Ye didn't use all his strength, then he won't live past today.

The palm strikes were getting stronger and stronger as Liu Yue's attacks moved faster and faster

Her heart with engulfed with rage. She wildly and continuously attacked Du Gu Ye while extruding a thick murderous aura.

The rain was getting even heavier now. People could barely see the battle between the two even though they were right in front of them.

On the other side, Xuan Yuan Che led a group of troops towards Rusi Mountain. On this rainy night, the sound of horse hooves wildly moving sounded throughout.

Liu Yue inclined towards Du Gu Ye and prepared herself for a strike using all of her strength

Du Gu Ye knew that this attack was going to be tough to handle and

used all of his strength as well.

Sword Qi clashed with the palm force. A creaking sound could be heard as the air around them suddenly split apart.

At that moment, a light sound of a gong echoed through the road. It was very light. It was gentle. It was almost inaudible.

Followed by this sound, a golden arrow pierced through the air, flying towards Liu Yue's back, like a shooting star.

Not even Xuan Yuan Che could shoot an arrow this fast.

"Liu Yue, watch out!" Yun Zhao, who had been caring for Liu Yue and watching her saw the golden streak from the corner of his eyes. His expression changed immediately.

Chapter 431: Sorrow Night (13)

While yelling loudly, Yun Zhao dashed out quickly towards the arrow aimed at Liu Yue's back.

The arrow was powerful and fast. Liu Yue could feel the killing intent from the arrows as it reached her back. She felt a cold and ominous feeling creep through her body as a chill was sent down her spine.

She had never felt such an imposing energy before. It was a dangerous feeling. An inescapable feeling. She hasn't felt this in a long time.

Without even thinking, Liu Yue moved her shoulders and repositioned herself. If she can't dodge this arrow, then she'll have to take it head on.

At the same time, she had to be careful of Du Gu Ye's attack.

The incoming arrow didn't give Liu Yue any time to relax. It pierced through Liu Yue's shoulders as a arrow of blood shot out.

Liu Yue's body trembled as the force of the arrow moved her forward.

She spat out a mouthful of blood right at Du Gu Ye's face.

The palm strike that Du Gu Ye used all his energy for struck Liu Yue as well.

Against Liu Yue, he didn't dare to hit her with all his might. He was ready to use his palm strike to counter Liu Yue's attack but when he heard Yun Zhao yell out and saw Liu Yue spat out a mouthful of blood, he was shocked and restrained himself.

But how can it be easy to restrain an attack after putting all your strength into it?

His palms landed on Liu Yue's chest. Liu Yue's body was sent flying by the attack.

At the same time, Du Gu Ye also spat out a mouthful of blood. Liu Yue's dagger was inserted into his shoulders.

The night sky trembled, as the heavy rain covered the world.

The rain dyed red as blood splattered in all directions.

“Yue-er.....” Xuan Yuan Che rushed over as his cry echoed throughout the pouring rain.

Chapter 432: Where the shadow goes (1)

His eyes burned with fiery. It looked as if blood was about to seep out.

His breath..... His heartbeat.... They were seized away as he watched the yellow figure float. Xuan Yuan Che felt as if his heart had stopped.

His eyes.... His heart..... They were focused on Liu Yue who was falling towards the mountain streams.

Xuan Yuan Che immediately flew off of his horse and madly rushed over. He went straight towards Liu Yue with a fierce look on his face.

A mournful and wild roar echoed throughout the night sky. It vibrated within the pouring rain.

Behind him, the sound of iron hooves sounded. Xuan Yuan Che's troops were here as well.

Fresh blood poured like a waterfall from the sky. It followed Liu Yue as she fell towards the mountain stream. Her yellow robe had already been dyed bright red.

Such a sight caused people to tremble.

On the other side, Yun Zhao who chased after the arrow watched as Liu Yue was struck by the arrow.

Before he could return to his senses, Du Gu Ye and Liu Yue had struck each other. Liu Yue who was hit by the palm strike was sent flying towards the stream.

Unable to bear it, Yun Zhao's expression changed and flew towards the direction of Liu Yue in order to catch her.

Liu Yue was falling faster and faster.

She was struck in both her back and her chest. Her organs were in a complete mess right now. She couldn't make a sound..... She couldn't move at all.....

Her consciousness was slowly fading away. Only the pain on her body remained. An endless amount of pain....

Che..... It hurts.....

Yun Zhao extended his arms in order to catch the falling Liu Yue. He ran as fast as he could with all of his strength. He had to catch Liu Yue in this rain....

Far away, Xuan Yuan Che wildly rushed forward as well.

Faster.....I have to be faster..... Have to be faster.

His speed was at the utmost limit already. In this torrential downpour, only his black shadow could be seen. He was like a demon. A demon who was going to cut down everything in his way.

His hand.... It was raised high towards the falling figure..... This person was his world. He must grasp onto his world. He must catch her no matter what.

The figure drenched in red blood was falling even faster now.

Chapter 433: Where the shadow goes (2)

Two figures charged towards Liu Yue from two different directions.

At the same time, Du Yi who had been following Liu Yue moved when he saw that Yun Zhao had moved as well. He didn't think that something like this would happen. He abandoned his plans to hide and assassinate Yun Zhao and rushed towards Liu Yue.

Three people anxiously rushed towards Liu Yue.

The rain was getting heavier and heavier. It was hard for anyone to see anything in front of them.

Du Gu Ye stood there grasping his chest. He didn't care about the injury that Liu Yue had inflicted onto his shoulder. He stood there and stared as Liu Yue fell from the sky.

Thousands of emotions passed through Du Gu Ye's mind as the calm expression on his face changed a thousand times.

The face that always looked calm and cold was now filled with anxiousness and fear. This was a fear that Du Gu Ye didn't know about.

His feet didn't move. He didn't rush forward to try and save the falling Liu Yue.

If one looked at him, they would think that he didn't care about her at all.

But his hand grasped his chest tightly. His black and blue eyes stared anxiously as Liu Yue fell towards the mountain stream.

Below the mountain stream was the Odd Rock Hills. If Liu Yue falls in there.....

Rain continued to fall as each second felt like a thousand years.

The air was starting to freeze.

A red figure continued to fall from the sky.

Under it, Yun Zhao's figure was closing in.

Yun Zhao was fast, but the acceleration of Liu Yue's fall was even faster.

When Liu Yue was right in front of his eyes..... When he reached his hands out to grab Liu Yue..... Yun Zhao suddenly felt himself stagger. He had lost his center of gravity and fell forwards.

Yun Zhao had been staring at Liu Yue this entire time and did not notice the situation under his own feet.

He had ran over a crack and tumbled forwards.

His heart shook. He looked at his own feet and his mind froze. There was nothing his feet. He was suspended in midair, ready to fall forward.

His entire body fell onto the ground.

Subconsciously, Yun Zhao forced his entire body back and with his hand, he grabbed onto the cliff.

Chapter 434: Where the shadow goes (3)

All five of his fingers quickly gripped onto the side of the cliff. With all his strength, he pulled himself back up.

However, because he had fallen, he could not catch up to Liu Yue anymore.

The bloody figure had fallen.....All the way towards the Odd Rock Hills.

“Yue.” At the same time, Xuan Yuan Che had caught up and reached out as well. Without thinking, he jumped off and stretched forward to try and catch the falling Liu Yue.

A crisp ripping sound could be heard as Xuan Yuan Che was only able to grab onto her sleeves.

The sleeves were in Xuan Yuan Che's hand while the Liu Yue continued to fall without any hindrance.....straight towards the mountain stream.

“Yue-er.....” Like a lone wolf who had lost its lover, Xuan Yuan Che cried out. His cry pierced the nine heavens.

His cry echoed throughout the entire ravine.

“Yue-er, Yue-er.....” Xuan Yuan Che was feeling extremely lost.

As Du Gu Ye stood there and watched as Liu Yue slipped out of Xuan Yuan Che's hands, his chest tightened.

His originally pale face had become even paler.

His knees slowly staggered as he dropped onto the ground.

Those cold eyes were now empty. He never thought about killing her. He didn't try to kill her....

On the other hand, Xuan Yuan Che was moving and crying like a wild demon.

He didn't think about anything. He didn't care for his own safety. Xuan Yuan Che leaped forward as well. No matter what, he had to catch her.

He can't lose her. He absolutely cannot lose her.

As he jumped out, a horsewhip was flung out from behind and tightly wrapped around his body.

Chapter 435: Where the shadow goes (4)

The mindless Xuan Yuan Che who had thrown himself out was quickly pulled back.

“Master.....” Yan Hu who was watching Xuan Yuan Che quickly pulled him back up. At the same time, he ran towards him to hold onto him. He won't let Xuan Yuan Che go even if he dies.

No. He won't let him go. The rain was very heavy and the topography of this area was very complicated. Also, it was the night time.... No matter how incredible his master was, it is inauspicious if he jumped down like this. Yan Hu will not let him do that.

“Let go!” Xuan Yuan Che's bloodshot eyes watched as the red figure continued to fall. Xuan Yuan Che was going mad right now. He fiercely attack Yan Hu who was holding onto him.

In that moment, another figure jumped down the cliff straight towards the mountain streams.

Honor does not allow one to glance back.....there was no turning back.... Who else besides Du Yi could this be.

“Pu....” Blood splurged out from Yan Hu's mouth. His entire body shook.

How can he bear and take on an all out attack from a mad Xuan Yuan Che?

However, his grip on Xuan Yuan Che became tighter. He won't let go. He will not let go no matter what.

Tianchen cannot lose Xuan Yuan Che. They can't. He can't sit there and watch his master die.

He won't let his master gamble with his life. Even if his master kills him, he won't let Xuan Yuan Che go.

Behind him, Xuan Yuan Che's troops had arrived. When they saw the scene, they all moved forward to grab onto their leader.

“Let me go. I'll kill you all.” Blood filled Xuan Yuan Che's eyes. He was

going crazy.

He fiercely attacked Yan Hu and the others. The red figure had almost disappeared from his sight.

His Yue..... His Yue!

“Master!” Everyone yelled out.

His troops didn’t care. They didn’t try to fight back. All they did was continue to hold onto his body. They held onto him and slowly retreated away.

Fresh blood sprayed out with every step.....

Chapter 436: Where the shadow goes (5)

A mad howl sounded. The wild and domineering howl pierced through the nine heavens on this rainy day.

On this day, the world came crashing down.

What is the love that we spend our lifetime searching for? Such that it goes so far as to make lovers follow after each other in life and in death.

They were lovers that have flown over vast distances together as a pair, flapping their old wings through many cycles of the seasons.

Happy relationships bring joy, while separation brings pain. All the more so when they are deeply infatuated and in love.

Above the layers of clouds that spread over thousands of miles, between the thousands of peaks covered in snow, as the sun sets, who should the lone man that has lost its mate live for?

“Ah.....” A sorrowful howl sounded. Between the thousands of peaks covered in snow, as the sun sets, who should the lone man that has lost its mate live for? Who should he live for?

The soldiers who surrounded Xuan Yuan Che watched as he fell onto his knees while crying out in pain.

They were all filled with mixed emotions. This was their prince.... Their prince was in pain....

Like a lone beast who had lost its mate, Xuan Yuan Che was filled with pain.

This was their prince. Their prince who was filled with charisma, and full of mettle. Their prince who was fearless and unrivaled.

This was their cold blooded and ruthless prince.

When did he become like this?

When has the prince ever shown his emotions like this?

The rain continued to pour, washing the vicissitudes of life from the

world.

“Release me right now!” The mad Xuan Yuan Che spat out a mouthful of blood. His mind was so convoluted that he had harmed himself.

It was hard to tell whether the water on Xuan Yuan Che’s face was his tears or the rain.

“Master. I’ll go. I’ll go find the princess.” Behind him, Qiu Hen who usually took care of business in the palace ran over. After receiving the news of what had happened, he quickly left to see his master.

Even if Xuan Yuan Che didn’t trust other people, he would trust Qiu Hen. Xuan Yuan Che knew that Qiu Hen would not harm his Liu Yue.

“I’ll go look for her. Don’t worry master, I’ll definitely bring the princess back. Definitely!” Qiu Hen yelled towards Xuan Yuan Che. Without thinking, he called over to some soldiers, “Come. Follow me down!”

While saying that, he jumped down from his horse. He didn’t even think about how high the cliff was and immediately jumped down.

If they lost their princess, who knows what their prince would become? Everyone was worried about Xuan Yuan Che’s state right now.

Chapter 437: Where the shadow goes (6)

He didn't care about the dangers. At a time like this, nothing else mattered.

In the rainy weather, Qiu Hen led a group of troops and scaled down the cliff without caring about their safety.

"Follow me." On the other side, one of Xuan Yuan Che's subordinate's yelled out and quickly led the troops around to the other side.

There was a less dangerous way down the cliff from there.

The rain was icy cold, but everything felt fiery hot.

After climbing up from the cliff, Helian Yun Zhao sat down by the edge of the cliff and stared at the dark mountain stream under him.

He felt tired. It wasn't his body that was tired, but his heart. His heart was feeling tired.

He looked up at the sky and allowed the rain to fall all over his face. It hurt. But it allowed him to cover up his emotions.

He lost. He had lost.

He lost to himself and he lost to Xuan Yuan Che.

Why. Why didn't he grab onto Liu Yue in the last moment? With his abilities, it should not have been a problem.

However, he didn't. He had let go.

He had subconsciously let go of her. To subconsciously let go just so he can save his own life.... It pained him.

When he rushed out, he didn't care about the consequences. However in the end.....

Yun Zhao let out a deep sigh. He lied down on the ground and allowed the rain to hit him.

"Crowned Prince, let's go." On the other side, Du Gu Ye's guards quickly gathered around him. They tried to lift Du Gu Ye up from the floor.

Xuan Yuan Che's troops have arrived already. If they don't leave now, they will lot in a lot of trouble when Xuan Yuan Che returns to normal.... After all, Du Gu Ye was the one who struck Liu Yue.....

Even though his men were yelling, Du Gu Ye pretended not to listen. He sat there without doing anything.

He knows that he can't stay any long. He knows what when Xuan Yuan Che recovers, he won't be let off that easily.

He understood all of this.

However, his body couldn't move at all. He didn't know why he couldn't move. It was as if his brain had stopped sending signals to the muscles in his body.

Those dark blue eyes stared at the cliff. It was where Liu Yue had fallen. Xuan Yuan Che's men had gone down too. Liu Yue should be fine right? She should be fine right?

Chapter 438: Where the shadow goes (7)

“Crowned prince, we have to leave! We have to get out of here.”

The tone of the voice became more and more urgent. However, all Du Gu Ye wanted was to see that person being rescued. He wanted to make sure that she was alive.

He going to wait. He's going to wait it out.

He stared into the distance without saying anything. Nothing could move him right now.

Rain continued to pour.

“Prince, don't worry. In your state right now, it's better to leave it to Qiu Hen. You have to trust him. Trust in his abilities. Also, Du Yi followed the princess down as well. He's a very capable man. Nothing will happen to the little princess. Even if you go now, you won't be able to catch up. It's a bit too late already. Leave it to them.” While holding onto Xuan Yuan Che, Yan Hu explained while coughing up blood.

The angry and sorrow beast finally calmed down after listening to Yan Hu's words.

The Xuan Yuan Che who was being held down by six generals and Yan Hu suddenly stopped struggling. Yan Hu's words had brought him back to his senses.

Du Yi jumped down in pursuit immediately. With his abilities, he can definitely save Liu Yue. He can protect her. He definitely can.

Also, even if he go now, it's too late.

Yan Hu was right. His words had brought Xuan Yuan Che back.

“Let go.” The wild tone turned into a cold one in a split second.

The fiery Xuan Yuan Che had turned back to the cold and domineering Xuan Yuan Che. It made everyone stupefied. Everyone's hearts tightened.

Seeing this, Yan Hu and the generals slowly let go of him while being cautious as well. Their prince won't lie to them right.....?

Xuan Yuan Che looked deeply into the deep dark abyss where Liu Yue had fallen into. He then turned around immediately.

Suicide by jumping in? No. He won't do that. His Liu Yue is definitely alive. He trusts her. He trusts Du Yi's abilities.

He trusts them. He can only trust that they are capable.....

Right now, what he has to do is return this debt of blood with blood!

He was ready to massacre. He was ready for revenge.

Chapter 439: Where the shadow goes (8)

A murderous aura extruded from Xuan Yuan Che as he aimed it at Du Gu Ye who was sitting on the floor. There was not a single trace of warmth on that ice cold face of his. There was only an immeasurable amount of anger being shown.

With a wave of his hand, the troops that were kneeling on the ground immediately stood up and faced towards Du Gu Ye and Helian Yun Zhao's camp.

"Do not leave a single person alive!" In the pouring rain, Xuan Yuan Che commanded his men in an icy tone.

These words were infused with hatred.

It was infused with anger and killing intent.

In this dark rainy night, a massacre began. The scent of fresh blood filled the air.

Xuan Yuan Che had finally made a move against Ao Yun and Snow Saint.

A great massacre under the heavens. The seven empires will not be at peace anymore.

The autumn rain continued to pour day after day. It was as if the heavens were weeping as well.

Following the rain, the air turned very cold. So cold that it could freeze one's heart.

Ever since that year, it hasn't been this cold.

Three years ago, the outskirts of Tianchen was up in flames. Everything from the trees to the ground were burnt black.

Thirty thousand Dragon Rider Guards and forty thousand Imperial Guards searched through the entire outskirts of Tianchen. This was exactly what happened three years ago as well.

However, three years ago, they were looking for both Xuan Yuan Che

and Liu Yue. This time, they were only looking for Liu Yue.

All of the waterways, forests, and roads were searched. Nothing was left untouched.

They searched everywhere. They searched the places where they were able to go, they searched the places that they could think of, they even thought of ways to search places that they were not able to enter.

The troops continuously searched.

There was no one. Other than a broken piece of cloth on top of a tree by the mountain stream, there was no one there. There was no Liu Yue. There was no Du Yi.

If they were alive, they couldn't be found. If they were dead, their corpses couldn't be found either.

The mountain wind blew loudly. Xuan Yuan Che stood by the stream for seven entire days. He didn't eat. Nor did he drink. He stared at the scene in front of him. His expression became colder and colder. His eyes became emptier and emptier.

Chapter 440: Where the shadow goes (9)

“Che-er, let’s go back. Father will feel bad if you keep this up.” Standing besides Xuan Yuan Che, Xuan Yuan Yi sighed.

Xuan Yuan Yi only wanted Liu Yue to leave. He never thought about killing her. He knew in his heart that those things that he did with the right minister would not be able to kill Liu Yue given her abilities. They wouldn’t hurt her. He never thought about killing. He didn’t dare to kill her.

But he didn’t think that..... Ah.....

There was no answer or reaction from Xuan Yuan Che. There was only an icy cold aura that surrounded him. That was his isolated aura. It was colder than the aura that came from him three years ago.

“Che-er, let’s go back. If Yue-er knows that you’re doing this, she’ll feel worried too. Let’s go back. With Yue-er’s abilities, she’s definitely safe. Remember that year? Mother thought that you were gone. In the end, didn’t you come back by yourself? Che-er, Yue-er is definitely fine.”

Empress Chen’s eyes were completely red from crying. She was feeling sad. Very sad.

She’s lost her Yue-er already. She can’t lose her Che-er as well. No way.

The wintry gale howled as it blew past the mountains.

His face was wan and shallow. Yet it was cold. Emotions cannot be seen from his empty eyes.

His heart..... His heart was sunken to the ground.

One day passed after another. In the beginning, he was like a wild beast, uncontrollable. But now, he didn’t dare move. He was afraid. He was afraid that he was going to find her. He was afraid that he was going to find her remains. He was scared....

He started to trust Empress Chen’s words....

“Prince, there’s news from Snow Saint.....”

“Prince, the Ao Yun troops have started to move.....”

Reports after reports were sent to Xuan Yuan Che. Seven days ago, he had massacred everyone that came with Du Gu Ye and Helian Yun Zhao. He seriously injured the two of them and locked them up. Now, he was going to deal with the repercussions.

The still Xuan Yuan Che who had been staring at the mountain stream began to move. He slowly closed his eyes and took a deep breath.

Yue-er, I'm waiting for you to come back. I'm waiting here.

Right now, he had to clean up this mess. When his Yue-er returns, he will conquer the world, and no one will be able to say a thing.

Chapter 441: Where the shadow goes (10)

He was feeling too many emotions. Too many emotions hidden under that under expression of his.

A murderous intent was released as Xuan Yuan Che threw his sleeves down and looked coldly at Xuan Yuan Yi, 'Three days later, I don't want to see you as Tianchen's king anymore.'

After throwing down these ice cold words, Xuan Yuan Che turned around and left.

Xuan Yuan Yi shuddered. This..... This is... forced abdication.

The autumn wind blew gently. Clouds covered the entire sky, not allowing any sunlight to penetrate into the earth.

Three days later, Xuan Yuan Yi officially announced his abdication as Xuan Yuan Che took over as the king. From this moment on, the weak and feeble Tianchen will now become stronger and stronger.

If you hold the lord, you control his vassals.

With Du Gu Ye and Helian Yuan Zhao in his hands, Xuan Yuan Che now has the ability to sweep through the five countries who tried to attack. Like thunder, Xuan Yuan Che's troops rolled out in all directions.

Murderous intent filled the air.

This year's autumn....It was destined to be very eventful.

Time passed by very quickly.

Compared to where Xuan Yuan Che's army was, the autumn wind was warm and gentle in an uninhibited valley. Flowers were blooming along the road. It looked very beautiful.

Warm air flowed around as birds danced in the air.

Flowers were glowing brilliantly as green leaves floated in the air.

Sunshine poured into the valley and landed on the few straw houses. The golden light made the straw houses look very warm.

“Ugh.” All of her limbs and bones were hurting as he couldn’t help but let out a moan.

“She’s awake. She’s awake. Young master. She’s awake.” A soft and joyous sound called out like a little bird chirping.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows. This voice was annoying.

She started to regain her senses.... This was a stranger’s voice.

Her heart shook. She forced her eyes open and without caring for her injuries, she looked around.

She was in a straw house. There was a bed, a table and a chair. The place was very simple. Everything was placed neatly around the house.

Chapter 442: Where the shadow goes (11)

That person that sounded like a little bird sat by her bedside with a bowl of medicine in her hands. The clear fragrance of the medicine and the white ointment on her hands showed that she had been treating Liu Yue.

At this time, the girl was yelling with her high pitched voice at the door without thinking about Liu Yue's mental state at all.

Liu Yue looked around and there was nothing threatening at all.

She calmed down a bit and then looked at the injury on her body.

She realized that she didn't have any energy in her body at all. She basically had no control over her own body.

Liu Yue frowned. How severe was this injury? She basically couldn't move at all.

"You can move after a few more days." Right when Liu Yue was thinking about this, a gentle voice called out.

The door opened and a man dressed in white walked in.

His long black hair was scattered on his shoulders. He smiled as he looked at Liu Yue. Even though his features were not that remarkable, he still looked very handsome.

He didn't have the sensual evil look of Xuan Yuan Che, he didn't have the alluring sense that Du Gu Ye gives off, he wasn't as handsome and brilliant as Yun Zhao. However, his indescribable looks and manners were better than all of them.

She looked over and glanced at the man. Liu Yue opened to mouth and tried to talk but only a rustling sound came out.

The man saw this and laughed, "You've been out for around a month now. You'll get better in a few days." He reached out and checked out Liu Yue's injuries. He then smiled at her and nodded.

A month? Liu Yue frowned again. How was she out for so long?

“The golden arrow was filled with poison and a palm strike messed up your internal organs. Waking up in a month is very quick already.” The white clothed man read Liu Yue’s thoughts and sat down next to her.

“Exactly! If it wasn’t for my master’s abilities, you would’ve been sent straight into the afterlife already. It’s your good fortune that you were rescued by my master.....”

The girl had an arrogant look on her face as she chirped. However, before she could finish talking, she suddenly remembered something. She took a glance at Liu Yue’s face and then turned around to spit something out.

Chapter 443: Where the shadow goes (12)

The man saw this scene and laughed while shaking his head.

“Where am I?” She immediately asked without thanking him. Saying thanks is something unnecessary. Why was this not Xuan Yuan Che next to her.

“In the valley.” The white clothed man looked down at Liu Yue and started to use his fingers to massage Liu Yue’s head.

“Since this place is peaceful, you should stay for a few more days.” The man casually added.

Liu Yue furrowed her brows. What kind of reply was that?

“We’re also pretty far away from Tianchen right now.” The white cloth man spoke as if he can see through Liu Yue’s mind.

Without waiting for the Liu Yue to say anything, the man quickly added, “I hate wars.”

War? Hearing this, Liu Yue understood what he meant immediately. He’s saying that Tianchen had declared war on the other countries already. Didn’t Xuan Yuan Che say that they won’t fight? How can this be.....Could it be because.....

Her heartbeat became faster as many different thoughts ran through her mind. Even if she didn’t open her mouth, her facial expression showed everything.

She unconsciously clenched her fist.

She looked out the windows at the bright flowers, “Nansong Empire.....”

“Smart.” The white robe man praised, “I hate the cold. This place is very warm.” The man sounded very arrogant as if the things that he hated should be against the heavens.

This kind of voice can influence the ones around him. It made people feel as if they should be hating what he was hating too.

Liu Yue glared at the man. This guy is very charismatic. He’s very

charming.

Only when she glared at him did she notice that his hand was on her head, giving her a massage. Unexpectedly, she didn't want to stop him..... This.....

While Liu Yue was thinking about this, the man suddenly stood up and softly kissed Liu Yue on the forehead, "You just woke up. You should rest up. You can ask me anything tomorrow."

Liu Yue's eyes started to drop. Before she could even get angry, the man directly pressed her temples with his fingers. Since the sleeping acupuncture point was pressed, she slowly closed her eyes and fell asleep.

The man looked at the sleeping Liu Yue and smiled. He slowly caressed Liu Yue's face, "The face is so similar but the temper is a bit..... Just like a wild horse heh..... This is going to be tiring."

These ineffable words....who knows if Liu Yue heard it or not.

Outside the windows, flowers shine brilliantly while leaves slowly floated.

Chapter 444: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (1)

A body made of iron. Bones made from steel.

Liu Yue who has the vitality of a mountain got better day by day. She recovered very quickly.

No one knows if it was because of the white robe man's medicine or her own willpower.

When Liu Yue woke up again, she didn't ask the man anything. It was very quiet. Nothing really happened. Nothing except for the fact that when the man comes to try and kiss her, his handsome face would be met by a cold sword. Other than that, it was very peaceful.

On this day, the grass on the ground waved back and forth under the clear blue sky.

Butterflies and bees danced among the flowers. Clouds slowly moved across the sky.

Liu Yue stood silently in the middle of the flower field and took a deep breath. Her eyes suddenly opened up as she threw her dagger at a thick tree with lightning fast speed.

Her movements looked like a blur.

As the dagger cut through the air, it struck the tree with a powerful force. With a slight movement of her arm, the dagger immediately returned to her hand. The tree stood still as if it was not touched at all.

"Not bad." A gentle voice called out. The sound of footsteps and an applause followed the voice.

Liu Yue looked at the dagger in her hands and then turned around. Good. It seems like she's completely recovered.

When she turned around, the seemingly untouched tree suddenly collapsed.

A gigantic tree had suddenly collapsed. On the trunk, only a cut could be seen. It was from Liu Yue's dagger.

One shot. One kill. That is the way of an assassin. There was no need to superfluous movements.

The white robe man, no. Ouyang Yufei, walked out from the shadows. His arms were crossed in front of his chest as he leaned against a tree while looking at Liu Yue.

"Very nice." Ouyang Yufei commented.

Liu Yue looked into his smiling eyes. They looked very warm. It was very attracting.

Liu Yue slowly inserted her dagger back into the belt on her waist, "I want to leave."

She's already been awake for ten days now and yet she doesn't know the situation outside. Can her Xuan Yuan Che handle everything? She was worried about him.

Chapter 445: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (2)

In these ten days, she had been recuperating and training. Even though she didn't say anything, it didn't mean that she wasn't thinking about anything.

The situation on that day.... It was clear that someone wanted to kill her. Such a power and cold arrow.....it definitely did not belong to Du Gu Ye and Yun Zhao's underlings.... Someone else must've shot it. Someone else wanted to kill her.

Under this kind of situation, this Ouyang Yufei was actually able to save her. Is this guy a friend or a foe? What is he thinking? Liu Yue couldn't tell at all.

Thus, she didn't say or ask anything. She quietly recovered her strength. Only when she is at full strength can she start asking this Ouyang Yufei who he actually is. She definitely won't try to do anything rash when she's weak and be taken advantage of.

However, the time has come.

"No problem." Yufei answered very directly.

Liu Yue didn't even have time to react before Ouyang Yufei waved his hand and called out, "Little Flower, calculate the total."

"Stop calling me Little Flower! My name is Hua Yulong! Hua Yulong! Do you hear me?!" In the straw house, a handsome and cute boy opened the window and angrily called out.

(TL: Hua, which is his surname, means flower in chinese :o)

Ouyang Yufei laughed and pretended not to hear Hua Yulong's complaint.

Even though he was angry, Hua Yulong still grabbed an abacus and ran towards Liu Yue.

While working the abacus, he started to talk quickly as well, "Three jins

of fawn antler, seven taels of Unaging grass, five sticks of thousand year ginseng, one Dahuan pill, Lingzhi grass.....”

The abacus was being worked very quickly as Yulong named everything out. Even the normally calm Liu Yue’s mouth twitched from listening to this kid.

“Okay. You’ve used up seventy three types of precious ingredients. The total is one million and six hundred thousand taels of gold. Master, Xiao Yu and I used our inner strength to keep your heart beating for thirty days. I’ll give you a discount and only charge you for six hours a day. That comes up to one million taels of gold.

Your bill comes up to two million and six hundred thousand taels of gold and a Dahuan Pill.” Hua Yulong put the abacus down and extended his palm towards Liu Yue.

Chapter 446: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (3)

Liu Yue stared at Hua Yulong who smiled warmly at her as he asked for the money. Ouyang Yufei was standing on the side smiling like a sly fox.

Such an enormous price.... They were basically swindling her!

Yufei saw that Liu Yue didn't say anything and became somewhat serious, "I say. You won't be so petty like that right? I won't like you do that. You have to repay your kindness. You have to pay back the money. If you're not going to, then why did I even bother saving you?"

"Vulgar.... Evil.... Master, you're too vulgar! You're suppose to be noble and virtuous! You should not care about something so small. Saving a human life is a meritorious deed. Fate brought us together so you shouldn't ask for any payment. But...This is your temperament.... so...I can't help it either."

The annoying chirping sound sounded from the house as a little magpie came running out.

(TL: I don't know what the heck this thing is. Is it a bird? How can it hold a bowl.... Author's not being specific :'() Ouyang Yifei handed Liu Yue a piece of paper, "We should be the ones discussing this. Surnamed Murong. Pay up!"

Ouyang Yufei laughed loudly without feeling embarrassed. It looked like he had done something like this many times already.

Liu Yue glared at the three of them. She didn't ask about the outside world but she heard that the day that she fell down from the cliff, Ouyang Yufei and the others were coincidentally there to catch her. If not, even if she has an immortal body, she would not be able to return after falling from such heights.

But now it seems like it wasn't coincidentally at all. Rather, they helped out because they knew that she was falling down. Did they know beforehand that they can extort her for money?

No way.

Thoughts flashed through her mind while she stayed silent. She expressionlessly looked at the bill.

Good. Not bad. They clearly recorded when she used their medicine and what medicine she used. The price and quantity was neatly listed besides everything.

Each and every item were written neatly on the paper. At the end of each record, her fingerprint was stamped onto the paper. Now even if she wants to disclaim it, she can't. This is an official document. If they find a lawyer and fight a case, she would definitely have to pay everything.

Chapter 447: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (4)

They want money? That's fine with her. She didn't want to owe anyone a favor anyways. It's better if they asked for money.

"Follow me. I won't let you lose out on a single cent." Liu Yue turned towards the exit and started walking.

She's been here for too long. She can't wait to go out anymore.

"Going to Tianchen to find Xuan Yuan Che? I suggest that you don't go." The soft voice made Liu Yue stop in her tracks.

She frowned and turned around. She looked at Ouyang Yufei with a murderous intent.

So he's showing his true colors now huh. What does he mean?

Ouyang Yufei's expression stayed calm as he retrieved a book from his robe, "You brought this here."

Liu Yue blinked a few times. That book.....

She remembered that she tightly held onto the book as she fell from the cliff.

"Do you want him to help you pay back your debt or do you want him to drag him into more problems?" Ouyang Yufei held waved the book at her and smiled.

"A direct descendant of the blood clan. Hehe...Someone with power and authority.... It was a good thing that I gave you my medicine. You can definitely pay it back easily.

But you still have two years before you become eighteen, when you can be welcomed back to the clan. If you return to Xuan Yuan Che's side... he will definitely die. Two years... that's enough for Xuan Yuan Che to die a few dozen times. It's enough for Tianchen to be destroyed a few dozen times as well.

Ouyang Yufei calculated with his fingers.

“What are you calculating? People can only live once!” Hua Yulong yelled out and walked towards Yufei. He then flipped to a page in the book and pointed to something, “A descendant of the blood clan cannot marry outsiders. If they violate this rule, then the outsider’s clan will be destroyed immediately.”

“The stronger ones are king. If you have the abilities, then you can try to fight back.” The little magpie chirped.

Hua Yulong raised his fist, “If you have the abilities....”

Chapter 448: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (5)

Hearing these words, Liu Yue tightened her fists.

She didn't forget about that place. However, this is only an ancient book. It might be a thousand year old legend. It might just be a story. Maybe those people made these stories up to scare people away. She would be stupid if she ran away because of a single book.

"Who are you?" Liu Yue glared at Ouyang Yufei and coldly shouted.

If this book was in the hands of a normal person, they would definitely think that it's a story and not believe it. However, this Ouyang Yufei was talking as if he knew that these stories were true. Who is this guy?

Waving the ancient book, Ouyang Yufei smiled, "Reading ten thousand books is not as good as traveling ten thousand miles. Coincidentally, I've actually been to this place so I know a thing or two about it."

Ouyang Yufei just casually said that he's been to this place as if it was a normal place.

Liu Yue stared at him. He's been there?

Before Liu Yue could say anything, Ouyang Yufei's sly eyes pierced her gaze, "The five empires are attacking from the front, while they are watching from the back. Liu Yue, don't say that I didn't remind you of the dangers that you can bring to Xuan Yuan Che and Tianchen.

The five empires, maybe he can beat them. Those people? Xuan Yuan Che won't even be able to touch them." Talking about those people, Yufei pointed at the book.

"It's like this. I've saved one of their people before and got some things in return. I'll show you. With this, you should be able to tell how strong they are."

Saying that, Ouyang Yufei threw the book back at Liu Yue. He then took out a small white pill.

“Eat this.”

Liu Yue didn't ask any questions and ate it. If they wanted her to die, they could've not save her.

Comparing powers? Okay. Liu Yue would like to see what kind of strength these people have.

Without saying anything, Ouyang Yufei took out a small bottle. After opening it, he dropped two drops of the liquid in the bottle onto the floor.

The droplets were crystal clear. There was no color and no scent. It looked just like two drops of morning dew.

Chapter 449: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (6)

In the blink of an eye, Liu Yue watched as all of the trees and flowers start to wither near Ouyang Yufei.

Hundreds of flowers withered, all plant life dried up.

They all fell very quickly one after another.

Liu Yue was extremely shocked when she saw this scene. This was the first time that she was truly speechless.

She could see the entire process of the plants withering. She can clearly see the wave of flowers dying in front of her eyes. It was very clear.

Even the trees that were dozens of feet high started to dry up as the dead leaves started to fall. The dark green and brown leaves floated down from the sky. In just a few seconds, all of the bare branches could be seen.

Within the flower garden, all of the dancing butterflies, bees, and birds fell as if they ran into an invisible wall and lost their life.

The range of rotting became bigger and bigger. More and more life started to die.

In just a few second, the originally beautiful garden with birds and flower turned into a death garden.

Only rotting flowers and death were in their view. The place was filled with desolation and despair.

The entire area was devoid of life. In just a few second, all forms of life disappeared. Only a deathly silence remained.

Within 3 miles, there was no sign of life. It was all extinguished.

Liu Yue's fists turned cold. It was cold sweat.

Such a strong poison..... Liu Yue gaze swept across the entire area. It was all rotten. Only death remained.

If this kind of poison spread through Tianchen, if it spreads into the

palace.....

Liu Yue shivered. This kind of speed and power. It was basically unstoppable.

This was only a small move from Ouyang Yufei and yet it was so strong already.....

Then Tianchen..... then Xuan Yuan Che....

She slowly closed her eyes. This kind of ability. No wonder why the king was afraid. How can they fight against something like this?

“This is one of their simplest poisons. Anyone of status in that place have it. Murong Liu Yue, this is an inheritance from thousands of years ago. It is not ordinary at all.”

Chapter 450: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (7)

“Once the overlords of the world, they now sit in the background and watch as heroes rise and create empires in their old territory. They didn’t care about it at all. They looked down on all of them. They were not afraid of these people at all since they have the power to sweep them all up and reclaim their land anytime they want.

This kind of arrogance and confidence, not a single person can resist against them. Not a single power can fight against them.

I don’t want to lose out on a single cent. Please think about it.”

Ouyang Yufei clapped his hands as he leaned on the dried up tree and looked at Liu Yue.

Hearing this, Liu Yue clenched her fists even harder. She saw how terrifying they can be. She knows the difference between Tianchen and them. Their strengths were too far apart.

If she goes back to Xuan Yuan Che, then... what kind of fate will await him.....

So there are some things that can’t be solved with perseverance alone. There are some things that can’t be done just because they join hands together.

Love. This is something between two people. That’s what she once thought.

However, she was wrong. She was confused because she had never experienced love before. Love was not between two people.

The love of a royal family member is complicated. There are many factors involved.

She was stupid.

Liu Yue expressionlessly looked at the sky. No one knew what she was thinking about.

Ouyang Yufei didn't rush her either. He stood there and smiled at her.

After a long while, a strong surge of energy slowly emitted from Liu Yue. It surprised Ouyang Yufei.

She was changing. It was a kind of change where she crawled out of a shell.

It was as if she was a baby caterpillar who turned into a larva. Now, even after experiencing vile circumstances, not only did she not die, she was able to break through the cocoon and become a butterfly.

That's right. She broke through her cocoon and became a butterfly.

In the moment where she should have accepted her misfortunes as decreed by fate, where she had to choose between two roads, and where she had given up all hope, not only did she not falter, she became stronger.

A golden light dazzled in her eyes. Liu Yue who was surrounded by death and grief emitted an indescribable valiant aura.

Chapter 451: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (8)

“Thank you.” Liu Yue took a deep breath and then calmed down. After that, she turned around and started to walk.

Right. They are very strong. Ouyang Yufei showed her that. If she returns to Xuan Yuan Che right now, she will only bring him problems.

She doesn't like power. Status and authority meant nothing to her. The entire world was not fit to be in her eyes.

In her eyes, there was only one thing. Xuan Yuan Che. All she want is to be with him. Be together with him and live a good life.

However, even the heavens are envious of their love and insists on breaking them apart. For Xuan Yuan Che and her future, she will fight with everything that she has.

The eagles in the sky insists on intertwining with the bees and the butterflies. They insist on bothering them. She had to fight this battle. She will fight this battle. She won't be someone who stays by Xuan Yuan Che's side and be a normal woman.

fShe's not a brambling. She's not a source of calamity. She wants to soar through the nine heavens right next to Xuan Yuan Che.

Thus, she's decided.

This world.....She wants a piece of it too.

With two heroes joining hands, is there a reason to fear the six countries? They will become the conquerors of the continent from a thousand years ago.

“That's right. If you go there, then someone will pay.....Hey, it's not in that direction!” The little magpie chirped at Liu Yue. They were thinking about one thing while Liu Yue was thinking about something else.

Yufei who had been keeping a warm smile on his face was shocked when he saw this. His eyes lit up as he watched Liu Yue leave.

He wanted to convince her and ask her to give up but it seems it like didn't work.

Ouyang Yufei massaged his head and suddenly smiled. Whatever. It's fine if it didn't work. He was feeling bored anyways, "Alright. Let's pack up and follow." While saying that, he walked behind her.

Autumn wind blew.... It was cold... Ice cold...

Today, she broke through the cocoon and became a butterfly. She broke free from the nets of authority. No one knew how those people became the rulers of the lands. The heavens and the earths were about to rage again.

They walked out of Nansong.....They walked through the Zhao Empire.... All of the news from that day entered their minds.

Chapter 452: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (9)

Tianchen's King of Yi's princess consort fell off a cliff. Status unknown. Snow Saint and Ao Yun crowned prince detained in Tianchen.

An interregnum in Tianchen. A new king is appointed.

Tianchen claims that the Chen empire dared to violate treaties by crossing borders and sent out its troops. With their respective crowned prince in Tianchen's hands, Ao Yun and Snow Saint did not dare to move. Seeing this, Nansong did not make a move either.

Tianchen allied with Huo Jin, who has a big grudge against Snow Saint, and swept across the Chen Empire together.

War was starting everywhere.

It was non stop. Liu Yue listened to everything. She was speechless at what was happening. She had to endure. Afterwards, she will be able to give the entire world to Xuan Yuan Che.

The only ones who can guard their feelings are themselves. They will endure this hardship and trial together.

Right now, she was going to do something important.

Countless amount of carrier pigeons traversed across the sky. Only one, brought a different kind of news.

"I am good."

Three simple words..... These three simple words were the news that someone had yearned for.

"Chi" A sharp arrow flew through the sky. The carrier pigeon fell as a rude burly person caught it. He pulled the message off of the pigeon and threw it into the fire. He then started to cut the pigeon up while humming a fine tune.

Food could be found everywhere. However, carrier pigeons tasted the

best.

In the pit of fire, the news that someone had yearned for quickly disintegrated.

The traces of the four people disappeared just like that. Xuan Yuan Che who was standing above the imperial palace was so close to them and yet, they were ten thousand miles apart.

The four continued to move north. They walked through Ao Yun and reached a grassy plain.

This place was not as warm as Nansong. In the north, the weather was very cold. When the northern winds blow by, one would feel as if they were becoming frozen.

“I hate this kind of place.” Dressed in all white, Yufei frowned as his horse treaded across the grassy plain.

“I didn’t ask you to follow me.” Liu Yue was wearing a red leather fur coat along with a red fur hat. She looked as if she was a lump of fire.

Chapter 453: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (10)

Liu Yue couldn't shake Ouyang Yufei off and could only watch as he followed along.

"If you pay up then I won't follow you anymore." Ouyang Yufei had his hands around his waist and answered in a self confident tone.

Liu Yue didn't even try to pay attention to him, making Hua Yulong and the little magpie grumble and complain.

The cold winter breeze whirled past the group. All of the grass in the area had dried up. There were no life to be seen at all.

"We'll leave the Ao Yun Empire's borders in a bit. If you keep walking, you'll reach the northerner's and the nomadic people's land." Ouyang Yufei frowned as he looked at the city gates.

The central plains were controlled by the seven countries. However, outside the central plains, there were numerous amounts of countries and barbarians, including the northerners and nomadic people.

Every year, during the winter, there would be no harvests. The crops all died. The river froze over. There was a lack of food and clothing.

Thus, every year around this time, these nomadic people would appear.

They barged into nearby towns to kill and loot. They besieged the rich empires around them. Ao Yun, the Zhao empire and a part of Hou Jin beared the brunt.

The losses every year were not small.

Due to this, the three empires allied. They each built a great wall and would send fire beacons to alarm each other so they can resist against these nomadic people. It was only during these few years that the situation had stabilized.

Without saying anything, Liu Yue whipped her horse harder and made it rush towards the borders at a faster pace.

The seven empires of the central plains.... It wasn't in a good state right now. All the work that they've put into stabilizing the situation was like a cup of water inside a house of fire.

Outside of the plains were where the truly strong people lived.

The valiant nomadic northerners gathered and broke into Ao Yun. They broke through the empire's defenses and allied with Tianchen. With this alliance, who would dare touch them?

The central plains and the outsiders were unifying. No matter how strong this mysterious sect was, they will definitely be taken down!

The cold winter wind howled.

She won't go and try to fight them alone. Fighting a sect with thousands of years of inheritance alone would be just like kicking a prick.

Chapter 454: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (11)

If a durian is hard, then I'll smash it open with a rock. Let's see it stay close.

Under absolute power, no matter how strong one is, they would become paper tiger.

The northern wind was chilly. There was a big and heavy snowfall. The environment was very vile.

A month's time had passed. Liu Yue had penetrated deeply into the prairies. She looked forward. There was snow everywhere. The entire floor was filled with pure white snow.

"This place....I don't like it." Ouyang Yufei sighed. They've been walking for an entire month and have not even seen a single person. This place made him feel very frustrated.

Without saying a word, Liu Yue suddenly leapt forward. She looked at the snow on the ground in front of her.

"What. Is there something wrong?" Yufei looked around. There was nothing there. Only snow and dead trees....

"Someone passed by three days ago." Liu Yue quickly got on her horse.

Ouyang Yufei frowned. There was someone here three days ago?

How come he couldn't tell at all? How can she tell by looking at the snow?

In all these years, if he said that he was number two in terms of tracking ability, no one would dare to say that they're number one. How can he miss any traces of people passing by? Strange.

He furrowed his brows and followed her. If someone passed by, then someone's definitely in front of them.

Behind him, the little magpie and Xiao Hua stared at the ground. How

can there be any traces left?

The party tread through the snow quickly. If there's someone there, then there must be a city along the way!

The bone chilling wind breezed past them.

The dark clouds were blown away as sunlight shined upon them. It was rare for there to be such a warm ray of sunlight during winter.

Snow started to melt. Only dead grass remained on the ground. The traces could not be seen anymore.

Liu Yue continued to move forward in an estimated direction.

The party of four sped forward quickly, trying to find a city.

"There's someone in front of us!" Once they got on a slope, Xiao Hua looked down and yelled out in joy.

Chapter 455: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (12)

In front of them, in the dark blue horizon, there was a slight movement. It looked as if there was someone moving. However, it was too far away. They weren't able to see clearly.

"I'll go and see!" The little magpie yelled out with a nomadic tribe accent and rushed forward at its fastest speed.

In all its years of traveling, it didn't learn anything but accents from different places.

Liu Yue didn't stop her. Instead she followed along. Right now, she didn't have a GPS with her. It was easy to get lost in such a vast wasteland. It was better if they could ask someone for directions.

After moving for a while, Liu Yige suddenly pulled her horse back. At the same time, Ouyang Yufei stopped as well.

The two of them hopped off and looked closely ahead.

They saw a surge of movement. It was moving very quickly. It wasn't a single person. It wasn't a caravan either. It was an entire nomadic army!

In front of them, the little magpie's face ashened and immediately turned back, "It's an army! An army!"

To run into an army in the middle of nowhere. This was not a good thing.

Liu Yue immediately got back on her horse and turned around to flee.

Behind her, Ouyang Yufei and Xiao Hua followed suit.

The four people moved like shooting stars and sped away.

Behind them was an army few hundred thousand strong. Each and every soldier had an intense murderous aura surrounding them.

The group fled very quickly. They ran like their life was on the line. In the blink of an eye, they disappeared from the army's view.

“Alright. Alright. There’s no one behind us anymore.” Xiao Hua looked back and let out a sigh of relief.

“Exercising like that really warmed me up.” The little magpie stretched and laughed.

After following their master for so long, it seems like these two had become accustomed to things like this.

Chapter 456: Breaking Through the Cocoon, Becoming a Butterfly (13)

Liu Yue who was still sitting on her horse looked to the left, “Seems like we’ll have to keep exercising.” Liu Yue spoke in a cold tone and immediately took off.

“What do you mean?” Xiao Hua was startled.

Ouyang Yufei quickly got back on his horse as well. He frowned and looked at Xiao Hua and the little magpie, “Run.”

Yufei took off quickly as well and followed Liu Yue.

Xiao Hua and the little magpie both jumped up and got on their horses as well. They can now see the black armored Bei Mu soldiers approaching.

“What’s going on? Why are there soldiers everywhere? Shouldn’t they be at home right now? Why are they out here in the cold? Could they be out hunting?” Xiao Hua looked around as he wondered.

In the blink of an eye, the group traveled a few miles, throwing off the soldiers that were approaching them.

There was a tall cliff in front of them. When Liu Yue saw this, she immediately approached it. If she can get on the cliff then she can see what’s going on.

When she finally reached the top, she looked into the horizons. Her eyes widened. Her expression immediately turned very ugly.

The Bei Mu soldiers who were wearing black iron armor were standing on the left side. The soldiers from the nomadic tribes were wearing dark green armor on the right side. There were at least a few hundred thousand troops on each side. Arrows were flying all about the battlefield. Murderous aura erupted from every single soldier.

As for Liu Yue and her group, they were right in between the two groups.

Shit. How did they end up like this?

Behind Liu Yue, Ouyang Yufei finally caught up and looked down. When he saw everything, his calm expression turned into a bitter one.

It was at this time that the soldiers from both sides noticed them. They immediately aimed their arrows at them.

At the same time, the groups of soldier that they ran away from had caught up.

There were no roads to the sky, nor door doors into the earth. They were trapped in a hopeless situation.

Chapter 457: The Bei Mu Bestows Kingship (1)

The group of four immediately turned and hid behind a tree.

“Shit.....We’re.....We’re.....finished....” As the last ones to reach the top of the cliff, Xiao Hua and the little magpie were appalled by the scene in front of them. They were shaking so much that the words barely escaped their mouths.

Even though they have extensively traveled the world with their master, this was the first time that they were in this kind of situation.

The chilling northern wind blew. As chilling sensation entered their bodies.

Sweat ran down their backs.

They didn’t dare to move. They didn’t dare do anything. They stood there quietly.

One wrong move and they will be showered by millions of arrows. Even if one is an immortal god, they won’t be able to save themselves in this situation.

Her fingers tightly gripped onto the reins tied onto the horse. In the midst of all the killing intent, Liu Yue suddenly calmed down.

This calmness, it was a type of absolute calmness that was refined by her experience.

Her eyes scanned the battlefield as she started to think of a plan.

The Bei Mu army was on the left side. From a glance, she can tell that they had a very strong disposition of forces but their numbers were vastly inferior to the Huns on the right.

At the same time, a large amount of Huns soldiers chased the Bei Mu soldiers into the battlefield. It was the soldiers that were chasing them before.

Her eyes moved rapidly as she captured the scene of the entire battlefield. She finally understood what was going on. The Bei Mu army was being surrounded. The Huns had encircled Bei Mu's army and were planning to annihilate them.

And they actually ran into the middle of everything.....

"The Bei Mu Empress and The King of Huns. Standing in between the collision of the two powers, it'll be a miracle if we don't die." Suddenly, a soft voice sounded by Liu Yue's ears.

It wasn't very loud. She was the only one that heard this secret transmission.

When Liu Yue heard Ouyang Yufei's words, she immediately looked over at the center of Bei Mu's camp.

She noticed the Bei Mu empress standing there as she watched the battle unfold in front of her eyes. The empress wasn't very eye-catching. It was pretty easy to not notice her existence in the midst so all these soldiers.

Chapter 458: The Bei Mu Bestows Kingship (2)

The King of Bei Mu had an early demise. The prince is only five years old so the Empress, Xiao Chen Ying took over the reign.

Why did Empress Xiao bring her people here during this cold weather in the first place?

Liu Yue was expressionless.

She then looked to the right, where the Hun soldiers were stationed.

Compared to the Bei Mu army, the Hun army shone with brilliance. In the front lines, a golden canopy was set up. Under the bright sunlight, it was very hard for anyone to miss it.

A valiant looking man wearing a full set of gold armor and the golden crown of the Huns sat in the front. A domineering aura extruded from him. This was the Nomadic King. The King of the Huns.

Next to him was a small child. It looked as if he had been kidnapped.

The child's black gold robe shone brightly under the sunlight. It was the robe of the Bei Mu King!

The King of the Huns was sitting in front of his hundred thousand soldiers. Liu Yue who was on the cliff was able to see everything clearly.

Hold the feudal overlord and you control his vassals. Since the young king of Bei Mu was in the hands of the Huns, it was hard for Empress Xiao to do anything. The Huns plan to have some payback.

Liu Yue now has a grasp of the situation.

It was a good thing that she had Du Yi and the Blood Shadow Guards gather information about outside powers back when the turmoil between the seven countries began.

She didn't do this because she was preparing for war, but because she like the scent of the grassy plains that she gathered so much information.

It was finally put to use today.

The Huns encircled Bei Mu and kidnapped their young king.

The King of the Huns is a very valiant man. His generals were all consisted of people with overwhelming talent.

Bei Mu was strong too. All of its troops consisted of elites as we

Thinking about all this, Liu Yue suddenly thought of a very daring idea. She came here to find an opportunity and now the opportunity was in front of her!

Even the heavens are helping her out.

The calmness on her face disappeared. An expression of fear took over. Her entire body started to shake.

Chapter 459: The Bei Mu Bestows Kingship (3)

That look on her face....The trembling motion of her already frail body made it look as if she could be blown away by the wind at any moment.

Behind her Ouyang Yufei was planning their escape when he saw the change in Liu Yue's expression. He couldn't help but be flabbergasted.

Scared? He's not hallucinating right? This Liu Yue is actually scared?

Before he could say anything, the horse that Liu Yue was sitting on suddenly trembled and lifted its front legs as if it was scared of something. It then started to run towards the middle of the battlefield.

Liu Yue who was sitting on the horse didn't seem to notice the behavior of the horse and was thrown off.

Her right leg was trapped on the pedal as her entire body hit the ground. The upper half of her body was on the ground while the lower half of her body was trapped. Her entire body was dragged across the ground as the horse ran wildly.

In the middle of the battlefield, the horse continued to run as it left Liu Yue behind on the ground. Liu Yue was in an absolute mess. After being dragged around by the horse, she look like a ragdoll. When she finally fell from the horse, she slammed into the ground, flew into the air and slammed into the ground again.

It looked as if she would die at any moment now.

Not a single sound came out of her mouth. She had fainted long along. Or maybe..... After being dragged around like that, she died already.

In fact, it was impossible for a weak and feeble girl like her to be alive after being dragged around like that.

The troops on both sides were all valiant soldiers. They couldn't be more familiar with a horse's movements.

In their minds, this weak looking girl was more or less dead.

Therefore, all the soldiers ignored her and didn't want to waste any arrows on an a dead body.

Why did the horse suddenly run wild? Ouyang Yufei was in shock. He was in disbelief.

Chapter 460: The Bei Mu Bestows Kingship (4)

“Do you not want to live anymore?” A faintly discernible voice sounded in the ragged up Liu Yue’s ears.

The voice contained a little anger in it.

What the hell was she doing? What in the world is she thinking?

The two sides were facing against each other. A strong murderous intent could be felt as both sides readied their arrows.

The wild horse continued to run into the front lines.

“Xiao Cheng Ying. This King will count to three. If you don’t surrender, then don’t blame this king for being impolite!” A cold and arrogant voice sounded.

Liu Yue who was still being dragged by the horse was almost at the golden canopy where the King of the Huns was at.

“Don’t even think about it!” Empress Xiao replied with an even colder tone.

“Mother, mother.....” The crying and trembling voice of the five year old was carried by the wind and echoed through the entire battlefield.

Nobody noticed the bloody, cannot be more dead girl and the wild horse.

“King. You are the King of Bei Mu. Remember your dignity. You cannot show any weakness. No matter what, the King of Bei Mu does not lower his head!”

Empress Xiao’s loud shout resounded in all directions.

No one made a sound. Only the sound of the bow strings being pulled harder could be heard. The tens of thousands of soldiers on the Bei Mu side were all angered. They all emitted an incredible killing intent. They did not look any weaker than the few hundred thousand troops that the Huns had.

The King of the Huns laughed loudly, “Good. This King would like to see how long Empress Xiao can hold out for! One!”

“Two!”

The King of the Huns started to shout louder and louder.

“Three!”

The wild horse and the supposedly dead girl was getting closer and closer to the golden canopy.

“Four!”

Ouyang Yufei stood on the cliff and unconsciously tightened his grasp on the reins. He watched as Liu Yue got closer and closer to the King of the Huns.

“Five!”

Silence. The battlefield was filled with absolute silence.

“Six!”

Chapter 461: The Bei Mu Bestows Kingship (5)

“Farewell my king. Mother will definitely avenge you. I will destroy the Huns and slaughter every single last one of them for you.....”

The shout was filled with endless amounts of sorrow.

“Destroys the Huns.....” The tens of thousands of soldiers on the Bei Mu side yelled out. They swear to avenge their king and destroy the Huns.

The King of the Huns merely laughed, “Seven.....” His hands moved towards the young King of Bei Mu.

“Eight.....”

The wild horse was now literally flying towards the golden canopy on the Hun’s side. It was just a few feet away now.

“Nine.....”

When he counted to nine, the King of Huns who thought that he had already achieved victory smiled brightly and lifted his hands.

Empress Xiao had a strong and resolute expression on her face but the King of Huns had already seen through her. He saw how she was feeling distressed and was sobbing on the inside. When he counts to ten, Bei Mu will definitely surrender.

He held his hand up high as he opened his mouth.

“.....”

The King of the Huns was about to wave his hand and command his army to attack.

However, at the last second, the corpse that was dragged by the horse suddenly did a barrel roll and dashed into the Huns army.

It happened way too suddenly. No one was able to react at all.

Liu Yue immediately moved towards the King. With a flash, she unsheathed her sword and pointed at the king.

Her body moved like a fish as she glided all the cracks and openings in the army. Her speed was extremely fast, leaving everyone astounded.

“Protect the King!”

After a short while, the generals finally reacted to what was happening. The army that was lined up in an orderly fashion was now in a state of disarray.

The blazing shadow quickly maneuvered through the confused soldiers. Right now, those bows and arrows that everyone was carrying was rendered useless. They were prepared for the Bei Mu army on the other side, not for someone who charged straight into their formation.

When it came to close combat, who could possibly match up to Liu Yue?

Credits

Translator: [Shiroyukineko](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)